

# P

**Paasikivi, Juho Kusti** (originally Johan Gustaf Hellsen) (1870–1956). Finnish politician. Brought up by an aunt, he won an LLD at Helsinki University, becoming an inspector of finances, then a banker. Finland declared its independence from Russia (1917) and Paasikivi served as Prime Minister 1918, resigning when his proposal for a constitutional monarchy failed. He returned to banking and flirted with the semi-Fascist Lapua movement. He was Ambassador to Sweden 1936–39 and to the USSR 1939–41. World War II forced him to move from conservatism to realism. \*Mannerheim appointed him Prime Minister 1944–46, and he won two terms as President 1946–56. With U. K. \*Kekkonen, he negotiated peace with the USSR and Finland's neutralist policy is known as 'the Paasikivi line'.

**Pabst, Georg Wilhelm** (1885–1967). Austrian film and opera director, born in Raudnitz. Originally an actor and stage director, his first film was *The Treasure* (1923). He promoted the careers of Greta \*Garbo, Leni \*Riefenstahl, Asta Nielsen and Louise Brooks. His films included *Pandora's Box* (1929), *The Threepenny Opera* (1931), *Don Quixote* (1933), *The Comedians* (1941) and *The Last Ten Days* (1955). He also directed four operas.

**Pachacuti** (d.1471). Sapa Inca of Peru 1438–71. He brought the Inca Empire (Tawantinsuyu or 'Land of the Four Quarters') to its height, extending from northern Ecuador to central Chile, and built Machu Picchu.

**Pachmann, Vladimir de** (1848–1933). German-Russian pianist, born in Odessa. He studied in Vienna and \*Bruckner was a teacher. One of the most popular and accomplished (though often eccentric) concert performers of his generation, he was a notable interpreter of \*Chopin. He died in Rome.

**Packard, Elizabeth Parsons Ware** (née Ware) (1816–1897). American social reformer, born in Ware, Massachusetts. Married to a domineering Calvinist cleric, Theophilus Packard, 14 years her senior, when she challenged his beliefs he had her certified as insane, confined to an asylum 1860–63, then locked up at home. A court declared her sane and she campaigned effectively for reforms of the law on insanity and married women's property rights.

Carlisle, L. V., *Elizabeth Packard: A Noble Fight*. 2010; Moore, K., *The Woman They Could Not Silence*. 2021.

**Packer, Kerry Francis Bullmore** (1937–2005). Australian media proprietor. Son of Sir (Douglas) **Frank** (Newson) **Packer** (1906–1974), founder of Australian Consolidated Press and *The Women's Weekly*, his private company owned magazines,

a television network, casinos and gambling facilities, and cattle ranches with a value of \$AU7 billion. He created World Series Cricket in 1977.

Barry, P., *The Rise and Rise of Kerry Packer*. 1993.

**Paderewski, Ignacy Jan** (1860–1941). Polish pianist, composer and politician, born in Kuryłówka, then in Russia, now in the Ukraine. He studied under \*Leschetizky (1884–87) before specialising as a virtuoso pianist, and touring Europe and America (and Australia 1904; 1927) with enormous success. He wrote two operas, a symphony, two concertos and much piano music, including the notorious Minuet in G (1887). He settled in California in 1913. His international reputation and his efforts for his country in raising relief funds and in nationalist propaganda during World War I were major factors in influencing President Woodrow \*Wilson to propose the creation of an independent Polish state as an Allied war aim. Marshal \*Piłsudski appointed Paderewski as Prime Minister and Foreign Minister (1919) and he represented Poland at the Paris Peace Conference and signed the Treaty of Versailles (1919). In December he retired and returned to his music but in 1939, after Poland had been overrun in World War II, he reappeared briefly in political life as chairman of the Polish national council in exile.

**Páez, Juan Antonio** (1790–1873). Venezuelan liberator. He fought against the Spanish with varying success until he joined (1818) \*Bolívar and shared with him in the victory of Carabobo (1821) by which Colombia and Venezuela were liberated. When Bolívar went to Ecuador, Páez stayed in Venezuela and when Venezuela seceded from Colombia he became first president (1831), dominating the country, either in office himself or through nominees, until he was defeated by a rival (1850) and forced into exile. In 1858 he returned to power but in 1863 was again expelled, dying in New York.

**Paganini, Niccolò** (1782–1840). Italian violinist and composer, born in Genoa. He toured Europe repeatedly and wrote many virtuoso pieces, notably his 24 Caprices and the Concerto in D. His technique was regarded as phenomenal and he enlarged the range of the violin by introducing left-hand pizzicatos and double harmonics. His tempestuous career and odd appearance made him a popular idol.

**Page, Sir Earle Christmas Grafton** (1880–1961). Australian politician, born in Grafton. An accomplished surgeon, he was a Member of the House of Representatives 1919–61, a co-founder of the Australian Country Party and its Leader 1921–39. Instrumental in forcing W. M. \*Hughes from the prime ministership, he became Deputy Prime Minister and Treasurer 1923–29 under S. M. \*Bruce. Deputy Prime Minister again (and Minister for Commerce) under J. A. \*Lyons 1934–39, after Lyons died suddenly he was Prime Minister April 1939, for 19 days. When R. G. \*Menzies was

chosen as Lyons' replacement, a deeply resentful Page resigned from Cabinet. He became Minister-Resident in London 1941–43. As Minister for Health 1949–56, he introduced a national health scheme. Suffering from lung cancer, he was comatose during the 1961 election and died without knowing that he had been defeated. Page was a PC (1929), GCMG (1938) and CH (1942).

Wilks, S., *'Now is the Psychological Moment'. Earle Page and the Imagining of Australia*. 2020.

**Page, Sir Frederick Handley** (1885–1962). English aircraft designer. He founded Handley Page Limited in 1909 and during World War I designed and built his twin-engined 0/400, one of the earliest heavy bombers. He established a civil air service between England and the Continent in 1919 and continued to build aircraft, notably the Heracles airliner. During World War II Handley Page Limited built transport planes and bombers, notably the Halifax. He was President of the Royal Aeronautical Society 1945–47 and received the society's Gold Medal in 1960. His company closed down in 1970.

Gibbs-Smith, C. H., *Aviation: An Historical Survey from Its Origins to the End of World War II*. 1970.

**Page, Larry** (Lawrence Edward) (1973– ). American entrepreneur, born in Michigan. Educated at Stanford, he developed 'PageRank' technology which classifies material on websites and in 1998 founded the Google search engine with Sergey \*Brin.

**Pagnol, Marcel** (1895–1974). French author, playwright and film director. His plays include *Catulle* (1922), *Topaze* (1928) and the trilogy *Marius, Fanny, César* (1929–36). He directed or produced several films, e.g. *César* (1936), *Le Rayain* (Harvest, 1937) and *La Femme du boulanger* (1938). Among his novels are *Le Château de ma mère*, *Le Temps des Secrets*. He was the first film-maker elected to the Académie française (1946).

**Pahlavi**. Iranian dynasty, which ruled 1925–79: see \*Reza Shah Pahlavi and \*Mohammad Reza Pahlavi.

**Paine, Thomas** (1737–1809). Anglo-American political theorist and activist, born in Norfolk. Having tried several occupations including that of excise officer, he went, on the advice of Benjamin \*Franklin to America, where he published *Common Sense* (1776), a pamphlet demanding complete independence from Britain, and *The Crisis* (1776–83), a series of pamphlets advocating the same end. Meanwhile he had fought in the colonial armies and had been administratively concerned with the framing of the constitution. In 1791 he returned to England, but publication of his greatest work, *The Rights of Man* (1791–92), a reply to Edmund \*Burke's *Reflections on the Revolution in France*, forced him to go to France to avoid prosecution. There he was elected to the Convention but, after opposing the execution of \*Louis XVI, was for a time in prison, where he began *The Age of Reason* (1794–96), a work

defending deism (i.e. a belief in God that is divorced from Christianity or any other 'enslaving' religion). He returned to America in 1802, where he came into conflict with the Federalists. He died in New York. Paine's writings continued to inspire radicals in the century after his death.

Keane, J., *Tom Paine*. 1994.

**Paisley, Ian Richard Kyle, Baron Bannside** (1926–2014). Northern Ireland clergyman and politician. He led the breakaway Free Presbyterian Church of Ulster (1951). A gifted mob orator, he whipped up hostility towards Catholics and Protestant moderates, serving in the British Parliament 1970–2010 and the European Parliament 1979–2004. He campaigned against the Northern Ireland peace agreement (1998) but ultimately served as first minister 2007–08. His wife **Eileen Emily Paisley** (née Cassells), **Baroness Paisley of St George's** (1934– ) made a life peer in 2006, later indicated irritation with the Democratic Unionist Party and some sympathy for Martin \*McGuinness and Sinn Féin.

**Pakenham**. English writing and political family. **Frank Aungier Pakenham, 7th Earl of Longford** (1905–2001), a Labour minister under \*Attlee and \*Wilson, wrote biographies of \*Lincoln, \*Nixon, \*Kennedy, \*De Valera, \*Jesus and St \*Francis, became a Catholic convert, a publisher and committed proponent of penal reform. His wife, **Elizabeth Pakenham** (née Harman), **Countess of Longford** (1906–2002) wrote biographies of \*Wellington, \*Byron and Queen \*Victoria. Their daughter was Lady Antonia \*Fraser and their son **Thomas Francis Dermot Pakenham, 8th Earl of Longford** (1933– ) wrote *The Year of Liberty* (1969), *The Boer War* (1979), *The Scramble for Africa* (1991) and *Meetings with Remarkable Trees* (1996).

**Palaeologus**. Byzantine dynasty. The family was famous in the history of Constantinople from the 11th century, but its first Emperor was **Michael VIII** (c.1224–1282, reigned 1258–82). His successors ruled the empire until **Constantine XI** (1403–1453, reigned 1443–53) died while vainly trying to defend Constantinople against the Turks.

Nicol, D. M., *The Last Centuries of Byzantium, 1261–1453*. 1972; Norwich, J. J., *Byzantium: The Decline and Fall*. 1995.

**Palafox** (y Melci), **José, Duke of Saragossa** (1776–1847). Spanish patriot. In the early stages of the Peninsular War he was a leader of those Spaniards who, with British aid, resisted the invasion of Napoléon's armies. He became famous for his heroic defence of Saragossa but after its final capitulation (February 1809) he was imprisoned by the French until 1813. He was created Duke in 1834.

**Palamas, Kostas** (1859–1943). Greek writer. His epics, e.g. *The King's Flute* (1910), concerned with the Byzantine period, reawakened Greek pride and

sorrow in the events of their great history: liberty and justice were his constant themes. In addition to poetry, lyric and philosophical as well as epic, he wrote stories, essays and a tragedy. His use of 'demotic', the language of contemporary Greece, did much to enhance its literary status.

**Palestrina, Giovanni Pierluigi da** (c.1525–1594). Italian composer, born at Palestrina (Praeneste). Known from his birthplace, he became organist and choirmaster there at St Agapito in 1544. In 1551 Pope Julian III (who as Bishop of Palestrina had been the composer's master) appointed him a member of the Julian choir at St Peter's. In 1555 Palestrina was briefly a member of the pontifical choir until he was forced to resign by the reformist pope \*Paul IV. He remained in Rome as musical director of the Church of St John Lateran 1555–60 and of S. Maria Maggiore 1561–67, returning to St Peter's (1570) as master of the Julian choir, a post he held until his death. Palestrina's output was enormous and included motets, litanies, magnificats and 94 Masses. (The legend that his famous *Missa Papae Marcelli* had the effect of dissuading the Council of Trent from burning polyphonic Church music is unfounded.) His work represents the culminating point of development in polyphonic vocal music, but the new ideals inaugurated by his immediate successors led to its neglect until the late 19th century, since when it has remained, at least in technique, the chief model for liturgical composers.

**Paley, William** (1743–1805). English clergyman and theologian. He held a number of livings and diocesan appointments but is chiefly remembered for his *View of the Evidences of Christianity* (1794), drawing arguments from the observation of nature, which had a powerful influence, including on \*Darwin. He campaigned against the slave trade.

**Paley, William S**(amuel) (1901–1990). American business executive, born in Chicago. He was Chairman of CBS (Columbia Broadcasting System) 1928–46, Chairman 1946–83 and Chief Executive 1946–77 and played a decisive role in shaping television programming. CBS was also an important book publisher and record producer.

**Palin, Sir Michael Edward** (1943– ). English actor, writer and documentary producer. Educated at Oxford, he was a leading figure in the BBC's television series *Monty Python's Flying Circus* (1969–74), with **Eric Idle**, **Terry Jones**, **John Cleese** and **Graham Chapman**, acted in 22 films, including *Monty Python's Life of Brian* (1979), made numerous travel documentaries and published books and diaries.

**Palin, Sarah Louise** (née Heath) (1964– ). American Republican politician, born in Idaho. Governor of Alaska 2006–09, she was Republican candidate for Vice President (with John \*McCain) in 2008

and author of *Going Rogue* (2009). Popular with the 'Tea Party' and the far right, she did not seek a presidential nomination in 2012.

**Palladio, Andrea** (1508–1580). Italian architect, born in Padua. His ability was first noticed, while he was working as a stone mason at Vicenza, by the humanist Gian Giorgio, who enabled him to study and make drawings of classical antiquities in Rome (1545–47). In and around Vicenza he built, in a distinctive classical style which became known as 'Palladian', the famous Basilica (1549), with two arcaded storeys round an older hall, town palaces and country villas, and his last important work, the Teatro Olimpico (begun 1580). The churches of S. Giorgio Maggiore (1566) and Il Redentore (1576), both in Venice, have remarkable facades. Through his *Quattro libri dell'architettura* (1570), which contained many of his designs, his influence spread widely, in England his style was introduced by Inigo \*Jones and later popularised by Lord \*Burlington. He was also copied in 18th-century America.

Ackerman, J. S., *Palladio*. 1966.

**Palme, (Sven) Olof Joachim** (1927–1986). Swedish Social Democratic politician. Partly educated in the US, he was a prominent youth leader and a Riksdag member (1956–86), succeeding Tag \*Erlander (whose secretary he had been) as Prime Minister of Sweden 1969–76, 1982–86. He was assassinated in Stockholm.

**Palmer, Sir Geoffrey Winston Russell** (1942– ). New Zealand lawyer and Labour politician. He taught law in Wellington, Iowa, Virginia and Oxford, worked on compensation issues in Australia and served as MP 1979–90. He was Attorney-General 1984–89, Minister for the Environment 1987–90 and Prime Minister 1989–90, and architect of the New Zealand Bill of Rights Act (NZBORA, 1990). He returned to academic life and was President of the Law Reform Commission 2005–10.

**Palmer, Samuel** (1805–1881). English painter and engraver. Son of a bookseller, he was largely self-educated as an artist but exhibited at the Royal Academy as early as 1819. He first met William \*Blake in 1824 and, deeply inspired, produced landscapes full of vision and fire. He painted his most original work living at Shoreham (1825–36) where, with George Richmond, he formed a group of Blake's admirers (known as 'The Ancients'). His later work, largely in watercolour, was uninspiring.

Peacock, C., *Samuel Palmer: Shoreham and After*. 1968.

**Palmerston, Henry John Temple, 3rd Viscount** (1784–1865). British politician, born in Broadlands, Hampshire. Educated at Harrow and the University of Edinburgh, as the holder of an Irish peerage he was eligible to be elected to the House of Commons, and sat as an MP 1807–65. **Emily Lamb, Countess of Cowper** (1787–1869), sister of Lord \*Melbourne,

was his mistress from 1810; they married in 1839 after her husband's death. Originally a Tory, he served as Secretary at War 1809–28, a record period, but broke with the party (1830). Henceforth, as a Whig or Liberal he favoured a policy of nonalignment with European powers and support for national movements. Thus, as Foreign Secretary 1830–34, 1835–41, he supported Belgian independence and the constitutionalists in Spain and Portugal, and saved the decaying Turkish Empire from domination by Russia. After a period in opposition (1841–46) he was again Foreign Minister 1846–51 and in 1848 supported nationalist risings in Europe, especially those against Austria. When \*Louis Philippe was deposed in France he recognised the republic and later, without consulting his colleagues, the *coup d'état* (1851) of Louis Napoléon (\*Napoléon III). Lord John \*Russell forced his resignation over this but he returned as Home Secretary 1852–55 in Lord \*Aberdeen's coalition. He was Prime Minister 1855–58 and 1859–65, and died in office. He brought the Crimean War to a satisfactory end and, after the brutal suppression of the Indian Mutiny (1857), he transferred the British East India Company's authority to the Crown. The Liberal Party was formed in 1859. Despite some liberal attributes (e.g. legalising divorce), his methods were often domineering and his judgment was often faulty, especially in his later years (e.g. over the American Civil War, where he sympathised with the Confederacy). He was extremely popular with the British public, but Queen \*Victoria and his colleagues found his enthusiasm for forceful action very trying. Being cited as a co-respondent in a divorce case at the age of 79 seems to have contributed to his popularity.

Ridley, J., *Lord Palmerston*. 1970; Brown, D., *Palmerston*. 2010.

**Pamuk, (Ferit) Orhan** (1952– ). Turkish novelist, screenwriter and academic, born in Istanbul. His novels include *The Black Book* (1990), *My Name is Red* (2000) and *Snow* (2002). He also wrote short stories and essays. He had several periods of teaching at Columbia University and in 2005–06 faced harsh criticism in Turkey and threats of prosecution for protesting about historic aggression against Armenians and Kurds. In 2006 he won the Nobel Prize for Literature. The citation read: 'In the quest for the melancholic soul of his native city, [he] has discovered new symbols for the clash and interlacing of cultures.'

**Paneth, Friedrich Adolf** (1887–1958). Austrian-British chemist, born in Vienna. He left Germany in 1933 and became professor of chemistry at Durham 1939–53, then director of the Planck Institute for Chemistry, Mainz 1953–58. His most important work was on the use of radio-isotopes in chemical research. He devised techniques for measuring the minute quantities of helium produced in rocks by

radioactive decay, and thus provided a method of finding the age of rocks. The lunar crater Paneth and the mineral Panethite are named for him.

**Panhard, René** (1841–1908). French engineer and motoring pioneer. Founder of the Panhard company, in 1886 he formed a partnership with **Emile Lavassor** (1844?–1897). They acquired the French and Belgian rights to use \*Otto's internal combustion engine and pioneered the building of true cars with the engine mounted on a chassis.

Georgano, G. N. (ed.), *The Complete Encyclopaedia of Motorcars 1885–1968*. 1968.

**Pankhurst, Emmeline** (née Goulden) (1858–1928). English militant suffragette. She worked with her husband, **Richard Marsden Pankhurst** (1839–1898), on behalf of many radical causes, but after his death concentrated on votes for women. In 1903 she founded the Women's Social and Political Union (WSPU) which engaged in direct confrontation and militant protest to secure female suffrage and had a tense relationship with Millicent \*Fawcett and her 'suffragists' in the National Union of Women Suffrage Societies (NUWSS). Dubbed as 'suffragettes' from 1906, Mrs Pankhurst's followers pursued their goals, including chaining themselves to lamp posts, slashing pictures, assaulting the police, and going on hunger strike in prison. (Mrs Pankhurst was confined eight times.) Many less extreme supporters were estranged, but World War I, in which women proved their ability in almost every occupation, broke down opposition. In 1918 women over 30 acquired the vote and in 1928 they were given equality of franchise with men. In 1926, fearful of Bolshevism, she joined the Conservative Party and was nominated as a candidate. Her three daughters were active suffragettes: Dame **Christobel Harriette Pankhurst** (1880–1958) was first imprisoned in 1905, took out a law degree, wrote *The Great Scourge* (1913), about sexually transmitted diseases, but during World War I became a strident campaigner for conscription. She stood for Parliament in 1918, lived in the US from 1921, became an Adventist evangelist and was created DBE in 1936; (Estelle) **Sylvia Pankhurst** (1882–1960), studied as an artist, was imprisoned and forced in prison for her suffragette protests, broke with her mother over her opposition to World War I, joined the Communist Party in 1920 but was soon expelled. She later devoted herself to the cause of Ethiopia (Abyssinia) when it was invaded by the Italians and lived in Addis Ababa from 1956. **Adela** (Constantia Mary) **Pankhurst** (1885–1961), imprisoned for her suffragette militancy, migrated to Australia in 1914, was imprisoned in Melbourne for anti-war protests married the trade unionist Tom Walsh in 1917, and they were co-founders of the Communist Party of Australia in 1920. Expelled by the CPA, they turned hard right by 1927, joined the Australia First movement in 1941 and she was interned in 1942. Adela became a Catholic convert.

Hoy, L., *Emmeline Pankhurst*. 1985.

**Paoli, Pasquale de** (1725–1807). Corsican patriot. After many years in exile (1739–55) for opposing the Genoese, he was chosen as President of Corsica. When the Genoese sold Corsica to France he opposed the French authority but, after a valiant resistance, was defeated and fled to England, where \*Boswell befriended him. In 1791 he was appointed Governor of Corsica by the French Revolutionary Government, and when accused (1793) of being a counter-revolutionary, he proclaimed Corsica independent. With the help of the British Navy he defeated the French and the island was declared a British protectorate. After he was recalled to England (1795) the pro-French islanders drove the British from Corsica.

**Paolo and Francesca** *see* **Francesca da Rimini**

**Papadopoulos, Georgios** (1919–1999). Greek soldier and politician. A brigadier, he led the military coup of April 1967 which overthrew the civilian government. He became Prime Minister of the *junta* 1967–73, and President of the Republic 1973. Sentenced to death for treason in 1975 after the restoration of democracy, his sentence was commuted to life imprisonment.

**Papagos, Alexandros** (1883–1955). Greek field marshal, born in Athens. He fought in both Balkan wars, World War I and the Turkish War and in 1935 was part of the military coup which led to the restoration of the Greek monarchy and the dictatorship of \*Metaxas. As Commander-in-Chief of Hellenic Forces 1939–41, despite inferiority of numbers and equipment he gained a series of remarkable victories until German intervention made further resistance impossible. He organised resistance to Axis occupation, and was taken to Germany as a prisoner. Awarded a GBE (1945) by the British, he was Commander-in-Chief again 1949–51 and crushed the Communists in the civil war with the use of American fire-power. He founded the Greek Rally, won the 1952 elections decisively and was Prime Minister 1952–55. He tried to modernise Greece and restore the economy, and took a cautious line about Cyprus.

**Papandreou, Georgios** (1888–1968). Greek Socialist politician. He was Premier of Greece 1963 and 1964–65 until forced out of office by the army and jailed (1967). His son **Andreas Papandreou** (1919–1996), an American trained economist, taught in Minnesota and California, returning to Greek politics to lead the Pasok party. Premier of Greece 1981–90, and 1993–96, he was forced out by illness.

**Papen, Franz Joseph Herman Michael Maria von** (1879–1969). German politician and diplomat. When military attaché in the US during World War I he was expelled (1915) for promoting sabotage. He was elected to the Prussian Diet (1921) and subsequently used his friendship with President \*Hindenburg's son, Oskar, to secure advancement.

Finally (June 1932) he was appointed Chancellor. His first attempt to bring \*Hitler into his government failed, but after another election (November 1932) and Papen's resignation the two came to terms: Hitler became Chancellor and Papen Vice Chancellor, with a secret assignment from Hindenburg to curb Nazi excesses. Papen soon became critical of his new ally and narrowly escaped death in Hitler's 'Night of the Long Knives' (30 June 1934). The warning was enough. He accepted the post of Ambassador to Vienna 1934–38 and prepared the ground for the Nazi occupation of Austria. He was sent to Turkey 1939–44, where his embassy became the centre of a spy network. After the war he was acquitted at Nuremberg, and released after serving two years of a nine-year sentence imposed by a German denazification court.

Papen, F. von, *Memoirs*. 1952.

**Papin, Denis** (1647–1713). French physicist. He assisted \*Huygens and (from 1675) Robert \*Boyle in work on air pumps. Among his inventions were the double-stroke air pump, the condensing pump and the autoclave (then known as the 'digester'), a pressure vessel in which temperatures above the boiling-point of water may be obtained. A pioneer of the steam engine, and elected as Fellow of the Royal Society (1680), he died in London, destitute.

**Papineau, Louis-Joseph** (1786–1871). French-Canadian politician, born in Montréal. He was elected (1808) to the Québec legislative assembly, of which he was later Speaker 1815–37. His bitter oratory gave fervent support to the cause of French-Canadian self-government and after the defeat of the 1837 rebellion he took refuge in the US and then France. He returned to Canada in 1845, was elected to the lower house 1848–54, then retired from politics.

**Pappus of Alexandria** (fl. 300–350 CE). Greek geometer. His treatise, the *Synagogue*, is particularly valuable as a source of information about earlier Greek mathematicians and geometers. When giving proofs from earlier figures, Pappus frequently offers alternative solutions, or his own improvements. He offers full discussions of many of the classic problems of Greek mathematics, such as squaring the circle or the trisection of an angle. Pappus also evidently had interests in geography; he is known to have composed a geographical work, which has not survived. He wrote commentaries on \*Euclid and \*Ptolemy's *Almagest*.

**Paracelsus** (Theophrastus Bombastus von Hohenheim) (c.1493–1541). Swiss physician and alchemist. He travelled widely in Europe, lecturing and practising medicine, and won considerable renown. Although he practised alchemy and the occult sciences, he did not accept demonological explanations for insanity, and many of his medical views were advanced for his time: he attacked the traditional belief that diseases were caused by

'humours' in the body and taught the use of specific remedies. He introduced opium, laudanum, mercury, sulphur iron and arsenic as medicines. Of his numerous works, the *Paragranum* gives the best exposition of his medical views. Robert \*Browning's dramatic poem *Paracelsus* (1835) is based on his life.

Pachter, H. M., *Paracelsus: Magic into Science*. 1951.

**Paré, Ambroise** (1510–1591). French army surgeon. Known especially for introducing more humane methods in surgery, he abandoned the boiling-oil treatment of wounds in favour of dressings with egg yolk, attar of roses and turpentine, and used ligatures to seal blood vessels after amputations instead of cauterisation. He was surgeon to all French kings from \*François I to \*Charles IX. He has been called the 'father of modern surgery'. He stressed the importance of proper nursing, and was much concerned about the treatment of women in childbirth. His *Apology* is a vivid autobiography.

Hamby, W. B., *The Case Reports and Autopsy Records of Ambroise Paré*. 1960.

**Pareto, Vilfredo** (1848–1923). Italian economist and sociologist, born in Paris. Trained as a mathematician and engineer, he was a professor of economics at Lausanne from 1893. He applied mathematical analysis and logical rigour to the study of income distribution. In *Mind and Society* (1916–23) he argued that both revolutionary and evolutionary social change led merely to the 'circulation of élites', that real power could not be distributed equitably because human capacity is unequal. \*Mussolini claimed him as a major influence on Fascism.

**Parini, Giuseppe** (1729–1799). Italian poet. His work was modelled on Latin poets, especially \*Horace, but he abandoned the artificialities of the preceding period and wrote creatively with elegance and feeling. His most famous poem, *Il Giorno* (*The Day*, begun 1763), gives an ironic and lively account of a day in the life of a young nobleman in a corrupt age.

**Paris, Matthew** (1200?–1259). English monk and chronicler. He entered (1217) the monastery of St Albans, where he acquired skill not only as a writer and illuminator but in gold and silverwork. He continued Roger of Wendover's *Major Chronicles* from 1235 to 1259, enlarging their scope to include foreign events. His *Minor History* is a summary of events from 1200 to 1250. He was favoured by \*Henry III, and his chronicles, apart from their historic value, are vigorous and vivid and not without critical comment on contemporary trends and developments.

**Park Chung Hee** (1917–1979). Korean soldier and politician. In 1961 he led a military coup in the Republic of Korea, and was President 1963–79. His wife **Yuk Young-soo** (1925–1974) was assassinated by a North Korean agent. Park promoted rapid growth and technological change until his assassination by

the head of Korea's Central Intelligence Agency. Their daughter, **Park Geun-hye** (1952– ), was a member of the Korean Parliament 1998–2012, survived a stabbing attack in 2006 and became leader of the conservative Saenun party. She was elected as the first woman president of the Republic of Korea 2013–17, but was impeached on corruption charges, removed from office, tried and sentenced to 24 years jail, extended to 32 years on appeal.

**Park, Mungo** (1771–1806). Scottish explorer in Africa. A surgeon, in 1795 he went to Africa to explore the course of the river Niger and find its exit to the sea. After much hardship he joined the Niger at Segou, followed it downstream and, before being forced by obstructions to return, proved that it had an eastward flow at this point. The problem of its point of exit remained unsolved. His *Travels in the Interior of Africa* (1799) proved a popular success, and in 1805 he made another journey but of his 45 companions only seven reached the Niger. They struggled on as far as Bousa (Bussa), where the canoe was wrecked and Park and four remaining Europeans were attacked by indigenous people and drowned while trying to escape.

Schiffers, H., *The Quest for Africa*. 1957.

**Parker, Alton Brooks** (1852–1926). American jurist. A judge from 1885, he was Chief Justice of the New York Court of Appeals 1898–1904. In 1904 he was a surprising choice as the Democratic candidate for president, defeating William Randolph \*Hearst, because, as a judge, he had been silent on political issues and offended nobody. Theodore \*Roosevelt was considered unbeatable and Parker was a sacrificial lamb. He is the only major presidential candidate never to have been the subject of a biography.

**Parker, Dorothy** (née Rothschild) (1893–1967). American writer. She was well known for short stories, collected in, e.g. *Laments for the Living* (1930) and *Her Lies* (1939), and for her mordantly humorous poems, sayings and book reviews contributed to the *New Yorker*. (When told that the taciturn President \*Coolidge had died, she asked 'How can they tell?')

Keats, J., *You Might As Well Live: The Life and Times of Dorothy Parker*. 1970.

**Parker, Matthew** (1504–1575). English prelate, born in Norwich. Educated at Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, he was a moderate reformer, became chaplain to \*Anne Boleyn, Master of Corpus Christi 1544–53, Vice Chancellor of Cambridge 1545–46; 1548–49 and Dean of Lincoln 1552–54. He supported Lady Jane \*Grey and under \*Mary was lucky to lose only the Deanery and not his life. \*Elizabeth appointed him (1559) her first archbishop of Canterbury, and he was largely responsible for the Prayer Book of 1559 and the Thirty-nine Articles of 1562, both modelled on the corresponding publications of \*Edward VI's reign. One of Parker's main problems was that the clergy who returned from

exile demanded the much more drastic Protestantism that they had met on the Continent. It was they who reinforced the growing body of 'Puritans' and were opposed to Parker's course of compromise. As Archbishop he retrieved outstanding illuminated manuscripts from monasteries that had been dissolved by \*Henry VIII, bequeathing 480 manuscripts and about 1,000 printed books to Corpus Christi to establish the Parker Library.

**Parkes, Sir Henry** (1815–1896). Australian Liberal politician, born in England. He reached New South Wales in 1839, founded a newspaper (1850) and became a prominent opponent of convict transportation. He entered the legislature (1854). In five broken terms he was premier of New South Wales 1872–75, 1877, 1878–83, 1887–89, 1889–91, state education being among the many reforms he introduced. His restrictions on Chinese immigration were first steps towards the White Australia Policy. His most important contribution was in raising the Federation issue (1889–90) and afterwards devoting all his energy to its promotion. He received a KCMG (1877) and GCMG (1888) and was President of the National Australasian Convention (Sydney, 1891). He wrote on Australian politics and history and published some poetry.

Martin, A. W., *Henry Parkes*. 1980.

**Parkinson, C(yril) Northcote** (1909–1993). British writer, historian and political scientist. He was the propounder of Parkinson's Law, a serio-comic analysis of the growth of bureaucracy, e.g. work expands in order to fill the time available for its completion.

Parkinson, C. N., *Parkinson's Law, the Pursuit of Progress*. 1958.

**Parkinson, James** (1755–1824). English surgeon and palaeontologist, born in London. A political activist, enthusiastic for the French Revolution, he was accused of plotting against \*George III but avoided prosecution. Developing an expert knowledge of geology, his pioneering textbook on fossils *Organic Remains of a Former World* (3 vols, 1804, 1808, 1811) was influential for decades and he became a co-founder of the London Geological Society. He wrote on gout (1805) and carried out the first English operation for appendicitis (1812). He made the first detailed description of 'shaking palsy' (paralysis agitans, 1817). \*Charcot promoted adoption of the name 'Parkinson's disease'.

Morris, A. D., *James Parkinson*. 1989; Lewis, C., *The Enlightened Mr Parkinson*. 2017.

**Parmenides** (fl. c.475 BCE). Greek philosopher, born at Elea, southern Italy. Founder of the Eleatic school, his views, presented in a poem and containing ideas on 'being', had much influence on later philosophers, e.g. \*Plato and \*Aristotle (who held that 'atomism' was derived from Eleatic teaching). Unlike \*Heraclitus, who held that everything was in

a state of flux, Parmenides taught that the universe is a single, unchanging whole, indivisible, immobile and indestructible, and that any appearances to the contrary are delusions of the senses. Not only a philosopher, Parmenides played an active part in the political life of his native city.

Guthrie, W. K. C., *A History of Greek Philosophy*. 1965.

**Parnell, Charles Stewart** (1846–1891). Irish Nationalist politician, born in Avondale, Co. Wicklow. His father was from an influential Protestant Anglo-Irish landowning family, his mother was American: they separated when Charles was six. Unhappily educated in English schools, he studied briefly at Cambridge. He was elected MP for Country Meath 1875–80 and for Cork 1880–91. He toured the United States 1875, 1877 and 1879–80, with great success, raising funds for campaigns. In the House of Commons Parnell led the Home Rule League 1880–82, then the Irish Parliamentary Party 1882–90, the first disciplined and organised party in Europe, and had exceptional skills as a tactician. In 1880 he initiated the policy of the 'boycott' (C.C.\*Boycott) which led to a sharp increase in violent agricultural protests, including arson. Evictions and violent attacks were directly related and increased to thousands each year. Imprisoned in Dublin (1881–82), he negotiated a settlement with \*Gladstone's government to reject violence in return for protecting tenants from eviction for rent arrears. However, the murder of Lord Frederick Cavendish, Chief Secretary, and his deputy, Thomas Burke, in Phoenix Park, Dublin (May 1882) immediately jeopardised the settlement. By 1885 Parnell's MPs held the balance of power in Westminster, which led to Gladstone introducing a Home Rule Bill (1886). This split the Liberal Party and \*Salisbury's Conservatives returned to office in July 1886. In 1887 *The Times* published allegations, based on documents forged by Richard \*Pigott, that Parnell had condoned the Phoenix Park murders. Pigott was exposed and shot himself. Parnell had become the lover of **Katie O'Shea** (née Katharine Page Wood) (1845–1921), sister of a Field-Marshal and wife of his close colleague Captain William O'Shea. Parnell fathered three of her children and in 1889 was cited as co-respondent in O'Shea's divorce action. Adultery, in effect, shattered the relationship in Ireland between Catholicism and nationalism. Parnell refused to resign as leader of the IPP, which then split, the Irish Catholic hierarchy denounced him and the alliance with Gladstone collapsed. He married Katie O'Shea in June 1891, but his kidneys had failed and he died of pneumonia in Hove in October. Home Rule was delayed until 1921.

Lyons, F. S. L., *Parnell*. 1963; Kee, R., *The Laurel and the Ivy*. 1993.

**Parr, Catherine** *see* **Catherine Parr**

**Parry, Sir (Charles) Hubert** (Hastings), **1st Baronet** (1848–1918). English composer. He became professor of the Royal College of Music on its foundation (1883) and was its director 1895–1918. A prolific composer, especially of choral and orchestral music, his best known works are the choral ode *Blest Pair of Sirens* (1887) and his setting of \*Blake's *Jerusalem* (1916), inspired by World War I. He was made a baronet in 1902. Like his contemporary \*Stanford, Parry is important less for the quality of his own works than as a pioneer of the revival of English music which began at the end of the 19th century. Among his pupils were \*Vaughan Williams and \*Holst. He died in the Spanish flu epidemic.

**Parry, Milman** (1902–1935). American scholar, born in California. An assistant professor at Harvard, he worked in Bosnia in 1933 and 1935, observed the recitation of long, ancient oral epics by often illiterate bards, and proposed that *The Iliad* and *The Odyssey* evolved, over centuries, in a bardic oral tradition, long before the development of a written language. He died of a gunshot wound, either an accident or suicide. His 'Oral Formulaic Hypothesis' was adopted and expanded by **Albert B(ates) Lord** (1912–1991) in *The Singer of Tales* (1960) and is now generally accepted. *The Making of Homeric Verse: The Collected Papers of Milman Parry*, edited by his son, was not published until 1971.

Kanigel, R., *Hearing Homer's Song: The Brief Life and Big Idea of Milman Parry*. 2021.

**Parry, Sir William Edward** (1795–1855). British Arctic explorer. In the second of two attempts to find the Northwest Passage to the Pacific (1819), he almost succeeded by reaching Melville Island, but he failed again in 1824–25. He discovered (1821–22) the Hecla and Fury Straits, which he named after his ships. His last (1827) expedition, an attempt to reach the pole by boat and sledge from Spitzbergen, was unsuccessful (though he reached latitude 82°43'N).

Parry, A., *Parry of the Arctic*. 1963.

**Parsons, Sir Charles Algernon** (1854–1931). Anglo-Irish engineer. Son of the Earl of \*Rosse, he developed the stream turbine named after him which revolutionised marine propulsion. The *Turbinia* (1897), the first turbine-powered ship, achieved the unprecedented speed of 36 knots. He was also concerned with optics and manufactured 86 cm (34 inch) and 193 cm (76 inch) reflecting telescopes. He received the KCB (1911) and the OM (1927).

**Parsons (or Persons), Robert** (1546–1610). English priest. After leaving Oxford University he became a Roman Catholic convert, went to Rome and became (1575) a Jesuit. He returned to England (1580) to minister to Roman Catholics and eluded capture for a whole year. After the arrest of Edmund \*Campion he returned to the Continent, where he intrigued with

\*Felipe II of Spain to invade England. He wrote many controversial pamphlets, became rector of the English College in Rome and died there.

**Pärt, Arvo** (1935– ). Estonian composer. He worked for Estonian Radio, taught at Tallinn Conservatory, and lived in Berlin 1980– . His *St John Passion* (1982), powerfully compressed, minimalist and repetitive, is frequently performed, despite its lack of movement or modulation. He also wrote *Stabat Mater* (1985) and *Miserere* (1989).

**Parvus, Aleksandr Lvovich** (originally Israel Lazarevich Gelfand) (1867–1924). Russian-Jewish-German revolutionary, born in Belarus. He studied in Switzerland, lived in Germany, joined the Mensheviks and influenced \*Trotsky and \*Lenin. He made money as an arms trader in Istanbul, and in 1917 persuaded contacts in the German General Staff to send Lenin to Russia to foment revolution and its withdrawal from World War I.

**Pascal, Blaise** (1623–1662). French physicist, mathematician and philosopher, born at Clermont-Ferrand. Son of an exchequer official of great mathematical ability, he was precocious and at 16 wrote a treatise on conic sections, greeted with admiration by \*Descartes (who doubted it was Blaise's own work). The experiments he conducted with his father, and in 1647 described, on the problems of a vacuum and the effects of air pressure on tubes of mercury, led to the construction of barometers. To facilitate his father's work he also invented a calculating machine (patented 1647). Later in life he did basic work on the mathematical theory of probability, and laid the foundation for the invention of differential calculus.

In complete contrast to \*Montaigne, Pascal begins with the vastness of space and eternity compared to man's isolation and impotence, and tries to relate the universal and infinite to the human and particular. If there is order, it is a mystery, comprehended through grace, too complex for a single formula. 'It is not in space that I must seek my human dignity, but in the ordering of my thought. It will do me no good to own land. Through space the universe grasps me and swallows me up like a speck; through thought I grasp it.'

Two years after his father's death (1651), his sister, Jacqueline, became a nun at Port-Royal, near Versailles, a headquarters of the Jansenists, whose doctrines, later declared heretical, stressed those parts of St \*Augustine's teaching that appear to support predestination and redemption solely through grace. On 23 November 1654, the 'night of fire', he experienced a revelation of Christ, wrote a short *Memorial* and kept it on his body until his death. The foundation of all his religious thought is devotion to Christ, the Saviour: 'I lay all my actions before God who shall judge them and to whom I have consecrated them.' In December 1654 he went to live



at Port Royal, although he took no vows, and wrote his *Lettres provinciales* (1656–57), a defence of the Jansenists combined with a brilliant, if unfair, attack on the casuistry of their main adversaries, the Jesuits. His more personal views on religion and philosophy as well as his most brilliant writing are, however, contained in his *Pensees*, notes for a projected apology for the Christian religion, collected and published in 1669, after his death. Many of the *Pensées* have become proverbial e.g. ‘Man is but a reed, the weakest in nature, but he is a thinking reed’ and ‘The state of man: inconstancy, boredom, anxiety’. ‘Men despise religion. They hate it and fear it may be true ...’; ‘The heart has its reasons which reason knows nothing of’.

‘Pascal’s wager’ (*Pensées*, part III, §233) proposes the argument: ‘Let us weigh the gain and the loss in wagering that God is. Let us estimate these two chances. If you gain, you gain all; if you lose, you lose nothing.’

Mesnard, J., *Pascal: His Life and Works*. 1952; Adamson, D., *Blaise Pascal: Mathematician, Physicist, and Thinker about God*. 1995.

**Pasmore, (Edwin John) Victor** (1908–1998). British painter and graphic artist. Largely self-taught, he passed through naturalism and post-impressionism to evolve a personal style, of which his three dimensional abstractions and relief paintings are best known. He migrated to Malta in 1965 and received the CH in 1981.

**Pasolini, Pier Paolo** (1922–1975). Italian film maker and writer. A poet, novelist and scriptwriter, his controversial films include *Accatone* (1961), *Mamma Roma* (1962), *The Gospel According to St Matthew* (1964), *The Decameron* (1971), and *Salò* (1975). He was murdered by a male lover.

**Passfield, 1st Baron** *see* **Webb, Sidney**

**Passmore, John Arthur** (1914–2004). Australian philosopher, born in Sydney. He studied at Sydney University under **John Anderson** (1893–1962), held chairs at Otago 1950–54 and the ANU, Canberra 1959–79, published and broadcast extensively and wrote an autobiography, *Memoirs of a Semi-Detached Australian* (1997).

**Passy, Frédéric** (1822–1912). French economist and politician. He was a deputy 1874–89, a co-founder of the International League of Peace and the International Parliamentary Union. He shared the first Nobel Prize for Peace with Henry \*Dunant, having received 39 nominations.

**Pasternak, Boris Leonidovich** (1890–1960). Russian novelist and poet, born in Moscow. His father was an artist and friend of \*Tolstoy, and Boris studied law, art and music before turning to literature. He was well known within the Soviet Union as a poet, original story writer and a translator of \*Shakespeare. He was refused permission to publish his wide-ranging

novel *Doctor Zhivago* (completed 1957) about Russia in the years 1903–29. It was smuggled out of the Soviet Union and published abroad (in Italy 1957). It immediately attracted international acclaim and won for Pasternak the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1958. It was attacked in the USSR for its lack of enthusiasm for revolutionary values, and Pasternak declined, under pressure, the Nobel award. He made a conventional apology for errors as the price for remaining in Russia. He also wrote the autobiographical *Safe Conduct* (1931) and *Essay in Autobiography* (1959) in addition to much poetry.

**Pasteur, Louis** (1822–1895). French bacteriologist, born at Dôle in the Jura. His father, a tanner, had been a Sergeant Major during the Napoléonic Wars. His education led him to the École Normale in Paris where he eventually became (1857–63) director of scientific studies, having earlier taught at Dijon, at Strasbourg (where he married Marie Laurent, daughter of the university rector) and as professor of chemistry at Lille. A devout Catholic, three of his children died of infectious diseases. His early researches were on crystallography and the polarisation of light. He pointed to odd asymmetries (which he called ‘left and right handedness’) in molecules, crystals and other chemical structures. In 1857 he began to study why fermentation in wine vats produced lactic acid which caused the wine to go sour. He proved conclusively that this fermentation was caused by bacteria in the air (and his success was said to have saved France more than was paid in reparations after the Franco-Prussian War). This verified the ‘germ theory’ of disease and demolished the old idea of spontaneous generation. These conclusions (published 1864) were of basic importance in \*Lister’s development of antiseptic surgery. In 1865 Pasteur discovered, and found how to cure, a disease that was attacking silk worms and threatened the whole French silk industry. He devised (1870) the process known as pasteurisation for killing bacteria in milk, and developed vaccines against the cattle disease anthrax (1877, later successfully extended to hydrophobia, or rabies) and chicken cholera (1880). He received the Copley Medal of the Royal Society (1874) and was elected to the Académie française in 1882. The first Pasteur Institute was founded in 1885 and a branch was established in Sydney in 1890. Pasteur’s work ranks him as one of the greatest of all benefactors of the human race, and in effect the founder of bacteriology.

Nicolle, J., *Louis Pasteur: a Master of Scientific Enquiry*. 1961; Nicolle, J., *Louis Pasteur: the Story of his Major Discoveries*. 1961.

**Patel, Vallabhbhai Jhaverai** (1875–1950). Indian politician and lawyer, born in Gujarat. He became a barrister, was widowed in 1908, then studied at the Middle Temple London, returning to set up practice at Ahmadabad in 1913. He joined the Indian Congress Party in 1917 as a follower of

\*Gandhi, became the leader of its conservative wing and a rival of \*Nehru. Although an opponent of violence (on pragmatic grounds), during the civil disobedience campaigns he was imprisoned 1930, 1932–34, 1940–41, 1942–45, despite his advocacy of resistance to Japanese invasion. He was among the first to recognise the inevitability of Indian partition and the creation of Pakistan. Deputy Prime Minister 1947–50 under Nehru, he successfully integrated the princely states into the Indian Union.

**Pater, Walter Horatio** (1839–1894). English essayist and critic, born in London. A fellow of Brasenose College 1865–94, a journey to Italy (1865) and the works of \*Ruskin and \*Winckelmann influenced his thought, but his polished and poetic style, first known to the public through the essays collected as *Studies in the History of the Renaissance* (1873), is highly individual. His belief that the cultivation of beauty should be an end in itself, irrespective of its relationship to life, provided academic justification for the aesthetic movement, then blossoming into fame. His best known book is the philosophical romance *Marius the Epicurean* (1885), set in the time of Marcus Aurelius and concerned with the intellectual and spiritual processes by which a young Roman moves towards Christianity.

**Paterson, A(ndrew) B(arton) ('Banjo')** (1864–1941). Australian poet and journalist, born in Orange. Articled to a solicitor, his poems were published in *The Bulletin* from 1885 and include 'Clancy of the Overflow', 'The Man from Snowy River' and the best known, 'Waltzing Matilda' (1895). He was a war correspondent in the Boer War and the Boxer Rebellion in China.

**Paton, Alan Stewart** (1903–1988). South African writer. His famous novel, *Cry the Beloved Country* (1948), presents with compassion rather than bitterness, the psychological problems besetting the coloured man in South Africa, where the environment is created for and by the white. He was President of the South African Liberal Party (made illegal in 1968).

**Patrick** (Latin: Patricius, Irish: Pádraig), **St** (d.457 or 493?). Romano-British missionary, born probably near Hadrian's Wall. Patron saint of Ireland, he was the son of Calpornius, a Christian deacon and decurion (official). Kidnapped by Irish marauders when about 16 years old, he worked as a slave (traditionally in County Antrim) for about six years before he escaped to Gaul (France) and thence back to Britain. He then seems to have had a vision summoning him to convert the Irish, for which he did not rapidly obtain sanction, but at last he was ordained Bishop and started his Irish mission (432 is the traditional date). Christianity had already penetrated parts of the country, but he was the first missionary in the more remote areas. His method was to convert the princes and through them the common people (hence the story of his preaching before the 'high king' at Tara).

He organised the Irish Church on a territorial basis and became the first bishop of Armagh (444?). He describes his life and work in his *Confessio*. St Patrick's Day is 17 March and his emblems are the snake and the shamrock.

Bieler, L., *Works of St Patrick*. 1953; Hanson, R. P. C., *Saint Patrick: his Origins and Career*. 1968.

**Patten, Chris(topher), Baron Patten of Barnes** (1944– ). English Conservative politician, born in Lancashire. Educated at Balliol College, Oxford, he worked as a party organiser. MP 1979–92, Secretary of State for the Environment 1989–90 and Chairman of the Conservative Party 1990–92, he was the last Governor of Hong Kong 1992–97. He advised the \*Blair Government on Northern Ireland, became EU Commissioner for External Relations 1999–2004 and Chancellor of Oxford University 2003– (being the first Catholic to hold the office since 1558). He received a CH in 1998, a peerage in 2005 and served as Chairman of the BBC 2011–14.

**Patti, Adelina** (Adela Juana Maria) (1843–1919). Italian soprano, born in Madrid. She sang in New York at the age of seven, and made her operatic debut there in 1859. Noted for her brilliant execution of coloratura roles, she was much admired by \*Verdi and made a few acoustic recordings. From 1878 she lived at Craig-y-Nos Castle in the Swansea Valley, with her last husband, Baron Rolf Cedestrom, and died there. She was buried at the Père Lachaise Cemetery, Paris.

**Patton, George Smith** (1885–1945). American soldier, born in California. One of the most successful and colourful generals of World War II, in 1940 he commanded an armoured division. He led the invasion of US forces in North Africa (November 1942) and in Sicily (July 1943) but was relieved of his command for 11 months for striking two soldiers whom he suspected of malingering. He returned to lead the 3rd Army in the European liberation campaign (1944), exploiting its breakout of the Cotentin Peninsula (south of Cherbourg) with a triumphant drive across France, outflanking the Germans in Normandy, taking Paris and reaching the Moselle. He died after a motor accident in Heidelberg.

Whiting, C., *Patton*. 1973; D'Este, C., *A Genius for War*. 1996.

**Paul, St** (Paulos in Greek: Sha'ul in Aramaic) (c.8 CE–c.67 CE). Christian apostle, born in Tarsus. A Jew and a Roman citizen, known as Saul before his conversion, his life can only be partially reconstructed from the Acts of the Apostles and some of his epistles. A tent-maker by trade, he was a zealous Pharisee and took part in the persecution of Christians, but on his way to Damascus (37?) to bring back some Christians for trial he was temporarily blinded by a sudden vision and miraculously converted. After some time meditating in the desert he went to preach at Jerusalem, but, though supported by \*Barnabas,

he was regarded with suspicion. He had an uneasy relationship with \*James and \*Peter. Paul returned to Tarsus where he remained for 10 years before Barnabas sought him out and took him to Antioch. A year later, the two friends, with \*Mark as assistant, set out on their first missionary journey through Cyprus and many cities of Asia Minor. They made many converts but ultimately were stoned and expelled, mostly by hostile Jews.

When Paul and Barnabas (Mark having left them) returned to Antioch, they were faced with controversy about whether Gentile converts were required to be circumcised and follow other prescribed Jewish observances. Paul and Barnabas argued for exempting Gentiles from such requirements and the eventual compromise, reducing them to a minimum, enabled him then to continue their work. The term 'Christian' was first applied in Antioch. A second missionary journey was begun but in Cyprus a dispute as to whether Mark should again be taken led to a parting, Barnabas taking Mark as his companion, leaving Paul with Silas. For part of the way Paul retraced his steps in Asia Minor, but after a dream in which he was begged to come over to Macedonia and help, he crossed to Greece. The first Christian presence in Europe was in Philippi (c.51) and Paul's first convert was a cloth dealer, \*Lydia (Acts xvi). Paul and Silas were driven out of Thessalonica by hostile Jews, and in Athens, the home of philosophy, they had little success. In Corinth (from c.51) Paul found a home for 18 months before returning to Antioch.

In the New Testament, 14 books are attributed to Paul, advice and instruction to churches he had founded, or sought to influence. These were certainly written before the gospels. Modern scholarship is only confident about Paul's authorship of seven epistles: 1 Thessalonians (the earliest, perhaps 50–51, written in Corinth or Athens), Philippians, Philemon, 1 Corinthians, Galatians, 2 Corinthians and Romans (the longest, probably written in Corinth). The epistles were decisive in influencing early church theology.

After again visiting churches in Asia Minor (it was his practice to organise a congregation of believers in as many as possible of the places he passed through) he made Ephesus the focal point of his third journey. He stayed there nearly three years and from there wrote 1 Corinthians (c.57). He then returned to Jerusalem where his old enemies roused the mob against him. Only the intervention of the commandant saved him, but the Roman governor Felix and his successor Festus kept him imprisoned for two years until at last Paul, as a Roman citizen, exercised his right to appeal to Caesar (\*Nero). Wrecked at Malta on the way, Paul eventually reached Rome in c.60 or 61 and was held in custody there (though with considerable liberty) for about two years, and probably visited Spain (Romans xv:24, 28). He appears to have been well-connected in Rome. There is a strong tradition that he was beheaded in the Neronian persecutions,

probably on the site of the Basilica of St Paul outside the Walls. St Paul, the Apostle of the Gentiles, was above all instrumental in transforming Christianity from a Jewish sectarian creed to a universal religion.

Hengel, M. and Schwemer, A. M., *Paul Between Damascus and Antioch*. 1996; Murphy-O'Connor, J., *Paul: a critical life*. 1996; Wilson, A. N., *Paul*. 1997; Wright, T., *Paul. A Biography*. 2018.

**Paul (Pavel) I** (1754–1801). Tsar of Russia 1796–1801. He succeeded his mother \*Catherine the Great, having been kept from the throne by her for 34 years. He established a law of primogeniture. He broke his alliance with England to come to terms with \*Napoléon and planned to invade India. His rule as a capricious tyrant provoked a military plot and he was strangled by officers.

**Paul (Pávlos) I** (1901–1964). King of the Hellenes (Greece) 1947–64. Son of \*Constantine II, he was exiled in England 1923–35, served in the Greek army during World War II and in 1947 succeeded his brother \*George II as king. He attempted to popularise the monarchy, but his wife, Frederika of Brunswick, was disliked because of her alleged pro-Nazi sympathies. He was the father of \*Constantine II (XIII).

**Paul (Paulus) III** (Alessandro Farnese) (1468–1549). Pope 1534–49. Born of a noble family, he combined the roles of zealous Church reformer and Renaissance potentate. He confirmed the first Jesuit constitution (1540), established the Inquisition in Rome (1542) and initiated the Council of Trent. A great patron of the arts, he commissioned \*Michelangelo to design the dome of St Peter's and paint the fresco of the *Last Judgment* for the Sistine Chapel.

**Paul (Paulus) IV** (Gian Pietro Carafa) (1476–1559). Pope 1555–59. Born of an aristocratic Neapolitan family, he was made a cardinal by \*Paul III and recognised as leader of the Counter-Reformation long before becoming Pope at the age of 70. A strict and ruthless moralist, he introduced the Index of prohibited books and increased the range of the Inquisition and the severity of its sentences. After his death a mob destroyed his statue and burned the prisons of the Inquisition.

**Paul (Paulus) V** (Camillo Borghese) (1550–1621). Pope 1605–21. Born in Rome to a patrician family, he was a canon lawyer and Bishop of Iesu 1597–1605. He protected \*Galileo and avoided blame for the 'Gunpowder Plot' (1605) by encouraging Catholics to be loyal to \*James I.

**Paul (Paolo; Italian. Paulus; Latin) VI** (Giovanni Battista Montini) (1897–1978). Pope 1963–78. Born near Brescia, son of an anti-Fascist editor and Unione Popolari deputy, he was educated by the Jesuits. Ordained in 1920, he joined the Vatican's Secretariat of State, served in Poland (1923) and became

assistant to the future \*Pius XII. Undersecretary of State 1939–44 and Prosecretary for Extraordinary (i.e. non-diplomatic) Affairs 1944–54, he was not made a cardinal in 1953 (effectively excluding him from the succession to Pope Pius) but became Archbishop of Milan 1954–63. He was \*John XXIII's first appointment as cardinal (1958) and on his death was elected Pope on the 6th ballot. He continued the work of adapting the teaching and practices of the Catholic Church to modern needs through the ecumenical council summoned by his predecessor. He took a number of unprecedented initiatives, e.g. his pilgrimage to Jerusalem (1964, but without mentioning the Jews or Israel) and his speech to a session of the United Nations in New York. He made the first papal visits to Asia (1964), North America (1965), South America (1968), Africa (1969) and Australia (1970). His encyclical *Humanae Vitae* (1968) reaffirmed the Church's traditional opposition to contraception. He was beatified in 2014.

Gonzalez, J. L. and Perez, T., trans. Heston E. L., *Paul VI*. 1964; Hebblethwaite, P., *Paul VI—the first modern Pope*. 1993.

**Pauli, Wolfgang** (1900–1958). Austrian physicist. Professor of physics at the Zürich Institute of Technology 1928–40, 1946–58, he taught at Princeton 1940–46. A pioneer in the application of the quantum theory to atomic structure, his most notable contribution was the 'exclusion principle' stating that two electrons cannot occupy the same quantum mechanical state at the same time. He suggested (1931) the existence of the neutrino, an uncharged particle of almost zero mass. Pauli won the Nobel Prize for Physics (1945).

Kronig, R. and Weisskopf, V. F. (eds), *Collected Scientific Papers*. 1964.

**Pauling, Linus Carl** (1901–1994). American chemist. Professor of chemistry at the California Institute of Technology 1929–64, the University of California, San Diego 1964–69 and Stanford 1969–74, he was best known for his work on molecular structure and valency. He introduced (1931) the concept of resonance, the rapid alternation of a pair of structures to produce a median structure or resonance hybrid, and this idea made it easier to elucidate the structure of several compounds that had previously offered great difficulties. He won the Nobel Prize for Chemistry (1954) and the Nobel Prize for Peace (1962), the second award recognising his opposition to nuclear weapons and advocacy of a Nuclear Test Ban Treaty.

**Pausanias** (d.c.470 or 465 BCE). Greek soldier. A regent of Sparta, he was the general who led the Greek army to victory over the Persians at Plataea (479 BCE). Later he adopted Persian clothes and manners and according to \*Thucydides, entered into treacherous relations with the enemy. (\*Herodotus

defended him.) When finally he tried to gain power in Sparta by raising the serfs in revolt he was starved to death in the temple to which he had fled.

**Pausanias** (fl. 143–176 CE). Greek geographer, born in Lydia. He travelled through Greece, Italy and parts of Asia Minor and Africa, and may be regarded as the first writer of guide books, since his *Itinerary of Greece* gives the history of and legends connected with all the places he visited as well as details of all the works of art he saw there. It has thus inestimable value for the historian, geographer, archaeologist and mythologist.

**Pavarotti, Luciano** (1935–2007). Italian operatic tenor, born in Modena. From 1963 he was an increasingly popular lyric tenor in Italy, Britain and the US, excelling in opera, recitals and as a teacher. He appeared in several films and was much recorded.

**Pavelic, Ante** (1889–1959). Croatian politician and lawyer. Deeply opposed to Serbian domination of Yugoslavia, in 1929, with \*Mussolini's patronage, he founded *Ustasha* (Arise) and organised the assassination of \*Alexander I and \*Barthou in Marseille (1934). In 1941 the Germans established Croatia as a client state, with Pavelic as dictator. His regime is estimated to have murdered more than 500,000 Serbs, 60,000 Jews and many Muslims. He escaped in 1945 through Italy and lived in Buenos Aires and Madrid.

**Pavlov, Ivan Petrovich** (1849–1936). Russian physiologist. He took a medical degree (1883) and from 1891 was director of the physiology department of the Institute of Experimental Medicine at St Petersburg. He won the Nobel Prize for Medicine (1904) for his study of gastric secretions in the digestive glands. The experiments on dogs undertaken in the course of this work and the studies which developed from it won him worldwide notice. In his best known experiment Pavlov rang a bell before giving food to dogs, whose glands would begin to secrete saliva at the sight of food. After repetition the dogs salivated when they heard the bell even if no food was forthcoming. Such experiments revealed the 'conditioned reflexes' and led to a study of their effect on human behaviour and so to the behaviourist theories in modern psychology.

Babkin, B. P., *Pavlov: A Biography*. 1949.

**Pavlova, Anna Pavlovna** (1882–1931). Russian ballerina, born in St Petersburg. Educated at the Imperial Ballet School, she quickly won renown and after a single season (1909) in Paris with \*Diaghilev, formed her own company, with which she toured the chief cities of the world for the rest of her life, visiting Australia in 1926 and 1929. She was most famous for her solo performances in *divertissements*, e.g. *The Dying Swan* (music by \*Saint-Saëns), but she was also acclaimed for her roles in such ballets as *Don Quixote*, *Chopiniana* and *Autumn Leaves* (the last her own creation). She was also a gifted sculptor.

Franks, A. H. (ed.), *Pavlova*. 1956.

**Paxton, Sir Joseph** (1806–1865). English gardener and architect. As superintendent of the Duke of Devonshire's gardens at Chatsworth he gained experience in the construction of large conservatories, which led to his commission to design the Crystal Palace for the Great Exhibition (1851), a landmark in the development of structural steel architecture. He was knighted for this work. The Crystal Palace, originally built in Hyde Park, was re-erected in Sydenham (1853–54) and survived until a fire in 1936. Paxton was a Liberal MP 1854–65.

Chadwick, C. F., *The Works of Sir Joseph Paxton*. 1966.

**Payette, Juliet** (1963– ). Canadian engineer, astronaut, linguist, administrator, born in Montréal. She flew on two space missions (1999, 2009), was chief astronaut for the Canadian Space Agency 2000–07, CEO of the Montréal Science Centre 2011–14, an active board member and Governor-General of Canada 2017–21, resigning after accusations of bullying.

**Paz, Octavio** (1914–1998). Mexican poet, essayist and diplomat. He held minor diplomatic posts in Paris and Tokyo, became Ambassador to India 1962–68 and held chairs at Cambridge 1970–71 and Harvard 1971–72. He won the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1990 'for impassioned writing with wide horizons, characterised by sensuous intelligence and humanistic integrity'. His books include *One Earth*, *Four or Five Worlds* (1985), *Convergences* (1987) and *Eagle and Sun* (1990).

**Peabody, George** (1795–1869). American banker and philanthropist, born in Danvers, Massachusetts. Having made a fortune as a wholesaler in the US, he settled in London (1837) as a merchant banker. His benefactions included over £1 million for educational purposes in the US and £500,000 for working class flats in London. Praised by \*Gladstone and Victor \*Hugo, he declined (understandably) the offer of a British baronetcy. He refused honours, but on his death a British battleship conveyed his body to America where the name of his birth place, Danvers, Massachusetts, was changed to Peabody.

**Peacock, Andrew Sharp** (1939–2021). Australian Liberal politician. A lawyer, he was a Member of the House of Representatives 1966–94, a minister 1969–72, 1975–81 and 1982–83, Foreign Minister 1975–80, and Leader of the Liberal Opposition 1983–85, following Malcolm \*Fraser's defeat by Labor, Deputy Leader 1987–89, and Leader again 1989–90. He was Ambassador to the US 1997–99.

**Peacock, Thomas Love** (1785–1866). English novelist and poet. He worked for the East India Company from 1809. His conversational novels, interspersed with lyrics, satirise contemporary writers, philosophers and literary fashions. They include *Headlong Hall* (1816), *Melincourt* (1817), *Nightmare Abbey* (1818), *Crotchet Castle* (1831)

and *Gryll Grange*, which did not appear until 1860. He also wrote two romances, *Maid Marian* (1822) and *The Misfortunes of Elphin* (1829). Peacock was a close friend of \*Shelley (from 1814) and his executor. His *Memorials of Shelley*, edited by H. Brett Smith, appeared in 1909. One of Peacock's four daughters was George \*Meredith's first wife.

Mills, H., *Peacock*. 1969.

**Peale, Charles Willson** (1741–1827). American painter and gallery director. He opened his own museum in Philadelphia and painted over 1,000 portraits in neo-classical style, including \*Franklin, \*Washington, \*Adams and \*Jefferson. His sons **Raphaelle**, **Rembrandt** and **Titian** were also painters. The last was also a naturalist who explored the Upper Missouri, Florida and the South Seas.

**Pears, Sir Peter Neville Luard** (1910–1986). English concert and opera singer. A high tenor with superb diction, he was the lifelong partner and interpreter of Benjamin \*Britten. He made his stage debut in 1942 and later sang at Covent Garden, at Sadler's Wells and with the English Opera Group. He was (with Britten) co-founder of the Aldeburgh Festival (1948) and created principal roles in 13 of Britten's operas, notably *Peter Grimes* (1945). He was knighted in 1978.

**Pearse, Pádraig Anraí** (né Patrick Henry Pearse) (1879–1916). Irish teacher, barrister, poet and republican leader, born in Dublin. He combined enthusiasm for the revival of Gaelic with a political extremism which induced him to join the Irish Republican Brotherhood and the nationalist Irish Volunteers (1913–16). He was chosen as President of the provisional republican government proclaimed during the Easter Rising (1916), and after its suppression was court-martialled and shot. He was a man of the highest ability and integrity.

**Pearse, Richard William** (1877–1953). New Zealand pioneer aviator. A self-educated farmer, he built a monoplane at Waitohi, South Island, and it is possible that he succeeded in a short manned flight on 31 March 1903, some eight months before the \*Wright Brothers. He was derided as a crank and became easily discouraged, concluding that the Wrights would have much easier access to finance and engineering support. He abandoned aviation and later became a recluse.

Ogilvie, G., *The Riddle of Richard Pearse*. 1973.

**Pearson, Karl** *see* **Galton, Sir Francis**

**Pearson, Lester Bowles** ('Mike') (1897–1972). Canadian politician. After lecturing in history at Toronto University he entered the Department of External Affairs, was Ambassador in Washington 1945–46 and Secretary of State for External Affairs 1948–57. He was President of the United Nations General Assembly 1952–53, Leader of the Liberal

Opposition 1958–63 and Prime Minister 1963–68. His diplomacy, especially his attempts to settle the Suez crisis (1956), won him the Nobel Prize for Peace (1957). He received the OM in 1968.

Pearson, L. B., *The Four Faces of Peace*. 1964.

**Peary, Robert Edwin** (1856–1920). American Arctic explorer. He joined the US navy (1881) and an expedition to Greenland roused his interest in the problem of reaching the North Pole. In 1891–92 he crossed the Greenland ice pack from west to east and discovered what is now Peary Land. Subsequently (on leave from the navy) he made repeated expeditions with his aim always in view, and finally, on 6 April 1909, he and Matthew \*Hensen, after a dangerous sledge journey, became the first explorers to reach the Pole. His book *The North Pole* (1910) describes the achievement but minimises Hensen's role. (His rival Frederick Albert \*Cook claimed to have beaten him to the Pole, in 1908.) Peary was promoted to Rear Admiral in 1911.

**Peckinpah, Sam** (1926–1984). American film director. His major films include *The Wild Bunch* (1969) and *Straw Dogs* (1971) which aroused considerable controversy over their explicit violence.

**Pedro I** (known as 'the Cruel', or 'the Just') (1334–1369). King of Castile and León 1350–69. The only legitimate son of Alfonso XI, and the last ruler of the house of Ivrea, he had to contend with the implacable enmity of his illegitimate half-brothers. Three were disposed of by assassination, but the most important, Enrique of Trastámara, who had taken refuge in France, returned with a mercenary army. Pedro fled to Gascony and enlisted the support of the English Black Prince, who won a great victory at Najera but retired in disgust at Pedro's vengeful atrocities. Once more Enrique invaded Castile, and after his victory at Montiel (1369), the two half-brothers met in single combat and Pedro was killed.

**Pedro I** (Pedro de Alcântara Francisco António João Carlos Xavier de Paula Miguel Rafael Joaquim José Gonzaga Pascoal Cipriano Serafim d'Orléans-Bragança) (1798–1834). Emperor of Brazil 1822–31, and (as **Pedro IV**) King of Portugal 1826. During the Peninsular War, when Portugal was invaded by \*Napoleon's armies, his father, \*João VI, and other members of the royal family took refuge in the Portuguese colony of Brazil. When João returned to Europe (1821) Pedro was left as regent, but, when Brazil resisted Portuguese efforts to reimpose a colonial relationship, Pedro put himself at the head of the independence party, and a declaration, the 'Grito do Ipiranga' (1822), gave independence to Brazil with himself as first emperor. He granted a constitution (1826) and in the same year, on his father's death, he also became King of Portugal. Shortly after, however, he renounced the Portuguese crown in favour of his daughter \*Maria. His involvement in the affairs of Portugal brought him unpopularity in

Brazil, and in 1831 he abdicated in favour of his son \*Pedro II. He then returned to Europe and in 1832, with the help of the English naval forces, defeated the Miguelist faction in Portugal which had driven out Maria, and re-established her as Queen.

Haring, C. H., *Empire in Brazil: a New World Experiment with Monarchy*. 1958.

**Pedro II** (Pedro de Alcântara João Carlos Leopoldo Salvador Bibiano Francisco Xavier de Paula Leocádio Miguel Gabriel Rafael Gonzaga d'Orléans-Bragança) (1825–1891). Emperor of Brazil 1831–89. Though only 16 when he assumed power after a period of troubled regency, Pedro proved himself a liberal-minded constitutional ruler and he showed skill in reconciling the political disputes of the various parties. He strongly opposed the death penalty. In 1870 a long war with Paraguay ended successfully but the heavy Brazilian losses caused recriminations. The army's support for the regime weakened and a republican party appeared. The landed gentry, the emperor's strongest supporters, were offended by extensions of the franchise, and his position became untenable in 1888 when, during his absence on a trip to Europe, his daughter freed the slaves without compensating the owners. After a bloodless revolution Pedro retired to Europe (1889). He died in Paris and was reburied in Petropolis (1939).

Barman, R. J., *Citizen Emperor: Pedro II and the Making of Brazil 1825–1891*. 1999.

**Peel, Sir Robert, 2nd Baronet** (1788–1850). English politician, born in Lancashire. Son of a rich cotton manufacturer, he was a friend of \*Byron at Harrow and distinguished himself at Oxford. A Tory MP 1809–50, first elected at 21, at 24 he became Chief Secretary for Ireland 1812–18, where Daniel \*O'Connell was his powerful opponent. As Home Secretary 1822–27, 1828–30, his terms of office were made famous by the creation of the Metropolitan police force (whose members were nicknamed after him 'peelers' or 'bobbies'). Though he had worked in harmony with \*Canning, he resigned with the Duke of \*Wellington (1827) as a protest against Roman Catholic emancipation, which, however, they both accepted and passed through parliament when they returned to office in the same year after Canning's death. By the election following \*George IV's death, the Whigs returned to power and passed the famous parliamentary Reform Act (1832) against Peel's opposition. He succeeded Wellington as Tory leader, and served twice as Prime Minister 1834–35, 1841–46. When \*Melbourne resigned (May 1839) Peel's return to office was delayed by Queen Victoria's refusal to part with her ladies of the bedchamber (all Whigs). After the election of 1841 Peel became Prime Minister with a useful majority, and in defiance of his Tory supporters, gradually became a convert to free trade. His first step was to introduce a sliding scale by which the duty on corn varied in accordance with the price at home, the lost revenue

being replaced by an income tax of 7d. in the pound. But when the potato blight in Ireland, followed by famine, made the cheapest possible corn an urgent necessity in Peel's opinion, he introduced (1846) his measure for Corn Law repeal. A Party split was the inevitable result and, though Peel pushed the act through with Whig support, he was forced to resign. He was never again in office but his prestige in the House of Commons and his popularity in the country remained undiminished. He died as a result of being thrown from his horse on Constitution Hill. In public life Peel appeared cold and austere, and O'Connell remarked, 'His smile was like the silver plate on a coffin'. Although highly competent, he was never a good Party man. In private he led an ideally happy domestic life with his wife (née Julia Floyd) and seven children, and he was a genial and generous friend.

Gash, N., *Sir Robert Peel*. 1972; Evans, E. J., *Sir Robert Peel*. 2006; Gaunt, R. A., *Sir Robert Peel*. 2007; Hurd, D., *Robert Peel: A Biography*. 2007.

**Péguy, Charles** (Pierre) (1873–1914). French poet and publisher. He combined active socialism with Catholicism and sincere patriotism, revealed in the drama *Jeanne d'Arc* (1897), which he wrote in pseudonymous collaboration with his friend Marcel Baudouin. He founded (1900) the journal *Cahiers de la Quinzaine*, in which he published his own works and those of other writers, several of whom, e.g. Romain \*Rolland, subsequently became important. Péguy's later works include *Le Mystère de la charité de Jeanne d'Arc* (1910) and *La Tapisserie de Notre Dame* (1913). He was killed in World War I.

Wilson, N., *Charles Péguy*. 1965.

**Pei, I(eoh) M(ing)** (1917–2019). American architect, born in Canton. In the US from 1935, he taught at Harvard and won international recognition with a series of important buildings in Boston—the Christian Science Church Centre, the west wing of the Museum of Fine Arts, the Kennedy Memorial Library (Harvard), and (with Henry Cobb) the John Hancock Tower. He designed the east wing of the National Gallery in Washington, the Place Ville-Marie in Montréal and the Bank of China building, Hong Kong. His glass and steel Pyramide in the Cour Napoléon at the Louvre, opened in 1989, illuminates and coordinates the underground visitors' reception area and the Carrousel (shops and restaurants).

Wiseman, C., *I.M. Pei*. 1990.

**Peierls, Sir Rudolf Ernest** (1905–1995). German-Jewish-British physicist, born in Berlin. He studied in Zürich and Cambridge, remaining in England after \*Hitler's regime took power. He worked on nuclear physics with James \*Chadwick, and with Otto \*Frisch proposed a specific model for an atomic bomb, worked at Los Alamos 1943–45, and personally assembled

the parts for the Hiroshima bomb. (Klaus \*Fuchs was his assistant.) He held chairs at Birmingham and Oxford and was a founder of the Pugwash movement.

Peierls, R., *Bird of Passage*. 1985.

**Peirce, Charles Sanders** (1839–1914). American philosopher, born in Cambridge, Massachusetts. Son of Benjamin Peirce, professor of mathematics and astronomy at Harvard, he studied mathematics, physics and chemistry, spending much of his life in the US Government Coast and Geodetic Survey. Because of his unconventionality he obtained no proper academic recognition, and most of his writing became available only after his death. He is best known for his view of the meaning of concepts: our idea of something is made up of notions of that thing's effects. William \*James and others turned this 'pragmatic maxim' into the dubious theory ('pragmatism') that the test of a statement's truth is whether or not it has (good) effects, but this extension was disdained by Peirce. His own theory of truth, which he named 'pragmatism' to distinguish it from James' version, involved the verification of hypotheses by the scientific community.

Brent, J., *Charles Sanders Peirce: A Life*. 1993.

**Peisistratus** (c.600–528 BCE). Athenian tyrant. He fought successfully against Megara, then by claiming that his wife was threatened he obtained a bodyguard, with which (c.560) he seized the Acropolis. He was twice expelled but as the owner of gold and silver mines he was able to hire mercenaries to ensure his victory over his opponents. He ruled with wisdom and success and, by using his own fortune and money confiscated from his adversaries, helped the farmers, and did much to assist the poor, as well as fortifying and beautifying Athens. He is traditionally held to have been the first to collect \*Homer's poems. He was succeeded by his sons Hippias and Hipparchus.

Andrewes, A., *The Greek Tyrants*. 1956.

**Pelagius** (c.360–c.418). British (or Irish?) theologian. The name may be a Greek form of the Celtic name Morgan ('Sea-born'). He settled in Rome about 380 and there met his impetuous disciple **Caelestius**, a lawyer. When the Visigoths sacked Rome in 410 they both left for Carthage but made powerful enemies of (St) \*Augustine of Hippo and (St) \*Jerome by attacking the doctrine of original sin in *De libero arbitrio* ('On Free Will') in 416. Central to the Pelagian controversy was the affirmation that Adam would have died whether or not he had sinned, and that each of his descendants is born as innocent as he. He further held that it is at least theoretically possible for a man to live without sin, solely by his own free will, a doctrine that seemed to diminish the need for God's grace. Pelagianism was first officially condemned in 416 and more formally at the Councils

of Carthage and Ephesus (418 and 431). Pelagius was banished from Rome (418) and probably died in Palestine.

Evans, R. F., *Pelagius*. 1968.

**Pelé** (real name Edison Arantes de Nascimento) (1940– ). Brazilian soccer player. He played as an inside centre-left for the Santos Football Club 1956–74, the Brazilian national team 1956–77 and the New York Cosmos 1975–77. He appeared in the film *Escape to Victory* (1981). Generally regarded as the greatest player in the history of football, he won many awards including a KBE from the UK in 1997.

**Pelham, Henry** (1694–1754). English Whig politician, born in Sussex. Younger brother of the Duke of Newcastle, educated at Oxford, he was an MP 1717–54, and worked very closely with Robert Walpole as Secretary at War 1724–30 and Paymaster of the Forces 1730–43. After Walpole's fall in 1742, the Earl of Wilmington was briefly head of the government until he died in 1743. Pelham then became, in effect, Prime Minister of Great Britain 1743–46 and, after a two day break, 1746–54, until his death. (The term 'Prime Minister' was not official; technically, he was First Lord of the Treasury, and also Chancellor of the Exchequer.) Shrewd use of patronage meant that no administration could exist without the Pelhams. They distrusted the continental policies of the brilliant John Carteret (Earl of Granville), manoeuvred him out of government in 1746 and, over George II's objections, insisted on appointing Pitt the Elder to office. More than eight years of efficient and unspectacular rule followed. Major events during Pelham's government were the Jacobite rising (1745) and adopting the Gregorian calendar for Great Britain and North America (1752). Pelham died relatively poor. The Duke of Newcastle, less intelligent, and with whom he sometimes clashed, succeeded Pelham as Prime Minister.

Owen, J. B., *Rise of the Pelhams*. 1971.

**Pell, George** (1941– ). Australian cardinal, born in Ballarat. Educated in Ballarat and Oxford, he was Archbishop of Melbourne 1996–2001, of Sydney 2001–14, and created cardinal in 2003. A firm advocate of Roman supremacy in the church, conservative in faith and morals, less so in economics, he supported a republic, was a 'climate change' sceptic and came under attack for lacking empathy with victims of clerical sexual abuse. He became Prefect of the Secretariat for the Economy at the Vatican 2014–18. In December 2018 he was convicted on five charges of child sexual abuse and sentenced to six years imprisonment. The verdict was upheld by Victoria's Court of Appeal, but quashed by the High Court (April 2020).

**Pelosi, Nancy Patricia** (née D'Alesandro) (1940– ). American Democratic politician, born in Baltimore. Member of the US House of Representatives (from

California) 1987– , she became the first woman to be Congressional leader of a major party 2002–22, the first elected as Speaker of the House 2007–11 and to be re-elected 2019–23.

**Pembroke, Richard de Clare** (or FitzGilbert), **2nd Earl of** (known as 'Strongbow') (c.1130–1176). Anglo-Norman adventurer. He led an expedition into Ireland (1169) and married Eva, the daughter of the deposed Diarmid (Dermot) of Leinster, whose kingdom he recovered. On his father-in-law's death (1171), he ruled Leinster, for which he paid homage to Henry II of England, thus inaugurating the long and unhappy period of English rule in Ireland. His son-in-law William Marshal became Earl of Pembroke in a second creation.

**Pence, Mike** (Michael Richard) (1957– ). American Republican politician. A Christian conservative, he was a Congressman 2001–13, Governor of Indiana 2013–17 and Vice President of the US 2017–21, serving under Donald Trump. On 6 January 2021 he presided in the Senate when the Electoral College votes were counted, was denounced by Trump, becoming a target of the mobs that attacked the Capitol, and declared Biden elected. Pence was attacked by Trump's supporters but he was careful not to reciprocate, positioning himself for a potential Presidential candidature in 2024.

**Penda of Mercia** (c.606–655). King of Mercia 626–55. An Anglo-Saxon, successor of Cearl, he gradually built up the strength of his kingdom and finally (633) allied himself with the Christian Welsh king Cadwallon to defeat and kill Edwin of Northumbria and so make Mercia independent. For a time Penda was the most powerful king in England, but Northumbria reasserted its power when Oswald's brother Oswy (Oswiu) defeated and killed Penda in a battle near Leeds.

**Penderecki, Krzysztof Eugeniusz** (1933–2020). Polish composer, born in Debiça. He won international recognition with his *Threnody for the Victims of Hiroshima* (1960), followed by *St Luke Passion* (1966), an eclectic work showing the influence of Monteverdi and Bach, but using an atonal style. He composed eight symphonies, two violin concertos, four operas and *Polish Requiem* (1984).

**Penfield, Wilder Graves** (1891–1976). Canadian neurosurgeon, born in the US. A Rhodes Scholar at Oxford, he studied under Osler and Sherrington, and worked in Montréal from 1926. His operations on epileptics led to his 'mapping' brain areas responsible for memory, sensory and motor functions. He was a prolific writer on the mechanism of the brain and received the OM in 1953. He also wrote two novels and an autobiography *No Man Alone. A Surgeon's Life* (published posthumously, 1977).



**Penn, William** (1644–1718). English Quaker and founder of Pennsylvania, born in London. He was the son of **Admiral Sir William Penn** (1621–1670), originally a supporter of \*Cromwell, who lent the future \*Charles II £16,000 and helped return him from exile. The younger Penn adopted the beliefs of the Society of Friends (Quakers), which he expounded in *The Sandy Foundation Shaken* (1668), for which he was confined in the Tower of London, and *No Cross, No Crown* (1669). His advocacy of toleration for all religions, Quakers, Lutherans, Calvinists, Amish, Catholics, Jews alike, attracted support from the future \*James II, then Duke of York. Penn visited the New World and, after petitioning Charles II for a grant of land to repay the debt to his father, was given ownership of 120,000 square kilometres, which became 'the proprietary colony of Pennsylvania' (named for his father). He returned to America, founded Philadelphia ('the city of brotherly love') and was governor (mostly absentee) 1682–92. He spent only four years in the new colony (1682–84; 1699–1701); however, his guarantee of religious toleration resulted in the colony being settled by refugees from persecution in England, Holland and Germany. Penn drew up a remarkably liberal Constitution, in which the governor could rule only by consent, the legislature was chosen by ballot and, most important of all, toleration was enjoined for all forms of religion compatible with Christianity. Penn's later years were clouded by religious disputes and financial difficulties, but he remains one of the most practical idealists of his time. He wrote extensively on theological matters and from time to time was an itinerant preacher.

Dunn, M. D., *William Penn: Politics and Conscience*. 1967.

**Penney, William George, Baron Penney** (1909–1991). English mathematician and physicist, born in Gibraltar. After teaching mathematics at the Imperial College of Science and Technology, London 1935–44, he directed armament research in the Ministry of Supply 1946–52. In 1953 he superintended the testing at Woomera, Australia, of the second British atomic bomb, was awarded the KBE, and became director of the nuclear weapons establishment at Aldermaston, Berks. He was Chairman of the United Kingdom Atomic Energy Authority 1964–67 and Rector of Imperial College 1967–73. He received the OM in 1969.

**Penrose, Sir Roger** (1931– ). English mathematical physicist, born in Colchester. Educated at London and Cambridge, as Rouse Ball Professor of Mathematics at Oxford 1973–98, he became deeply involved in cosmology and worked with Stephen \*Hawking. Describing himself as 'a recreational mathematician', he wrote *The Emperor's New Mind* (1989) and *Shadows of the Mind* (1995). He was awarded the OM in 2000 and the Copley Medal in 2008 and shared the Nobel Prize for Physics in 2020 for his work on the formation of black holes.

**Penzias, Arno Allan** (1933– ). American radioastronomer, born in Germany. He worked for the Bell Telephone Laboratories 1961 and with **Robert Woodrow Wilson** (1936– ) continued research, begun by Karl \*Jansky, into the origins of background interference to radio signals. After all specific sources had been eliminated, a weak, evenly spread signal was detected which they concluded came from the universe at large and was decisive evidence for the 'big bang' theory. Penzias and Wilson shared the 1978 Nobel Prize for Physics with Pyotr \*Kapitza.

Bernstein, J., *Three Degrees Above Zero*. 1984.

**Pepin** (or **Pippin**). Frankish family of administrators. They served the Merovingian kings and were the ancestors of \*Charlemagne and the Carolingian dynasty. **Pepin I** (d.640) and his grandson **Pepin II** (d.714) were administrators with the title 'mayor of the palace'. The son of \*Charles Martel, **Pepin III** ('the Short') (714/5–768) took the decisive step of deposing the Merovingian king \*Childeric III and assuming the royal title. By helping the pope to regain the papal territories he obtained consecration, and his victories over the Arabs in France enabled him to hand over an enlarged and strengthened kingdom to his son Charlemagne.

Wallace-Hadrill, J. M., *The Barbarian West 400–1000*. 3rd ed. 1967.

**Pepys, Samuel** (1633–1703). English diarist and public servant, born in London. During the Dutch War 1664–67, when his duties in the Admiralty were mainly concerned with supply, he waged a continuous struggle with corrupt officials and dishonest contractors. In the Admiralty he rose to be Secretary to the Commission 1673–79 and 1684–89, where he worked with great industry and efficiency. He served as MP 1673–79, 1679, 1685–87. One of many falsely accused (1679) in the Popish plot (Titus \*Oates), he was briefly imprisoned in the Tower of London, and not restored to his post until 1684. A friend of \*Wren, \*Newton and \*Dryden, Pepys was President of the Royal Society 1684–86.

His famous diary covers the years 1660–69. The gossip and scandal of \*Charles II's court, theatrical life, and public events (e.g. the Plague, the sailing up the Thames by the enemy Dutch fleet and the Great Fire) are all vividly recorded. The diary also describes his own domestic life with his lively wife, **Elizabeth St Michel**, daughter of a Huguenot refugee, who was only 15 when he married her (1655). Throughout his constant philanderings, their mutual jealousies and ardent reconciliations, he and his wife, 'poor wretch', never ceased to be in love. The diary, written in Thomas Shelton's system of short-hand (tachygraphy), lay unread in the library of Magdalen College, Cambridge. Successful publication (1818) of John \*Evelyn's diaries revived interest in Pepys. Transcribed by John Smith, bawdlerised sections of the diary were published in 1825. About 90 per cent appeared in the edition of H.

B. Wheatley, published 1893–99. The complete work, transcribed by William Matthews, edited by Robert Latham, was published in 11 volumes 1970–83.

Ollard, R., *Pepys*. 1974; Latham, R. (ed.), *Shorter Pepys*. 1985.

**Perahia, Murray** (1947– ). American pianist and conductor, born in New York. Of Spanish Sephardic ancestry, he became a friend of Vladimir \*Horowitz (although their styles were radically different), recorded all \*Mozart's piano works and toured extensively. He suffered a series of hand injuries and withdrew from playing for several years, but turned to conducting. Awarded an Hon. KBE (2004), he became a specialist in \*Bach, \*Beethoven, \*Schubert and \*Chopin.

**Perceval, Spencer** (1762–1812). British Tory politician and barrister. Educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, he entered parliament in 1796 and with the support of \*Pitt had risen to be Attorney-General when Pitt died (1806). He served as Chancellor of the Exchequer under Portland 1807–09 and succeeded him as Prime Minister 1809–12. He was shot by a lunatic, John Bellingham, in the lobby of the House of Commons, the only British Prime Minister ever assassinated.

**Percy, Sir Henry** (known as 'Hotspur') (1364–1403). English nobleman. His Norman family held lordships in the north from 1067 and his father, **Henry Percy, 1st Earl of Northumberland** (1342–1408) was a supporter of \*Wyclif. 'Hotspur' had already gained renown as hero of the Battle of Otterburn (1388) against the Scots when supporting his father in his quarrel with \*Henry IV, he joined a conspiracy to replace the king by a rival claimant, Edmund, Earl of March. Intercepted on his way to join the Welsh rebel leader Owen \*Glendower, he was killed in the battle of Shrewsbury.

**Perec, Georges** (1936–1982). French novelist, born in Paris. Of Polish-Jewish descent, he became an archivist in a medical research laboratory and joined a group of literary experimenters, OuLiPo (Ouvroir de Littérature Potentielle). His first novel, *Les Choses* (1965, translated as *Things*, 1990) won the Prix Renaudot. *W ou le Souvenir d'enfance* (1975, *W or The Memory of Childhood* 1989) presents, in alternating chapters, an autobiographical account of a young man of uncertain identity whose parents are lost in war and the history of a totalitarian state devoted to the Olympic ideal. His masterpiece *La Vie mode d'emploi* (1978, superbly translated by David Bellos as *Life A User's Manual*, 1987) is a complex and encyclopaedic jigsaw of life in an apartment block in the XVIIth arrondissement of Paris. His last novel, *53 Days*, partly written in Brisbane in 1981, was published incomplete in 1989 (English translation, 1992). Perec received great posthumous literary acclaim.

Bellos, D., *Georges Perec: A Life in words*. 1993.

**Perelman, S(idney) J(oseph)** (1904–1979). American humorist, born in New York. He wrote scripts for the \*Marx Brothers' films *Monkey Business* and *Horse Feathers*, was a regular contributor to the *New Yorker* from 1931 until his death, produced several travel books and won a 1956 Academy Award for his *Around the World in 80 Days*. He had a genius for parody and a mastery of language comparable to \*Joyce and \*Nabokov.

Herrmann, D., *S. J. Perelman*. 1986.

**Peres, Shimon** (né Szymon Perski) (1923–2016). Israeli Labour politician, born in Poland. He migrated to Palestine in 1934 and studied in the US (NYU and Harvard). He served in the Knesset 1959–2006, 2006–07, and was Minister of Defence 1974–77, Labour Leader 1977–92, 1995–96, 2003–05, Prime Minister in a 'national unity' coalition 1984–86 and Foreign Minister 1986, 1992–95, 2001–03, 2004–07. Yasser \*Arafat, Itzhak \*Rabin and Peres shared the 1994 Nobel Peace Prize. After Rabin's assassination he became Prime Minister again 1995–96, until his narrow defeat by Binyamin \*Netanyahu. He served as a minister under Ehud \*Barak and was unexpectedly defeated for the presidency in 2000. Defeated as Labour Leader in November 2005, he joined \*Sharon's new Kadima Party. He became President of Israel 2007–14. He was a cousin of the actor Lauren Bacall and received a GCMG in 2008 from the UK and the US Presidential Medal of Freedom in 2012.

**Perez de Cuellar, Javier** (1920–2020). Peruvian diplomat. He was permanent delegate to the United Nations 1971–75, Undersecretary-General 1979–81 and succeeded Kurt \*Waldheim as Secretary-General 1982–91. He contested the presidency of Peru against Alberto \*Fujimori in 1995 but on his fall became Prime Minister 2000–01.

**Pérez Galdós, Benito** (1843–1920). Spanish writer, born in the Canary Islands. Considered the greatest Spanish novelist since \*Cervantes, in his 46 *Episodios nacionales* (1873–1912) he followed a plan of relating important historical events to ordinary lives. In his extensive series of *Novelas españolas contemporáneas* he throws into dramatic relief the incompatibles of 19th-century life and thought, e.g. liberalism and absolutism, science and imagination, progress and tradition, in others (e.g. the *Torquemada* series) he dramatises the parallel conflicts in the individual conscience. Many of his plays are dramatised versions of his novels.

Varey, J. E. (ed.), *Galdós Studies*. 1970.

**Peri, Jacopo** (1561–1633). Italian composer, born in Rome. He worked for the \*Medici in Florence and composed *Dafne* (1598), probably the first opera, now lost. *Euridice* (1600), based on the Orpheus legend, is occasionally performed, but Peri was unlucky to have been overtaken by \*Monteverdi.

**Pergolesi, Giovanni Battista** (1710–1736). Italian composer. He wrote religious music (e.g. the famous *Stabat Mater* for female voices and strings), instrumental pieces and operas (serious and comic) but is best known for the enormously successful *La Serva Padrona* (1733), which, though it came to be performed as a comic opera, was initially a series of intermezzi between the acts of his serious opera *Il Prigionier superbo*. Tuberculosis and personal disappointments clouded his short life.

**Pericles** (c.495–429 BCE). Athenian statesman. Son of Xanthippos and Agriote, both from powerful families, he was educated by leading thinkers, e.g. \*Anaxagoras. Though aloof in manner and never courting popularity, politically he was a radical and opposed the ruling oligarchy headed by the Commander-in-Chief, Kimon (c.510–450 BCE) and backed by the Spartans. A rift between the latter and Kimon enabled Pericles to reorient the constitution by depriving the Areopagus (the conservative council of ex-magistrates) of its power (462) and securing the ostracism of Kimon (461). A change in foreign policy followed, Athens and Sparta parted company and thereafter were either at war or enjoying uneasy peace. Peace too was made with Persia, and most of the states that comprised the Delian League against Persia were gradually converted under the guidance of Pericles, who dominated the Athenian assembly until his death, into a maritime empire under Athenian control. He even secured the acceptance of a proposal that the League funds collected for the war should be used not only for policing the seas but for rebuilding and beautifying Athens, which had suffered much during the Persian invasion. Under his guidance, and through his patronage of such artists as the great \*Phidias, Athens grew in a few years into the most beautiful city in the world: the Parthenon, the Propylaea and the Odeum being among the buildings constructed at this time. About 445, he divorced his first wife and then lived with **Aspasia of Miletus** (d.c. 400 BCE), a friend of \*Socrates and brilliant conversationalist, but deeply unpopular in Athens.

There was mounting jealousy of Athens' growing strength. Some of the allies, including Samos (which was decisively crushed), revolted, and the Spartans invaded Attica (446) but were bribed by Pericles to withdraw and renew the truce. The crisis was thus delayed until 433 when Pericles, feeling that the time was ripe for a final trial of strength, induced the assembly to accept the plea of Corcyra (Corfu) for an alliance against Sparta's ally Corinth. This provoked the Peloponnesian War with Sparta (which lasted with intervals from 431 to 404 and eventually brought about the Athenian Empire's downfall). His celebrated Funeral Oration for the war dead, recorded (and presumably edited) by \*Thucydides, was much admired, and influenced \*Lincoln's Gettysburg Address. Pericles' death was caused by the great plague of 430, during which a quarter of the population died.

His son by Aspasia, **Pericles the Younger** (c.445–406 BCE) was a strategos (general), executed for failure to rescue survivors of the Battle of Arginusae.

The play *Pericles, Prince of Tyre* (c.1608), partly by \*Shakespeare, is not about the Athenian Pericles.

Burn, A. R., *Pericles and Athens*. 1970; Kagan, D., *Pericles of Athens and the Birth of Democracy*. 1991; Aird, H., *Pericles: The Rise and Fall of Athenian Democracy*. 2004.

**Perkin, Sir William Henry** (1838–1907). English chemist. While attempting to synthesise quinine when he was only 18, he discovered the first aniline dye, which he named 'mauve'. The commercial application of his discovery was pursued much more intensively in Germany than in Britain, which had no sizable synthetic dye industry until after World War I. Perkin made a number of discoveries in organic chemistry, the most important of which was probably the 'Perkin synthesis' (1867) for the preparation of unsaturated aromatic acids. He was knighted in 1906. His son, also **William Henry Perkin** (1860–1929), was an organic chemist who worked on the formation of rings of carbon atoms and berberine, and made important contributions to the organisation and extension of chemical studies and facilities at Oxford.

Garfield, S., *Mauve*, 2000.

**Perkins, Frances** (1882–1965). American social worker. A pioneer consumer lobbyist and industrial safety investigator in New York, she was a friend of Franklin D. \*Roosevelt who appointed her Secretary of Labor 1933–45. She was the first US woman cabinet member.

**Perlman, Itzhak** (1945– ). Israeli-American violinist and conductor, born in Tel Aviv. Handicapped by polio from the age of four, he studied in New York, gained early recognition as an exceptional player, toured and recorded extensively, then became an active teacher and conductor. He received the Presidential Medal of Freedom in 2015.

**Perón, Juan Domingo** (1895–1974). Argentinian soldier and politician, born in Lobos. One of a group of discontented officers in the 1930s, he served as military attaché in Rome 1939–41, observing \*Mussolini, then led a revolt (1943) against President Ramón Castillo and became Vice President and War Minister under Edelmiro Farrell. He won favour with labour unions by decrees that granted social welfare benefits. Briefly imprisoned in 1946 he was released following labour demonstrations largely organised by his wife Eva, and in the general election of 1946 was elected President by an overwhelming majority. For the next nine years (he was re-elected in 1951) he ruled as a dictator backed by the militant support of the industrial workers who were delighted with his policy ('peronismo'), which was in essence to favour the workers at the expense of other classes and fiscal

stability. From 1952 Perón had increasing difficulty in managing the country and was foolish enough to provoke the antagonism of the Roman Catholic Church. This, together with the chaos caused by inflation, provoked the revolt of the army and navy (1955) which led to his exile. He remained in exile for 18 years but in 1973 he returned to Argentina and assumed the presidency. At his death the country was in political chaos.

His second wife **Eva Perón** (née María Eva Duarte), generally known as 'Evita' (1919–1952), was a stage and radio actor. She threw her vast energy and ambition on the side of Perón whom she married in 1945. She skilfully wooed the support of Argentinian women, especially through the Eva Perón Social Aid Foundation for dispensing help to the poor. Her death from cancer led to extraordinary public demonstrations of grief (a mood captured in Andrew \*Lloyd Webber's 1976 musical *Evita*). After periods refrigerated in Buenos Aires, Milan and Madrid her body was finally interred in Buenos Aires in 1976. Perón's third wife, **Isabel Martínez de Perón** (née María Estela Martínez Cartas) (1931– ), was a folk and cabaret dancer when he married her in 1961. Elected as Vice President in 1973, she succeeded as President on his death (1974) until deposed by the army (1976).

Ferns, H. S. *Argentina*. 1969; Rock, D. (ed.), *Argentina in the Twentieth Century*. 1975.

**Perot, H(enry) Ross** (1930–2019). American industrialist, born in Texarkana. Educated at the US Naval Academy, he served with the navy and with IBM before forming Electronic Data Systems in 1962, and was its Chief Executive until 1986. A billionaire, he attracted international interest by securing the release of EDS personnel held prisoner in Iran and for attempting to find missing US military personnel in Vietnam. In 1992 he ran as an independent candidate for president, withdrew, then re-entered, securing 19 per cent of the vote and contributing to the defeat of President George H. W. \*Bush. He ran for president again in 1996 when his vote fell to 8 per cent.

**Pérotin** [Perotinus Magnus] (c.1160–1205). French composer. His three- and four-part music [organum] for voices, written in Paris, perhaps for Notre Dame, was of tremendous importance in the development of polyphony. He is considered to be the earliest great European composer.

**Perrault, Charles** (1628–1703). French civil servant and writer. The son of a lawyer, he became advisor on art to \*Colbert and was elected (1671) to the Académie française. In his own time he was known in France for his part in the 'quarrel of the ancients and the moderns' in which he championed the moderns in a lengthy controversy with \*Boileau. His greater fame comes from his *Histoires du Contes du temps passe* (1697), a collection of eight traditional fairy stories, among them *Sleeping Beauty*, *Red Riding Hood*, *Blue Beard*, *Puss in Boots* and *Cinderella*, to

which he gave a definitive shape of lasting popularity. They are sometimes called *Mother Goose's Tales* after the secondary title *Contes de ma mère l'Oye* on the frontispiece of the original edition.

**Perret, Auguste** (1874–1954). French architect, born in Brussels. He worked in the Art Deco style, using reinforced concrete. His major works in Paris included apartments in Rue Franklin (1902–04), ferro-concrete structures with large windows, and the Théâtre des Champs-Élysées (1913). His reconstruction of Le Havre after World War II became a World Heritage site. \*Le Corbusier was a protégé.

**Perry, Matthew Calbraith** (1794–1858). American sailor. As commodore of a US squadron he was sent to Japan (1853) by President \*Fillmore to conclude a trade agreement and succeeded in his second attempt in January 1854. In March he signed the Treaty of Kanagawa with the shogun's advisor \*Ii Naosuke, opening up two ports, Shimoda and Hakodate, to the US, ending Japan's isolation from the West since 1642. He received a grant of \$20,000 from Congress, wrote *Narrative of the Expedition of an American Squadron to the China Seas and Japan* (1856) and died in New York.

**Perse, Saint-John** (pen name of Marie René Auguste Alexis Saint-Léger Léger) (1887–1975). French poet and diplomat, born near Guadeloupe. He became Permanent Secretary for Foreign Affairs and was consistently opposed to appeasement. He escaped from Vichy France to the US (1940) where he became an advisor on French affairs to the US administration. His best known poem, *Anabase* (1924), was translated into English by T. S. \*Eliot (1930). Later volumes of poetry include *Exil* (1942), *Vents* (1946), *Amers* (1957) and *Chroniques* (1960). He won the Nobel Prize for Literature (1960) for 'the soaring flight and evocative imagery of his poetry, which in visionary fashion reflects the condition of our times'.

Little, J. R., *Saint-John Perse*. 1973.

**Pershing, John Joseph** (1860–1948). American general, born in Missouri. He served in Cuba (1898), the Philippines (1899–1903) and invaded Mexico (1916) to capture Pancho \*Villa. Known as 'Black Jack', he was Commander-in-Chief of the US Expeditionary Force in France 1917–19. He accomplished a remarkable feat in building up a huge army of 38 divisions, which played a critical role in stopping the last German offensive (1918). He was created General of the Armies in 1919. He became Chief of Staff of the US Army 1921–24, and won the Pulitzer Prize in 1932 for his *My Experiences in the World War* (1931).

**Persson, Göran** (1949– ). Swedish Socialist politician. Active in cooperatives and education, he succeeded Ingvar \*Carlsson as Prime Minister of Sweden 1996–2006.

**Pertinax** (Publius Helvius Pertinax Augustus) (126–193 CE). Roman Emperor 193. Son of a freed slave, he became a teacher, then a soldier, provincial governor and senator. After the murder of \*Commodus, he was raised to the purple in the 'Year of the Five Emperors'. He attempted modest reforms but after three months was murdered.

**Pertini, Alessandro** (1896–1990). Italian Socialist politician. A lawyer who was active in the anti-Fascist underground and imprisoned many times between 1930 and 1943, he served in parliament 1946–76, becoming chairman of the Chamber of Deputies 1968–76. As President of Italy 1978–85, he brought dignity, unpretentiousness, warmth and humour to the office and remained a consistent advocate of human rights.

**Perugino, II** (Pietro Vannucci) (c.1445–1523). Italian painter. After working in Florence and Rome he settled at Perugia, where some of his best work remains. His art is characterised by clearly articulated composition, and he is traditionally regarded as the teacher of \*Raphael, and certainly Raphael's early works bear striking Peruginesque qualities. Perugino executed (1481) part of the decorative program in the Sistine Chapel at the Vatican (e.g. the fresco of Christ giving the keys to Peter). He is represented in the National Gallery, London, by a characteristic triptych, originally at Pavia.

Castellanata, C., *Pietro Vannucci Perugino*. 1969.

**Perutz, Max Ferdinand** (1914–2002). British biochemist, born in Vienna. He left Austria in 1936, worked at Cambridge but was interned during World War II as an enemy alien. He directed the Medical Research Council Laboratory (originally Unit) of Molecular Biology at Cambridge 1947–79 and won the 1962 Nobel Prize for Chemistry (with J. C. \*Kendrew) for their use of X-ray diffraction in working out the structure of protein molecules. Awarded the CH (1975), the Copley Medal (1979) and the OM (1988), he was also a perceptive writer on scientific issues e.g. *Is Science Necessary?* (1989).

**Pessoa, Fernando Antonio Nogueira** (1888–1935). Portuguese poet. He grew up in South Africa, returning to Portugal in 1908 and worked as a commercial correspondent. Virtually nothing was published in his lifetime (his experience paralleled \*Cavafy's in Egypt) but he is regarded as the greatest Portuguese poet since \*Camões.

**Pestalozzi, Johann Heinrich** (1746–1827). Swiss educational reformer. Under the influence of \*Rousseau he believed that primary education for the masses (and especially for destitute children) would best achieve its aim of creating useful and virtuous people in the natural surroundings and occupations of agricultural life; he therefore started his first educational experiment in a farm at Neulof, but lack of practical ability led to its failure (1780). He

then gave up for a time his educational experiments to think out a system derived from his experience. His books, especially the social novel *How Gertrude Teaches her Children* (1801), propound his basic theory that education should develop and train all the faculties, not merely the intellect. In 1798 he again opened an orphan school at Stanz but within eight months it was ruined by peasant bigotry. Finally (1805) he established himself at Yverdon, but, though he had many admirers and followers, the attempt to extend his methods to secondary education was one of several mistakes that caused him to die a disappointed man.

**Pétain, (Henri) Philippe** (Omer Benomi Joseph) (1856–1951). French marshal and politician, born in Cauchy-a-la-Tour. He joined the army in 1875, studied at St Cyr and taught at the War College. His promotion was slow because his preference for defensive tactics was unfashionable. During World War I, as Commander in Charge of the Centre Group 1916–17, he became famous for his defence of Verdun (1916). He succeeded (1917) General \*Nivelle as Commander-in-Chief of the French armies in the field. He restored discipline and morale and, under Foch's supreme command, conducted the final victorious offensives. On Armistice Day 1918 he was made a marshal. He suppressed \*Abd el-Krim's nationalist revolt in Morocco 1926–28 and was elected to the Académie française in 1929. He became Ambassador to \*Franco's Government in Spain 1939–40, until his recall in May to become Vice Premier in \*Reynaud's Government. As Premier, June 1940, he negotiated surrender with the Germans, and with the overwhelming support of the Senate and the Chamber of Deputies became 'Chief of the French State' 1940–45. France was divided, and Pétain's authority was confined to the southern unoccupied portion, with its capital at Vichy. Pétain, with his deeply conservative and mystical concept of patriotism, influenced by \*Maurras, detested democracy and the French Revolutionary tradition, and in a senile Bonapartism replaced 'Liberty, Fraternity, Equality' with 'Work, Family, Fatherland'. He collaborated with the Nazis in the persecution of the Jews and the provision of forced labour, but tried to hedge his bets by secret contact with the Allies. He dismissed his premier Pierre \*Laval in December 1940 but was forced to take him back in April 1942 after which Pétain's influence declined, although as late as April 1944 his official visit to Paris was cheered by more than 1,000,000 people. After the allied invasion of France and the recapture of Paris (August 1944), the Germans put Pétain into protective custody at Sigmaringen. On his return to France (1945) he was tried and condemned to death but \*de Gaulle commuted the sentence to life imprisonment.

Griffith, R. M., *Pétain*. 1970; Lottman, H. R., *Philippe Pétain*. 1984; Atkin, N., *Pétain*. 1997; Williams, C., *Pétain*. 2005.

**Peter, St** (Petros in Greek; Shimon in Aramaic) (d.c.64 CE). Christian apostle, born in Bethsaida. The name Peter (from the Greek *petra*, the equivalent of the Aramaic *Kephas*, 'stone') is the Anglicised form of the name given by Jesus to the most prominent of his disciples, Simon, son of Jonah. The interpretation of the sentence 'Thou art Peter and upon this rock I will build my Church' (Matthew xvi:18) has long been the subject of controversy between Roman Catholics (who use the text to assert the supremacy of Peter's Church in Rome) and Protestants.

Peter, a fisherman on the Sea of Galilee, lived with his wife at Capernaum. He and his brother \*Andrew, followers of \*John the Baptist, were among the first disciples of \*Jesus, regarded with special affection. He was the first to hail Jesus as Messiah, but just before the Crucifixion, he denied three times that he had any connexion with Jesus. Peter (as Kephass) was, with \*James and \*John, one of the 'three pillars' of the Christian community. He had an uncomfortable relationship with James and, later, \*Paul. Peter preached in Antioch and became its first bishop. In the controversy concerning the observance of Jewish practices by Gentile converts, Peter appears to have supported the compromise view eventually adopted. The first and second Epistles of St Peter seem to be by different hands: the first, early in date and simple in doctrine, is usually accepted as Peter's work. Both Peter and Paul were in Rome and presumably shared leadership of the Christian community. Acts xxviii locates Paul in Rome but 1 Peter v:13 has only a single reference linking Peter with 'the Church that is at Babylon'. He is said to have lodged for seven years with the family of Pudens. According to Catholic tradition, Peter became first Bishop of Rome and was martyred there during \*Nero's persecution, as was Paul, either in 64 or 67. Presumably crucified, the tradition that he was executed head down is very late. The assumption of Petrine primacy by Church in Rome had a decisive influence on the adoption of Christianity as a state religion by \*Constantine. However, some historians reject the Petrine primacy, arguing that the Church had a collegiate leadership until about 200. Peter is often represented in art holding keys, as the gatekeeper of Heaven. St Peter's is the metropolitan church of the bishopric of Rome. In 324 Constantine began to build a basilica on the presumed site of his burial. This was pulled down in the 15th century and the new St Peter's, designed by \*Bramante, was begun by \*Julius II in 1506. Excavations 1939–49 uncovered a tomb believed to be Peter's.

Culmann, O., *Peter*. 1962; Grant, M., *Saint Peter: A Biography*. 1995.

**Peter (Pyotr) I ('the Great')** (1672–1725). Tsar (Emperor) of Russia 1682–1725. Only son of Tsar \*Aleksei by his second wife, he succeeded Fyodor II, but, after a revolt engineered by his half-sister Sophia, he shared the throne (under her regency) with his feeble minded half-brother Ivan. When

the latter died (1696) Peter assumed full power. Much of his education, mainly in mechanics, navigation, and military science, he had acquired from young foreigners in Moscow whom he made his companions. Two expeditions (1695 and 1696) against the Turks, by which Russia acquired the fortress of Azov and so gained access to the Black Sea from the Don, gave him his first experience of leadership. While travelling abroad (1696–98) he spent much of his time in the shipyards of Holland and England (where he worked for a time at Deptford) working with his own hands and learning shipbuilding and navigation. He also engaged skilled men to go to Russia as instructors. With the aim of modernising Russia he started schools, arranged for textbooks to be translated, edited the first Russian newspaper, opened the first museum; he brought the Church entirely under state control by abolishing the patriarchate and substituting a Holy Synod; and, without abandoning any of his autocratic powers, he turned the administration into an efficient machine, but the poll-tax and other impositions to provide revenue were not popular. Peter's most spectacular undertaking, designed to make the country look westwards, was to build an entirely new capital on swampy ground won from Sweden at the point where the Neva joins the Baltic Sea. Thousands of peasants, many of whom died in the unhealthy conditions, were forcibly enrolled for the task, government offices and palaces sprang up, and nobles and wealthy men were compelled to build houses in the new capital. So, through the Emperor's initiative and genius for planning, the city of St Petersburg became one of the most beautiful cities of the world.

Peter's foreign policy was in line with his westernising policy. In the course of a prolonged war with Sweden (1700–21), defeat after defeat was finally reversed by a great victory over \*Karl XII of Sweden at Poltava (1709) which enabled him to annex parts of Finland, Estonia and Livonia and secure for Russia a commanding influence in the Baltic.

Peter's domestic life was unhappy. Under the influence of his first wife, his son Aleksei joined the faction opposed to his policies and died mysteriously during the investigation into their intrigues. After his divorce, Peter married Catherine, his peasant mistress and ultimate successor, whom he had taken over from his friend and collaborator \*Menshikov. She bore him 12 children, but Peter died without naming an heir.

Kliuchevskii, V., *Peter the Great*. 1965; Anderson, M. S., *Peter the Great*. 1978; De Jorge, A., *Fire and Water*. 1979; Massie, R. K., *Peter the Great*. 1981.

**Peter I** (Petar Karadorđević) (1844–1921) King of Serbia 1903–18 and of the Serbs, Croats and Slovenes 1918–21. As a member of the Karadorđević dynasty, he lived in exile in France and Switzerland and served in the French Foreign Legion. He translated J. S. \*Mill's *On Liberty* in 1868. The assassination (1903) of King \*Alexander of the rival \*Obrenović dynasty

resulted in his election by the Serbian parliament. He experimented with democratic forms, promoted education and created a small but effective army. He secured great territorial advantages for his country at the expense of Turkey and Bulgaria in the two Balkan Wars (1912–13). Meanwhile he had reversed his predecessor's policy by aligning Serbia with Russia instead of Austria, and it was a Serb patriot who murdered the Austrian Archduke \*Franz Ferdinand, sparking off World War I. Peter remained steadfast while his country was overrun and after the final victory, which united the Austro-Hungarian South Slav territories with his own, he was declared King of the Serbs, Croats and Slovenes (Yugoslavia). He was succeeded by his son \*Alexander I. His grandson, **Peter II** (1923–1970), became King in 1934 and was declared of age (1941) when his uncle Paul was deposed from the regency during World War II for acquiescing to \*Hitler's demands. Peter went into exile in London (1941) but in 1945, after the allied victory, Marshal \*Tito abolished the monarchy. Peter worked in New York, became an alcoholic and died in Los Angeles.

**Peter** (Potyr) **II** (1715–1730). Tsar of Russia 1727–30. As the son of Aleksei, \*Peter the Great's dead son, he would have been his grandfather's natural successor had not \*Menshikov secured the proclamation of the emperor's widow as \*Catherine I. On her death Peter II inherited peacefully, but died from smallpox within three years.

**Peter** (Pyotr) **III** (né Karl Pieter Ulrich von Holstein-Gottorp, later Pyotr Fyodorovich Holstein-Gottorp-Romanov) (1728–1762). Tsar of Russia 1761–62. Born in Kiel, his father was Duke of Holstein-Gottorp, his mother Anna Petrovna, daughter of \*Peter the Great. His aunt, the Tsarina \*Elizabeth (Yelizaveta), nominated him as her successor. He made his single contribution to European history when he immediately withdrew Russia from the coalition which at that stage of the Seven Years' War was threatening \*Friedrich II ('the Great') with disaster. He was one of Friedrich's most uncritical admirers, and one of his more harmless hobbies was drilling soldiers dressed in Prussian style. Vain, obstinate and feeble minded, Peter was soon seen to be unfit to rule. A plot was formed by the guards regiment and successfully carried out by which his wife was to be proclaimed Empress as \*Catherine II. Peter abdicated and was killed a week later, allegedly in a drunken brawl.

**Peter the Hermit** (Pierre l'Ermite) (c.1050–c.1115). French monk. One of the many preachers in Germany and France who aroused enthusiasm for the 1st Crusade, in 1096 he led a group of fanatical peasants across Hungary into Asia Minor. By then they had become so unruly that he left them to almost inevitable slaughter at the hands of the Turks. He returned to Constantinople and joined the main

body of crusaders who in 1099 captured Jerusalem. On his return he founded a monastery at Huy (now in Belgium), where he died.

**Peterborough, Charles Mordaunt, 3rd Earl of** (1658?–1735). English adventurer. After naval service in the Mediterranean he was able to render such help to \*William III in his bid for the throne that he received high office and rewards. Under Queen \*Anne he was given joint command (1705), with Sir Clowdisley \*Shovell, of an expedition sent to Spain during the War of the Spanish Succession. He captured Barcelona and made a spectacular victorious march through Catalonia, quarrelling constantly, however, with his associates or allies. Ambassadorial appointments followed, each ended by some irregular or impetuous action. His appointment (1714) as Governor of Minorca was terminated when Queen Anne died in the same year. This closed his official career though he continued to tour Europe as a self-appointed and self-accredited envoy. He was a friend of \*Pope and \*Swift.

**Peters, Winston Raymond** (1946– ). New Zealand politician. Of Scottish-Maori parentage, he worked in Australia, then became a rugby player, MP and National Minister. He founded the New Zealand First Party in 1993 and was Deputy Prime Minister and Treasurer 1997–98 in coalitions under Jim \*Bolger and Jenny \*Shipley. He was Foreign Minister in Helen \*Clark's Labour Government 2005–08, lost his seat but was re-elected 2011–20. New Zealand First supported Labour after the 2017 election and Peters became, again, Deputy Prime Minister and Foreign Minister until his defeat in 2020.

**Petipa, Marius** (1822–1910). French dancer and choreographer. He performed at the Comédie Française and soon became well known throughout France and in Spain. He went to Russia (1847) where he was immediately acclaimed, and he is regarded as one of the founders of the Russian ballet. His best remembered works were produced in association with \*Tchaikovsky, e.g. *The Sleeping Beauty* (1890) and *Swan Lake* (1895).

**Petit, Roland** (1924–2011). French dancer and choreographer. He worked as a boy with the Paris Opera ballet, and in 1948 formed his own company which appeared at the Théâtre Marigny. He created many new ballets, e.g. *Le Loup*, *Ballabille* (for the London Royal Ballet) and *Cyrano de Bergerac* (1959), his first full length ballet. In 1965 he created and danced in *Notre Dame de Paris*, suggesting the hunchback's deformity without padding.

**Petrarch** (Francesco Petrarca) (1304–1374). Italian poet and scholar, born at Arezzo. His father moved (1311) to Avignon, then the seat of the papacy, and Francesco later returned there after three years uncongenial study of civil law at Bologna; he then took minor orders. He first saw Laura (plausibly identified as the wife of Hugues de Sade) in church

at Avignon at Eastertide in 1327. Worshipped from a distance, she remained the love of his life until and even after her death (1348) and was the inspiration of his famous love poems (*Rime* or *Canzoniere*). Petrarch did not invent the 14-line sonnet form, in which nearly 300 of them were written, but his fame inspired the many imitators (e.g. Sir Thomas \*Wyatt) and so justifies the name Petrarchan sonnet. By his contemporaries, however, Petrarch was acclaimed for scholarship. He was among the first to revive interest in the language and literature of classical Rome. He took advantage of his travels to search for and discover old MSS., including an interesting batch of \*Cicero's letters. Through the patronage of the Colonna family, in Avignon and Rome he came to know the learned and great and even to correspond with rulers on political affairs. Evidence of his fame came after he had settled (1337) in retirement at Vaucluse in Provence and had started his epic *Africa* on the life of \*Scipio Africanus. Invitations came to him simultaneously from the university of Paris and the Roman Senate to accept the tribute of a laurel crown. Back in Vaucluse he must have begun to question his own motives, for in the imaginary dialogues of *De Contemptu Mundi* (1343) he finds himself confronted with \*St Augustine's censure for his attachment to Laura and to fame. Laura's death and the failure of the attempt (1347) by his friend \*Cola di Rienzi to establish a republic in Rome seem to have stirred in him a deep pessimism about the state of Italy. From Rome, where he met and won the admiration of \*Boccaccio, he went to Padua and then to Venice, where he advocated peace with Genoa. He returned to France (1351), but after further travels in Italy he settled at Arquà in the hills near Padua and there he was found dead with his head resting on a book. Petrarch is commonly regarded as the father of Italian humanism.

**Petrie, Sir** (William Matthew) **Flinders** (1853–1942). English archaeologist, born near Greenwich. A grandson of Matthew \*Flinders, he was educated at home. He first went to Egypt in 1881, surveyed the pyramids at Giza, establishing new standards of excavation procedure. He explored the Greek city of Naukratis in the Nile delta 1884–85. In 1888 he discovered hundreds of vivid, naturalistic portraits in encaustic at Fayum and exhibited them in London. From 1890 he worked on stratification and established the principle of sequence dating from potsherds and other artefacts. He was professor of Egyptology at University College, London 1892–1933. He also excavated Abydos, Tell el Armana, the Ramesseum at Thebes and in Palestine from 1926. He shared the racism of many scientific contemporaries and was an enthusiast for eugenics. He retired to Jerusalem in 1933 and died there.

Marek, W. K., *Gods, Graves and Scholars*. 2nd ed. 1967.

**Petronius (Arbiter), Gaius** (d.66). Roman courtier and author, born in Massalia. As 'Arbiter elegantiae' at the court of \*Nero, he directed the Emperor's lavish entertainments. His only surviving works are fragments of the *Saturae* (wrongly known as *Satyricon*), a prose extravaganza interspersed with verse, parodying the sentimental Greek romances of the day, among episodes relating the obscene adventures of three rascals in *Dinner with Trimalchio*, a banquet in the house of a typical nouveau riche. To avoid execution by Nero, Petronius staged an elaborate suicide to the accompaniment of a witty discourse, delaying his death by continually re-bandaging the opened veins.

Sullivan, J. P., *The Satyricon of Petronius*. 1968.

**Peugeot, Armand** (1849–1915). French automobile maker. His family ran weaving, dying and steelmaking firms. After a career as a bicycle-maker, Peugeot produced a steam car in 1889, a petrol car in 1891 and the popular 'Bébé Peugeot' in 1911.

**Pfeiffer, Michelle** (1958– ). American film actor. Her films include *The Witches of Eastwick* (1987), *Dangerous Liaisons* (1988), *The Russia House* (1990) and *The Age of Innocence* (1993), *White Oleander* (2002), *Hairspray* (2007), *Personal Effects* (2009) and *Dark Shadows* (2012).

**Phaidippides** (5th century BCE). Greek runner. He carried the news of the Persian invasion and a request for help from Athens to Sparta (490 BCE), covering the distance of 240 km in two days. Some versions of the story name him also as the runner who fell dead after conveying news of victory from the battlefield of Marathon to Athens. This exploit is commemorated in the modern Olympic Games by the Marathon race (42.2 km).

**Phelps, Michael Fred** (1985– ). American swimmer, born in Baltimore. He won a total of 23 Gold Olympic medals, setting a record, six in Athens (2004), eight in Beijing (2008), four in London (2012) and nine in Rio (2016).

**Phidias** (c.490–c.430 BCE). Athenian sculptor. He was the principal artist employed by \*Pericles to carry out the beautification of Athens, which he had planned. The frieze of the Parthenon was probably carved from his designs, but none of his actual work survives. Representations of the two works for which he was most famous in the Ancient World, the ivory and gold statues of Athena Parthenos in Athens and of Zeus at Olympia can be seen on coins etc. Accusations of theft and sacrilege, made by the enemies of Pericles, caused Phidias to leave Athens (432).

Richter, G., *A Handbook of Greek Art*. 1969.

**Philby, Kim** (Harold Adrian Russell) (1912–1988). British journalist and KGB agent, born in India. Son of (Harry) **St John** (Bridger) **Philby** (1885–1960), an explorer and writer on Arab affairs, educated at



Trinity College, Cambridge, he was a journalist in Germany, Austria and Spain and joined MI6 in 1940, using membership of the foreign service as a cover, becoming First Secretary at the British Embassy in Washington 1949–51. After the defection to Moscow of \*Burgess and Maclean, his friendship with Guy Burgess led to an investigation and, although nothing was proved against him, he was forced to resign, largely because of his Communist associations in the 1930s. He went to the Middle East as an *Observer* correspondent until he disappeared from Beirut in January 1963. He soon surfaced in Moscow as a KGB Major General and confirmed that he had been 'the third man' in the Burgess and Maclean case.

Seale, P. and McConville, M., *Philby, the Long Road to Moscow*. 1972; Macintyre, B., *A Spy Among Friends*. 2014.

**Philidor, François André Danican** (1726–1795). French musician and chess-player. He composed many operas, and through his *Analyse du jeu des échecs* (1749) he became one of the most famous names in the early history of chess. His 'Philidor's Defence' is an example of his tactical mastery of the game.

**Philip the Good** *see* **Philippe le Bon**

**Philip, St** (Philippos in Greek: 'lover of horses') (d.c.80 CE). Christian apostle, born in Bethsaida. He may have been a follower of \*John the Baptist. He traditionally preached in Phrygia, Scythia and (possibly) Ethiopia, and is said to have died in Hierapolis, now in Turkey.

**Philip I, II, III, IV, V and VI**. Spanish Kings *see* **Felipe I, II, III, IV, V and VI**

**Philip II and IV**. French kings *see* **Philippe II and IV**

**Philip II** (Philippos) (382–336 BCE). King of Macedon 359–336 BCE. Father of \*Alexander the Great, born in Pella, youngest son of Amyntas III and Eurydice, he was chosen to succeed his infant nephew Amyntas IV, for whom he was briefly regent. When he began to rule, his kingdom was poor and backward, but when he died he had made it by war and diplomacy the dominant power in Greece and had created an army with which his son achieved his great victories. An early success (356) which made the others possible was his occupation of Grenides (Philippi) to gain control of the vital gold and silver deposits. Another stage was his occupation of Thessaly. To Thebes he readily gave help against Phocis, thus bringing both states into his power-orbit. Roused by the warnings of \*Demosthenes (in the famous Philippics), Athens at last saw her danger, but it was too late and after Philip's great victory at Chaeronea (338) all Greece except Sparta lay at his mercy. He now showed his statesmanship by creating the League of Corinth, a confederacy in which every state but Sparta had votes to accord with its military strength,

Philip himself being its supreme head. Now all was ready for the trial of strength with Persia, which Philip had long planned, but as the first Macedonian troops moved into Asia Minor he was assassinated by Pausanias. His tomb and remains were found in 1977 at Vergina.

Momigliano, A., *Philip of Macedon* (ed. M. Hatzopoulos and L. Loukopoulos). 1981; Parker, G., *Imprudent King: A New Life of Philip II*. 2014.

**Philip, Prince** *see* **Edinburgh, Duke of**

**Philip Neri, St** *see* **Neri, St Philip**

**Philipp** (Philip) **I ('the Magnanimous')** (1504–1567). German ruler, Landgrave of Hesse 1509–67. He succeeded his father Wilhelm II as a child and exercised full power from 1518. He became one of the most prominent supporters of the Protestant cause: he initiated the Reformation in Hesse (1526) and founded (1527) the first Protestant university at Marburg, where in 1529 he tried to reconcile \*Luther and \*Zwingli. However, he had shown no mercy to Thomas \*Müntzer and the Anabaptists. A far-sighted plan to reform the constitution of the Holy Roman Empire and at the same time overcome the dominance of the Habsburg emperors was frustrated when the League of Schmalkalden, formed for that purpose, was defeated (1547). Philipp's bigamy, agreed to by his first wife and (reluctantly) by Luther, was a lively scandal of the time.

**Philipp of Burgundy** *see* **Felipe I, King of Castile and Leon**

**Philippa of Hainaut** (1314?–1369). English queen consort 1327–69. Daughter of William, Count of Hainaut and Holland, she married her second cousin \*Edward III (1328) and bore seven sons and five daughters. It was her pleas that resulted in the sparing of six prominent burghers of Calais, whose lives Edward, incensed by his year-long siege, had demanded as his price for not sacking the city. She appointed the chronicler \*Froissart as her secretary and is buried at Windsor.

**Philippe II Auguste** (1165–1223). King of France 1180–1223. Son of \*Louis VII. He was more successful than any other French medieval king in asserting his suzerainty over the feudal nobles, winning his greatest triumph over the most powerful of all his feudatories, the English King. He quickly returned from the 3rd Crusade and was able to take advantage of the captivity of \*Richard I to despoil him of his possessions. Interrupted briefly by Richard's return, he was soon able to exploit \*John's difficulties and eventually gained Normandy, Anjou and parts of Poitou. At Bouvines, between Lille and Tournai, Philippe Auguste gained his greatest victory (1214) over a coalition of the court of Flanders, the emperor \*Otto IV and King \*John. By his success he

established the strength and prestige of the French monarchy for a century and more. He was the first ruler to be styled 'King of France'.

Painter, S. and Tierney, B., *Western Europe in the Middle Ages: 1300–1475*. 1970.

**Philippe IV** ('le Bel'; 'the Fair') (1268–1314). King of France 1285–1314. A strong ruler, he was determined to extend the royal power. This led him into quarrels with \*Edward I of England, the Flemish burghers, his own nobles and above all with Pope \*Boniface VIII, this last settled only by the pope's death, when Philippe secured the election of a Frenchman, Clement V, and the removal of the papacy from Rome to Avignon. He further asserted his strength by forcing the pope to disband the Order of the Templars. The monarchy's power was also increased by developing centralised institutions, e.g. the Parlement of Paris.

**Philippe le Bon** (Philip the Good; in Dutch, Filips de Goede) (1396–1467). Duke of Burgundy 1419–67. A member of the \*Valois dynasty, he was the son of **Jean sans Puer** (John the Fearless/Jan von der Vrees) (1371–1419). To avenge his father's murder by adherents of the Dauphin (later \*Charles VII), he negotiated the Treaty of Troyes (1420) with the English king \*Henry V. This treaty disinherited the Dauphin in favour of any child that Henry might have by Princess Catherine of France. Philippe therefore supported the cause of \*Henry VI in the wars in which \*Joan of Arc played a notable part, but he was reconciled with Charles in 1435. He employed Jan van \*Eyck from 1425. Most of his energies were devoted to the extension of his inheritance in the Netherlands, almost all of which he brought under his control, suppressing a rebellion (1454) with great bloodshed. He founded (1430) the Order of the Golden Fleece and made his court one of the most magnificent of medieval Europe. He died in Bruges.

Vaughan, R., *Philip the Good*. 1970.

**Philips, Anton Frederik** (1874–1951). Dutch industrialist. Son of a banker, with his elder brother Gerard he founded a factory at Eindhoven in 1892 for the manufacture of electric light bulbs. The company became the largest European manufacturer of radios and television, with subsidiaries throughout the world. The Philips brothers were young cousins of \*Marx.

**Phillip, Arthur** (1738–1814). English sailor and administrator, born in London. Son of a German language teacher (possibly Jewish) from Frankfurt, he trained as a merchant seaman, joined the Royal Navy during the Seven Years War, but saw little active service. He was a skilled surveyor and modest property developer. Seconded to the Portuguese navy 1774–78, he served in Brazil. The reasons for his appointment as first governor of the penal settlement in New South

Wales are unclear, but he showed firmness and courage in his period in office 1788–92. In January 1788 he chose the site on Port Jackson where Sydney was to be built, clearly foresaw the colony's future greatness, and was committed to Enlightenment principles. In February 1788 he established a penal settlement on Norfolk Island. He faced tremendous difficulties, the risk of famine, insubordinate officers and corrupt contractors. Sympathetic to Aboriginal people, he lacked enthusiasm for the death penalty. After a long period of illness, he returned to active naval service in the French wars, retired to Bath in 1805 and was promoted to Admiral of the Blue. He was buried at St Nicholas' Church, Bathampton, but there is controversy about whether his gravestone has been moved. His reinterment in Australia has been proposed.

Frost, A., *Arthur Phillip. His Voyaging*. 1987; Parker, D., *Arthur Phillip. Australia's First Governor*. 2012.

**Phillipps, Sir Thomas, 1st Baronet** (1792–1872). English bibliomaniac, born in Manchester. He inherited a substantial fortune (textile manufacturing and land) but devoted himself to amassing what was probably the greatest single collection of 40,000 books and 60,000 manuscripts, driving his family to distraction in the process.

**Philo of Alexandria** (Philo Judaeus, originally Yedidia HaCohen) (c.20 BCE–c.45 CE). Jewish philosopher, born in Alexandria. He made a wide study of Greek philosophy and literature, but remained a Jew and accepted the Old Testament without reservations. He conceived his task as the integration of Greek philosophy, based on reason, with Jewish religion, based on revelation and faith. The *lógos* (λόγος), word, message, thought or narrative, especially originating from God, he regarded as supreme, but recognised that it can reach mankind through the lips of Greek philosophers such as \*Plato. This thought was taken up by the neoplatonists, both Christian and pagan, and is at the root of nearly all medieval philosophy.

Sandmel, S., *Philo's Place in Judaism*. 1956.

'**Phiz**' see **Browne, Hablot K.**

**Phryne** (4th century BCE). Greek courtesan. Traditionally, she was the model for a picture by Apelles of Aphrodite (Venus) rising from the waves and for the *Aphrodite of Cnidos*, a famous statue by \*Praxiteles. Accused of profaning the Eleusinian mysteries, she was acquitted after her robe was cast aside to reveal her naked beauty to the judges.

**Phyfe, Duncan** (originally Fife) (1768–1854). American furniture designer, born in Scotland. He became a cabinet maker in New York, employing more than 100 craft workers, and designed in the Neoclassical and Empire style.

**Piaf, Edith** (Edith Giovanna Gassion) (1915–1963). French singer. ‘The Little Sparrow’s’ career began with street singing at 15. She achieved success as a cabaret and concert performer, touring the US, and appearing in films.

Lauge, M., *Piaf*. 1982.

**Piaget, Jean** (1896–1980). Swiss psychologist. Educated in Neuchâtel, Zürich and Paris, he was professor of child psychology at Geneva 1929–71 and wrote over 50 books, many on the intellectual developmental stages in children, such as concept formation, classification and ordering. He argued that classroom teaching is inappropriate when it attempts to impose adult reasoning on children who are not yet genetically programmed to receive it. He was a member of UNESCO’s Executive Board 1950–54.

**Piano, Renzo** (1937– ). Italian architect, born in Genoa. Educated in Milan, he was joint winner with Richard \*Rogers of the competition to design the Pompidou Centre Paris (1971). Other works include the Menil Art Gallery, Houston; Bercy commercial centre, Paris; Zentrum Paul Klee, Berne; and Auditorium Parco della Musica, Rome.

**Piazzolla, Ástor Pantaleon** (1921–1992). Argentinian composer. Son of Italian migrants, his father became a hairdresser in New York. He mastered the bandoneon, studied in Paris with Nadia \*Boulangier and created ‘tango neuve’, a fusion of tango, jazz and the classics. He composed 46 film scores and a total of about 3,000 works, 500 of them recorded.

**Picasso, Pablo Ruiz** (in full Pablo Diego José Francisco de Paula Juan Nepomuceno María de los Remedios Cipriano de la Santísima Trinidad Ruiz y Picasso) (1881–1973). Spanish painter and sculptor, born in Málaga. Son of a Castilian artist and teacher, **José Ruiz Blanco**, and an Andalusian mother **Maria Picasso y Lopez**, his family moved to Corunna in northwest Spain in 1891. Pablo studied with his father and in 1895 painted his first important oils, in the style of the old masters. In Barcelona he attended the School of Fine Arts (1895–97), then the San Fernando Academy in Madrid (1897–99). He held his first one-man exhibition in Barcelona (Feb. 1900), showed paintings in Paris (June 1901) and the powerful large blue *Self-Portrait* dates from the end of that year. He moved to and from Spain, settling in Paris in 1904 and remained there for 44 years, apart from a short period in Holland (1905). The works of \*Cézanne and \*Toulouse-Lautrec were among the strongest influences on him. In his ‘Blue Period’ (1901–05), the colour provided symbolic background for anguished pictures of the poor and lonely. The poet \*Apollinaire published the first book on Picasso in 1905. The *Lady with a Fan* (1905) was a transitional work. His ‘Rose Period’ (1905–07) was notable for many paintings of circus life, e.g. *Family of Saltimbanques* (1905) but included the striking *Portrait of Gertrude Stein* (1906) and young nudes,

strangely vulnerable against their rose and terracotta backgrounds. An abrupt change of style (1907) derived from a study of African, Iberian and Pacific Island art in museums, demonstrates the forcefulness that a work of art can gain from simplification and distortion. ‘Cubism’, developed by Picasso and Georges \*Braque, began in 1907 with *Les Femmes d’Alger*, and Picasso continued his experiments until about 1925. The impact of photography and film meant that painters could abandon static representation, interpreting ‘reality’ in a new way, seeing objects from every geometric position, as with sculpture. His shapes, now in subdued greys and browns, were not entirely abstract, retaining some relationship to actual objects. Picasso’s art usually reflected his private life and his extraordinary sexual energy. He lived with Fernande Olivier 1905–12 and with Marcelle (‘Eva’) Humbert (d.1915) from 1911. The impact of World War I revived his interest in colour and decoration. He designed *Parade* (1917), *The Three Cornered Hat* (1919) and *Pulcinella* (1920) for \*Diaghilev’s Ballets Russes. In 1918 he married the Russian dancer Olga Koklova (d.1955). A son **Paulo** was born in 1921 and his Classical period (1920–25), influenced by \*Ingres, reflects a rare serenity e.g. *Mother and Child* and *Woman Bathing*. Then the women in his paintings become huge and shapeless until Marie-Thérèse Walter entered his life in 1927, followed by Dora Maar in 1936. Both inspired some of his most passionate paintings. He turned to sculpture and his *Woman with a Vase* (1933), a masterpiece, is on his grave. Political turmoil in the 1930s drew Picasso towards Surrealism. He was a strong (but absentee) supporter of the Republicans during the Spanish Civil War and was made Honorary Director of the Prado Museum, Madrid 1936–39. His enormous tormented work *Guernica* (1937), denouncing German bombing of a Basque town, has the power of \*Goya. He lived in Paris undisturbed during the German occupation, joining the Communist Party after liberation in 1944, although the CP considered his work decadent, contrary to \*Stalin’s doctrine of ‘socialist realism’. He lived 1943–53 with the painter Françoise \*Gilot, and had two children by her. He moved to the south of France in 1947, first to Vallauris, then to Cannes, Vauvenargues and to Mougins (where he died). He spent much of his creative energy from the 1950s on lithographs, ceramics and sculptures, especially of animals (bulls and bullfights), birds (notably the ‘Dove of Peace’) and flowers. He wrote the Symbolist play *Desire Caught by the Tail* (1952) and some poetry. In August–December 1957 he painted 44 studies of \*Velázquez’s *Maid of Honour (Las Meninas)* and completed a huge (unsuccessful) mural *The Fall of Icarus* for UNESCO. He lived with **Jacqueline Roque** (1927–1986) from 1954, marrying her in 1961: in 1962 he produced 70 *Jacquelines*—paintings; drawings; engravings and ceramic tiles. He was buried at his home at the Chateau de Vauvenargues, near Aix. Picasso claimed to be the most important artist since Michelangelo—and for sheer originality, range and influence, few have exceeded him. \*Titian, \*Rembrandt, \*Velázquez,

\*Goya and El \*Greco climbed higher peaks, but they worked within an established tradition: Picasso created several new traditions. Picasso's *catalogue raisonné*, in 33 volumes, records more than 16,000 works. He was certainly the greatest artist of the 20th century. He asserted that painting 'isn't an aesthetic operation. It's a form of magic designed as a mediator between this strange, hostile world and us, a way of seizing power by giving form to our terrors as well as our desires'. In 1971 the Louvre held a retrospective Picasso exhibition—the first for a living artist. Picasso made the world look at reality in a new way but he remains intensely controversial. He was also a great collector. Picasso Museums were established in Antibes (1947), Barcelona (1963) and Paris (1985). The literature on him is enormous.

His daughter, **Paloma Picasso** (1949– ), a couturier, designed jewellery for Yves \*Saint Laurent, ceramics and pottery for Villeroy and Boch, and produced perfume under her own name.

Penrose, R., *Picasso*. 1971; Palau i Fabre, J., *Picasso, the Early Years 1881–1907*. 1980; Richardson, J., *A Life of Picasso*. Vol. 1. *The Prodigy: 1881–1906*. 1991, Vol. 2. *The Painter of Modern Life: 1907–1916*. 1996, Vol. 3. *The Triumphant Years: 1917–32*. 2007.

**Piccard, Auguste** (1884–1962). Swiss physicist. Best known as a pioneer explorer of the stratosphere and the deep oceans, he was professor of physics at the Free University of Brussels (1922–54) and a close associate of \*Einstein. With his twin brother **Jean-Felix** (1884–1963), a pioneer in studying cosmic radiation, he took up ballooning and finally (1932), in an airtight gondola designed by himself, reached a height of 17,766 m (54,150 ft). After World War II he turned to investigating the ocean depths and designed a special steel diving capsule or 'bathyscaphe'. With his son **Jacques Piccard** (1922–2008) he descended to a record depth of 3391 m (10,335 ft) off the island of Capri (1953) and Jacques, with a US naval officer, reached a depth of 14,401 m (37,800 ft) off the Pacific island of Guam (1960), Jean's son **Bertrand Piccard** (1958– ), a psychiatrist, completed, with Brian Jones, the first balloon circumnavigation in the Breitling Orbiter III (March 1999).

**Pichegru, Charles** (1761–1804). French soldier. He gained rapid promotion in the revolutionary armies. In 1793 as Commander-in-Chief of the Rhine army he thrust back the Austrians and overran the Palatinate. In the following year he was given the command in Flanders and in January 1795 entered Amsterdam. After this triumph he returned to the Rhine, but was soon in active correspondence with the Bourbons. Arrested in Paris (1797), he was sentenced to banishment in Cayenne but managed to escape. He returned to France (1804) with another conspirator against the life of \*Napoléon but was arrested and shortly after found strangled in prison.

**Pickford, Mary** (née Gladys Smith) (1893–1979). American film star, born in Canada. Having first appeared on the stage at the age of five, she started to act in films in 1909 and through her childlike sentimental parts soon became known as 'the world's sweetheart'. With her second husband, Douglas \*Fairbanks, she was one of the founders (1919) of the cinema company United Artists. Among the most popular of her films were *Poor Little Rich Girl* (1916) and *Daddy Long Legs* (1919). She has been described as the founder of the Hollywood 'star system'.

**Pico della Mirandola, Giovanni** (1463–1494). Italian philosopher. Having settled in Florence (1484), he applied his immense industry and powers of memory to the search for Christian truths in the works of \*Pythagoras, \*Moses and \*Zoroaster. Subsequently he offered to defend 900 theses at public disputations, but 13 of the theses were condemned (1487) by Pope Innocent VIII, and Pico went into exile in France, where he was briefly imprisoned. His book *De Hominis Dignitate*, with its stress on the spiritual freedom of humanity, provided a philosophic justification for the proudly individualistic outlook of Renaissance man. His writings influenced Sir Thomas \*More (who translated some) and John \*Colet.

Kristeller, P. O., *The Renaissance Concept of Man*. 1973.

**Pierce, Franklin** (1804–1869). 14th President of the US 1853–57. Born in New Hampshire, where his father became governor, he became prominent in state politics and later served as a US Congressman 1833–37 and senator 1837–42. He fought with distinction in the Mexican War 1846–48, and in 1852 was chosen as Democratic candidate for president, being elected as a compromise on the 49th ballot, after Lewis \*Cass and James \*Buchanan withdrew in his favour. In November he defeated Winfield \*Scott. Pierce was the only president to take an affirmation of office. With the Gadsden Purchase he secured from Mexico some 76,800 square kilometres of valuable territory (now in Arizona or New Mexico), but the unpopularity of his Kansas-Nebraska Act, which left the question of slavery there to the decision of the inhabitants and so provoked a competing rush of partisan immigrants, led to his defeat for renomination by Buchanan at the 1856 Democratic Convention in Cincinnati. In 20 Presidential rankings by US historians and political scientists, Pierce scored No. 36 in the aggregate.

**Piero della Francesca** (Piero di Benedetto de'Franceschi) (c.1416–1492). Italian Renaissance painter of the Umbrian school, born at Sansepolcro, between Arezzo and Urbino. He studied in Florence under Domenico Veneziano, whose methods of revealing form by sight he learned and improved upon. During his career his patrons included Sigismondo \*Malatesta of Rimini, Federigo da \*Montefeltro, Duke of Urbino and Pope \*Pius II. He studied mathematics and wrote treatises on geometry and perspective which he hoped would influence later artists. His composition followed a geometric pattern.

Most of his works are frescoes based on religious themes, e.g. his most ambitious work, *The Story of the True Cross* in Arezzo (1452–66). Like \*Caravaggio and \*Vermeer, Piero was a forgotten artist until Edouard \*Manet and Henry \*Layard revived interest in his work, and only in the 20th century was he recognised as one of the supreme artists of his time. Among his outstanding paintings are *The Baptism of Christ* (1450, National Gallery, London); *The Flagellation of Christ* (1460, Urbino); *The Resurrection* (c.1465, Sansepolcro), which Aldous \*Huxley hailed as 'the best picture in the world', and magnificent portraits of Montefeltro and his wife Battista (Uffizi, Florence).

Clark, K. M., *Piero della Francesca*. 1951; Pope-Hennessy, J., *The Piero della Francesca Trail*. 1991.

**Pierre de Montreuil** (d.1267). French architect. He worked for \*Louis IX and built the chapel at the palace at St Germain-en-Laye (1235–38). His masterpiece was Sainte Chapelle in Paris, designed in the Rayonnant style and consecrated in 1248.

**Pigott, Richard** (1828?–1889). Irish journalist. He forged documents purporting to implicate \*Parnell in the murders (1882) of Lord Frederick Cavendish and T. H. Burke (the Irish chief secretary and his Undersecretary) in Phoenix Park, Dublin. The publication of these documents in *The Times* (April 1887) caused a political sensation which was not abated until a commission of inquiry (1888–89) proved them to be forged. Pigott, having confessed, escaped to Madrid where he shot himself.

**Piketty, Thomas** (1971– ). French economist, born in Paris. He studied in Paris and London and directed the Paris School of Economics in 2006– . His research concentrated on wealth distribution. His book *Capital in the Twenty-First Century* (2013) became a bestseller and stimulated debate. *Capital and Ideology* (2020) was also controversial.

**Pilate, Pontius** (d.c.55 CE). Roman official. Procurator of Judaea and Samaria 26–36, he is remembered for his question 'What is truth?' put to \*Jesus at his trial and for sentencing him to be crucified. He was ignorant of Jewish character and beliefs and was recalled to Rome to face charges of venality and brutality. Among many legends is one that he became a Christian; his wife Claudia Procula, said to have been converted, even became a saint in the Orthodox Church. His later career is unknown but \*Eusebius wrote that he committed suicide. Mt Pilatus, near Lucerne, has been traditionally identified as where he fell to his death.

**Piłsudski, Józef Klemens** (1867–1935). Polish soldier and politician, born in Zułów, then part of Russia, now in Lithuania. Educated in Vilnius, he began studying medicine in Kharkov. He spent the first part of his life in two overlapping causes, revolutionary socialism and freeing what was then Russian Poland from tsarist rule. Sent to Siberia (1887–92), on release he founded

the Polish Socialist party. Arrested again (1900), after pretending to be insane he escaped abroad. He soon returned and from 1907 began to create units of Polish riflemen on Austrian territory. With these he fought for Austria against Russia in World War I but, finding himself exploited for German aims, disbanded his forces and was imprisoned (1917) at Magdeburg. On the Allied victory, he became Chief of State (November 1918) of the newly proclaimed Poland and played a prominent part in the battles, political as well as military, by which Poland's frontiers were determined. He was appointed 'First Marshal of Poland' in March 1920 but refused the presidency in 1922 and 1926. He lived in retirement until, in May 1926, he organised a *coup d'état* after which he exercised almost dictatorial powers until his death, in a variety of roles: Prime Minister 1926–28, 1930, Inspector General of the Armed Forces 1926–35 and Minister of Military Affairs 1926–35. He became increasingly critical of democracy but opposed totalitarianism and rejected anti-Semitism.

**Pinckney, Charles Cotesworth** (1746–1825). American soldier and politician, born in Charleston, South Carolina. Educated at Westminster School and Christ Church, Oxford, he practised as a lawyer in his home town and was a slave owner. Active in the first Continental Congress, which precipitated the War of Independence, he became ADC to \*Washington and rose to be a brigadier general. At the Constitutional Convention (1787), he introduced the clause forbidding religious tests. He served as US Minister to France 1796–97. He was an unsuccessful Federalist candidate for the presidency, losing to \*Jefferson in 1804 and \*Madison in 1808.

**Pincus, Gregory Goodwin** (1903–1967). American biologist. He directed the Worcester (Mass.) Foundation for Experimental Biology 1944–67 and led research that produced the oral contraceptive pill.

**Pindar** (c.522–c.440 BCE). Greek lyric poet, born near Thebes. He wrote numerous ceremonial odes, hymns, convivial songs etc. for rulers and cities throughout Greece. From 476 to 474 he was at the court of Hieron, King of Syracuse and other rulers in Sicily. Of the 17 book rolls of his poetry only four survive almost entire, i.e. those celebrating victories in the Olympic, Nemean, Pythian and Isthmian games. Into these he introduced myths and other apparent irrelevancies which give colour and variety to what might seem a monotonous theme, though to the Greeks themselves the games were religious festivals and victory symbolised divine favour as well as conferring prestige on the athletes and their cities. The poems are choral odes to be accompanied by dancing, but owing to their early date and linguistic problems they are hard to translate and their merits difficult to assess. The Greeks, however, counted Pindar among their greatest poets. \*Dryden's *Alexander's Feast* is an imitation of a Pindaric ode.

Bowra, C. M., *Pindar*. 1964.

**Pinel, Philippe** (1745–1826). French physician, born in Languedoc. He qualified at Toulouse and went to Paris (1778), in 1787 he began to write about insanity, of which he had made a firsthand study. Both at the Bicêtre, of which he became head in 1793, and later at the Salpêtrière he introduced more humane treatment of the insane (e.g. removal of chains by which they were restrained) and as far as possible substituted empirical and psychological treatment for the then customary drugs, bleeding etc. He paved the way for future improvements by establishing the custom of keeping case histories and records for research.

**Pinkerton, Allan** (1819–1884). American detective, born in Scotland. He emigrated to the US (1842) and founded in Chicago the private detective agency which became the best known in the world. During the American Civil War he did secret service work and in 1861 frustrated a plot against \*Lincoln's life. The agency was continued and enlarged by his sons.

**Pinochet Ugarte, Augusto** (1915–2006). Chilean general. As army Commander-in-Chief, he led the coup that deposed President Salvador \*Allende (September 1973), headed a provisional government 1973–74, and was President of Chile 1974–90. He remained Commander-in-Chief until 1998, then became a senator for life. In 1998 he was arrested in London, after surgery, when Spain demanded his extradition. He returned to Chile in March 2000 after the \*Blair Government made a controversial decision to release him on the grounds of his age and incapacity. The Chilean courts then removed his immunity from prosecution. His supporters insisted that he had saved the Chilean economy; his opponents charged that he was brutal and corrupt.

**Pinter, Harold** (1930–2008). English playwright and producer, born in London. He left school at 16, and was an actor in repertory before turning to writing. He attracted attention with *The Dumb Waiter* (1957) and *The Caretaker* (1960), plays written in ostensibly colloquial, 'ordinary' speech, and concerned with problems of communication between individuals. His screen plays include *The Servant* (1962), *The Go-Between* (1969), *The Last Tycoon* (1974) and *Betrayal* (1983). He was Associate Director of the National Theatre 1973–83. He married **Lady Antonia Fraser** (née \*Pakenham) in 1980, received a CH in 2002 and the Nobel Prize for Literature in 2005.

**Piper, John Egerton Christmas** (1903–1992). English painter. His vivid and effective use of bold, vigorous draughtsmanship and dramatic colour contrasts was seen at its best in architectural themes (e.g. the pictures of bombed buildings for which he became known in World War II). He designed stage sets, engraved glass and tapestries, e.g. in Coventry cathedral. Piper also wrote poetry and architectural and topographical guides. He was awarded a CH in 1972.

Woods, J., *John Piper*. 1955.

**Pirandello, Luigi** (1867–1936). Italian writer, born in Sicily. His novels include *Si Gira* (1916) which introduces the reader to film stars and photographers. During World War I he began to write plays of a slightly surrealistic nature: among the best known of about 40 are *Six Characters in Search of an Author* (1921), in which a rehearsal stage is invaded by a group of characters seeking to take part in a play, and *Henry IV* (1922), where the theme of madness is treated in an original way. He won the Nobel Prize for Literature (1934).

Starkie, W., *Luigi Pirandello, 1867–1936*. 4th ed. 1967.

**Piranesi, Giambattista** (1720–1778). Italian draftsman and etcher. His powerful series *Carceri d'invenzione* ('Imaginary Prisons', 1745) were precursors of Romantic art and his Roman scenes were conceived on the grand scale.

**Pires, Maria João** (Alexandre Barbosa) (1944–). Portuguese pianist, born in Lisbon. Long esteemed in Portugal and Brazil, where she taught, she won late recognition internationally for her superb performances of \*Mozart and \*Beethoven.

**Pisano, Andrea** (c.1290–1348). Italian architect, sculptor and goldsmith, born near Pisa. Apparently unrelated to Nicola and Giovanni \*Pisano, he produced two doors for the Baptistery at Florence (\*Ghiberti) and worked on the cathedral's campanile with \*Giotto.

**Pisano, Nicola** (or Niccolò Pisano) (c.1225–c.1284). Italian sculptor, born in Apulia. Founder of the Pisan school, he had made a study of classical sculpture, and though he applied the knowledge that he had gained to essentially Gothic structures he has a claim to be regarded as the first Renaissance sculptor. For example, on the pulpit of the baptistery at Pisa, for the characteristically Gothic line of figures against a flat background he substitutes groups, each member of which is expressively natural in pose, dress and expression and so carved as to give an impression of depth. Among the best known of his other works are the pulpit at Siena Cathedral and the fountain in the market place, Perugia. In much of his work Nicola was helped by his son **Giovanni Pisano** (c.1250–1330) who won an independent reputation both as architect and as sculptor and was praised by \*Michelangelo.

Pope-Hennessy, J., *Italian Gothic Sculpture*. 1955.

**Pissarro, Camille** (1830–1903). French painter, born in the West Indies. His early pictures show the influence of \*Corot, but after meeting \*Manet (1866) he worked closely with the Impressionist group, of which he was the oldest member. For a time (1884–88) he adopted \*Seurat's pointillist techniques. In the last years of his life he painted figure studies of peasants etc. and pictures of warmly sunlit Paris streets.

Rewald, J., *Camille Pissarro*. 1963.

**Pitman, Sir Isaac** (1813–1879). English inventor. His shorthand system based on phonetic principles gained worldwide popularity. He also devised a simplified spelling of English but he won little support for this.

**Pitt, William** ('the Elder'), **1st Earl of Chatham** (1708–1778). English Whig politician, born in Westminster. Grandson of 'Diamond Pitt' who had made a fortune in India, he inherited little, was educated at Eton and, briefly, at Oxford and Utrecht. After service in the King's Own Horse Regiment 1731–36, he became a Whig MP 1735–66 (originally in the rotten borough of Old Sarum), earning the enmity of \*George II by serving as Groom of the Bedchamber 1737–45 to \*Frederick, Prince of Wales. As Paymaster General of the Forces 1746–55, he created a precedent by refusing bribes. He married (1754), Hester Grenville, sister of Earl Temple and George \*Grenville, and had a strong network of family connections. He was Secretary of State for the South (in effect, Minister for War) December 1756–April 1757 under the nominal leadership of the Duke of \*Devonshire and July 1757–October 1761 under the Duke of \*Newcastle. He was an expansionist, or Big Englander, who thought that Britain should be actively involved in European affairs, in sharp contrast to \*Walpole's isolationist policy. He proved an outstanding leader during the Seven Years' War and was the virtual founder of the British Empire, the colonial system and ensuring primacy in sea power. Under his direction, \*Clive established British supremacy in India, \*Amherst and \*Wolfe defeated the French in Canada and \*Rodney dominated the West Indies. Claiming to have 'conquered America on the plains of Germany', Pitt retired in 1761 on the grounds of health (he suffered acutely from gout and manic depression, which he called 'attacks of gout in the head'), securing a peerage and a £3,000 pension for his wife. He opposed the Treaty of Paris (1763) as too favourable to France. In 1765 he attacked \*Grenville's Government over the Stamp Act, a measure that imposed taxation without representation on the American colonies. He returned to office under the Duke of \*Grafton as Lord Privy Seal July 1766–October 1768, but de facto Prime Minister, until acute depression forced his withdrawal early in 1767. Known as 'the Great Commoner', he had made the grave mistake of going to the House of Lords (1766) as Earl of Chatham, at which, as \*Chesterfield observed, 'his enemies rejoiced and his friends were stupefied', since his power base was in the Commons and the City of London. In 1768 he resigned when Charles \*Townshend imposed new taxes on the Americans. When the American War of Independence began, Chatham was in an untenable position: opposed both to British military intervention and to withdrawal. He collapsed after his last speech in the Lords, denouncing government weakness in America, died at Hayes five weeks later and was buried in Westminster Abbey. Aloof, aggressive, passionate, wayward and anti-social, Pitt

had allies but no friends and was not an effective party leader or manager. His oratory was powerful and his mood-swings alarming.

Plumb, J. H., *Chatham*. 1965; Brown, P. D., *William Pitt, Earl of Chatham: The Great Commoner*. 1978; Black, J., *Pitt the Elder*. 1992.

**Pitt, William** ('the Younger') (1759–1806). English Tory politician, born in Hayes. Second son of \*Pitt the Elder, ill health prevented him from attending school, and although a precocious classical scholar, isolation from contemporaries increased his reserve and aloofness. He went to Pembroke College, Cambridge in 1773, read at Lincoln's Inn, London 1778 and was a Member of Parliament 1781–1806. He attached himself to Lord \*Shelburne, an oppositionist who had supported the elder Pitt. After Lord \*North fell in March 1782, there were three ministries in the following 21 months: \*Rockingham, who soon died, Shelburne, who appointed Pitt as Chancellor of the Exchequer (July 1782–Apr. 1783), and \*Portland (essentially a \*Fox-North coalition). \*George III appointed Pitt as First Lord of the Treasury, in effect Prime Minister, although the title was not then used, and he served in that office and also as Chancellor of the Exchequer December 1783–March 1801, May 1804–January 1806. He disregarded defeats in the Commons and held on until winning a majority in the general election of 1784. Notably efficient in public finance, he was a reformer in his first years, bringing India into shared control between the East India Company and the government (1784), admitting Roman Catholics to the bar and the army and attempting to achieve parliamentary reform. After the French Revolution and especially after the reign of terror, Pitt became more conservative, reflecting fear of change in society. He was a strong administrator, an effective manager in the House of Commons and a persuasive orator. He emphasised national security and sometimes acted ruthlessly to crush political dissent. He abandoned the cause of parliamentary reform and failed to moderate harsh penal and game laws. In 1800 he secured the passage of the Act that incorporated Ireland in the United Kingdom and dissolved its parliament. Pitt was prepared to legislate for Catholic emancipation to enable Irish MPs to represent Catholic voters in Westminster, but the king objected so strongly that he felt obliged to resign. \*Addington proved to be embarrassingly inept as a successor. In 1803 war was resumed and a year later Pitt returned, organising the Third Coalition against \*Napoléon. He died 20 months later at the age of 46, his health worsened by his heavy drinking. In his last speech, at the Guildhall, he said: 'England is not to be saved by a single man: England has saved herself by her exertions and will, I trust, save Europe by her example.' Pitt had an extraordinarily narrow range of experience. He never married, had few friends, never travelled far from London apart from a few weeks in France (and knew nothing of Scotland and Ireland),

read little and was ignorant of art and science. He left debts of £40,000 (£3.4 million in 2021 values), which were paid off by the Parliament.

Ehrmann, J., *The Younger Pitt*. 3 vols, 1969, 1983, 1996.

**Pitt-Rivers, Augustus Henry Lane-Fox** (1827–1900). British archaeologist and army officer. He began his career in the army in 1845 and rose to Lieutenant General. In 1880 he succeeded to the Dorset estate of his cousin, Lord Rivers, adopting his surname Pitt-Rivers, and pioneered there scientific, properly recorded archaeological digs. His work in Dorset is preserved in the Pitt-Rivers museum at Farnham. His personal ethnological and archaeological collection formed the Pitt-Rivers Museum at Oxford University. He was also the first Inspector of Ancient Monuments 1882–1900 and elected FRS. He wrote *Excavations in Cranborne Chase* (1887–98).

**Pius II** (Enea Silvio de Piccolomini) (1405–1464). Pope 1458–64. Born near Siena, of noble parentage, he was poet laureate at the court of \*Friedrich III, worked as a diplomat, wrote histories, a play and a novel and generously patronised artists and writers. He became Bishop of Siena 1450–58. As Pope, he strove for European unity against the Turks and died at Ancona, trying to organise a crusade.

**Pius VI** (Giovanni Angelo Braschi) (1717–1799). Pope 1775–99. Born in Emilia, of aristocratic family, he had no pastoral experience, worked in the Papal Curia, became secretary to \*Benedict XIV and was created cardinal in 1773. Elected after a four month conclave, his long pontificate was a disaster. Vain, extravagant and inclined to nepotism, he completed St Peter's Basilica and patronised the arts. In 1782 he visited Vienna in a futile attempt to persuade \*Joseph II to moderate his anti-clerical policies. He condemned the French Revolution for legislating State control of the clergy and Church property. In 1798 Napoléon's troops occupied Rome, and Pius died in Valence (France) as a prisoner.

**Pius VII** (Luigi Barnaba Chiaramonti) (1742–1823). Pope 1800–23. A Benedictine, he became a professor of theology and Bishop of Imola 1785–1800. In 1797 he expressed some sympathy for political change. He had the extraordinarily difficult task of facing the consequences of the French Revolution and \*Napoléon's rise to power without offending Austria, the papacy's firmest ally. His first great achievement, assisted by \*Consalvi, his Secretary of State, was the Concordat (1801) with France, whereby he recognised the Republic and Napoléon's rule in return for the withdrawal of all anti-Catholic laws. In 1804 he went to Paris to anoint Napoléon at his coronation. He refused, however, to take part in the French Emperor's measures against England and in consequence the papal states were invaded and the

Pope held in captivity (1809–14). His reign is also remembered for his restoration (1814) of the Society of Jesus (Jesuits).

**Pius VIII** (Francesco Saverino Castiglione) (1761–1830). Pope 1829–30. A disciple of \*Pius VII, imprisoned by the French 1808–14, Bishop of Frascati 1821–29, he attacked Freemasonry and the rise of nationalism and laid down rules about mixed marriages.

**Pius IX** (Giovanni Maria Mastai-Ferretti) (1792–1878). Pope 1846–78. Son of a count, ordained in 1819, he served in Chile 1823–25 and was Bishop of Imola 1832–46. On his election as Pope, he began as a liberal reformer of the constitution and government of the papal territories, but his failure (1848) to head a national movement against Austria's influence in Italy caused an uprising in Rome, the murder of several members of the administration, the flight of the Pope to Neapolitan territory and the establishment of a republic under \*Garibaldi and \*Mazzini. Restored by a French army (1849) and his secular power maintained by a French garrison, the reformer became a conservative, his main preoccupation being to retain his political status. In the 'Syllabus of Errors' (1864) he denounced 80 elements relating to 'progress, liberalism and modern civilisation', including socialism, democracy, science and freedom of conscience. During the Franco-Prussian War (1870) the French withdrew and Rome became the capital of unified Italy. Pius responded by refusing to recognise these events and henceforth remained in self-imposed imprisonment in the Vatican, an example followed by his successors until \*Pius XI concluded the Lateran Treaty with the Italian state (1929). During his papacy—the longest in history—the doctrine of the Immaculate Conception was promulgated (1856), and at the Vatican Council, which ran for seven months 1869–70, the dogma of Papal Infallibility in matters of faith and morals was defined. Pius IX was amiable, witty and of great charm, with no personal enemies. He was an epileptic. His beatification by \*John Paul II in 2000 was controversial.

Hales, E. E. Y., *Pio Nono*. 1954.

**Pius X, St** (Giuseppe Melchiorre Sarto) (1835–1914). Pope 1903–14. Born in Riese, he came from a very poor family and had spent his whole previous career in diocesan work, so his talents were essentially practical. He was bishop of Mantua 1884–93 and cardinal-patriarch of Venice from 1893 until his election to the papacy. A strong conservative, deeply opposed to 'modernism', he codified the canon law, reorganised the papal administration and rearranged the missal and the breviary. His refusal to accept secular control over the French Church led to a 20-year breach between the papacy and the French State. Much beloved for his simplicity and holiness, he was canonised in 1954.



**Pius XI** (Achille Ambrogio Damiano Ratti) (1857–1939). Pope 1922–39. He won three doctorates at the Gregorian University, Rome and worked at the Ambrosian Library, Milan 1888–1911 and the Vatican Library 1911–18. He was an expert palaeographer and intrepid mountaineer. At the age of 61 he was appointed Nuncio to Poland (1918). After seven months as cardinal and Archbishop of Milan 1921–22, he was elected Pope on the 14th ballot as a compromise candidate. He showed great ability as a diplomat. He signed the Lateran Treaty (1929) with \*Mussolini, by which, in return for recognition of his papal sovereignty within the Vatican City and of Roman Catholicism as the state religion of Italy, the papacy recognised the kingdom of Italy under the House of Savoy. He established Catholic Action, updated \*Leo XIII's social teachings in *Rerum Novarum* (1891) in his *Quadragesimo anno* ('In the fortieth year...', 1931) and supported \*Franco in Spain. He made some concessions to modernism, promoted scholarship and established a Vatican radio station (1931). He attacked Nazism as anti-Christian in the encyclical *Mit brennender Sorge* (*With burning anxiety*, 1937) and his relations with Mussolini worsened.

**Pius XII** (Eugenio Maria Giuseppe Giovanni Pacelli) (1876–1958). Pope 1939–58. Born in Rome, to an aristocratic family, he studied at the Gregorian University, became a priest in 1899 and joined the papal secretariat in 1902. He was Papal Nuncio to Bavaria during World War I and to Germany 1925–31. Created a cardinal in 1929, he became \*Pius XI's Secretary of State 1931–39, travelled widely, including South America and the US, and was multilingual (although awkward with English). Thus he had considerable diplomatic experience when, on the eve of World War II, he was elected Pope on the second ballot, in the shortest conclave of modern times. (He was the first Roman pope since 1730.) His main objective was to ensure that the Roman Catholic Church survived with its independence and strength unimpaired. His fear of Communism's threat to Christianity made him unduly accommodating to the regimes of Mussolini and \*Franco. He conspicuously failed to denounce \*Hitler's Third Reich, and its genocide against the Jews, although some individuals were saved in Rome. (This issue remains deeply controversial.) Power became concentrated during his pontificate and bishops who questioned his authority were pushed aside (e.g. the future \*Pius VI). However, he appointed many non-Italian cardinals and reduced Italian dominance in the Curia. He made effective use of radio and television and published 41 deeply conservative encyclicals on social issues and sexuality. In 1950 he proclaimed the doctrine of the bodily Assumption of the Virgin Mary—the first exercise of papal infallibility since 1870. Processes for the beatification, or even canonisation of Pius XII, which began in 1965, were described as 'stalled' in 2014 by Pope \*Francis. The Vatican's war-time archives were opened up in 2019.

Falconi, C., *The Popes in the Twentieth Century*. 1967; Cornwell, J., *Hitler's Pope: The Secret History of Pius XII*. 1999; Dalin, D. G., *The Myth of Hitler's Pope*. 2005.

**Pizarro, Francisco** (c.1475–1541). Spanish (Castilian) conquistador, born in Trujillo, Extremadura. Illegitimate and illiterate, he became a soldier and went to Darien (Panama) and in 1524 and 1526–27 made his first attempts, with Diego de \*Almagro, to conquer Peru. This failed but after returning to Spain and receiving authorisation and the title of Governor, he again set out (1531), from Panama, with his brothers Hernando, Juan and Gonzalo and a band of 62 horsemen and 106 infantry to conquer the Inca empire ('Tawantinsuyu'—'Land of the Four Quarters'), landing at Tumbes in May 1532. Luck was with him—the Incas were fighting a savage civil war and the use of armour, guns, steel swords, cannon and horses gave the Spaniards a great advantage. So did introduced smallpox. In Cajamarca (Nov. 1532), he seized \*Atahualpa, the Inca ruler (whom he later had murdered), and, with the heart of the resistance broken, spent the next nine years in overrunning the country and amassing a vast treasure from the Inca hoards. He founded Lima in 1535. A dispute with Almagro, his fellow conquistador, mainly concerned with the ownership of Cuzco, proved disastrous. Almagro occupied the city (1537) but was defeated by Hernando Pizarro, tried and strangled. In revenge Francisco Pizarro was attacked and killed in his own house by some of Almagro's men. He and the conquistadors wiped out the whole Inca nobility and virtually destroyed every trace of Inca culture. He was buried in Lima.

Innes, H., *The Conquistadors*. 1969.

**Place, Francis** (1771–1854). English reformer, born in London. Son of a bailiff, he achieved a remarkable feat of self-education and became a successful master tailor, while sponsoring practical causes such as the monitorial schools associated with the name of Joseph \*Lancaster, and birth control. He retired from business in 1817 but the library behind his old shop in Charing Cross remained a centre for his political activities, in which he was associated with Jeremy \*Bentham and other reformers. Although not an MP he became a master of parliamentary lobbying, his greatest achievement being to secure the repeal (1824) of the Combination Acts which made trade unions illegal. He was a leading figure in the agitation that led to the Reform Act (1832) and he helped William Lovett to draw up the People's Charter in 1838.

Thale, M., *Francis Place*. 1972.

**Planck, Max Karl Ernst Ludwig** (1858–1947). German physicist, born in Kiel. Son of a professor at Kiel, he studied at the Friedrich Wilhelm University, Berlin and was influenced by \*Kirchhof, succeeding him there as professor of physics 1889–1926. Planck originated (1900) the quantum theory stating that energy, like matter, is not continuous in nature but is

radiated and absorbed in small portions called quanta. Planck won the Nobel Prize for Physics (1918) and the Copley Medal (1925). He was President of the Kaiser Wilhelm Society 1930–37; 1945–46, renamed for him in 1948. His son **Erwin Planck** (1893–1945) was hanged in January 1945 for his involvement in the plot to kill \*Hitler.

Asteroid 1069 Planckia, a Moon crater and a space observatory were named for Max Planck.

Planck, M., *Scientific Autobiography and Other Papers*. 1949.

**Plantagenet.** English dynasty sprung from \*Geoffrey V, Count of Anjou, whose badge was a sprig of broom (*planta genista*). The first English Plantagenet king was \*Henry II, Geoffrey's son by \*Matilda, daughter of \*Henry I: the last of the line was \*Richard III.

Harvey, J., *The Plantagenets, 1154–1485*. 1970.

**Plantagenet, Geoffrey** see **Geoffrey V** (Plantagenet)

**Plantin, Christophe** (1514–1589). French printer. He settled in Antwerp and is one of the best known of the early printers, and versions of the type which he designed for his *Biblia Polyglotta* and editions of the classics are still in use. He established branches for his sons-in-law in Paris and Leyden and his Antwerp office is now maintained by the city as a museum.

**Plath, Sylvia** (1932–1963). American poet, born in Boston. She graduated from Smith College, won a Fulbright Scholarship to Cambridge and in 1956 married the poet Ted \*Hughes. Her searingly painful poetry was published in *The Colossus* (1960), *Ariel* (1965) and *Collected Poems* (1981, which won a posthumous Pulitzer Prize). She wrote an autobiographical novel *The Bell Jar* (1963) and committed suicide by gassing herself shortly afterwards. Her death became a feminist cause célèbre, with blame directed at her husband.

Malcolm, J., *The Silent Woman*. 1994; Wilson, A., *Mad Girl's Love Song. Sylvia Plath and Life Before Ted*. 2013.

**Plato** (Plátōn) (c.427–347 BCE). Greek philosopher, born in Athens. Of noble descent, he almost certainly studied under \*Socrates. After Socrates was put to death by the restored democracy (399), Plato lived and travelled abroad for a number of years, visiting probably Egypt and certainly Sicily, where he won Dion to his philosophy. On his return (388) he set up a school at his house in Athens which became known as the Academy because it was near the grove of the mythical hero Academus. The students, mainly young aristocrats, devoted themselves to philosophy and mathematics and to practical studies in politics and administration. After the death (368) of \*Dionysius I of Sicily, Plato was invited by Dion, the tyrant's son-in-law, to return to Syracuse to train Dionysius II to become the philosopher-king of Plato's dreams. The

young ruler soon tired of his studies; he quarrelled with Dion, and Plato had to depart. A later visit (c.361), undertaken to reconcile Dionysius with Dion, was again unsuccessful. Plato is said to have died at a wedding feast.

Almost all Plato's work seems to have survived: most is in the shape of dialogue, a method of discussion known as dialectic. Socrates, the venerated teacher of his youth, is nearly always a participant. It is not clear therefore how much of the thought is that of the historic Socrates and how much Plato's own. The Socratic method was not to propound a philosophic scheme but, by exposing a pupil's statements to a searching cross-examination, to achieve precise definitions and so enable him to reach towards the truth for himself. Thus an approach to a general answer to such questions as 'What is beauty?' 'What is justice?' or 'What is knowledge?' is made by a series of questions leading to the elucidation of specific points. In the *Republic*, a discussion about the ideal state, a conclusion is reached favouring rule by a philosopher-king. Theories about the universe ascribed to \*Pythagoras are expounded in the *Timaeus*, the dialogue which was regarded as essentially Platonic by those neoplatonists who helped to give Christian theology its Platonic character. The influence of Pythagoras is also apparent in the *Symposium*, from a literary point of view one of Plato's most attractive works. Here Socrates, \*Aristoplanes, \*Alcibiades and others discuss the nature of love, the real background and real people here, as so often in Plato adding to the charm and naturalness of the dialogue. Perhaps the most important of Plato's own contributions to philosophic thought is his theory of 'ideas' (or more literally 'forms'). According to this theory the 'idea' of a thing is the unchanging and fundamental reality behind the superficial and mutable concepts produced by imagination or the senses. Highest of such 'ideas' is 'the good', knowledge of which is supreme virtue. But, since such complete knowledge is all but unattainable, for practical purposes man must act in accordance with his true nature under such guidance or constraint as the education implicit in the laws of the ideal state would provide.

Through his own writing and those of his most famous pupil, \*Aristotle, Plato's influence has probably been the greatest of any philosopher.

Taylor, A. E., *Plato, the Man and his Work*. 7th ed. 1960; Kraut, R. (ed.), *The Cambridge Companion to Plato*. 1993; Fine, G., *Plato*. 2000; Jackson, R., *Plato: A Beginner's Guide*. 2001; Moore, E., *Plato*. 2007.

**Plautus, Titus Maccus** (Maccius) (c.250–184 BCE). Roman writer of comedies. He began to write plays (c.224) after failing in business and continued to produce them with remarkable regularity for the rest of his life. Twenty-one comedies—those regarded by Varro as the only certainly genuine ones—survive complete. The plots of the plays were derived from Greek originals (e.g. Menander), as were the stock

characters—the clever rascal of a servant, the long-lost daughter, the duped father, the interchangeable twins. Indeed they have served the turn of \*Shakespeare, \*Molière and many lesser men, but Plautus made the farce much broader than that of his Greek originals and introduced songs and sometimes a chorus. One of his best known plays is *Miles Gloriosus* (Boastful Soldier): its chief character, Captain Pyrgopolynices, may have been a model for Falstaff.

Duckworth, G. E., *The Nature of Roman Comedy*. 1952.

**Playford, Sir Thomas** (1896–1981). Australian Liberal politician. An orchardist who fought in World War I, he was a Member of the South Australian Parliament 1933–68, serving as Premier 1938–65 for a record term, assisted by an electoral redistribution that favoured rural voters. He was a vigorous interventionist in economic policy.

**Plekhanov, Georgi Valentinovich** (1857–1918). Russian socialist and propagandist. Born to a noble family, he was an army officer, then joined the Populists, became a Marxist and was exiled, living in Geneva 1883–1917. Regarded as the founder of the Russian Social Democratic Labour Party (RSDLP), he founded the journal *Iskra* (*The Spark*) in 1900 but gradually active leadership passed to his disciple \*Lenin. He became a Menshevik after 1904 and opposed Lenin's dictatorship after 1917. He was a prolific theoretical writer.

**Pletnev, Mikhail** (Vasilievich) (1957– ). Russian pianist and conductor. He won the 1978 Tchaikovsky International Piano Competition in Moscow, toured extensively, made many recordings and founded the Russian National Orchestra in 1990.

**Plimsoll, Samuel** (1824–1898). British politician. Known as 'the merchant seaman's friend', he was in the coal trade in London when he became interested in the condition of merchant ships and seamen. Overloading and undermanning and the deliberate sending out of unseaworthy ships in order to collect insurance after shipwreck were among the evils he fought against. To obtain reform he became a Liberal MP 1868–80, but the Merchant Shipping Act was not passed until 1876. One provision was that ships should carry the 'Plimsoll line', a disc with a horizontal line drawn through it to indicate the loading limit.

**Pliny the Elder** (Gaius Plinius Secundus) (23–79 CE). Roman official and writer. Brought up as an accomplished, well-educated soldier, administrator and naval commander, he is known to have practised law. But he is chiefly remembered for his interest in natural history. His *Natural History* is the most comprehensive account of its kind written in antiquity. The first two books deal with astronomical and cosmological matters; Pliny then moves on to cover the geography of the globe and the nature of man. Books 8–11 treat of the animal world, and books 12–19 deal with plants,

including long discussions of agriculture and the use of herbs for medical purposes. The last sections of the work discuss such topics as pharmaceuticals, metals, precious stones, the history of painting, magic and charms. Pliny's work is essentially a compilation; it is comprehensive, but Pliny was careless in his use of sources, and frequently credulous. He enjoyed the fabulous and the moralistic aspects of natural history, and retold old wives' tales. Pliny's *Natural History* remained the standard encyclopaedic compilation covering the three kingdoms of nature down to the 17th century. He commanded the fleet in the Bay of Naples, described the eruption of Mt Vesuvius with remarkable accuracy but after landing for closer examination was overcome by fumes and died.

A figure of lesser stature was his nephew and adopted son **Pliny the Younger** (Gaius Plinius Caecilius Secundus) (61/2–c.114), a notable orator and a diligent official under \*Trajan. His letters are factually interesting as they deal with the lives of ordinary respectable citizens in provincial towns, and his exchanges of letters with Trajan reveal how even the more enlightened men of his time regarded the early Christians, whom he found 'unboundedly superstitious' but not 'grossly immoral'.

Pliny, *Natural History* (ed. and trans. Rackham, H. et al.). 10 vols, 1938–63.

**Plisetskaya, Maya** *see* **Shchedrin, Rodion**

**Plotinus** (205–270). Roman philosopher, born in Egypt. Having studied philosophy in Alexandria, he joined a military expedition to the east in the hope of learning the philosophy of Persia and India and barely escaped with his life in Mesopotamia. In 244 he went to Rome, where he founded a school and lived for the rest of his life. As an old man he attempted to found in Campania a 'republic' on the pattern of Plato's ideal state. Relying on inward vision rather than reasoning, he effected in his writings an integration of all Greek philosophy in order to provide a philosophic basis for a renaissance of Greco-Roman civilisation. He regards all souls as one with a world-soul, all intelligences as one with a world-mind, the source of both being the Light of God within us (variously described as the 'One' or the 'Good'). This pagan version of the Trinity was adapted by Christian neoplatonists to accord with their own creed.

**Plowright, Dame Joan** (Ann) (1929– ). English actress. She made her London debut in 1954 and married Laurence \*Olivier in 1961. Successful on stage, her films included *Enchanted April* (1992) and *Tea with Mussolini* (1999).

**Plücker, Julius** (1801–1868). German physicist and mathematician. Professor of mathematics 1836–47 and of Physics 1847–68 at Bonn, his investigations into electrical discharge in gases at low pressure led to

his discovery (1859) of cathode rays, which formed the basis of later work on atomic structure and of many technical developments, including television.

**Plumer, Herbert Charles Onslow, 1st Viscount Plumer** (1857–1932). English field marshal. He was a cautious field commander in France in World War II, with a low casualty rate, defeating the Germans heavily at Messines in June 1917. He declined appointment as Chief of the Imperial General Staff but later served as Governor of Malta 1919–24 and High Commissioner in Palestine 1925–28.

**Plunket, St Oliver** (1629–1681). Irish Roman Catholic bishop and martyr. Primate of all Ireland from 1669, he was one of many victims of the Popish Plot campaigns of Titus Oates, who accused him of plotting a foreign invasion of Ireland. He was tried and acquitted in Ireland, tried again in London, convicted and executed. He was canonised in 1975.

Curtayne, A., *The Trial of Oliver Plunket*. 1953.

**Plutarch** (Ploútarkhos, later Lucius Metrius Plutarchus) (c.46–120CE). Graeco-Roman historian, born in Chaeronea. Educated in Athens, he often visited Rome but spent most of his life in his native Boeotia. Best known of his works on history and philosophy is his *Lives of the Noble Greeks and Romans* (often called *Parallel Lives*), containing biographies of 23 Greek and 23 Roman figures notable in history. Distinguished by their literary excellence and narrative interest, the lives vary much in historical value owing to Plutarch's uncritical use of his sources. They became available to Elizabethans through North's translation (1579) of Amyot's great French translation (1559) and Shakespeare used them for his Roman plays.

Barrow, R. H., *Plutarch and his Times*. 1967.

**Pobedonostsev, Konstantin Petrovich** (1827–1907). Russian administrator, jurist and philosopher. From 1880 he was the government administrator of the Russian Orthodox Church, a powerful influence on Tsars Aleksandr III and Nikolai II, and, in part, a model for Tolstoy's Aleksei Karénin. (He excommunicated Tolstoy in 1901.)

**Pocahontas** (or Matoaka) (1595–1617). American Indian princess. When Captain John Smith, leader of the settlement of Jamestown, Virginia, was captured, Pocahontas, though only 11 years old, allegedly saved his life 'by taking his head in her arms'. Five years later, when she was held as a hostage in Jamestown, one of the settlers, John Rolfe, fell in love with her. They were married and in 1616 he took her (now baptised 'Rebecca') to England where she was received by the king and queen. She had one son.

**Poděbrad, Jiří** (George) **z Kunštátu** (1420–1471). King of Bohemia 1458–71. As leader of the moderate Hussites, he was elected King by the Diet although he had no blood ties with the former rulers. He

quickly restored the country after the Hussite Wars and strengthened the power of the monarchy at the expense of the nobility, the Catholic members of which formed a league against him. This acted in concert with the invading army of Matthias Corvinus, King of Hungary, whose pretext was a mandate of deposition by the Pope, by whom Jiří had been excommunicated (1446). Jiří, however, held his opponents at bay and fighting was still in progress when he died.

**Podgorny, Nikolai Viktorovich** (1903–1983). Russian Communist politician, born in the Ukraine. Originally a mechanic, he became a food technologist and a protégé of Khrushchev, serving as Secretary of the Ukraine CP 1957–63 and a Politburo member 1960–77. He was President of the USSR 1965–77.

**Poe, Edgar Allan** (1809–1849). American poet and short-story writer, born in Boston. Both his parents were on the stage, and on his mother's death (1811) he was adopted by John Allan, a merchant who sent him to school in England and to the University of Virginia, from which he ran away after a quarrel over debts. A projected career as an army officer became financially impossible when Allan married again, and Poe had to manoeuvre his dismissal from West Point (1831). Meanwhile his first book *Tamberlane and Other Poems* (1827) had appeared, but like its two successors (1829 and 1831) attracted little notice. A prizewinning short story, *MS. Found in a Bottle* (1833), obtained for him the editorship of a paper in Richmond, Virginia, which he turned into a success. In 1836 he married his 13-year-old cousin Virginia Clemm and to better himself moved to New York and then Philadelphia. In 1840 he published *Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque* (which included *The Fall of the House of Usher*) and in 1841 he joined George Graham for whom he edited *Graham's Magazine*, the circulation of which he raised from 5,000 to 35,000, his own contributions including the famous detective story *The Murders in the Rue Morgue*. Recognition as a major poet came with the publication of *The Raven and Other Poems* (1845). After the death of his wife (1847) he had a nervous breakdown and he died in Baltimore two years later on his way to fetch his aunt, Mrs Clemm, to attend his second marriage to a boyhood sweetheart, Sarah Elmira Royster. The commonly held view that Poe was a drug addict and an alcoholic is derived from a slanderous account in the preface to the collected edition written by his literary executor, Rufus W. Griswold, an old enemy with whom Poe believed himself reconciled. Every item has been refuted by his many loyal friends but the myth persists. He was in fact hard working and much loved. Few writers have equalled Poe in his presentation of the macabre and his tales of mystery and horror (e.g. *The Pit and the Pendulum*, *The Gold Bug* a classical reference for the solution of ciphers and *The Cask of Amontillado*) have been reprinted over and over again. His poems, e.g. *The Raven*, *Annabel Lee* and *The Bells*, show metrical mastery,

haunting rhythms and resonances and undertones of melancholy which deeply influenced \*Baudelaire and the French Symbolists.

Quinn, A. H., *Edgar Allan Poe: A Critical Biography*. 1969.

**Poincaré, (Jules) Henri** (1854–1912). French physical scientist and mathematician. Originally trained as a mining engineer, he became a physics lecturer first at Caen University and then at the Paris Faculté des Sciences where he taught until his death. His major work was in the field of functions. He developed important techniques of probing their properties by partial differential equations (which he termed ‘fuchsian’ and ‘kleinian’ functions). In much of his mathematical work he was a follower of Charles Hermite, especially in regard to the application of non-Euclidian geometry to the theory of quadratic forms. Another interest was an investigation of the properties of integral curves of differential equations. His longstanding concern for probability theory was expressed in his book of 1895 *Leçons sur le Calcul des Probabilités*. By the turn of the century he was thinking more philosophically about the foundations of Newtonian physics, and becoming aware of some of the dimensions of relativity. He grasped how absolute motion was incapable of being observed (i.e. that for the observer, everything in nature must be relative to something else). Poincaré was a gifted writer with deep insight into the creative process of mathematical discovery and logic, capable of being understood by the layman.

**Poincaré, Raymond Nicholas Landry** (1860–1934). French politician, born in Lorraine. A cousin of Henri \*Poincaré, he first became a deputy in 1887 and held a number of government offices including two terms as Finance Minister 1894–95 and 1906, and was elected to the Académie française in 1909. A firm but popular Premier 1912–13, as President of the Republic 1913–20, he expanded the powers of his office during World War I. Premier again 1922–24, he insisted upon a stern reparations policy towards Germany and ordered the occupation of the Ruhr when German payments were in arrears (1923). Recalled to ‘save the franc’ he was Premier for the last time 1926–29.

**Poiret, Paul** (1879–1944). French fashion designer. \*Matisse and \*Dufy created fabrics for him; he designed stage costumes and popularised Oriental motifs.

**Poisson, Simon-Denis** (1781–1840). French mathematical physicist. He adopted a two-fluid theory of electricity: like fluids repelled and unlike attracted. Their strengths were in proportion to the inverse square law. He presupposed that the normal condition of any body was to possess equal quantities of both fluids. Bodies became electrically charged when they acquired a superfluity of one. Using \*Lagrange’s methods, he attempted to render these

ideas in mathematical terms. He developed the bell shaped normal distribution curve. He shared the Copley Medal with \*Faraday (1832).

**Poitiers, Diane de** (1499–1566). French mistress. Although she was 48 when her lover \*Henri II came to the throne she long kept her beauty and used her power to counteract that of the Guises.

**Pol Pot** (originally Saloth Sar) (1925–1998). Cambodian (Kampuchean) Communist politician. A rubber worker and teacher, educated in Paris, he led the Khmer Rouge which took power on the US withdrawal from Indo-China and he became Premier 1976–79, with China’s backing, until overthrown by Vietnamese forces. He imposed a totalitarian regime that sought to eliminate all religion, urbanisation and Western influence (Year Zero). Deaths in the ‘killing fields’ have been estimated at 3 million.

Chandler, D., *Brother Number One*. 1993.

**Polanski, Roman** (1933– ). Polish-French film director. Educated at the Polish Film School, Lodz, his first film was *Two Men and a Wardrobe* (1958), followed by *Repulsion* (1964), *Rosemary’s Baby* (1968), *Chinatown* (1978) and *Frantic* (1988). He also directed the operas *Lulu*, *Rigoletto* and *Tales of Hoffmann*. In 1968 his wife Sharon Tate was murdered by Charles Manson.

**Polanyi, Michael** (né Mihály) (1891–1976). Hungarian-Jewish-British chemist, social scientist and philosopher, born in Budapest. He made fundamental contributions to adsorption, X-ray diffraction and reaction kinetics, lived in England from 1933 and created a new career as a social scientist. His son **John Charles Polanyi** (1929– ), a professor at Toronto, shared the 1986 Nobel Prize for Chemistry for his work in chemical kinetics, and was active in the Pugwash Group on Sciences and World Affairs. Michael’s brother, **Karl Paul Polanyi** (1886–1964), economic anthropologist, was born in Vienna. A lawyer and journalist, he lived in England 1933–40 and the US 1940–64. His book *The Great Transformation* (1944) was a powerful critique of neo-liberalism.

**Pole, Reginald** (1500–1558). English cardinal, born in Staffordshire. His mother, **Margaret Pole** (née Plantagenet), **Countess of Salisbury** (1473–1541) was the niece of \*Edward IV and \*Richard III. Educated at Oxford and Padua, he became a distinguished humanist scholar and a friend of \*Henry VIII. Ecclesiastical preferment, including the archbishopric of York, was offered in the hope that he would approve the annulment of Henry’s marriage to \*Katherine of Aragon. Unable to respond, Pole withdrew abroad and made public his disapproval of the divorce and of Henry’s claim to supremacy of the English Church in *De Unitate Ecclesiastica* (1536). Henry was even more enraged when (1536–37) Pope \*Paul III made Pole a cardinal, although not then ordained, and appointed him papal legate. He

attainted him, arrested members of his family and later had his mother executed. Pole continued in papal employment and in 1545 was one of the three legates who presided over the opening of the Council of Trent. He remained abroad during \*Edward VI's reign, but on the accession of Queen \*Mary I, he returned as papal legate and was the principal instrument by which Roman Catholicism was reimposed. He succeeded \*Cranmer as Archbishop of Canterbury (1556) and was instrumental in the burnings of Cranmer, \*Latimer and \*Ridley as Protestant martyrs. However, in 1558 his legateship was revoked by \*Paul IV and he died of influenza on the same day as Queen Mary.

Schenk, W., *Reginald Pole*. 1950.

**Politian** (or Poliziano: Angelo Ambrogini) (1454–1494). Italian scholar and poet. He was educated in the Florence of Lorenzo \*de'Medici, whose patronage he attracted by a Latin translation of \*Homer's *Iliad* which he began at the age of 17. His later works include translations of the great medical writers \*Hippocrates and \*Galen. In 1584 he became professor of Latin and Greek at Florence University. Some of his poetry (e.g. his Latin elegy on Lorenzo) shows both depth of feeling and metrical skill. His *Orfeo* was the first secular drama written in Italian. He was a major influence on \*Michelangelo.

**Polk, James Knox** (1795–1849). 11th President of the US 1845–49. Born in North Carolina, he became a lawyer in Tennessee. He entered the US House of Representatives in 1825, was speaker 1835–39, and Governor of Tennessee 1839–41, being defeated twice (1841, 1843.) In 1844 he was the original 'dark horse' candidate, winning the Democratic nomination on the eighth ballot, after Martin \*Van Buren, having won a simple majority, failed to gain the two-thirds vote. Although comparatively unknown, and failing to win his own state, in November he defeated Henry \*Clay and won the presidency. His term of office was notable for the settlement of the Oregon boundary dispute with Britain, the occupation of Texas and the ensuing war with Mexico by which California and New Mexico were acquired. He pledged to serve only a single term and did not contest the 1848 election, when Zachary \*Taylor succeeded, and died three months after his term ended. In 20 Presidential ranking lists by US historians and political scientists, Polk scores No. 12 in the aggregate, far ahead of any President between Andrew \*Jackson and Abraham \*Lincoln.

**Pollini, Maurizio** (1942– ). Italian pianist, born in Milan. His repertoire was exceptionally wide, from Renaissance music to the works of \*Boulez, \*Stockhausen and \*Nono, and he combined technical brilliance with deep interpretative gifts.

**Pollock, Jackson** (1912–1956). American painter. The pioneer and leading exponent of New York Abstract-Expressionism, by spraying or dribbling

paint on to an unstretched canvas tacked to floor or wall and being thus enabled to approach his picture from all sides, he claimed that he could achieve an intimacy with his subject otherwise unattainable. Using this method, he created tense and intricate patterns of swirling lines and shapes into which representational elements were sometimes introduced. He had great influence among his contemporaries. His *Blue Poles* (1952) was bought by the Australian National Gallery for \$US1.9 million in 1973, at that time a record price for his work. (In 2016 *Blue Poles* was insured for \$350 million.) In 2006 his *Number 5* (1948) sold for \$US140 million.

**Polo, Marco** (1254–1324). Venetian traveller, born possibly in Korčula, Dalmatia. The journeys which he vividly described resulted from an earlier expedition (1260–69) by his two uncles to Mongol territory during which they were persuaded to visit the great khan, \*Kublai, who as the result of Mongol conquests was also Emperor of China. They set out (1271) on a second journey, taking Marco with them, and travelled overland from Acre through Persia, Turkestan and the Gobi Desert, reaching Cambuluc (Peking) in 1275. Marco became a favourite of Kublai Khan who employed him on missions that took him to the furthest parts of the country, and also appointed him Governor of Yangchow. So high were the Polos in the khan's favour that it was not until 1292 that they were allowed to leave as part of the escort of a Mongolian princess on her way to Persia to marry a prince. The voyage took two years and the bridegroom had died meanwhile, but she married his brother, and the Polos eventually reached Venice in 1295. In 1296 Marco commanded a galley against the Genoese and was captured. While in prison he was allowed to send for his notes and, with the help of a fellow prisoner, Rustichello (or Rusticiano), he composed from them a record of his adventures. The book was published in 1298 as *Divisament dou Monde* ('Description of the World') but was soon better known, because of the incredulity it provoked, as *Il milione*, and became the great bestseller of the pre-Gutenberg age. Although the book contains some legendary material, its descriptions of China are generally accurate.

Latham, R., ed. and trans., *The Travels of Marco Polo*. 1958.

**Polybius** (c.200–c.120 BCE). Greek historian. Sent to Rome (166) as a hostage, he became friendly with \*Scipio Aemilianus whom he accompanied when Carthage was destroyed (146). It was thanks to the encouragement of the Scipio family that he wrote his *Universal History*, one of the greatest historical works ever written. The first five books survive intact, but of the other 35 only fragments remain. The extant books mainly cover the period 221–168 BCE and provide a careful and critical account of the Punic Wars.

Walbank, F. W., *Polybius*. 1973.

**Polycarp, St** (c.70–155/6). Greek Bishop of Smyrna. His long life made him a link between the apostles and the Fathers of the Church: \*Irenaeus relates that as a boy he had heard Polycarp speaking of his 'intercourse with \*John and others who had seen the Lord'. He wrote a notable epistle to the Church at Philippi. He was martyred in Smyrna. His feast day is 26 January.

**Polyclitus** (5th century BCE). Greek sculptor. He worked particularly in bronze and was contemporary with \*Phidias. \*Pliny thought his Doryphorus perfect sculpture.

**Polycrates** (d.522 BCE). 'Tyrant' of Samos c.535–522 BCE. Having built a large fleet, he dominated the Aegean as a kind of pirate king. Enriched with spoils, he beautified Samos and made it temporarily the cultural centre of the Greek world, Anacreon being one of the many poets and artists attracted to his court. At last the Persian Governor of Lydia, whose ships and ports had suffered most heavily, lured him to Magnesia where he had him assassinated. The famous legend of the ring and the fish relates to Polycrates: told to throw away something precious, lest his prosperity provoke the envy of the gods, he hurled a valuable ring into the sea. When the ring came back to him the next day in the belly of a fish, it was taken as a portent of his doom.

**Pombal, Sebastião José de Carvalho e Melo, Marquis of** (1699–1782). Portuguese statesman. He showed his outstanding ability as Foreign Minister 1750–55 and Prime Minister 1755–77 under King \*José (Joseph). The skill with which he met the problems created by the earthquake that destroyed Lisbon (1755) gave him a reputation that enabled him to carry out important reforms and curb powers of the Church he thought excessive. Thus sentences passed by the Inquisition now required government approval, censorship passed to state control; he also expelled the Jesuits, whom he suspected of political intrigue. Facilities for education, hitherto almost entirely in Church hands, were extended by building 800 schools and reforming the universities. He promoted the development of Brazil and decreed the liberation of the Indian slaves. Ruthlessness in carrying out his policies gradually built up opposition and when Maria I succeeded (1777), he was dismissed. Energy, honesty and vision made Pombal one of the greatest figures of Portuguese history.

Maxwell, K., *Pombal: Paradox of the Enlightenment*. 1995.

**Pompadour, Jeanne Antoinette, Marquise de** (1721–1764). French mistress of \*Louis XV. Daughter of a speculator, François Poisson, she was beautiful and accomplished, and married Lenormant d'Etoiles, a man rich enough to enable her to entertain and be entertained. She became the king's mistress in 1745 and for the rest of her life maintained a hold over him even after her sexual attractions had ceased.

As her beauty faded her extravagance increased, but she had good taste and her patronage of literature and the arts was wisely bestowed, e.g. on \*Voltaire and \*Boucher. She founded the porcelain factory at Sèvres and the École Militaire. Her meddling in politics resulted in the diplomatic upheaval by which the hereditary enemies France and Austria fought as allies in the disastrous Seven Years War (1756–63). Her protégé the Duc de \*Choiseul became Foreign Minister in 1758.

Mitford, N., *Madame de Pompadour*. 1964.

**Pompeo, Mike** (Michael Richard) (1963– ). American Republican politician and administrator. Educated at Harvard, he was a Congressman 2011–17, Director of the CIA 2017–18 and US Secretary of State 2018–21.

**Pompey the Great** (Gnaeus Pompeius Magnus) (106–48 BCE). Roman soldier and politician. He sided with \*Sulla against \*Marius in the Civil War and for his successes in Africa won the title *Magnus* ('the great'). After Sulla's death (78) he put down a revolt by \*Lepidus, and in Spain crushed the remaining faction of Marius. Back in Rome, his quest for office led him to break with the senatorial party, heal an old feud with \*Crassus and jointly with him hold the consulship of 70, gaining popularity by restoring the power of the tribunes. He received a special commission to clear the Mediterranean of pirates, which he accomplished in a single brilliant campaign (67). His next achievements were to finish off the war with \*Mithridates (66), annex Syria and capture Jerusalem (63). On his return to Rome (61) he found the timid and jealous Senate reluctant to concede his two reasonable demands: provision for his veterans and confirmation of his eastern settlement which involved the creation of four new Roman provinces, Bithynia (with Pontus), Cilicia, Syria and Crete. He was thus almost forced into forming (60) the First Triumvirate with \*Caesar, whose daughter Julia he married, and Crassus. Caesar departed to pursue his conquests in Gaul, and Crassus went east. Pompey began to be suspicious of the activities of Caesar's friends in Rome, and following the deaths of Julia (54) and Crassus (53) the friendship deteriorated. The death of \*Clodius, followed by anarchy in Rome, brought about the final breach. Pompey and the Senate, the only sources of law and order, were reconciled and in 52 Pompey was made sole consul. Caesar, seeing his prospects of renewed power and even his life endangered if he returned unarmed, took the symbolic step of crossing the Rubicon and entering Italy with his legions (49). Pompey with most of the senators withdrew to Greece to collect an army but when the rivals finally met at Pharsalus (48), Pompey was defeated, fled and was murdered in Egypt.

His son, **Sextus Pompeius** (Magnus Pius) (c.67–36 BCE), a general, fought against the Second Triumvirate (\*Octavian, Mark \*Antony and \*Lepidus), controlled

Sicily 42–36 and invaded southern Italy. He defeated Octavian in two battles (37, 36) but \*Agrippa destroyed his navy (36). Escaping to Asia Minor, he was captured and summarily executed in Miletus.

Gelzer, M., *Pompeius*. 1959; Seager, R., *Pompey the Great: A Political Biography*. 2002; Southern, P., *Pompey the Great: Caesar's Friend and Foe*. 2002.

**Pompidou, Georges Jean Raymond** (1911–1974). French politician, born in Montboudif. Originally a teacher of literature, during World War II he became active in the Resistance, joined \*de Gaulle's personal staff in 1944 and was a member of the Council of State from 1946 until he became director general of Rothschild's French banking house (1954). When de Gaulle returned to power (1958) he chose Pompidou to plan the transition to the Fifth French Republic and assist in drafting a Constitution. He then returned to banking until appointed to succeed Michel \*Debré as Prime Minister 1962–68, holding office for a record term, although never serving in the National Assembly. He fell out with de Gaulle, but when the latter resigned suddenly, Pompidou won the nomination of the Gaullist Party (UDR) and was President of France 1969–74, dying in office, suddenly, from Waldenström's macroglobulinemia, a rare form of lymphoma. The great Centre Pompidou (Beaubourg), for modern art, was named for him and he encouraged \*Boulez' avant-garde music.

**Poncelet, Jean Victor** (1788–1867). French mathematician and engineer. He served in the Napoléonic army at Walcheren and in Russia, where he was wounded, and imprisoned. During his years of captivity (until 1814) he applied himself to the mathematical works of Monge, and wrote some important papers. He returned to Metz in 1814 and worked in the field of projective geometry, producing his *Traité des Propriétés Projectives des Figures* in 1822. Poncelet's most fertile period in applied mechanics was between 1825 and 1840. He spent much time on the improvement of water wheels and turbines. He made some important advances in the field of fortifications, and wrote extensively about the theory of machines. His main influence, however, was as a practical teacher. In 1848 he was made head of the Paris École Polytechnique.

**Ponchielli, Amilcare** (1834–1886). Italian composer. A prolific writer of opera, he is now remembered only for *La Gioconda* (1876), and his significant influence on \*Puccini.

**Poniatowski, Josef Antoni** (1762–1813). Polish patriot and marshal of France. A nephew of \*Stanisław II August, the last king of Poland, in the struggle that preceded the final partition of the Polish kingdom (1793), he gained several victories over the Russians. In 1794 he commanded the division of \*Kosciuszko's patriot army which vainly defended Warsaw. When \*Napoléon formed the grand duchy of Warsaw, Poniatowski became War Minister and

Commander-in-Chief. In 1812 he headed the large Polish contingent which fought its way with Napoléon to Moscow and, still with the French army after the retreat, he performed so gallantly at Leipzig (1813) that Napoléon created him Marshal. He was drowned whilst covering the French retreat.

**Poniatowski, Stanisław II August** *see* **Stanisław II August Poniatowski**

**Ponti, Gio(vanni)** (1891–1979). Italian architect, designer and craftsman. From 1923, when he appeared at the Triennale Exhibition as a ceramics designer, he designed furniture, industrial products, the interiors of liners, and stage costume and settings, as well as buildings throughout Europe and America. Of his modern commercial buildings, the Pirelli tower (1957) in Milan is among the most striking. He founded (1928) the magazine *Domus* and became its editor.

**Pontiac** (c.1720–1769). American Ottawa Indian chief. He planned a large-scale concerted attack on the British colonists in which all the frontier forts from Canada to Virginia except Detroit and Pittsburgh were captured (1763). Pontiac agreed to a peace treaty in 1766.

Peckham, H. H., *Pontiac and the Indian Uprising*. 1947.

**Pope, Alexander** (1688–1744). English poet, born in London. Son of a linen merchant, his family, to avoid persecution as Roman Catholics, left London (c.1700) to live in Windsor Forest. Deprived of a normal education by lifelong deformity caused by a tubercular spine, the boy Alexander educated himself, with his father's encouragement and help. By precocious reading and writing he began an epic at the age of 12. His pastoral poems were the first to be published, followed by the *Essay on Criticism* (1711) and the mock-heroic *Rape of the Lock* (1712). With these works and other poems he was steadily building up a reputation when the publication of his Homeric translations, *The Iliad* (1715–20) and *The Odyssey* (1725–26), brought fame and enough fortune to enable him to rent a villa at Twickenham and lay out a five-acre garden in the romantic fashion of the time, with a temple, obelisk (in memory of his mother), 'sacred groves', an orangery and above all a grotto, where he could talk with his many and famous visiting friends.

His edition of \*Shakespeare (1725) produced much criticism, to which the *Dunciad* (1728), in which his opponents were satirised as pedants and dunces, was a reply. His *Essay on Man* (1733–34) is a popular exposition in verse of current philosophical beliefs, while his *Moral Essays* (1731–35) deal with the characters of men and women, the use of riches, and good taste. The fitting of names to the imaginary characters involved the author in several literary quarrels. The most famous of them was with Lady Mary Wortley \*Montagu by whom Pope was at first



dazzled but whose unkind cynicism soon disillusioned him. In his *Imitations of Horace*, perhaps the best of Pope's satirical works, she saw herself in the lines:

From furious Sappho scarce a milder fate.  
Poised by her love, or libelled by her hate.

But if Pope had a talent for making enemies, he had also a gift, much truer to his real character, of making friends—\*Swift, \*Gay, \*Bolingbroke, \*Arbuthnot, and Martha Blount. Pope's 'heroic couplets' in which so much of his work is written would be monotonous were it not for the flexibility he introduced by variation of stress, turn of phrase and exact choice of word. The wit and wisdom is accompanied, too, by a poet's imaginative vision. In spite of his deficiencies of character, Pope is one of the great figures of English literature.

Mack, M. *Alexander Pope*, 1985.

**Popper, Sir Karl Raimund** (1902–1994). Austrian-British philosopher, born in Vienna. His father, a successful lawyer and bibliophile, converted from Judaism to Lutheranism. He studied at Vienna University, became a Marxist, briefly, and worked as a cabinet maker, then schoolteacher. He left Europe after \*Hitler came to power, lectured at Canterbury University College, Christchurch, New Zealand 1937–45, was denied Sydney University's senior lectureship in philosophy (1945), and became reader in logic 1945–49 and professor of logic and scientific method 1949–69 at the London School of Economics. His books e.g. *The Logic of Scientific Discovery* (1934), *The Open Society and its Enemies* (1945), *The Poverty of Historicism* (1957) and *Conjectures and Refutations* (1963), examine the conditions of scientific and social progress and elaborate his main theories that the confirmation of a theory can never be more than provisional, while its refutation will always be final; that ethical standards are 'autonomous' (i.e. are not derivative from facts), hence that individuals have the right to criticise authorities and institutions, and finally that progress is made possible not by Utopian approach but by readiness to make the best of existing material resources. He argued that the proponents of an idea must be able to propose methods for testing 'falsifiability', leading to confirmation or refutation of the hypothesis. In Popper's view, followers of \*Marx, \*Freud, religions and most economic theories are unable (or unwilling) to meet the test. He was elected FRS (1976), a rare honour for a non-scientist, and made a CH (1982).

Popper, K., *Unended Quest: An Intellectual Autobiography*. 1976.

**Porpora, Nicola Antonio** (1686–1768). Italian composer and teacher, born in Naples. He worked in Naples, Vienna, Venice, London and Dresden and was considered as a rival to \*Händel. He wrote about 50 operas (some in one act, beginning with

*Agrippina*, 1706), ending with *The triumph of Camilla* (1760). He taught the outstanding castrato \*Farinelli, for whom he wrote many virtuoso arias.

**Porsche, Ferdinand** (1875–1951). German engineer and motorcar designer. He began work with \*Daimler and Auto Union, and set up his own workshops in 1931. In 1934 he designed the revolutionary Volkswagen, a cheap, reliable people's car with a rear engine, intended for a mass market in the 1930s but not produced until after 1945. The Porsche company produced very sophisticated sports cars.

Georgano, G. N. (ed.), *The Complete Encyclopaedia of Motorcars: 1885–1968*. 1968.

**Porson, Richard** (1759–1808). English classical scholar. The founder of scientific textual criticism, his editions of \*Euripides and those of \*Aeschylus and \*Aristophanes compiled from his notes, set new standards of criticism. He was also a connoisseur of wine, and his correspondence reveals a mischievous sense of humour.

**Portal of Hungerford, Charles Frederick Algernon Portal, 1st Viscount** (1893–1971). British airman. Educated at Winchester and Oxford, after a brilliant record (MC, DSO, and bar) in World War I, he held important administrative posts between the wars and became Chief of Bomber Command 1940. As Chief of Staff, RAF 1940–45 he largely directed operational strategy, was proponent of the firebombing of German cities, and became Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff 1945. Created a marshal of the RAF (1944), he was made a baron in 1945, a viscount, KG and OM in 1946. He was controller of production (atomic energy) 1946–51. \*Eisenhower thought him the most impressive of Britain's war leaders.

**Porter, Cole** (1891–1964). American composer and lyricist, born in Indiana. Educated at Yale and Harvard, he spent years in France and studied music with Vincent d'Indy in Paris. Rich, married and gay, he lost a leg after a riding accident. He developed an astringent, sophisticated style with both words and music. His musicals include *Anything Goes* (1934), *Kiss Me Kate* (1949), *Can Can* (1953) and *Silk Stockings* (1955) and he wrote the film score for *High Society* (1956). His best songs include *You're the Top*, *Begin the Beguine*, *Night and Day*, *In the Still of the Night* and *My Heart Belongs to Daddy*.

**Porter, George, Baron Porter of Luddenham** (1920–2002). British chemist. Educated at Cambridge, he taught there at Sheffield and (from 1963) at the Royal Institution, London. He shared the 1967 Nobel Prize for Chemistry for work on photo-chemistry. He was a successful populariser of science in writing and on television, became President of the Royal Society 1985–1990, and received the OM and a peerage.

**Porter, Michael Eugene** (1947– ). American economist. He taught economics at Harvard from 1973, and was a professor 1982– . In *The Competitive Advantage of Nations* (1980) he modified \*Ricardo's concept of 'comparative advantage', demonstrating how nations with no history or experience in particular areas developed niche markets against ferocious competition, e.g. Finland's Nokia mobile telephones or Kone medical assay equipment.

**Portillo, Michael Denzil Xavier** (1953– ). English politician and television presenter. His father was Spanish, his mother Scottish. Educated at Harrow and Peterhouse, Cambridge, he worked in the oil industry, was MP 1984–97, Minister for Employment 1994–95 and Secretary for Defence 1995–97. He was re-elected as MP 1999–2005 and became Shadow Chancellor 2000–01, failing in a bid for the Conservative leadership. He left the Conservative Party in 2006 and became a presenter in many television series.

**Portland, 3rd Duke of, William Henry Cavendish Bentinck** (1738–1809). English politician, originally Whig, later Tory. Educated at Oxford, MP 1761–62, he was Lord Lieutenant of Ireland 1782. He served twice as Prime Minister, in April–December 1783 as nominal head of the \*Fox–\*North coalition and 1807–09 in a government dominated by \*Canning and \*Castlereagh. He was Chancellor of Oxford University 1792–1809.

**Portsmouth, Louise de Keroualle, Duchess of** (1649–1734). French mistress of \*Charles II of Britain. She also acted as confidential agent of \*Louis XIV of France. Charles Lennox, her son by the king, was created Duke of Richmond and Gordon.

**Post, Emily** (1873–1960). American writer, born in Baltimore. After writing some novels on social themes she turned to becoming mentor to Americans in all matters of social behaviour and etiquette, broadcasting and writing newspaper articles on these subjects. Her reputation was based on the book *Etiquette* (1922).

**Potemkin, Grigori Aleksandrovich, Prince of Tauris** (1739–1791). Russian soldier. He was one of the guards officers who conspired to put \*Catherine the Great on the throne (1762), he became her lover (1769) and perhaps her secret husband (1774). He was of impressive physique and personality and showed his talents as an administrator when he was sent to colonise territory conquered from Turkey. He also created the Russian Black Sea fleet and founded the naval base of Sevastopol. He acquired his princely title and vast wealth from Catherine, but he was not merely the self-seeking rascal portrayed by those who invented the tale that, to deceive foreigners, he had built cardboard villages to convey a false impression of the prosperity of the Crimea.

**Potter, Dennis** (Christopher George) (1935–1994). English playwright. A journalist and critic, he wrote many successful television dramas, reaching a vast

international audience. They include *Blade on the Feather* (1980), *Pennies from Heaven* (1981) and *The Singing Detective* (6 parts, 1987).

**Potter, (Helen) Beatrix** (1866–1943). English author and illustrator. She produced notable children's books, e.g. *The Tale of Peter Rabbit* (1900) and *The Tailor of Gloucester* (1902). She lived in the Lake District for many years and left her extensive estate to the National Trust. Her books have been translated into many languages, modern and classical, and are still highly popular.

Lane, M., *The Tale of Beatrix Potter*. 1970.

**Poujade, Pierre** (1920–2003). French bookseller. In 1953–54 he organised a tax revolt by small businessmen, and in 1956, 52 Poujadist deputies were elected (with 12 per cent of the vote) on a policy proposing tax cuts, regionalism and vaguely Fascist social policies. His movement faded with \*de Gaulle's return to power (1958).

**Poulenc, Francis** (1899–1963). French composer and pianist, born in Paris. One of 'Les Six' (\*Honegger), his output included concertos for harpsichord (1928), two pianos (1932) and organ (1938), chamber music, piano pieces, e.g. *Mouvements Perpetuels* (1918), the ballet *Les Biches* (1923), the *Mass in G Minor* (1937), the cantata *La Figure Humaine* (1943) and the operas *Les Mamelles de Tirésias* (1944) and *Dialogues des Carmélites* (1956). An outstanding composer of songs, he wrote many for his sometime lover, the baritone **Pierre Bernac** (1899–1979), touring and recording with him.

Roy, J., *Francis Poulenc*. 1964.

**Pound, Sir** (Alfred) **Dudley** (Pickman Rogers) (1877–1943). British Admiral of the Fleet. A captain in World War I, after distinguishing himself at Jutland, he became director of operations at the Admiralty. He was Commander-in-Chief, Mediterranean 1936–39 and promoted Admiral of the Fleet and First Sea Lord 1939–43, gaining credit for successes against U-boats in the Atlantic, and in the Mediterranean, and blame for failures in the Far East. A stroke forced his retirement. He was consoled with the OM a month before his death.

**Pound, Ezra** (Weston Loomis) (1885–1972). American poet, born in Idaho. After spending the years 1906–07 in European travel he lived mainly in England. His early works, e.g. *Provenca* (1910), *Canzone* (1911) and *Riposte* (1912), included adaptations of Latin, Provençal, Chinese and Japanese verses (the latter two based on literal translations). As a leader of the Imagist group (c.1914), which attempted to transfer to poetry the modern movements in art, he was distinctive with his 'velvet coat ... pointed beard ... and fiery hair'. In pursuit of the same aim he was co-editor with Wyndham Lewis of *Blast*, the organ of Vorticism. He was also foreign correspondent of *Poetry* (Chicago) (1912–19) and the *Little Review* (1917–19). Among

his best works were *Quia Paupera Amavi* (1919) and *Hugh Selwyn Mauberley* (1920). During this time he formed literary friendships with W. B. Yeats (whose secretary he became), Robert Frost, James Joyce, Ernest Hemingway and T. S. Eliot (and edited his *The Waste Land*). He lived in Paris from 1920, moved to Rapallo in 1924, became an enthusiastic supporter of Mussolini and helped to revive interest in Vivaldi. From about 1919 to 1960, he worked intermittently on his *Cantos*, a vast, complex compilation, publishing the first part in 1925. He made much use of 'free association' and distorted spellings and contained a sprawling medley of quotations ranging from ancient Greek and Chinese to modern slang. Meanwhile he had taken up, in turn, Social Credit (C. H. Douglas) and Fascism, for reasons deriving in part at least from his obsessive hatred of 'usury' as the basis of all the evils of modern life, and wrote *Jefferson and/or Mussolini* (1935). During World War II he made regular broadcasts from Italy supporting Mussolini, and in 1945 he was arrested, charged with treason and returned to the US. Certified insane, he was held in St Elizabeth's Hospital, Washington, but produced the controversial *The Pisan Cantos* (1948). Released in 1958, he returned to Italy and died in Venice, where he is buried. He had a major influence upon modern poetry but critics are sharply divided about the quality of his poetry.

Pound, E., *Letters*. 1951; Stock, N., *The Life of Ezra Pound*. 1970; Tytell, J., *Ezra Pound. The Solitary Volcano*. 1987; Moody, A. D., *Ezra Pound: Poet*. 3 vols, 2007, 2014, 2015; Swift, D., *The Bughouse. The poetry, politics and madness of Ezra Pound*. 2017.

**Pound, Roscoe** (1870–1964). American jurist. Trained as a botanist, and without a law degree, he held a number of academic appointments, especially in his native Nebraska and in the Harvard Law School, where he was Story professor 1910–13, Carter professor of jurisprudence 1913–16 and then Dean 1916–36. His influence in the development of modern jurisprudence was important in directing attention to social implications. He turned against the New Deal after 1937.

**Poussin, Nicolas** (1594–1665). French painter, born in Normandy. He was trained in Paris then went to Rome (1624), where he remained for the rest of his life. The carefully planned compositions for which he is famous show historical, mythological and biblical scenes in settings where usually some statue or building exactly copied from the antique gives the necessary verisimilitude. His work is remarkably homogeneous but the passage of years is marked by the change from the warm colours of the Venetians, Titian and Tintoretto, to the cool, clear tones of the north. From about 1645 Poussin devoted more attention to landscapes, which he peopled with mythological figures. In these he achieves, even more significantly than in other works, the beauty that comes from perfect compositional balance. In 1640 Poussin accepted an invitation from Louis XIV to

return to France and decorate the long gallery of the Louvre, but he found the work uncongenial and returned to Rome. Poussin's influence was strong during the classical revival of the following century.

Blunt, A., *Nicolas Poussin*. 1967.

**Powell, Anthony Dymoke** (1905–2000). English novelist, born in London. Educated (unhappily) at Eton and Oxford, he worked in publishing, married Lady Violet Pakenham and became an assiduous book reviewer for *Punch* and *The Daily Telegraph*. His first novel was *Afternoon Men* (1931). In 1951, he published *Question of Upbringing*, the first of a 12-novel sequence called *A Dance to the Music of Time*, completed in 1975 with *Hearing Secret Harmonies*. The books, running to 1,130,000 words, have a single narrator, Nick Jenkins, who records (somewhat satirically) his own life and circle in a prosperous, fashionable society from 1914 to 1971. V. S. Pritchett thought the sequence was like Proust translated by Wodehouse: it became a television series in 1997–98. Powell also wrote *John Aubrey and His Friends* (1948) and received a CH in 1988.

Spurling, H., *Anthony Powell. Dancing to the Music of Time*. 2017.

**Powell, Colin Luther** (1937–2021). American general, born in New York. Of Jamaican parentage, he was educated at the City University of New York and George Washington University. Commissioned in the US Army in 1958, he had an unusual degree of political experience for a serving soldier and became the first African-American to be National Security Advisor 1987–89 and Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff 1989–93. His memoirs *My American Journey* (1995) encouraged support for Powell as a Republican presidential candidate in 1996 but he declined to run. As Secretary of State 2001–05, he was deeply uneasy about George W. Bush's plan to invade Iraq (2003) but became compromised by his assertion at the United Nations that Saddam Hussein had 'weapons of mass destruction'. He endorsed Barack Obama in 2008 and 2012 and despised Donald Trump. He died of Covid complications.

**Powell, (John) Enoch** (1912–1998). English politician and classicist. Educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, he was professor of Greek at the University of Sydney 1937–39. During World War II he served in the army (general staff) and rose to the rank of brigadier. He became Parliamentary Secretary to the Ministry of Housing and Local Government in the Conservative Government of 1955, Financial Secretary to the Treasury 1957–58 and Minister for Health 1960. He became famous for his views on the dangers he saw attending coloured immigration and for his opposition to Britain's membership of the Common Market. He refused to stand as a Conservative in the general election of February 1974 and was an Ulster Unionist MP 1974–87.

Powell, J. E., *Wrestling with the Angel*. 1977.

**Powys, John Cowper** (1872–1963). British writer. His works include the historical novels *A Glastonbury Romance* (1933) and *Owen Glendower* (1941), the epic poem *Lucifer* (written 1905), and literary criticism, e.g. *Dostoevsky* (1947) and *Rabelais* (1948). His brother **Llewelyn** (1884–1939) was also a novelist and essayist of distinction e.g. *The Pathetic Fallacy* (1928) and *Love and Death* (1939) as was his brother **Theodore Francis** (1875–1953). He wrote chiefly on rural and allegorical themes, notably *Mr Weston's Good Wine* (1927).

Graves, R. P., *The Powys Brothers*. 1983.

**Poynings, Sir Edward** (1459–1521). English statesman. An opponent of \*Richard III, he fled to France to join the Earl of Richmond, who became King of England as \*Henry VII (1485). Poynings was later appointed (1494) the king's deputy in Ireland and his name is given to the law (1494) which laid down that the summoning of an Irish parliament and its legislative agenda were both dependent upon the consent of the English Privy Council and that all laws passed in Westminster were applicable in Ireland.

**Pozzo, Andrea** (1642–1709). Italian painter, architect, stage designer and art theorist, born in Trento. He worked for the Jesuits and his masterpiece is the astonishing *trompe l'oeil* ceiling, *Apotheosis of St Ignatius* (1685–94) at the Church of St Ignatius (S. Ignazio) in Rome. He designed the tomb of St Ignatius \*Loyola in the Church of the Gesù, then worked in Vienna, where he died.

**Praetorius, Michael** (originally Schulz or Schultheiss) (1571–1621). German composer, born in Silesia. Influenced by Giovanni \*Gabrieli and the Venetians, he was prolific in many forms, both religious and secular, including *Terpsichore*, arrangements of 300 dances. A distant kinsman, **Hieronymous Praetorius** (1560–1629) was organist at Hamburg and wrote a splendid *Magnificat* (1599).

**Pramoedya Ananta Toer** (1925–2006). Indonesian novelist and essayist, born in Java. His first major novel, *The Fugitive*, written 1947–49 as a prisoner of the Dutch, was published in 1950. Imprisoned without trial on the island of Buru 1965–79, he wrote *The Buru Quartet (This Earth of Mankind, Child of All Nations, Footsteps, House of Glass)*. His books were translated into 33 languages in the 1980s but banned in Indonesia until 2005. Kept under house arrest until 1992, he was nominated several times for the Nobel Prize and won international awards *in absentia*.

**Prasad, Rajendra** (1884–1963). Indian politician. A lawyer, teacher and follower of \*Gandhi, he was President of the Indian National Congress Party 1932–43, 1939–41 and 1947–48, and imprisoned for nationalist activities 1942–45. He entered \*Nehru's Government as Minister of Food 1946–47 and became first president of the Republic of India 1950–62.

**Pratchett, Sir Terry** (Terence David John) (1948–2015). English novelist. He wrote 40 fantasy novels in the Discworld series and campaigned vigorously for more research into \*Alzheimer's disease.

**Pratt, Sir Charles** *see* **Camden, 1st Earl**

**Praxiteles** (c.390–330 BCE). Greek sculptor. He was the first to sculpt an entire female nude figure, using his mistress, Phryne. The only surviving statue believed to be original is of 'Hermes carrying off the infant Dionysus', in the Archaeological Museum in Olympia. His famous statue of 'Aphrodite of Cnidus (Venus)' no longer exists but some ancient copies survive, of which the finest are in the Vatican and at Munich.

Richter, G., *A Handbook of Greek Art*. 1969.

**Prendergast, Maurice Brazil** (1859–1924). American painter, born in Newfoundland. He trained in Boston, painted extensively in France and Italy, was influenced by \*Cézanne, \*Whistler, \*Signac, \*Degas and \*Sickert, and had seven paintings in the 1913 Armory Show in New York. His work, first in watercolour, then oil, reflects the colour and form of Impressionism, in sharp contrast to the prevailing academic style in American painting.

**Prescott, John Leslie, Baron Prescott** (1938– ). English Labour politician. He worked as a ship's steward and union official, became MP 1970–2010, a leader of the Left, and Deputy Leader 1994–2007. He was Deputy Prime Minister and Secretary of State for Environment, Transport and the Regions 1997–2007 under Tony \*Blair.

**Prescott, William Hickling** (1796–1859). American historian, born in Salem, Mass. Educated at Harvard, he was blinded in the left eye, had limited sight in the right and suffered from acute rheumatism. He devoted himself to the history of Spain and the conquest of the Aztec and Inca empires, working from primary sources where possible although he never visited South America. His major works are *History of the Reign of Ferdinand and Isabella the Catholic* (3 vols, 1838), *History of the Conquest of Mexico* (3 vols, 1843), *History of the Conquest of Peru* (2 vols, 1847) and *A History of the Reign of Philip the Second, King of Spain* (3 vols, 1858), impressive but biased in favour of the Spanish.

Gardner, C. H., *William Hickling Prescott*. 1970.

**Presley, Elvis Aron** (1935–1977). American rock and roll singer and film actor. He became an international cult-figure for teenagers and succeeded in widening his appeal even after his early death.

Goldman, A., *Elvis*. 1981.

**Pressler, Manahem** (1923– ). Israeli-American pianist, born in Germany. He escaped from Germany in 1939, taught in the US, was pianist with the Beaux Arts Trio 1955–2008, then began touring as a soloist, with his Berlin debut at the age of 90.

**Prester John** (Latin: Presbyter Johannes). Legendary Christian patriarch, elder and king, a subject of great medieval interest. His location moved through the centuries, identified first with India where St \*Thomas had established Christian communities, then with Nestorians in Mongolia, later with the Christian (Coptic) rulers of Ethiopia. Prester John was referred to by \*Marco Polo and \*Shakespeare.

Silverberg, R., *The Realm of Prester John*. 1996.

**Pretender, the Old and the Young** *see* **Stuart, James Edward** and **Stuart, Charles Edward**

**Pretorius, Andries Wilhelmus Jacobus** (1799–1853). South African Boer leader, born in Cape Colony. He became prominent during the Great Trek from the Cape to Natal, when by his victory over the Zulus (1838) he avenged the massacre of Piet Retief and his 60 followers by the Zulu chief, \*Dingaan. After the British occupation of Natal, Pretorius moved on to the Transvaal, the independence of which was secured by the Sands River Convention (1842). First President of the Transvaal South African Republic 1852–53, its capital Pretoria was named for him. His son **Marthinus Wessels Pretorius** (1819–1901), President of both the Transvaal 1855–71 and the Orange Free State 1859–63, tried, vainly, to unite them.

**Prévost** (d'Exiles), **Antoine François** (1697–1763). French novelist, known as l'Abbé Prevost. Having left his Jesuit college to serve as a soldier, he joined the Benedictines and became a priest. His vocation was real enough but often in conflict with the demands of his nature for passion and adventure. His life in consequence contained clashes with his Church superiors (and even the police) as well as periods when he found it wise to live abroad, especially in England. The conflict was to some extent resolved by his writings in which he could enjoy by proxy some of the experiences otherwise denied. In the Abbey of St Germain des Prés in Paris, he wrote the novel *Les Memoires d'un homme de qualité* (1728–31). This included the famous love story *Manon Lescaut* (later an opera by \*Puccini) in which the titular heroine was the *femme fatale* in the life of the chevalier Des Grieux, a young man closely resembling Prevost himself. He translated several of \*Richardson's novels into French.

**Price, Richard** (1723–1791). Welsh Unitarian minister. A thinker on moral and political problems and ideas, he advocated the reduction of the National Debt in 1771 and defended the policies and aspirations of the American Revolutionaries. A friend of Benjamin \*Franklin, he was well regarded in America and was invited over by Congress in 1778, after his *Observations on Civil Liberty and the War with America* (1776).

**Prichard, Katherine Susannah** (1883–1969). Australian novelist, born in Fiji. She grew up in poverty in Tasmania and Victoria, became a governess,

then a journalist, lived in London 1908–16 and in Western Australia from 1919. Her novels included *The Pioneers* (1915), *Working Bullocks* (1926), *Coonardo* (1929) and *The Roaring Nineties* (1946). She joined the Australian Communist Party in 1920 and became an inflexible Stalinist. Her husband, **Jim** (Hugo Vivian Hope) **Throssell** (1884–1933) won a VC at Gallipoli, supported her politics and pacifism but suffered from depression and shot himself.

Hobby, N., *The Red Witch. A biography of Katherine Susannah Prichard*. 2022.

**Priestley, J(ohn) B(oynton)** (1894–1984). English novelist, playwright and essayist, born in Bradford. Wounded in France in World War I, he studied at Cambridge University, then worked as publisher's reader in London. After making his name with critical studies of *Meredith* (1926) and *Peacock* (1927) he wrote the picaresque novel *The Good Companions* (1929), the most popular of all his works, followed by e.g. *Angel Pavement* (1930), *Bright Day* (1946) and *Festival at Farbridge* (1951). The plays *Dangerous Corner* (1932) and *Laburnum Grove* (1933) show his skill and originality in a new medium. Four others *Time and the Conways* (1937), *I Have Been Here Before* (1937), *Music at Night* (1938) and *An Inspector Calls* (1946) have plots based on J. W. \*Dunne's space-time concepts. He wrote more than 100 books, including three volumes of autobiography, history and criticism, and was a particularly effective broadcaster (especially during World War II). He received the OM in 1977.

**Priestley, Joseph** (1733–1804). English Unitarian clergyman and chemist, born in Yorkshire. The orphaned son of a preacher, he was largely self-educated, with a gift for languages. He met \*Franklin in 1766 and this encouraged him to concentrate on science and to write a *History of Electricity* (1767). He was the first to produce several gases e.g. ammonia, sulphur dioxide and the oxides of nitrogen. Experiments with carbon dioxide led to the invention of soda water (1772), which earned him the Copley Medal. He became librarian (1772–80) to Lord \*Shelburne, advisor to Josiah \*Wedgwood and a member of the Birmingham Lunar Society. The first to realise that air is not an elementary substance, but a compound of gases, Priestley isolated—as did \*Scheele—the active component which he called 'dephlogisticated air' (1774), named 'oxygen' by \*Lavoisier in 1779. His *History of Early Opinion concerning Jesus Christ* (1786) was deeply controversial. He strongly supported the French Revolution and this led to his Birmingham house being sacked by a mob (1791). Cold, remote and disagreeable, he felt increasingly isolated and migrated to America (1794). He first advocated the goal of 'the greatest happiness for the greatest number', later taken up by \*Bentham.

Gibbs, F. W., *Joseph Priestley: Adventurer in Science and Champion of Truth*. 1965.

**Prieur de la Côte-d'Or** (originally Prieur-Duvernois), **Claude-Antoine** (1763–1832). French military engineer and politician. He served in the Legislative Assembly 1791–92, Convention 1792–95, Committee of Public Safety 1793–94 and the Council of 500 1795–99. He worked with \*Carnot as de facto Minister for Supply in providing the weapons in the revolutionary wars. He founded the École Polytechnique, pushed for adoption of the metric weights and measures, then ran a wallpaper factory.

**Prigogine, Ilya Romanovich** (1917–2003). Belgian physicist, born in Russia. He held chairs in physics at Brussels 1951–87, Chicago 1961–66, and the University of Texas (Austin) 1967–2003. He won the Nobel Prize for Chemistry in 1977 for his work on the thermodynamics of systems which are not in a state of equilibrium. His books include *From Being to Becoming* (1980).

**Primakov, Evgenyi Maksimovich** (1929–2015). Russian economist and politician. He was \*Yeltsin's Foreign Minister 1996–97 and Prime Minister 1998–99.

**Prim y Prats, Juan, Count of Reus, Marques de los Castillejos** (1814–1870). Spanish soldier and politician. A capable general and military administrator in several fields and he also had a chequered but influential political career. He played a large part in the rivalries of Queen \*Isabella II's reign and helped to overthrow \*Espanero. Exiled for a time for complicity in a military plot, he returned to Spain in 1850. Again exiled (1864–66) he was prominent in the revolution that deposed Isabella (1868) and in 1870, now Prime Minister, he took the unpopular step of offering the crown to Prince \*Amadeo of Savoy, which provoked his murder by an unknown assassin.

**Primo de Rivera (y Orbaneja), Miguel, Marques d'Estella** (1870–1930). Spanish dictator. After a military career which took him to Morocco, Cuba and the Philippines, he held a number of administrative appointments. After a military coup (1923) he set up a dictatorship welcomed by King \*Alfonso XIII. Prime Minister 1923–30, with French support, he crushed \*Abd el-Krim revolt in Morocco (1926) and improved Spain's infrastructure. However, opposition to his authoritarian rule steadily grew and in January 1930 he was forced to resign, dying in Paris six weeks later. His son **José Antonio Primo de Rivera** (1903–1936), a charismatic lawyer, whose friends included the poet García \*Lorca, founded the Falange Party, was elected to the Cortes and executed by Republican extremists in Alicante. \*Franco, who saw him as a rival but found him a useful martyr, posthumously created him a duke in 1947. His name is memorialised on many church walls in Spain.

Payne, S. G., *Falange*. 1961; Carr, R., *Spain 1808–1939*. 1966.

**Princip, Gavriilo** (1895?–1918). Bosnian Serb nationalist. A student, he joined the Black Hand and assassinated \*Franz Ferdinand and his wife at Sarajevo (28 June 1914). Fifteen youths were arrested for treason and six executed. Reprieved on account of his age, Princip died of tuberculosis in prison.

**Prior, Matthew** (1664–1721). English poet and diplomat, born in Wimborne. Son of a joiner, he was educated under the patronage of Lord Dorset and sent to Holland as secretary to the British Ambassador. There he was noticed by William of Orange (\*William III) and later played so important a part in the Treaty of Utrecht (1713) that it was known as 'Matt's Peace'. The success of his *Poems on Several Occasions* (1718) relieved him of financial anxiety and, though the Whigs had no use for his political services, he led an agreeable life much courted for his wit. Much of his work was in the form of burlesque and he was a successful writer of light verse.

**Pritchett, Sir V(ictor) S(awdon)** (1900–1997). English author and critic. He wrote biographies of \*Balzac, \*Turgenev and \*Chekhov, an autobiography, many essays and much admired short stories. He was awarded the CH in 1993.

**Proclus** (410–485). Greek philosopher, born in Constantinople. Of wealthy parentage, he studied rhetoric, grammar and law, and was a mathematician and astronomer as well as a philosopher. He is ranked with neoplatonists, and indeed he carries to an extreme their practice of forming a synthesis of all beliefs and philosophical systems, using not only the inner vision of \*Photinus but a Euclidian method of classification of gods, demons etc. derived from all the mythologies and theologies known to him. Using the method of dialectic, he also applied this system of subdivision to the Intellect (or Mind) and Soul, forming an elaborate chain of descent from the One. Having thus carried the neoplatonist process of integration to an extreme point, he could have no direct successors, though he influenced \*Descartes and \*Spinoza among others, and in a sense anticipated deism. He lived as an ascetic and, though like the other neoplatonists he interpreted \*Plato as a theologian, he was an initiate of the pagan mysteries.

**Procopius** (d.c.565). Byzantine historian. He accompanied \*Belisarius on his campaigns, and wrote *De Bellis (Wars)* in eight books and the scurrilous *Anecdota (Historia arcana or Secret History)*, which provide valuable first-hand accounts of the wars against the Vandals and other events of \*Justinian's reign. His *De aedificiis*, a book describing the public buildings of his time, has great archaeological interest.

**Prodi, Romano** (1939– ). Italian economist and politician. A professor at the University of Bologna, he was Premier of Italy 1996–98, as head of the 'Olive Tree' Centre-Left coalition. He became President of the European Union 1999–2001, and Prime Minister

2006–08, after a tight contest with \*Berlusconi, but his left coalition fell apart in 2008 and Berlusconi returned to office.

**Profumo, John Denis** (1915–2000). English soldier and Conservative politician. Of Italian descent, he was MP 1940–45, 1950–62, served in World War II and reached the rank of brigadier. In 1954 he married the beautiful film star **Valerie Hobson** (1917–1998). As Secretary of State for War 1960–63, under Harold \*Macmillan, he was at the vortex of a scandal ('the Profumo Affair') involving his liaison with Christine Keeler, who had informal relations with a Russian agent, creating media frenzy about sex, snobbery, espionage and the consequences of lying to Parliament. The affair paralysed the last months of the Macmillan Government. The disgraced Profumo redeemed himself by active involvement in charities.

Davenport-Hines, R., *An English Affair*. 2013.

**Prokhorov, Aleksandr Mikhailovich** (1916–2002). Russian physicist, born in Pearamon, Queensland. His family, political exiles, returned to Russia in 1923. With Nikolai Basov he worked out the theoretical basis of the maser, which led to the laser, independent of C. H. \*Townes' research. All three shared the 1964 Nobel Prize for Physics.

**Prokofiev, Sergei Sergeyevich** (1891–1953). Russian composer, born in the Ukraine. A brilliant pianist from his early childhood, he studied composition with \*Glière, \*Rimsky Korsakov and \*Lyadov. Among his early works written before he left Russia in 1918 or during his sojourn abroad were his *Classical Symphony* (1916–17) the first and still perhaps the best known of seven symphonies, the opera *Love of Three Oranges* (1921) and ballet scores for \*Diaghilev in Paris (1921–27). He returned to the USSR in 1933. A prolific composer, his later works included two violin concertos, five piano concertos, the operas *The Flaming Angel* (1922–25) and *War and Peace* (1941–42), scores for \*Eisenstein's films *Alexander Nevsky* and *Ivan the Terrible*, the ballets *Romeo and Juliet* (1935) and *Cinderella* (1941–44), the popular 'symphonic fairy tale' for children *Peter and the Wolf* (1936) and nine piano sonatas. His music is noted for its satirical, often astringent, tone.

Shlifstein, S. (ed.), *S. Prokofiev: Autobiography, Articles, Reminiscences*. 1960

**Propertius, Sextus** (c.50–c.15 BCE). Roman poet. He spent most of his life in Rome. Almost all his poems are dedicated to his passion for 'Cynthia', the courtesan Hostia. His elegiacs lack the smooth perfection of \*Ovid's but show much deeper feeling.

Luck, G., *The Latin Love Elegy*. 2nd ed. 1969.

**Protagoras** (c.485–c.411 BCE). Greek sophist from Abdera in Thrace. His religious scepticism was, he explained, due to ignorance of the existence of the gods, owing to 'the obscurity of the subject and

the shortness of human life'. He is remembered for his maxim 'Man is the measure of all things, of the existence of the things that are and the non-existence of the things that are not'. Good (i.e. efficient) conduct, leading to success, was the target at which his teaching was aimed. He is portrayed in \*Plato's dialogue bearing his name.

Guthrie, W. K. C., *A History of Greek Philosophy*. 1965.

**Proudhon, Pierre-Joseph** (1809–1865). French political theorist, born in Besançon. From a poor family, he was educated with the help of friends and later won a three-year bursary given by the Besançon Académie. He went to Paris where he published *Qu'est-ce que la propriété?* (1840), the answer to the question being 'property is theft', arguing that owners of property whether in land or industry exact the produce of labour in the form of rent, interest, profit etc., without giving equivalent recompense. The clearest exposition of his views is found in his *Système des Contradictions économiques* (1846). In the revolution of 1848 he was elected to the assembly. His hostility to \*Napoléon III resulted in imprisonment (1849–52) and exile. His writings fill 33 volumes with another 14 of correspondence. Another main thesis, that anarchy is the culmination of social progress, predicts that when man attains his full social development he will have acquired enough self-discipline to enable police and government restraints to be dispensed with. He was anti-Semitic and—anomalous—supported the patriarchal family, even condoning violence towards women. Much of Proudhon's thought was adopted by others, but he died neglected.

Woodcock, G., *Pierre-Joseph Proudhon: His Life and Work*. 1972.

**Proulx, E(dna) Annie** (1935– ). American novelist, born in Connecticut. After years writing magazine articles, she gained critical recognition with her first novel *Postcards* (1992), and won the 1994 Pulitzer Prize with her second, *The Shipping News* (1993).

**Proust, (Valentin Louis Georges Eugène) Marcel** (1871–1922). French novelist, born in Auteuil (now a suburb of Paris). His father, a physician, was Catholic, his mother Jewish, and he grew up in a wealthy bourgeois environment. Asthmatic from the age of nine, his education was much interrupted by illness. He abandoned law studies at the Sorbonne but read avidly and was influenced by the aesthetics of John \*Ruskin and the philosophy of his relative by marriage Henri \*Bergson. He was an early and active supporter of Alfred \*Dreyfus. He lived as a dilettante until he was 35, ambitious to rise in society and haunting the literary salons. During this time he published only a few volumes of verse and, although his grasp of English was imperfect, translations of Ruskin's *The Bible of Amiens* (1899–1900) and *Sesame and Lilies* (1904–05).

He had become attracted to Bergson's views on time and the unconscious. He explored the limitations placed on the intellect's ability to grasp and hold by the continuous process of time, and finally on the superiority of intuition over intellect in assessing reality. His mother's death (1905) brought a complete change. Without her protective care and understanding the sensitive invalid withdrew into the seclusion of a cork-lined flat and devoted himself for the rest of his life to writing seven novels (3,300 printed pages in total; 1,240,000 words) which bear the collective title *À la recherche du temps perdu*.

*À la recherche du temps perdu* describes events (estimated as 182 days) between 1877 and 1925 (a projection, three years after Proust's death), but providing a panoramic view of French society, especially in the decade 1892–1902, *la belle époque*, during the Third French Republic, seen through the eyes of a social climber, a heterosexual and non-Jew, not Proust himself. The Narrator describes himself as 'I' ('je') throughout, but there are two casual references to 'Marcel'. The work provides a penetrating analysis of personalities, class, painting and music, the *belle époque*, the Dreyfus case and the demoralising impact of war. It is both a comic masterpiece and an examination of time and memory. Proust's psychological insights are profound. The dividing line between real and imaginary is often unclear. But this is no dream sequence; the characters are sharply, and often ironically, drawn. It defies definition and comparison. The contrast between *Swann's Way* (*Du côté de chez Swann*, 1913) and *The Guermantes Way* (*Le côté de Guermantes*, 1920) is both literal and metaphorical: two areas bisected by the Seine, the bourgeois Faubourg Saint-Honoré on the right bank, the aristocratic Faubourg Saint-Germain on the left.

Proust had a profound psychological understanding, matched by his analysis of time and aesthetics. In *Time Regained* the Narrator writes: 'Every reader is, as he reads, actually the reader of himself. The work of the writer is only a kind of optical instrument that he offers the reader so he is able to discern what he would perhaps never have seen in himself without this book. The reader's recognition in himself of what the book says is the proof of the book's truth.' The novel is marked by a preoccupation with optics—with the process of seeing, sorting and interpreting images. Even more important is memory, especially involuntary memory, the celebrated and often quoted *moments bienheureux*, incidents apparently trivial which keep being recalled: a madeleine dipped in tea, his mother's failure to kiss him good night, the unevenness of cobblestones, the clink of cutlery on a plate. Proust picked up from \*Montaigne the concept of 'soul error' (*une erreur d'âme*), the persistent undervaluing of our own observation or experience. Nevertheless, he recognised that memory is not fixed, but ever-changing as creativity interacts with the raw material of experience.

The first novel *Du côté de chez Swann* (*Swann's Way*) was completed in 1912 but only published at the author's expense; the first volume appeared in 1913. (André \*Gide had rejected it for serialisation in *Nouvelle Revue Française*.) World War I interrupted publication and meanwhile the author had changed and expanded his plan. A new publisher took over, and a second volume, *À l'ombre des jeunes filles en fleur*, was awarded the Prix Goncourt (1919). The remaining volumes, including the notorious *Sodome et Gomorrhe* (3 volumes, 1922), continued to appear until his death and afterwards (1920–25). *À la recherche* appeared in an English translation by C. K. Scott Moncrieff between 1922 and 1931, under the Biblical and Shakespearean title *Remembrance of Things Past*. Since the 1992 revision, based on a corrected French text, the title *In Search of Lost Time* (less poetic but closer to Proust's own title) has been used. Although he was never even nominated for the Nobel Prize, by the year 2000 Proust was often identified in surveys as the greatest novelist of the 20th century.

Painter, G. D., *Marcel Proust*: 2 vols, 1959, 1965; Shattuck, R., *Proust*. 1974; Hayman, R., *Proust*. 1990; de Botton, A., *How Proust Can Change Your Life*. 1997; Carter, W. C., *Marcel Proust: A Life*. 2000; Tadie, J.-Y., *Marcel Proust: A Life*. 2000.

**Prout, William** (1785–1850). English chemist and physician. Educated at Edinburgh University, he became a physician in London. 'Prout's hypothesis' (1815) proposed that all atomic weights are whole numbers, essentially integral multiples of hydrogen, the sole fundamental particle, so that elements such as oxygen, nitrogen and carbon are essentially conglomerates of hydrogen atoms. In the 1850s, with more accurate measurement of atomic weights, Prout's hypothesis was discredited, but was resurrected with the discovery of isotopes and influenced \*Soddy, \*Aston and \*Rutherford.

In 1824 he identified hydrochloric acid as a central factor in stomach secretions in humans and animals, divided the components of foods into what are now called proteins, fats and carbohydrates and received the Copley Medal (1827) for his work on digestion. He improved the barometer and coined the word 'convection'. The Prout is a unit of binding energy.

**Prynne, William** (1600–1669). English Puritan politician and pamphleteer. Because his *Histriomastix* (1632), a huge work attacking the stage and its players, was alleged to defame \*Charles I and his queen Prynne, he was savagely sentenced by the Star Chamber to imprisonment in the Tower of London, a large fine and the loss of his ears. Three years later he was again fined, and branded 'S. L.' (seditious libeller) on his cheeks for attacking Archbishop \*Laud in pamphlets. He was released in 1640, became an MP in the Long Parliament and a strong supporter of the parliamentary cause. In December 1648 he was expelled, following Pride's Purge.



He wrote many pamphlets attacking the army and the developments of the 1650s. Under \*Cromwell he suffered imprisonment and became a vigorous propagandist for the Restoration, after which event he was rewarded by being appointed Keeper of the Records at the Tower of London. He published valuable historical work.

Lamont, W. H., *Marginal Prynne*. 1963.

**Ptolemy** (Claudius Ptolemaeus) (c.90–168). Greek astronomer and geographer. He lived in Alexandria and wrote an astronomical treatise (known under its Arabic name *Almagest*) which is the source of almost all our knowledge of Greek astronomy and was a fundamental textbook until the discoveries of \*Copernicus upset its basic theory that the earth is the centre of the universe. His *Guide to Geography*, with the accompanying maps, was equally influential. He conceived of the world as a sphere and he introduced the method of fixing locations by means of parallels of latitude and meridians of longitude. That he made mistakes of measurement is of small account when compared with the greatness of his achievement, to which the whole science of cartography owed its origin. It was due to Ptolemy's mismeasurement of the equator that \*Columbus believed that he had reached Asia by a westward route when he discovered the West Indies.

Thomson, J. O., *History of Ancient Geography*. 1948; Dreyer, J. H. E., *A History of Astronomy*. 1963; Bevan, E. R., *The House of Ptolemy*. 1968.

**Ptolemy I Soter** (c.367–282 BCE). Macedonian founder of an Egyptian dynasty. One of \*Alexander the Great's Macedonian generals, he became Governor of Egypt when the Macedonian conquests were divided after the king's death. In 305 for his assistance to besieged Rhodes he was named Soter (Saviour), and in the same year assumed the title King of Egypt. He made Alexandria, his capital, a centre of commerce and Greek culture. He wrote a history—now lost, but frequently quoted by his contemporaries.

His son **Ptolemy II Philadelphus** (c.308?–246 BCE) founded the great Alexandrine library and raised Ptolemaic Egypt to its zenith. There followed a long line of which **Ptolemy XIV** (47–30 BCE) was the last. **Ptolemy XII** was the brother of \*Cleopatra.

Bevan, E. R. *The House of Ptolemy*. 1968.

**Puccini, Giacomo** (Antonio Domenico Michele Secondo Maria) (1858–1924). Italian composer, born in Lucca. Last of a musical family, he became an organist and studied composition at Milan. He wrote some religious and instrumental music but, influenced by \*Verdi and \*Wagner, turned to opera and had his first success at La Scala in 1884 with *Le Villi*, followed by *Edgar* (1889). The last great practitioner of verismo (realism) in Italian opera, his melodic gift, capacity to exploit vocal and orchestral resources, and theatrical sense were enormously successful. Far more than his

contemporary Richard \*Strauss, he was open to new ideas and recognised the importance of \*Debussy, \*Schoenberg and \*Stravinsky. His intensely romantic operas, e.g. *Manon Lescaut* (1893), *La bohème* (1896), *Tosca* (1900), *Madama Butterfly* (1904), *La fanciulla del West* (*The Girl of the Golden West*, 1910) and *La rondine* (1917) brought him international fame and great wealth. *Il trittico* (*The Triptych*, 1918) comprises three one-act operas, *Il tabarro* (*The Cloak*), *Suor Angelica* (*Sister Angelica*) and *Gianni Schicchi*. He died in Brussels after a failed operation for throat cancer. *Turandot*, unfinished at his death, was completed by Franco Alfano and premiered in 1926.

Marek, G. R., *Puccini*. 1951; Phillips-Matz, M. J., *Puccini: A Biography*. 2003.

**Pugachev, Emelian Ivanovich** (1744?–1775). Russian impostor. He was a Cossack who posed (1773) as \*Catherine the Great's dead husband \*Peter III. He managed to attract a large force, mainly of serfs whom he had enlisted with promises of freedom. Despite early successes he was defeated, betrayed into captivity, taken to Moscow in an iron cage and there executed.

**Pugin, Augustus Welby Northmore** (1812–1852). English architect and writer. Protagonist of the Gothic Revival, although he designed more than 60 churches (e.g. St Chad's Cathedral, Birmingham, and his masterpiece, St Giles, Cheadle, Staffordshire) and many country houses, he exercised more influence through his writings, notably *The True Principles of Pointed or Christian Architecture* (1841), which became the textbook of Victorian Gothic. He worked under \*Barry on the Houses of Parliament and much of the elaborate detail of ornament and fittings was designed by him. Pugin was no mere copyist but indicated how Gothic forms and structural principles were adaptable to modern buildings.

Stanton, P., *Pugin*. 1971; Hill, R., *God's Architect: Pugin and the Building of Romantic Britain*. 2007.

**Pulitzer, Joseph** (1847–1911). American newspaper proprietor, born in Hungary. Having fought in the Civil War he became a reporter, and later acquired the *St Louis Post Dispatch* (1877) and the *New York World* (1883), which he made the leading Democratic newspaper. In his will he established a fund for annual prizes for journalism, literature and music.

**Pullman, George Mortimer** (1831–1897). American industrialist. He invented and, in America, practically monopolised the manufacture of the railway sleeping-cars and luxury day-coaches that bear his name. The town of Pullman in Illinois was built for his employees.

**Pullman, Sir Philip** (Nicholas Outram) (1946– ). English novelist, born in Norwich. Educated at Oxford, he became a teacher. His fantasy trilogy *His Dark Materials* (*Northern Lights*, 1995; *The Subtle Knife*, 1997; *The Amber Spyglass*, 2000), aimed at

children, was a bestseller and critical success. *The Good Man Jesus and the Scoundrel Christ* (2010) was controversial, but had influential supporters. His trilogy *The Book of Dust* is incomplete.

**Pulteney, William, 1st Earl of Bath** (1684–1764). English politician and orator. He served as a Whig MP 1705–42, was Secretary of State for War 1714–17 and originally a strong supporter of \*Walpole. However, he came to regard Walpole as corrupt and from 1725 led ‘the Patriot Whigs’ in opposition to him. He accepted a peerage from \*George II in 1742. In 1742 and 1746 he almost became Prime Minister but on both occasions lacked enough support in the House of Commons.

**Purcell, Henry** (1659–1695). English composer, born in London. He came from a family of musicians and as a boy was a chorister of the Chapel Royal, London (1669?–73). He later sang as a counter-tenor ‘with incredible graces’. After being a music copyist at Westminster Abbey he was appointed (1677) composer to the king’s violin band. Two years later he became organist of Westminster Abbey, and from 1682 of the Chapel Royal. He composed much Church music, over 200 songs, duets and catches, keyboard works, chamber music (some early string fantasies on the Elizabethan model and later works in the new Italian concerted style), nearly 70 anthems, many with orchestral accompaniment, and incidental music for plays. His six operas and semi-operas include *Dido and Aeneas* (1689?), *King Arthur* (1691), *The Fairy Queen* (1692), an adaptation of \*Shakespeare’s *Midsummer Night’s Dream*, and *The Indian Queen* (1695) to words by \*Dryden. His occasional works include the ode for St Cecilia’s Day *Hail, Bright Cecilia* (1692) and odes of welcome and birthday odes for the sovereign, e.g. *Come ye sons of art* (1694). His name is pronounced like the soap powder.

Westrup, J. A., *Purcell*. 7th ed. 1973; Holman, P., *Henry Purcell*. 1995; Keates, J., *Henry Purcell*. 1995.

**Purkyně (or Purkinje), Jan Evangelista** (1787–1869). Czech physiologist, born in Libochovice. Educated at the Charles University, Prague, where he held a chair, in 1819 he described the ‘Purkinje shift’, different perceptions of colour in bright and low light. Much of his work centred on cell observations, cutting wafer thin slices of tissue, examined with a compound microscope. He discovered sweat glands in 1833 and ‘Purkinje cells’, large neurons with branching dendrites in the brain, in 1837. ‘Purkinje fibres’ (1839) conduct electrical impulses to the ventricles of the heart. He coined the terms ‘plasma’ for the extracellular matrix in blood and ‘protoplasm’ for the fluid in a cell in 1839. He pioneered research into the physiology of the senses and performed self-experimentation on the visual effects of applying pressure to the eyeball. The physiological basis of subjective visual effects had been examined but hitherto largely ignored in the German-speaking world, partly because of the assumption, made

by \*Goethe and other Romantics, that they were essentially products of the imagination. A moon crater and Asteroid 3701 Purkyně are named for him.

**Pusey, Edward Bouverie** (1800–1882). English religious leader. After being ordained (1828), he was Regius professor of Hebrew at Oxford 1829–82. With \*Newman and \*Keble he was a leader of the Tractarian or Oxford Movement which started in 1833 with the publication of the first issues of *Tracts for the Times*, to which Pusey made notable contributions on the eucharist and baptism. The movement was designed to combat rationalism and by stressing the common heritage of the Roman Catholic and English Catholic churches it was hoped to pave the way for eventual reunion. But Pusey did not himself follow Newman’s example of joining the Roman Catholic Church and in his writings and sermons argued against such a course. He was responsible for many benefactions and worked in the East End of London during the cholera epidemic of 1866. His book collection formed the nucleus of the library at Pusey House, Oxford, opened in his memory in 1884.

**Pushkin, Aleksandr Sergeivich** (1799–1837). Russian poet, dramatist and short-story writer, born in Moscow. He came of a poor but noble family, with an exotic strain in his ancestry: his maternal great-grandfather, **Abram Petrovich Gannibal**, claimed to be an Abyssinian prince and became a general under \*Peter the Great. In St Petersburg as a young man, he combined work at the Foreign Office with life as a poet and man about town, but many of his poems, e.g. the fiery *Ode to Liberty* (1820), were infected with the ideas that the French armies had carried with them through Europe and he was exiled to south Russia. There, under \*Byron’s influence, he began to replace the rigid classicism that Russia had borrowed from France by freer, romantic and more dramatic forms. Twenty-four of his works became operas (some set several times). In Odessa he began (1824) his verse novel *Evgeny Onegin* suggested by \*Byron’s *Don Juan* and later converted into an opera by \*Tchaikovsky. A similar musical destiny awaited several of Pushkin’s best known creations. *Ruslan and Lyudmila* (1820), his first major work, became an opera by \*Glinka. The tragic drama *Boris Godunov* (1825) is even better known as \*Mussorgsky’s opera. *The Queen of Spades*, a remarkable short novel, had a future not only as an opera by Tchaikovsky but also as a film. *Mozart and Salieri* (1831) and *Ruslan and Lyudmilla* (1820), his first major work, was set by \*Glinka. *The Gypsies* (1824), an epic poem, became \*Rachmaninoff’s opera *Aleko* (1892). *Mozart and Salieri* (1831) and *The Golden Cockerel* (1835) became operas by \*Rimsky-Korsakov. Among Pushkin’s other works was the narrative poem *The Bronze Horsemen* (1833) and the novel *The Captain’s Daughter* (1836). He also wrote folk and fairy stories and many beautiful lyrics, several of which have been turned into songs. Pushkin returned to St Petersburg after the accession of Tsar \*Nikolai I, and a visit to the

Caucasus (1829) resulted in a finely descriptive prose work, *The Journey to Arzum*. In 1831 he succeeded at last in making the beautiful but frivolous **Natalya Nikolaevna Gonchorova** (1813–1863) his wife, but the marriage was unhappy and he died of wounds received in a duel with a French officer **Georges d'Anthès** whom he suspected of being his wife's lover. Like \*Shakespeare and \*Goethe, Pushkin's work is all the more extraordinary because he created a national literary tradition rather than building on one. \*Gogol, \*Turgenev, \*Dostoevsky and \*Tolstoy were his heirs.

Troyat, H., *Pushkin*. 1974; Feinstein, E., *Pushkin*. 1998; Binyon, T. J., *Pushkin*. 2002.

**Putin, Vladimir Vladimirovich** (1952– ). Russian administrator and politician, born in St Petersburg (then Leningrad). A law graduate from Leningrad University, he was a KGB operative 1975–91, and a spy in Dresden 1985–90. He became an advisor to Anatoli \*Sobchak, Mayor of St Petersburg, 1991–96, then relocated to Moscow, working in Boris \*Yeltsin's secretariat 1996–99. Prime Minister of the Russian Federation 1999–2000, he became Acting President after Yeltsin's sudden resignation (December 1999). President of Russia 2000–08; 2012– , he won the March 2000 election on the first ballot, with 53 per cent of the votes, gaining 72 per cent in 2004. In 2008, constitutionally barred from seeking a third consecutive term, he secured the election of Dmitri \*Medvedev, who then appointed him Prime Minister 2008–12. Putin and Medvedev exchanged roles in 2012, with Putin being re-elected with 64 per cent of the votes. In March 2018, after the Constitution was amended to provide for six year terms, Putin secured a vote of 76 per cent after a campaign in which he was the only serious candidate, with total media support. In 2020 the Constitution was amended enabling Putin to remain in office until 2036. Putin's regime was often described as a kleptocracy but his personal wealth remains controversial, with estimates ranging from \$US1 billion to \$US200 billion.

He won the support of the Orthodox hierarchy, invoked the spirit of \*Peter the Great and Imperial expansion, proposing the restoration of the Soviet Union, without Communism. Putin directed the invasion of Ukraine in February 2022, the only major war in Europe since 1945. It became a war of attribution, after \*Zelenskyy mounted unexpectedly strong resistance and Putin became a pariah.

Gessen, M., *The Man Without a Face: The Unlikely Rise of Vladimir Putin*. 2012; Myers, S. L., *The New Tsar: The Rise and Reign of Vladimir Putin*. 2014.

**Puvis de Chavannes, Pierre** (1824–1898). French painter. He attempted with partial success to restore to wall paintings their significant place in art. Examples of his work are the paintings of the life of St Genevieve on the walls of the Panthéon, which occupied him from 1874 until his death.

Jullian, P., *Dreamers of Decadence*. 1971.

**Pǔyí, Aisin Gioro** (regnal name **Xuāntǒng**: 'proclamation of unity') (1906–1967). Last Qing (Manchu) Chinese Emperor 1908–12; 1917. Son of Prince **Chun Zaifeng** (1883–1951) and nephew of the murdered **Guangxu** emperor, he was appointed to the throne, at the age of two, by the dowager empress \*Cixi (Tz'u Hsi). The Qing dynasty collapsed in the Xinhai Revolution (from October 1911), when the army mutinied, and nationalists, democrats and intellectuals combined to force change. Puyi's reign ended in February 1912, although he was unaware of it, continuing to live in luxury in the Forbidden City, engaging in mindless sadism. In July 1917 General **Zhang Xun** restored him to the throne for 12 days. He had an English tutor from 1919, learned to bicycle and telephone, planned to study in Oxford and adopted the name Henry. In 1922 he married and cut off his queue. Expelled from Beijing in 1924, from 1925 he lived in Tianjin, effectively under Japanese control, then in Manchuria (1931). The Japanese made him Chief Executive of the puppet state of Manchukuo 1932–34, then Emperor 1934–45, as **Kang-de**. Held by the Russians 1945–50, he was a witness at the Tokyo war crimes trials (1946). Jailed in China as a political criminal 1950–59, he declared himself as a supporter of the Peoples' Republic, worked as a gardener in Shenyang, then as a research worker in Beijing. He wrote memoirs and was the subject of \*Bertolucci's film *The Last Emperor* (1986).

**Pym, Barbara** (Mary Crampton) (1913–1980). English novelist. She published six novels between 1950 and 1961 with modest success, only gaining wider recognition after 1977 when critics in the *Times Literary Supplement* singled her out as one of the most underrated writers of the century. Her books include *No Fond Return of Love* (1961), *Quartet in Autumn* (1977) and *The Sweet Dove Died* (1978).

Byrne, P., *The Adventures of Miss Barbara Pym*. 2021.

**Pym, John** (1584–1643). English parliamentarian, born in Somerset. He studied law at Oxford, was a Member of Parliament 1614–22; 1624–29; 1640–43, and after the accession of \*Charles I became the crown's sternest and most effective opponent. Prominent in the impeachment of \*Buckingham, he took an active part in promoting the Petition of Right (1628). After the 11 years during which Charles called no parliament (1629–40) he was foremost in pressing the proceedings against \*Strafford and \*Laud. In 1642 he was one of the five MPs whom Charles tried to arrest. Until his death in December 1643, he led the Commons. After the outbreak of the Civil War he devised the alliance with the Scots which eventually gave the parliamentarians the victory. An outstanding parliamentary orator, he died of cancer, was buried in Westminster Abbey, then exhumed on the Restoration.

Hexter, J. H., *The Reign of King Pym*. 1941; Glow, L., *Pym and Parliament: The Methods of Moderation*. 1964.

**Pynchon, Thomas** (Ruggles) (1937– ). American novelist, born in New York. He studied engineering at Cornell University, wrote several short stories and published the novels *V* (1963), *The Crying of Lot 49* (1966) and *Gravity's Rainbow* (1973), hailed by critics as major works. He published nothing further until some early short stories, *Slow Learner* (1984), and the novels *Vineland* (1990), *Mason & Dixon* (1997), *Against the Day* (2006), *Inherent Vice* (2009) and *Bleeding Edge* (2013). Pynchon was a recluse, rarely photographed and never interviewed.

**Pyrrho of Elis** (c.310–270 BCE). Greek philosopher. He taught an extreme form of scepticism, which held that it was impossible to understand the nature of things and that the best state of mind was obtained by suspending judgment rather than attempting to make decisions. He would admit that man could have a sensation of sweetness or pain but in the latter case would lessen its effect by not believing it to be evil. The term 'Pyrrhonian scepticism' passed into common speech. None of his writings survive.

Zeller, E., *Stoics, Epicureans and Sceptics*. 1962.

**Pyrrhus** (319–272 BCE). King of Epirus c.297–272 BCE. After the death of \*Alexander the Great, to whom he was related, he tried to carve an empire for himself out of the Macedonian heritage. With the help of \*Ptolemy I he became joint king of Epirus (roughly the equivalent of modern Albania). Seeking new conquests, he accepted an invitation (281) from Tarentum (Taranto), a Greek city in Italy, for help against Rome, and his army of 25,000 men with elephants (seen by the Romans for the first time) gained a hard fought victory near Heraclea with the loss of 4,000 men. Another victory near Asculum (279) brought such losses that the phrase 'Pyrrhic victory' gained immortal currency. After further campaigns he returned to Epirus (275). After an unsuccessful attack on Sparta he retreated to Argos, where he was killed by a tile thrown by a woman.

Hammond, N. G. H., *Epirus*. 1967.

**Pythagoras** (6th century BCE). Greek philosopher and mathematician, born in Samos. He later established a school or brotherhood in Croton, a Greek colony of southern Italy. The brotherhood seems to have formed a mystical cult, to have led an ascetic life and to have practised purification rites. It seems also to have formed a ruling oligarchy, for, after 20 years, the people rose against it and forced it to leave Croton. Pythagoras withdrew to Megapontum, where he died. No writings of his have survived, and it is difficult therefore to separate his views from those of his followers.

Pythagoras adopted the belief in transmigration of souls, both from animal to man and from man to animal, the necessity for this being removed when purification, attained by ritual practices and spiritual contemplation, was complete. Pythagoras was primarily a mathematician. He had

a mathematical conception of the universe: that its order is due to the mathematical relationships of one component to another, both location and movement conforming to strict mathematical laws. This concept has been followed by many others, e.g. \*Copernicus, \*Galileo, \*Newton and \*Einstein. These laws he related to those of music, hence such terms as music (or harmony) of the spheres, and his analysis of harmony was unchallenged until the 15th century (\*Dunstale). He ascribed day and night to the rotation of the earth, which he is said to have discovered. To his mathematical conception he gave philosophic point by asserting that by the contemplation of such harmonies man achieves virtue and that virtue is in fact a harmony of the soul just as health indicates a harmony of the body. Many of these ideas were adopted by \*Plato and \*Aristotle or critically examined by them. Pythagoreanism, with its emphasis on discernible order in being, paved the way for rational metaphysical speculation as against a materialistic (or simply positive) classification and explanation of knowledge. It fathered most schools of philosophy that existed in the European tradition for the next two millennia.

Guthrie, W. K. C., *A History of Greek Philosophy*. 1962; Vogel, C. J. de, *Pythagoras and Early Pythagoreanism*. 1966.

**Pytheas** (4th century BCE). Greek navigator and geographer, born at Massilia (Marseilles). He sailed past the coasts of Brittany and reached Cornwall, where he traded in tin at an island believed to be St Michael's Mount. Eventually he reached 'Thule' (probably one of the Shetlands) and the Baltic Sea. His account, now lost, was received with incredulity in his own day, but was used by \*Strabo and seems to have been as accurate as possible with his limited resources. He attributed tidal movement to lunar attraction.

# Q

**Qaddafi** *see* **Gaddafi**

**Qiánlóng** ('lasting eminence': personal name **Hóngli**) (1711–1799). Chinese Emperor 1736–96, sixth of the \*Qing dynasty. Grandson of \*Kangxi, he abdicated so that his reign would be of identical length. He built the beautiful Chengde (Jehol) summer resort with its famous gardens, was a gifted calligrapher, painter and poet and a major collector of art works. Although he received Lord \*Macartney's mission (1792–94), he sealed China, rejected Westernisation, and banned and burned books. China's population doubled during his reign.

**Qin**. Chinese dynasty, formerly called Ch'in (Wade-Giles), founded by **Qin Shi Huang**, the first emperor, which unified the country and ruled 221–206 BCE.

**Qin Shihuang** (Shi Huang Di) ('First sovereign emperor', personal name Ying Zheng) (259–210 BCE). Chinese Emperor 221–210 BCE, founder of the Qin dynasty. From the age of 13 he was King of the state of Qin, based on Shaanxi in the northwest. Through war and diplomacy he defeated six rival states to unify China under his rule. Assisted by his minister \*Li Ssu, he imposed an authoritarian regime from his capital Xianyang, near the present city of Xi'an. Writing, weights and measures (even axle widths) were standardised. He built the Great Wall with remarkable speed and efficiency, imposed a rigorous censorship, had 460 scholars burnt alive, and destroyed ancient manuscripts, only preserving those on farming and medicine. He made frequent journeys through his empire and died while travelling. His dynasty fell in 206 BCE to the Western Han. Traditionally regarded as one of the arch villains of Chinese history, his reputation was restored under the Peoples' Republic. Since the discovery in 1974 of the 'entombed warriors', 6,000 magnificent terracotta figures of soldiers, with horses and weapons, there has been intense interest in Qin Shihuang. Two more pits full of warriors have been discovered but are not yet open to the public. The huge tumulus built over his tomb has not been excavated.

**Qing**. Chinese dynasty, formerly called Ch'ing (Wade-Giles) or Manchu, which ruled 1644–1912. *See* \*Qianlong, \*Cixi, \*Puyi.

**Quadros, Janio da Silva** (1917–1992). Brazilian politician. A teacher and lawyer and an able campaigner with an eccentric style, he was Governor of São Paulo 1955–59 and President of Brazil 1961, resigning unexpectedly after seven months and going into exile. He was Mayor of São Paulo 1985–89.

**Quant, Dame** (Barbara) **Mary** (1930– ). British designer, born in London. In 1955, she established her first shop, promoted (and named) the miniskirt (1966), used denim in fashion, created her own garments, textiles and cosmetics, won many awards and wrote an autobiography *Quant by Quant* (1966).

**Quarles, Francis** (1592–1644). English metaphysical poet. The most successful verse-moralist of his day, *Divine Emblems* (1635) was the main source of his fame. Some of his epigrams are remembered, e.g. 'No man is born unto himself alone', 'He that begins to live, begins to die'. A royalist in the Civil War, he was plundered by the Roundheads.

Hasan, M., *Quarles: A Study of his Life and Poetry*. 1966.

**Quasimodo, Salvatore** (1901–1968). Italian poet, critic and translator, born in Sicily. Trained as an engineer, he taught literature at the Milan Conservatory 1935–64 and translated works by \*Aeschylus, \*Ovid, \*Shakespeare, \*Molière and \*Neruda. He is considered the leading writer of the Italian Hermeticist movement which was inspired by a symbolical use of language. His later poems are much concerned with 'la poesia sociale', expressing a social conscience and a sense of history. He received the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1959.

Tondo, M., *Salvatore Quasimodo*. 1970.

**Quayle, (James) Dan**(forth) (1947– ). American Republican politician. Educated at Indiana University, after service in the national guard and as a reporter he became an attorney. He was a US Congressman 1977–79, US Senator 1981–88 and Vice President of the US 1989–93.

**Queen, Ellery**. Pen name of **Frederic Dannay** (1905–1982) and **Manfred B**(ennington) **Lee** (1905–1971), American authors. They wrote 35 full-length detective novels and hundreds of short stories. 'Ellery Queen' is the name not only of the author but of the detective hero.

**Queensberry, 9th Marquess of, John Sholto Douglas** (1844–1900). Scottish peer, born in Florence. A keen patron of boxing, he devised the rules that bear his name (1865). Oscar \*Wilde's intimacy with his son Lord Alfred \*Douglas provoked Queensberry's fury, and his card, left at Wilde's club, accusing him of sodomy provoked Wilde, foolishly, to initiate a prosecution for criminal libel, and, when this failed, his own arrest became inevitable. He also pursued Lord \*Rosebery. Queensberry was a militant secularist who refused to swear an oath.

**Queensberry, William Douglas, 4th Duke of** (known as 'Old Q') (1725–1810). Scottish peer. He was notorious in his lifetime as an extreme example of worthless and dissolute aristocracy.

**Queneau, Raymond** (1903–1976). French novelist and poet. Originally a surrealist, he became a master of parody and word play, along Joycean lines, and had a profound influence on young writers, notably Georges Perec.

**Quesnay, François** (1694–1774). French physician and economist. Physician to Louis XV, he was best known for his many books on economics and for his contributions, on agricultural and economic subjects, to the famous *Encyclopédie*. As the leader of the Physiocrats, he held that land was the ultimate source of all wealth and that to interfere with production or exchange must lead to disaster. His *Tableau économique* (1758) anticipates to a limited extent the tables of national income and expenditure of today.

Gooch, G. P., *Louis XV: The Monarchy in Decline*. 1956.

**Quetelet, (Lambert) Adolphe Jacques** (1796–1874). Belgian mathematician, statistician, sociologist and astronomer, born in Ghent. Educated at the Ghent Lycée, where he taught, he received a doctorate at the newly founded University of Ghent in 1819. In the 1820s he developed an interest in astronomy, and began to take a mathematical approach to meteorology. First director of the Royal Observatory, Brussels, 1828–74, he was elected FRS in 1839, and promoted international collaboration between statisticians. The work for which he was feted in his own day emerged in the 1830s. He began to develop the theory of mathematical statistics, devised careful tests for the validity of statistical information, and pioneered the use of social statistics for the understanding of the 'average man'. Quetelet's belief, that the regularities of human behaviour revealed by weight of data demonstrate that man, too, operates under natural law, was not original (political economists, for example, had always assumed it). But much use was made of Quetelet's mathematical prestige in attempts to generate an empirical sociology or a theory of man as part of Nature. He pioneered the concept of the normal distribution curve, which became an important tool in later studies of criminal and deviant behaviour. He also developed the body mass index (BMI). Asteroid 1239 Queteleta is named for him.

**Quevedo y Villégas, Francisco Gómez de** (1580–1545). Spanish writer. He became secretary to Felipe IV (1632) but after opposing Olivares was imprisoned, which so injured his health that he died soon after release. His works, both in poetry and prose, display a striking contrast between those that are moral or religious in tone and the burlesques noted for their broad humour, puns, slang and exaggerated style. A picaresque novel, *La Vida del Buscón Pablos* (1626) is perhaps his best known work. His *Suenos*, translated as *Visions*, were popular in Stuart England.

Jones, R. O., *A Literary History of Spain*. 1971.

**Quezon y Molina, Manuel Luis** (1878–1944). Filipino politician. He fought in the revolt led by Emilio Aguinaldo against the Spanish occupation. The United States defeated the Spanish, displaced the first Filipino Republic in 1901 and assumed direct rule. Quezon led the nationalists in the Philippine Assembly 1907–16 and campaigned vigorously for independence both as Commissioner to the US 1909–16 and as President of the Philippine Senate 1916–35. On creation of the Commonwealth of the Philippines, Quezon was elected President 1935–44, defeating Aguinaldo. He secured votes for women and welcomed Jewish refugees. After the Japanese invasion (1941–42), he took refuge in the US, established a government in exile in Washington and died in New York State. Quezon City, the capital, was named for him. He was an accomplished pianist and bridge player.

**Quiller-Couch, Sir Arthur Thomas** (1863–1944). English scholar and anthologist. Of Cornish origin, educated at Oxford, he was a prolific essayist under the pen name 'Q'. He edited *The Oxford Book of English Verse* (1900), received a knighthood in 1910 and became the first King Edward VII professor of English literature at Cambridge 1912–44. His 30 novels, many set in Cornwall, have disappeared without trace.

Brittain, F., *Quiller-Couch: A Biographical Study of Q'*. 1947.

**Quilter, Roger Cuthbert** (1877–1953). English composer. Educated at Eton, he studied music in Frankfurt, wrote songs to poems by Shakespeare, Herrick, Wordsworth, Shelley and Tennyson, incidental music to the fairy play *Where the Rainbow Ends* (1911) and *A Children's Overture* (1920) for orchestra.

**Quincy, Josiah** (1772–1864). American politician. Continuing the tradition of his father, Josiah Quincy (1744–1775) who had been a prominent New England revolutionary, he played an important political role. Elected to the House of Representatives in 1802, he became known as a staunch individualist, strongly opposed to slavery. A US senator 1813–20 and an energetic and reforming mayor of Boston 1823–28, he became head of Harvard University, where his long presidency 1829–45 was marked by liberalism and progress. In 1854 he emerged from retirement to greet the new Republican Party and welcome its denunciation of all compromise with slavery.

**Quine, Willard Van Orman** (1908–2000). American philosopher, born in Ohio. Educated at Oberlin College and Harvard, he taught at Harvard from 1933, as a professor 1948–78, and received many academic awards. His publications on set theory and mathematical logic were highly influential.

He criticised \*Wittgenstein's linguistic philosophy and urged reconsideration of a relationship between science and metaphysics. *Quiddities* (1987) and *Pursuit of Truth* (1989) were aimed at a popular audience.

**Quintilian** (Marcus Fabius Quintilianus) (c.30–96?). Latin rhetorician, born in Spain. He became famous for his *Institutio Oratoria* (*The Training of an Orator*). The theme is wider than the title since it discusses what to say as well as how to say it. It not only advises the would-be orator on everything from dress to figures of speech but provides the basis of an elementary education, and lists authors whose style merits imitation. None of his own speeches, however, has survived. Little is known of his life and the date of his death is uncertain.

Clarke, M. H., *Rhetoric at Rome*. 1953.

**Quirino y Rivera, Elpidio** (1890–1956). Filipino politician. A close ally of \*Quezon, he was a Senator 1925–35; 1945–46. He led the Filipino resistance to the Japanese and was first vice president of the independent Philippines 1946–48 and succeeded **Manuel Roxas** as president 1948–53. Ramon \*Magsaysay defeated him in 1953 on the issue of government corruption.

**Quiroga, Juan Facundo** (1790–1835). Argentinian soldier. He took part in the revolution of 1810 against Spain and soon established himself as *caudillo* (chieftain) of the Andean provinces. To ensure his local supremacy he was a strong advocate of a federal form of government, which was adopted in 1827. He was notorious for his pitiless suppression of a faction that favoured a unitary state and raised a rebellion. He was assassinated, probably at the instigation of Juan de \*Rosas, Governor of the province of Buenos Aires.

**Quisling, Vidkun Abraham Lauritz Jonsson** (1887–1945). Norwegian politician. After serving in the army, as an assistant in \*Nansen's relief work in Russia (1920–23), and as a consul, he became Minister for Defence 1931–33 and founded (1933) the National Union Party, a Norwegian version of \*Hitler's Nazi organisation in Germany. After the German invasion (1940) he proclaimed himself head of the Norwegian Government and, though temporarily disowned by the Germans, was appointed as Minister President 1942–45 of a puppet administration by the Germans. After the Nazi defeat he was sentenced to death by a criminal court and shot. His name has become a synonym for a traitor and renegade.

**Qutb** (Ibrahim Husayn Shadhili), **Sayyid** (1906–1966). Egyptian Islamist and writer, born in Musha. He became a teacher, bureaucrat, writer and critic, studying in Colorado 1948–50. He became a leader of the Egyptian Muslim Brotherhood, contributing to a radical critique of Western values, based on his extreme distaste for culture and morality in the

United States, and reviving concepts of jihad. He wrote a long commentary, *In the Shade of the Qu'ran*. He opposed the Arab nationalism of Gamal Abdel \*Nasser, and was imprisoned 1954–64. Re-arrested in August 1965, after a show trial he was convicted of plotting to overthrow the state and hanged. He is regarded as a spiritual founder of al-Qaida and a major influence on Osama bin \*Laden.

Nolan, J. L., *What They Saw in America*. 2016.

# R

**Raab, Dominic Rennie** (1974– ). British Conservative politician. Of Czech-Jewish descent, he was a lawyer, MP 2010– , Foreign Minister 2019–21, Deputy Prime Minister and Lord Chancellor 2021–22. Lord Chancellor and Secretary of State for Justice 2021–22; 2022– , and Deputy Prime Minister 2021–22; 2022– .

**Rabelais, François** (c.1494–1553). French writer, born near Chinon in Touraine. His father was probably an advocate. He entered (c.1520) the Franciscan Order but transferred, with papal consent, to the Benedictines (c.1524). He seems to have visited several universities and acquired a great range of learning before finally leaving the Order to become a lay priest. In 1532 he graduated in medicine at Montpellier and afterwards practised at Lyons, where he wrote *Pantagruel* (1532) and *Gargantua* (1534) under the pseudonym Alcofribas Nasier, an anagram of his own name. The giant Gargantua is Pantagruel's father and so in a sense the two books and those which followed are parts of a single work. A third book was published in 1546 and a fourth appeared complete in 1552. The authenticity of a fifth published after Rabelais' death is doubtful. The books were condemned at various times by the Sorbonne, though it was not the doctrines of the Church that were satirised but the ignorance and obscurantism of monks and priests and the many abuses that had become established. \*François I refused to ban them and Rabelais himself was protected by Jean du Bellay, Bishop of Paris (cardinal from 1536), whom he twice accompanied to Rome, probably as his physician. The details of Rabelais' later life are obscure. Most of the time must have been spent in medical practice. He seems to have again visited Rome more than once. After the condemnation of the third book (1545) he took refuge in Metz and finally received an appointment (which he seems never to have taken up) as *curé* of Meudon, a small town near Paris. The books, which achieved an astonishing contemporary success (by 1600 more than a hundred editions had appeared), tell of the travels of two giants, Pantagruel and Gargantua, with their companion Panurge. They are a compound of great learning, bawdy wit and satire, expressing in an extreme form and by unusual means the humanism not only of the author but of Renaissance culture generally. Sir Thomas Urquhart (1611–1660) made a famous English translation (Books 1 and 2 published 1653, Book 3 1693) in language almost as exuberant as the author's own.

Screech, M. A., *Rabelais*. 1979.

**Rabi, Isidor Isaac** (1898–1988). American physicist, born in Austria. In 1937 he became professor of physics at Columbia University in New York where

he worked on the magnetic properties of atomic nuclei and perfected the molecular-beam resonance method. For this he was awarded the Nobel Prize for Physics (1944).

Rabi, I., *My Life and Times as a Physicist*. 1960.

**Rabin, Yitzhak** (1922–1995). Israeli soldier and Labour politician, born in Jerusalem. He was Chief of Staff of the Israel Defence Forces 1964–68, Ambassador to the United States 1968–73, Leader of the Labour Party 1974–77, 1992–95, Prime Minister 1974–77 and 1992–95, and Minister for Defence 1984–90. In September 1993, in a historic agreement, signed in Washington, limited self-government was given to the Gaza strip and Jericho, in return for PLO recognition of Israel. He shared the 1994 Nobel Peace Prize with Yasser \*Arafat and Shimon \*Peres. In November 1995 he was assassinated by Yigal Amir, a young Israeli extremist.

**Rachel** (Élisa Félix) (1821–1858). French actor, born in Switzerland. From her first stage appearance in Paris (1837) her greatness as a tragédien was recognised. As she played the great parts of \*Corneille, \*Racine (above all as Phèdre) and \*Voltaire she won renewed acclaim. During the revolution of 1848 her public recital of *La Marseillaise* provoked a sensation. She had a reputation for avarice and amassed a huge fortune. Through her liaison with Count \*Walewski, the emperor's natural son, she became the mother of a grandson of \*Napoléon I.

**Rachmaninoff** (Rakhmaninov), **Sergei Vasilievich** (1873–1943). Russian-American composer, pianist and conductor, born in Semyonovo. He studied first at St Petersburg and then (1885–92) at the Moscow Conservatoire, where he was the pupil of \*Arensky and \*Taneyev and knew \*Tchaikovsky, who was a major influence. By the age of 20 he had written the opera *Aleko*, the Piano Concerto No. 1, the ubiquitous Prelude in C Sharp Minor (its popularity irritated him) and many songs. In his 20s he was conducting, teaching and giving piano concerts. The failure of his Symphony No.1 (1897), due to \*Glazunov's poor conducting, caused three years of acute depression until he responded to treatment by hypnosis. The piano concertos No. 2 (1900–01) and No. 3 (1909), Cello Sonata (1901) and Symphony No. 2 (1906–07) marked his recovery.

Rachmaninoff left Russia immediately after the 1917 Revolution. From 1918 he lived in New York, with an estate in Switzerland, then moved to Los Angeles. He only became a US citizen in the year of his death, remained steeped in the Russian tradition and was never comfortable with English.

Generally regarded as one of the greatest pianists in the history of the instrument, he undertook concert tours quite late in his career, from 1918, when he was 44, essentially because he needed the money. His piano repertoire was very limited but



he recorded extensively, from 1919 to 1942, mostly his own music but also \*Chopin, some \*Schumann and \*Beethoven and many short familiar pieces. He rated his conducting more highly than his playing but three times declined appointment as conductor of the Boston Symphony Orchestra.

Later compositions included Concerto No. 4 (1927, revised 1938), *Rhapsody on a Theme of Paganini* (1934), Symphony No. 3 (1935–38), preludes and études-tableaux for piano, piano transcriptions and *Symphonic Dances* for orchestra (1940). He died of melanoma in Beverley Hills. His works remain popular because of their melodic strength, emotional intensity, and the dazzling virtuosity of the piano writing.

Norris, G., *Rakhmaninov*. 1976; Norris, G., *Rachmaninoff*. 2000; Harrison, M., *Rachmaninoff: Life, Work Recordings*. 2006; Scott, M., *Rachmaninoff*. 2011.

**Racine, Jean** (1639–1699). French dramatist, born in Picardy. Son of a lawyer, he was educated at Port-Royal and influenced there by Jansenist teachings. In Paris, where he sought literary fame, he became a friend of \*Molière, \*La Fontaine and later \*Boileau, meanwhile winning the favour of \*Louis XIV with complimentary poems. Molière's company staged his first play, *La Thébaïde*, in 1664, but the production of the second, *Alexandre le Grand* (1665), led to the famous quarrel between the two playwrights. After a fortnight's run Racine, dissatisfied with the performance of Molière's company, transferred the production to that of his main rival, at the same time, it is said, stealing his mistress and star actor Mademoiselle du Parc. There were, indeed, many defamatory stories about Racine's life in Paris at this time, including one said to have been extracted under torture from a well known sorcerer that he had poisoned his mistress, but Racine had the art of making enemies as well as friends and much can be attributed to malice. With the production of his third play, *Andromaque* (1667), Racine entered his great period. In this play and those that followed he displayed the great human emotions of love, jealousy and hatred at their highest point of intensity with their consequences of crime, madness or death. Though he was bound by the same classical formulas as his predecessors, he achieved freshness by a remarkable simplification of design combined with a psychological subtlety hitherto unknown. Moreover, he was a great poet and his lines are distinguished by their musical cadences.

The plot of *Andromaque* was taken from \*Euripides, as were those of *Iphigénie* (1674) and *Phèdre* (1677) a grim tale of illicit passion and jealousy which provides one of the finest parts ever written for a tragic actor. *Bajazet* (1672), which with *Britannicus* (1669), *Bérénice* (1670) and *Mithridate* (1673) forms a historical group, has an uncharacteristically complicated plot and an atmosphere of oriental intrigue. His only comedy, *Les Plaideurs*, appeared

in 1668. In 1677 the office of royal historiographer enabled him to leave the theatre in dignity and comfort. The event coincided with a 'conversion', inspired perhaps by the coming of middle age, the influence of Madame de \*Maintenon and Boileau and his own underlying piety inculcated at Port-Royal. To this period belong his last two plays, *Esther* (1689) and *Athalie* (1691), both on biblical themes and written for the Maison de Saint-Cyr, the school founded by Madame de Maintenon. With the possible exception of *Phèdre*, *Athalie* is considered Racine's greatest work. Its mighty theme, concerned with God's anger and divine providence, is enriched by stage effects and choruses of outstanding beauty.

Brereton, G., *Jean Racine: A Critical Biography*. 1951.

**Radcliffe, Ann** (née Ward) (1764–1823). English novelist. She was the most important of the writers of the 'gothic romances', the fashion for which was set by Horace \*Walpole's *Castle of Otranto* (1765). The principal ingredients are romantic settings in which occur deeds of darkness, strange and mysterious events, and 'supernatural' happenings, afterwards rationally explained. Her best known work is *The Mysteries of Udolpho* (1794), set in a sombre castle in the Apennines. She influenced \*Byron and \*Scott, but Jane \*Austen, in *Northanger Abbey*, ridiculed her inferior imitators.

Grant, A., *Ann Radcliffe*. 1952.

**Radek, Karl Berngardovich** (né K. B. Sobelsohn) (1885–1939). Russian-Jewish author and politician, born in Lviv, now in Ukraine. He became a journalist and supported the German Social Democratic Party from 1904. He was imprisoned several times, fought in the Russian Revolution (1917) and tried to organise a communist revolution in Germany (1918–19). He was a member of the presidium of the Communist International 1919–1923 but his influence declined when the Comintern proved ineffective, and he became head of the Sun Yat-sen University for Chinese Students in Moscow 1923–27 until expelled from the Communist Party for having supported \*Trotsky. Restored to favour, he wrote for *Izvestia* and helped draft the 1936 constitution. In 1937 he was sentenced to 10 years' jail for treason (a surprisingly light penalty) and presumably died there.

**Radetzky von Radetz, Johann Josef Wenzel Anton Franz Karl, Graf** (1766–1858). Austrian field marshal. He fought against France throughout the Revolutionary and the Napoléonic Wars and was Commander-in-Chief in Austrian Italy from 1831. In the revolutionary year of 1848–49 he defeated the insurgents and their Sardinian allies at Custoza and Novara and forced the surrender of Venice. He held the country in firm control until his retirement (1857). Johann \*Strauss the elder wrote the much performed *Radetzky March* (1848).

**Radhakrishnan, (Sir) Sarvepalli** (1888–1975). Indian philosopher, born in Madras. Educated in Madras, he held chairs in philosophy at Madras, Mysore and Calcutta before his appointment as Spalding professor of eastern religions at Oxford 1936–52 and he was concurrently Vice Chancellor of Benares University 1938–39. His works on eastern philosophy and religion include *History of Indian Philosophy* (1923–27), *The Hindu View of Life* (1927) and *An Idealist View of Life* (1932). He served as Chairman of UNESCO 1948–49, Ambassador to the USSR 1949–52, Vice President of India 1952–62 and President 1962–69. Awarded a knighthood (later disclaimed) in 1931, he became an Honorary OM in 1963.

Gopal, S., *Radhakrishnan*. 1992.

**Radischev, Aleksandr Nikolayevich** (1749–1802). Russian philosopher, poet and radical thinker. In 1790 he wrote *Journey from St Petersburg to Moscow*, which portrayed the miseries of serfdom and called for a social revolution. He was later sentenced to death, the sentence being commuted to exile in Siberia. He was allowed to return home after the death of \*Catherine the Great in 1796. In 1801 he became a member of a law commission but, despairing of any progress towards abolishing serfdom, committed suicide. His writings influenced Russian reformers throughout the 19th century.

Lang, D. M., *The First Russian Radical*. 1959.

**Rae, John** (1813–1893). Scottish (Orkadian) explorer and doctor, born in Orkney. He worked for the Hudson's Bay Company, explored northern and northwestern Canada, explained (1854) the mystery of the loss of Sir John \*Franklin and his expedition (enraging Lady Jane \*Franklin in the process) and failed to receive appropriate recognition as the discoverer of the Northwest Passage, other than election as FRS and FRGS.

**Raeburn, Sir Henry** (1756–1823). Scottish portrait painter, born in Edinburgh. After two years in Rome 1785–87 he became a fashionable portrait painter in his birthplace. A keen sense of character, combined with strong colour and vivid effects of light, make his portraits lively as well as realistic. His best painting was *The Skating Minister* (1794). Sir Walter \*Scott was among his sitters, often presented in national costume or on horseback in parkland settings. He became President of the Royal Scottish Academy in 1812, elected RA in 1815, and knighted in 1822.

**Raeder, Erich** (1876–1960). German sailor. Chief of Staff 1912–18 to Admiral Franz von Hipper, who commanded the battle cruisers in World War I, having been appointed Grand Admiral in 1939, he became Commander-in-Chief during World War II until superseded by Admiral Karl \*Dönitz (1943). Condemned by the Nuremberg tribunal to life

imprisonment for his part in planning the war and especially the invasion of Norway, he was released in 1955.

**Raemaekers, Louis** (1869–1956). Dutch cartoonist. The bitter irony of his cartoons attacking the Germans in the Amsterdam newspaper *De Telegraaf* had a remarkable effect on neutral opinion in World War I.

**Raffles, Sir (Thomas) Stamford** (Bingley) (1781–1826). English colonial administrator, born at sea. Son of a sea-captain, he joined the East India Company and went to Malaya (1805) as assistant secretary at Penang. In 1811 the British occupied Java (Holland then being under \*Napoléon's rule). As Lieutenant Governor of the Dutch East Indies 1811–15, he founded the magnificent Bogor Botanical Gardens and began systematic recovery and restoration of two great temple sites in West Java, Prambanan (Hindu) and Borobodur (the world's largest Buddhist site). He was removed for alleged financial impropriety and returned to England, visiting Napoléon in St Helena on the way. He wrote the monumental *The History of Java* (1817) and returned to the East as Lieutenant Governor of British Bencoolen, on the west coast of Sumatra, 1818–24. On his personal initiative, and despite official misgivings, he founded (1819) Singapore, and so secured British control of Malaya. In 1824 a fire on board the ship on which he was returning to England destroyed his botanical and zoological specimens but with such replacements as he could collect he founded the London Zoological Society, of which he became first president 1824–26. He died of a brain tumour.

Wurtzburg, C. E., *Raffles of the Eastern Isles*. 1954.

**Rafsanjani, Ali Akbar Hashemi** (1934–2017). Iranian politician and cleric. Educated in Qom, he was Speaker of the Islamic Consultative Assembly 1980–89 and became President of Iran 1989–97. In 2005 he contested the Presidency again, losing narrowly to Mahmoud \*Ahmadinejad and in 2013 was disqualified as a candidate by the Council of Guardians.

**Raglan, 1st Baron, FitzRoy James Henry Somerset** (1788–1855). British soldier. Eighth son of the 5th Duke of Beaufort, as ADC to the Duke of \*Wellington he was present at all the great battles of the Peninsular War, and lost an arm at Waterloo. He served as Wellington's secretary 1819–52 and on his death received a barony and became Master General of the Ordnance. In 1854 he was appointed to command the British forces in the Crimea. For his victory at Inkerman, although made a field marshal, he was blamed for the misconstrued order that led to the fatal charge of the Light Brigade at Balaclava. Though an excellent tactician, he lacked the outstanding qualities demanded of a commander-in-chief. He died of dysentery and clinical depression in the Crimea.

**Raikes, Robert** (1735–1811). English philanthropist, born at Gloucester. His father was a printer and owner of a local newspaper which he inherited. Concern for the children whom he saw wandering in the streets on Sundays fired him to start a Sunday school (1780), where children might learn to read and repeat the catechism. Newspaper reports led to the scheme spreading to all parts of the country.

**Rainborough** (or Rainboro), **Thomas** (d.1648). English soldier and republican. A naval commander in the Parliamentary fleet, he became a colonel in the army and MP for Droitwich 1646–48. In the Putney Debates of the General Council of the New Model Army (October–November 1647), he led the republican officers, in opposition to \*Cromwell and \*Ireton, proposing manhood suffrage and religious toleration. He was killed by Cavaliers at Doncaster while resisting capture.

**Rainier III** (Rainier Louis Henri Maxence Bertrand Grimaldi) (1923–2005). Prince of Monaco 1949–2005. Head of the House of Grimaldi which has ruled in Monaco since 1297, he succeeded his grandfather Louis II and married (1956) the film star Grace \*Kelly. Much of the tiny state's revenue is derived from the casino at Monte Carlo.

**Rais** (or Retz), **Gilles de** (1404–1440). French soldier and murderer. After fighting with \*Joan of Arc at Orléans and being made a marshal by \*Charles VII, this Breton nobleman took to necromancy and murder. Over 140 children are said to have been tortured and killed by him before he was taken and hanged. Breton tradition links him with the fairytale figure of Bluebeard.

**Rajagopalachari, Chakravarti** (1878–1972). Indian politician, lawyer and writer, born near Madras. He joined \*Gandhi's non-cooperation movement, but served as Prime Minister of Madras 1937–39. During World War II he supported the British and opposed the 'Quit India' movement. After partition and independence, he was Governor of West Bengal 1947–48 and \*Mountbatten's successor as Governor-General 1948–50, the last to hold that office. He was \*Nehru's choice to become first President of India, withdrawing because of opposition within the Indian National Congress Party. He joined the Cabinet as Minister for Home Affairs 1950–51, resigning over Nehru's alliance with Russia. He returned to Madras and became a non-elected Chief Minister 1952–54. He left the INC in 1957 and was co-founder of the conservative Swatantra Party in 1959.

**Rákosi, Mátyás** (1892–1971). Hungarian Communist politician, of Jewish descent. As a young man he worked in a London bank, became a minister under Belá \*Kun (1919), and was jailed (1927–40) under \*Horthy. As first secretary of the United Workers (i.e. Communist) Party 1945–56 and Prime Minister 1952–53, he took a tough Stalinist

line. He coined the phrase 'salami tactics'—dividing opponents ideologically and cutting them off piece by piece.

**Raleigh** (or Raleigh), **Sir Walter** (1552?–1618). English courtier, adventurer and writer, born in Devon. After accompanying his half-brother Sir Humphrey \*Gilbert on an unsuccessful colonising expedition to the West Indies (1578), he served in Ireland (1580) and in 1582 went to court as a protégé of the Earl of \*Leicester. He quickly won the favour of \*Elizabeth I by his good looks, his wit and his fine clothes, and he received estates, trading monopolies in wine and wool, and a knighthood (1585). His haughty impatient manner brought him, however, many bitter enemies. He used his wealth to finance privateering expeditions and colonising schemes, but he was not lucky. He found money for Gilbert's last and fatal voyage. The attempts (1585 and 1587) to found a colony of Virginia, named after the queen, failed. He did not accompany the expeditions, but by planting on his Irish estates the potatoes his men brought back, and by setting a persuasive example of smoking the tobacco, he popularised the use of both (though they had already been discovered by the Spanish and Portuguese). The rivalry of a new favourite, \*Essex, and the discovery (1592) of Raleigh's liaison with Elizabeth Throckmorton, one of the queen's maids-of-honour (whom he later married), brought temporary disgrace. In 1595 he was again at sea bound for the Orinoco, but gold from the fabled 'El Dorado' eluded him, and his discoveries in Guiana stirred few. He shared with \*Howard and Essex the credit for the successful Cadiz raid (1596) but by taking no part in the intrigues which brought \*James I to the throne, he earned the new King's suspicious hostility. On trumped-up charges of conspiracy he was condemned to death (1603) and, though finally reprieved, he was confined in the Tower of London until 1616. Then at last he was allowed to lead another gold hunting expedition to Guiana, on condition that he did no injury to Spanish interests (an impossible condition as Spain claimed all these lands). He returned unsuccessful, and to appease the Spanish was executed on the old charge. James had indeed exalted his enemy and by his shameful treatment had turned an unpopular (and arrogant) court favourite into a national hero.

Like many of his contemporaries, Raleigh wrote verse. His political thought, e.g. in *The Prerogative of Parliaments* (written 1615, published 1628), was liberal and progressive and his religious thought (which brought accusations of atheism) showed wide tolerance. His most famous achievement was his great *History of the World* (1614), written while in prison. The completed portion carries the story from the creation to the fall of Macedonia (130 BCE). It has little historical value but is a fine example of Elizabethan prose style, much admired by Oliver \*Cromwell for its moral lessons.

Adamson, J. H., and Follard, H. F., *The Shepherd of the Ocean*. 1969; Coote, S., *A Play of Passion*. 1993.

**Rama IV** (Mongkut) (1804–1868). King of Thailand (Siam) 1851–68. Originally a monk, he began modernising Thailand, entered into treaties with the US and Britain and introduced the first railway. He had 27 wives and 82 children. Memoirs (1870, 1872) by a Welsh governess Anna Leonowens became the basis of the book *Anna and the King of Siam* and the musical *The King and I*.

**Rama V** (Chulalongkorn) (1853–1910). King of Thailand 1868–1910. Son of Rama IV, he abolished feudalism and slavery, introduced telephones and extended the railways, created postal services, unified weights, measures and currency, built schools and a university and reorganised government along vaguely Western lines.

**Rama IX** *see* **Bhumibol Adulyadej**

**Ramakrishna** (Gadadhar Chatterji) (1834–1886). Indian mystic. Son of a poor Brahman of Bengal, he lived as a wandering ascetic and in his meditations became convinced that the fundamental unity of Hinduism, Islam and Christianity could be attained by the practice of piety. His teachings were widely spread in America and Europe by his disciple **Svami Vivekananda** (1862–1902) who on his return to India founded (1897) the Ramakrishna mission for the destitute.

**Ramakrishnan, Sir Venki** (Venkatraman) (1952–). Indian-British structural biologist, born in Tamil Nadu. He studied at Baroda, Ohio and Yale, worked at Yale and Utah and moved to Cambridge in 1999. He shared the 2009 Nobel Prize for Chemistry ‘for studies of the structure and function of the ribosome’ (particles of RNA + protein found in cells), using crystallography to explain its three-dimensional structure and how protein production operates at the atomic level. He became President of the Royal Society 2015–20.

**Raman, Sir Chandrasekhara Venkata** (1888–1970). Indian physicist, born near Madras. From a landowning family, son of a physics teacher, he graduated from the Presidency College, Madras at 16 and was largely self-educated. Professor of physics at the University of Calcutta from 1917, he became director of the Indian Institute of Science, Bangalore (1933–47), and of the Raman Research Institute (from 1947). He discovered (1928) that when a transparent substance is irradiated with monochromatic light of a given frequency the scattered light contains additional frequencies characteristic of the substance. This is known as the Raman effect, and study of the Raman spectra so produced gives valuable information about molecular structure. He was knighted in 1929 and awarded the Nobel Prize for Physics (1930).

**Ramanujan, Srinivasa** (1887–1920). Indian mathematician, born near Madras. A devout Hindu, from the Tamil Brahmin Iyengar caste, he dropped out of college, married an illiterate child bride,

worked as a clerk but showed extraordinary gifts as a mathematician and carried out research at Madras University. G. H. Hardy invited him to Trinity College, Cambridge, where he worked 1914–19, was elected FRS in 1918 and a Fellow of Trinity. Gravely ill (probably hepatic amoebiasis), he returned to India to rejoin his wife and died a year later. His mathematical grasp was partly intuitive, expressed as ‘the thought of God’, and sometimes dismissed as alien to Western reasoning and method. But his output was prodigious, ranging from partition and superstring theory to algebraic geometry, all worked out in his head, without computing and is still relevant nearly a century after his death. One of his lost notebooks is displayed in the Wren Library, Trinity College, next to \*Newton’s *Principia*. The film *The Man Who Knew Infinity* (2015), based on an earlier book, drew international attention to his work, followed by documentaries, plays and novels.

Kanigel, R., *The Man Who Knew Infinity*. 1991.

**Ramaphosa, (Matamela) Cyril** (1952–). South African political organiser, born in Soweto. He was General Secretary of the African National Congress (ANC) 1991–97 and Chairman of the Constitutional Commission 1994–97. Defeated by Thabo Mbeki in a bid for the presidency in 1997, despite his socialist principles he went into business and made a fortune. He became Vice President of the ANC 2012–17. He was narrowly elected as President of the ANC in December 2017, pledging to reform both the party and the South African government. When Jacob Zuma was forced to resign, Ramaphosa was immediately elected as President of the Republic of South Africa in February 2018.

**Rambert, Dame Marie** (née Cyvia Rambam) (1888–1982). British ballet producer and teacher, born in Poland. Trained by Cecchetti, she worked with Diaghilev’s company (1912–13) but devoted most of her life to teaching. She launched (1931) the Ballet Rambert in London, and from it many important dancers and choreographers have emerged. Among her honours were the Legion d’honneur (1957) and the DBE (1962).

Clarke, M., *Dancers of Mercury*. 1962.

**Rambouillet, Catherine de Vivonne, Marquise de** (1588–1665). French literary hostess. During the reign of Louis XIII she presided (in her ‘blue room’) over one of the most famous salons in French literary history, its guests from c.1615 to 1650 including Richelieu, Malherbe, Madeleine de Scudéry, La Rochefoucauld, Saint-Evremond, Marie de Sevigny and Corneille, whose new plays were read there. The good conversation and refined manners of her salons set a highly civilised model in French social circles.

**Rameau, Jean-Philippe** (1683–1764). French composer, born at Dijon in the same decade as \*Telemann, \*Händel, J. S. \*Bach and Domenico \*Scarlatti. After studying in Italy he became a church organist. In his important *Treatise on Harmony* (1722) he published the results of some years of study of the composition and progression of chords: in later theoretical works he improved the system he had advanced. He was a prolific composer of keyboard works, chamber music and Church music. His Suite in D (1724) for harpsichord includes *Les Cyclopes* and *L'entretien des muses*, dramatic works suggesting vivid images. Rameau was important as \*Lully's successor in the history of French opera, and as a bold innovator in harmony and orchestration. However, his fame came late, after the age of 50. The first of more than 20 operas and ballets to achieve success was *Hippolyte et Aricie* (1733), from \*Racine's *Phèdre* but it was also attacked by Lully's partisans, and the term 'baroque', applied for the first time, as a term of abuse. *Les Indes galantes* (1735), *Castor et Pollux* (1737) and *Dardanus* (1739) were enormously successful. He collaborated with \*Voltaire on several projects. His last opera, *Les Boréades* (1764), unperformed in his lifetime, makes dramatic use of a wind machine and special effects.

Girdlestone, C. M., *Jean Philippe Rameau. His Life and Work*. Rev. ed. 1969.

**Ramesses (Rameses or Ramses)**. Name of 11 pharaohs of Egypt of the XIXth and XXth dynasties. **Ramesses I** (d.c.1306 BCE) succeeded at an advanced age, founded the XIXth dynasty and began the hypostyle hall at Karnak. **Ramesses II ('the Great')** (d.1224 BCE), grandson of Ramesses I and son of \*Seti I, ruled from 1290 to 1224 BCE. He fought the Hittites for 15 years, defeating them in Syria, then made a treaty of friendship. He enlarged Egypt's power in wars against the Libyans and Nubians. The greatest temple-builder, he extended the temple of Amun at Karnak and erected the Luxor temple, the mortuary temple Ramesseum (\*Shelley's Ozymandias) and the great and small temples at Abu Simbel (lifted 65 metres 1964–68 when the Aswan High Dam raised water levels). He reigned for 66 years and fathered 120 children. The Exodus of the Israelites might have occurred in his reign. In 1976 he was issued a passport when his mummy was sent to Paris for treatment. **Ramesses III** (d.1163 BCE) ruled from 1195, defeated the Libyans, Philistines and the Sea Peoples, exploited gold and copper mines, and built temples at Karnak and West Thebes (Medinet Habu). He was murdered.

Gardiner, A. H., *Egypt of the Pharaohs*. 1961; Tyldesley, J., *Ramesses: Egypt's Greatest Pharaoh*. 2000.

**Ramón y Cajal, Santiago** *see* **Cajal, Santiago Ramón**

**Ramos, Fidel Valdez** (1928–2022). Filipino soldier and politician. He served in Korea and Vietnam, became Commander-in-Chief of the armed forces 1986–98, Minister for Defence 1988–92, and was elected as President 1992–98, succeeding Corazon \*Aquino.

**Ramos-Horta, José** (1949– ). Timorese journalist and advocate. After the Indonesian occupation of East Timor in 1975, he was the leading international spokesman for independence, working from Portugal and Australia. He shared the 1996 Nobel Prize for Peace with **Carlos Felipe Ximenes Belo** (1948– ), Bishop of Timor. After independence, Ramos-Horta was Foreign Minister 2002–06, Prime Minister 2006–07, and President 2007–12. He survived an assassination attempt in 2008, was defeated for re-election in 2012 but became UN representative in Guinea-Bissau. He was elected, with a large majority, for another term as President 2022– .

**Ramphal, Sir Sonny** (Shridath Surandranath) (1928– ). Guyanan lawyer and administrator. He was Secretary-General of the Commonwealth 1975–90 and a member of the \*Brandt Commission on Development Issues 1977–79.

**Ramsay, Sir William** (1852–1916). Scottish chemist, born in Glasgow. Educated in Scotland and Germany, he became Professor of Chemistry at University College, Bristol 1880–87 and University College, London 1887–1913. In 1892, \*Rayleigh had found that atmospheric nitrogen is heavier than nitrogen produced from compounds. Ramsay investigated 'noble' (formerly 'inert') gases, leading to the discovery of argon (announced 1894) and of neon, krypton and xenon (1898). Helium, discovered in the sun in 1868, had been extracted by Ramsay from pitchblende (uraninite) in 1895. He won the 1904 Nobel Prize for Chemistry for his work on noble gases.

**Ramsey, Allan** (1713–1784). Scottish painter. After studying in Italy he returned to Edinburgh but settled in London (c.1762). He became painter to \*George III (1767). His portraits of the king and of Queen \*Charlotte are in the National Portrait Gallery, London. His intellectual interests made him a friend of \*Johnson and the correspondent of \*Hume, \*Rousseau and \*Voltaire.

**Ramsey, (Arthur) Michael, Baron Ramsey of Canterbury** (1904–1988). English prelate, born in Cambridge. Educated at Magdalene College, Cambridge, and ordained in 1928, he was professor of divinity at Durham 1940–50 and Cambridge universities 1950–52, Bishop of Durham 1952–56 and Archbishop of York 1952–56. He succeeded Geoffrey \*Fisher as the 100th Archbishop of Canterbury 1961–74 and was also President of the World Council of Churches 1961–68. A high churchman and distinguished theologian, he wrote several books. As Archbishop of Canterbury he

worked hard to reconcile the differences between the various churches and in 1966 made the first official visit by an English archbishop to the pope since the Reformation. He was made a life peer on his retirement. His brother, **Frank Plumpton Ramsey** (1903–1930), philosopher, mathematician and economist, was a prodigy who became a Fellow of King's College, Cambridge. He worked with Bertrand \*Russell in mathematics, J. M. \*Keynes in economics, G. E. \*Moore in philosophy, translated \*Wittgenstein's *Tractatus Logico-Philosophicus* and developed penetrating critiques of all four. He published important papers on optimal taxation and optimal savings, probability (anticipating 'games theory'), and the 'Ramsey theory' on the relationship between order and disorder, later taken up by \*Gödel, \*Church and \*Turing. He died at 26 of a bacterial infection. His arguments for maximising aggregate wellbeing for the indefinite future are central to the case for taking preemptive action on climate change. The significance of Ramsey's research was not fully recognised until the 1960s; Harvard and Cambridge named chairs in economics for him.

Ramsey, A. M., *Canterbury Pilgrim*. 1974; Chadwick, O., *Michael Ramsey, a Life*. 1990; Misak, C. J., *Frank Ramsey: A Sheer Excess of Powers*. 2020.

**Ramsey, Robert** (c.1590–1644). Scottish composer. He became organist at Trinity College, Cambridge, and wrote arresting and original (but neglected) choral works, including 'How are the mighty fallen' and 'Sleep, fleshly birth'.

**Ramus, Petrus** (Pierre de la Rame) (1515–1572). French scholar. Son of a charcoal burner, he was able to educate himself by taking advantage of his position as the servant of a wealthy scholar. His statement that 'all \*Aristotle said was false' was symptomatic of a lifelong rebellion against scholastic authority. After some years of travel and exile he returned to France (1571) only to meet his death in the Massacre of St Bartholomew. As well as his explorations in philosophy and a new system of logic for which he became famous, he brought his rational and original mind to bear upon the study of Greek and Latin, mathematics, astronomy and almost every known subject. His followers, known as Ramists, exercised a strong educational influence, notably at Cambridge.

**Rand, Ayn** (Alisa Rosenbaum) (1905–1982). American writer, born in St Petersburg. Her novels *The Fountainhead* (1943) and *Atlas Shrugged* (1957), both filmed, set out her philosophy of 'Objectivism', advocating selfishness, individualism and *laissez faire* capitalism, which prefigured the 'neo-conservative' movement of the 1980s. She had a major influence on Steve \*Jobs and Alan \*Greenspan.

**Ranjit Singh** (1780–1839). Sikh ruler, known as 'the Lion of the Punjab'. At the age of 12 he succeeded his father as chief of the Sukerchakias clan, and by his shrewdness and advantageous marriages became

leader of the Sikhs. In 1799 he seized Lahore from the Afghans and proclaimed himself Maharajah of the Punjab in 1801. He negotiated with the British (1809) to establish his eastern boundary on the Sutlej River and by 1819 had expelled the Afghans from the Vale of Kashmir. He modernised his army from 1820 and recruited foreign officers (some former veterans of the Napoléonic wars). Although illiterate, he was well informed, tolerant, and a masterly politician and strategist.

**Ranjitsinghi Vibhaji, Maharajah Jam Saheb of Nawanagar** (1872–1933). Indian prince and cricketer. Educated at Cambridge University, he played for the Sussex Country club 1895–1904 and for England 1896–97, 1899–1904, playing against Australia 15 times. In 1899 he became the first cricketer to score 3,000 runs in a year, achieving 3065 in 1900. Known as 'Ranji', he was graceful and popular with an unorthodox style. As ruler of Nawangar from 1907, he built up roads, railways and irrigation. He served as a colonel in France during World War I, represented India at the League of Nations (1920) and received a GCSI and GBE.

**Rank, J(oseph) Arthur Rank, 1st Baron** (1888–1972). English financier. With a fortune derived from his family's flour milling interests he gradually gained, by purchase and amalgamation, a predominant position in the production and distribution of British films.

**Ranke, Leopold von** (1795–1886). German historian. He was noted as a pioneer in the application of modern critical methods to historical sources and for the thoroughness and objectivity with which he documented his narratives. In the preface to the first of his many books, a history of medieval and later Europe, he announced his purpose merely to relate what actually occurred. His best known work is *The History of the Popes* (1840). Though it is confined to the Counter Reformation period and its author was denied access to the Vatican library, it is numbered among the world's historical masterpieces. Ranke was over 80 when he started on the world history of which nine volumes (to the 15th century) were complete when he died.

Gooch, G. P., *History and Historians in the Nineteenth Century*. 1952.

**Ransome, Arthur Mitchell** (1884–1967). English writer. He reported on the Russian Revolution for the Manchester *Guardian* and married \*Trotsky's former secretary. Realistic treatment and keen observation characterise his stories of children's adventures, several of which, e.g. *Swallows and Amazons* (1931), are concerned with the handling of small boats.

Hart Davis, R. (ed.), *The Autobiography of Arthur Ransome*. 1976.

**Rao, P(amulaparti) V(enkata) Narashima** (1921–2004). Indian politician. Educated in science and law, said to be fluent in 16 languages, he was a member of the Andhra Pradesh Legislative Assembly 1957–72 and Chief Minister 1971–72. Elected to the Lok Sabha 1972–98, he was Foreign Minister 1980–84, 1988–89, Minister for Home Affairs 1984–85, for Defence 1985, and for Human Resources (including Education) 1985–88. On Rajiv \*Gandhi's assassination he succeeded as leader of the Congress (I) Party and became Prime Minister 1991–96. The first of India's nine prime ministers from the south, he encouraged Manmohan \*Singh to begin dismantling the 'Licence Raj' system in Dia.

**Raoult, François-Marie** (1830–1901). French physical chemist. Professor of chemistry at Grenoble (1870–1901), his chief work was the investigation of the changes that occur in the boiling point, freezing point, and vapour pressure of liquids when solids are dissolved in them. From these investigations he was able to deduce the fundamental law (Raoult's law) relating the vapour pressure of a solution to the concentration of the dissolved substance, and he thus laid the foundations on which \*Van't Hoff built the modern theory of solutions.

**Raphael Santi** (Raffaello Sanzio) (1483–1520). Italian Renaissance painter, born at Urbino. Son of a court painter, his mother died in 1491 and his father in 1494. Influenced by the works of \*Uccello, \*Mantegna, \*Piero and \*Signorelli, he was apprenticed to \*Perugino. *The Crucifixion* (1503) in the National Gallery, London, is an early masterpiece. He left Urbino and lived in Florence 1504–08, when \*Leonardo da Vinci and \*Michelangelo were working there. His Florentine paintings include *The Lady with the Unicorn* (1506) and *The Deposition of Christ* (1507), both in the Borghese Gallery, Rome. He moved to Rome in 1508. The rest of his short life was spent in Rome, where his agreeable nature as well as his astounding gifts ensured immediate success. His 26 surviving portraits include Pope \*Julius II (1511), Pope \*Leo X (1519), Baldassare \*Castiglione (1515), several cardinals and himself. Julius II commissioned him to paint frescoes in four rooms (*Le Stanze*) in the papal apartments at the Vatican; they include *The School of Athens* and *The Dispute over the Holy Sacrament*. After \*Bramante's death he was appointed architect in charge of building St Peter's but none of his proposals survive. He drew the cartoons for the tapestries in the Sistine Chapel (at the same time painting the mythological Galatea cycle for the Palazzo Farnese). He also produced many large and small altarpieces as well as portraits. Raphael's output was large for so brief a life though in his last years he left completion of his intentions more and more to his assistants (Giulio \*Romano being the most gifted). He died of a sudden fever, according to \*Vasari after sexual excess, and was buried in the Pantheon in Rome. Raphael's nature was receptive rather than dynamic and he absorbed ideas from

Leonardo, Michelangelo and ancient sculptures without destroying the unity of his own work. Few, if any, artists have excelled him in the facility with which he transferred his intuitive ideas into paintings.

Fischel, O., *Raphael*. 1964; Forcellino, A., *Raphael*. 2012.

**Rapp, Jean, Comte** (1772–1821). French soldier, born in Alsace. One of the bravest of the revolutionary soldiers, he gained distinction in Germany and Egypt before becoming ADC to \*Napoléon. A brilliant charge at Austerlitz won him the rank of a divisional general and for further services he was made a count. He served throughout the Russian expedition, the plan of which he had opposed, and on his return held Danzig for nearly a year.

**Ras Tafari** *see* Haile Selassie

**Rashi** (formed from the initials of Rabbi Shelomo Yitzchaki, i.e. Solomon ben Isaac) (c.1040–1105). Jewish exegete and grammarian, born in Troyes, France. His commentary on the Pentateuch is believed to have been the first Hebrew book to be printed (1475). The Talmud is usually printed with his commentary. He also died at Troyes after wanderings probably confined to Lorraine but greatly expanded by legend.

**Rasputin, Grigori Efimovich** (1869–1916). Russian mystic and faith healer, born in Pokrovskoye, Siberia. Son of a peasant, he claimed to have experienced a religious vision at a monastery at the age of 18, and became a wandering pilgrim (*strannik*), visiting Greece and Jerusalem. In 1903 he arrived in St Petersburg, where mystical religion was then fashionable. An introduction to the tsarina \*Aleksandra followed and his apparent success in alleviating her son \*Aleksei's haemophilia gave him her complete devotion and confidence. The absence of Tsar \*Nikolai II at the front during World War I enabled Rasputin to exploit his power for private gain and the political advancement of his friends. Changes in the ministries became so unpredictable that confusion, easily interpreted as treachery, grew. He seems to have argued that sin, followed by repentance, was a pre-condition for salvation, and chose alcohol and sex as his ways to grace. He had many enemies at court and in the Russian Orthodox hierarchy and his growing opposition to the war aroused foreign concern, especially from British intelligence. A group of conservative nobles, led by Prince Felix Yusopov, decided to kill him but the accounts of his murder (29 December 1916) are contradictory. He was shot four times, clubbed and then thrown into the Neva River. (A British intelligence officer was present and may have fired the fatal shot in the forehead.)

Minney, R. J., *Rasputin*. 1972.

**Rathenau, Walther** (1867–1922). German industrialist and politician. Of Jewish origin, his father was the virtual founder of the German electrical

industry and Walther was president (1915–20) of the great electrical company abbreviated as AEG. In the republican government after World War I he was Minister of Reconstruction (1921) and in 1922, as Foreign Minister, signed the Russo-German Treaty at Rapallo. Soon afterwards he was assassinated by two young nationalist fanatics.

**Rattigan, Sir Terence Mervyn** (1911–1977). English playwright. He ranged from brilliant farce, e.g. *French Without Tears* (1936), to character studies in depth, e.g. that of Lawrence of Arabia in *Ross* (1960). *The Winslow Boy* (1946) was based on the Archer Shee case and here, as in *The Browning Version* (1948), Rattigan introduced poignant situations without sentimental over-emphasis. Other plays include *The Deep Blue Sea* (1952).

**Rattle, Sir Simon** (Denis) (1955– ). English conductor, born in Liverpool. Trained as a pianist and percussionist, he worked with the BBC and became principal conductor of the City of Birmingham Symphony Orchestra 1980–98. He won awards for his recordings of \*Brahms, \*Mahler, \*Messaien, \*Shostakovich and \*Gershwin. He succeeded Claudio \*Abbado as conductor of the Berlin Philharmonic Orchestra 2002–18. His third wife was **Magdalena Kožená** (1973– ), Czech mezzo-soprano, and a specialist in \*Händel and \*Mozart. He received the OM in 2014. He became conductor of the London Symphony Orchestra 2017– , and conductor-designate of the Bavarian Radio Symphony Orchestra 2023– . Outraged by Brexit, he announced that he had applied for German citizenship.

**Ratzinger, Joseph Alois** *see* **Benedict XVI**

**Rauschenberg, Robert** (1925–2008). American artist, born in Texas. He studied in Kansas City, Paris and New York and with Josef \*Albers, became a designer of stage sets and a choreographer. From 1953 he developed 'combine paintings' in which three-dimensional manufactured objects were incorporated into the flat plane of the painting. He worked with lithography and silk screen printing in the 1960s and then to three-dimensional reliefs with fragile materials. With Jasper \*Johns, his partner 1954–61, he was important in leading American pop art away from abstract expressionism towards minimalism, and also encouraged 'happenings', spontaneous performance art, a form that John \*Cage had pioneered in music and Josef \*Beuys in the plastic arts.

**Rautavaara, Einojuhani** (1928–2016). Finnish composer. Educated in Finland, the US and Germany, he was extremely prolific and much performed. His works include 8 symphonies, 12 concertos, 9 operas, 5 string quartets and many instrumental and choral pieces.

**Ravel, Maurice** (Joseph) (1875–1937). French composer, born in Ciboure. His father was Swiss-Savoyard, his mother a Basque. He studied in Paris

under \*Fauré and others and lived an uneventful life. He was a mother's boy, never married and lived in a doll's house outside Paris. A chain-smoking dandy, he looked like an erudite jockey but drove an ambulance at the front line in World War I, earned a fortune from his music and travelled to Britain, the United States and Canada. In October 1932 he suffered a brain injury in a taxi accident. Pick's disease, a rare neurodegenerative condition, led to five years of memory loss. He died after a brain operation in December 1937. (In July 1937, George \*Gershwin also had a fatal brain operation.)

His total output is the smallest of any major composer: 88 works in the catalogue, some were mere fragments, but with an exceptional consistency. His longest ballet, *Daphnis et Chloé* (1912) and the two operas, *L'heure espagnole* (1909) and *L'enfant et les sortilèges* (1925), run for barely 50 minutes each. He never attempted a symphony but described *Daphnis* as 'symphonie chorégraphique'.

Ravel wrote evocative settings for the voice, notably his song cycle *Shéhérazade* (1903) for soprano and orchestra, settings of poems by Tristan Klingsor. His genius as an instrumental writer and orchestrator is unsurpassed, challenging players to achieve exceptional performance standards. A competent pianist, but not a virtuoso, he showed a perfect understanding of keyboard technique in the Sonatine (1903–05) and in the suites *Miroirs* (1905, including *Alborada del Gracioso*, later orchestrated), *Gaspard de la Nuit* (1908—including *Scarbo*, one of the most challenging works in the piano literature) and *Ma Mère l'Oye* (*Mother Goose*, duet, 1908). His chamber works—the String Quartet (1903), the Septet for two violins, viola, cello, flute, clarinet and harp (1905), and the powerful Piano Trio (1914)—have a pellucid clarity. His major orchestral scores reveal unparalleled mastery of technique, but also profound rhythmic sweep and voluptuous sensuality. He orchestrated \*Mussorgsky's *Pictures at an Exhibition* (1922). \*Stravinsky's dismissal of Ravel as 'the Swiss watchmaker' was clever but misplaced.

Ravel's 'choreographic poem for orchestra, *La Valse* (1920), echoes the impact of World War I and contains a distinctive historic perspective. The sumptuous world celebrated in waltzes by \*Strauss (Johann and Richard) is turned into savage parody. *Boléro* (1928), Ravel's most famous work, achieved international notoriety, to the composer's irritation. An 18 bar melody is played 18 times, accompanied by an unchanging ostinato rhythm on the snare drum: increasingly complex orchestration leads to a long sustained crescendo until a dramatic key change (from C major to E major), just before a shuddering end.

The two piano concertos, both completed in 1931, are outstanding. Concerto in G major has a beautiful slow movement, containing perhaps the longest single theme in serious music, 44 bars long, Mozartian in style. The witty last movement is inspired by jazz.



Concerto in D major for Left Hand, written for Paul \*Wittgenstein, is a powerful work with sinister (appropriately) elements and obvious parallels with *La Valse*, requiring a virtuoso to manage the rhythmic sweep of one hand across the entire keyboard.

Ravel's music reflects such disparate influences as \*Couperin, \*Mozart, \*Liszt and \*Rimsky-Korsakov. His music is less impressionistic and more classical, than \*Debussy's with which it is often compared.

Stuckenschmidt, H. H., *Maurice Ravel*. 1968; Nichols, R., *Ravel*. 2011.

**Rawlinson, Sir Henry Creswicke, 1st Baronet** (1810–1895). English archaeologist, administrator and diplomat. He held many official appointments in India and the Middle East, and was known mainly for his work on cuneiform inscriptions as 'the father of Assyriology'. His brother **George Rawlinson** (1812–1902) was Camden Professor of Ancient History at Oxford 1861–89 and author of a notable translation and commentary upon \*Herodotus (1858–60). His son, **Henry Seymour Rawlinson, 1st Baron Rawlinson** (1864–1925), a general, commanded the 4th Army at the Somme (1916). His greatest success, a breakthrough in the Hindenburg Line near Amiens (August 1918), opened the way for the final advance. He commanded British forces in Russia 1919–20 and India 1920–25.

**Rawls, John Bordley** (1921–2002). American philosopher. Educated at Cornell, he was professor of philosophy at Harvard University 1962–91 and wrote the influential *A Theory of Justice* (1971).

**Rawsthorne, Alan** (1905–1971). British composer. He taught 1932–34, but afterwards worked exclusively at composition, establishing a reputation with *Symphonic Studies*, performed at the Warsaw Festival in 1939. After World War II he wrote concertos for oboe, violin and piano. His music is atonal and his works small in scale.

Mellers, W., *Studies in Contemporary Music*. 1948.

**Ray, John** (1627–1705). English naturalist. Son of an Essex blacksmith, he studied botany and zoology at Cambridge University. He spent the years 1658–66 in extensive travels, during which, by observation and collection, he gained a unique knowledge of European flora and fauna. He systematised and classified this vast amount of material in a series of volumes, a foundation on which \*Linnaeus and others were to build. He was no mere compiler, however, as he proved and was the first to distinguish between monocotyledons and dicotyledons. Major works were *Methodus Plantarum Nova* (1682), *Historia Plantarum* (1686–1704) and *Synopsis Methodica Animalium* (1693). Ray was also a philologist and published *A Collection of English Proverbs* (1670).

**Ray, Man** (né Emmanuel Rudnitzky) (1890–1976). American painter, photographer and film maker, born in Philadelphia. Secretive about his real name, he worked in Paris 1921–40, 1946–76, was involved in the Surrealist and Dada movements, became active in fashion and portrait photography and used new techniques such as solarisation.

**Ray, Satyajit** (1921–1992). Indian film producer and film director. A Bengali, since 1953 his films have been highly regarded both for their visual beauty and realism. They include *Pather Panchali* (1956), *Apu Sansar* (1959), *The Coward and the Holy Man* (1965), *Days and Nights in the Forest* (1970) and *The Chessplayers* (1979). He composes the background music for his own films. In 1947, Ray founded the first Film Society in Calcutta.

**Rayburn, Sam**(uel Tallifero) (1882–1961). American Democratic politician. A Texas lawyer, he was a US Congressman 1913–61, Speaker of the House of Representatives 1940–47, 1949–53 and 1955–61 (a record period), and a close confidant of \*Roosevelt, \*Truman and \*Johnson.

**Rayleigh, John William Strutt, 3rd Baron** (1842–1919). English mathematical and experimental physicist. Educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, he succeeded \*Maxwell as Cavendish professor of experimental physics at Cambridge 1879–84, professor of natural philosophy at the Royal Institution 1887–1905, and finally Chancellor of the University of Cambridge 1908–19. His researches covered a wide range of subjects, e.g. sound and other aspects of vibratory motion, scattering of light and the colour of the sky, the theory of radiation. He discovered (1892) that atmospheric nitrogen is heavier than nitrogen from compounds, which led to \*Ramsay's work on the inert gases. Rayleigh, who succeeded to his father's title in 1873, received the Copley Medal in 1899, the Order of Merit in 1902, won the Nobel Prize for Physics (1904), and was President of the Royal Society 1905–08. Craters on the Moon and Mars and Asteroid 22740 Rayleigh were named for him.

Strutt, R. J., *Life of John William Strutt, Third Baron Rayleigh*. 1968.

**Raynouard, François Juste Marie** (1761–1836). French poet and philologist. A prosperous Paris advocate, he entered the Legislative Assembly (1791), joined the Girondins, and was imprisoned. His poems and tragedies were successful, and in 1807 he was elected to the Académie française, later becoming secretary (1817). He wrote on Provençal language and literature, notably his *Lexique Roman* (1838–44).

**Razi, Abu Bakr Muhammad Ibn Zksriyya Al-**(known as Rhazes) (c.854–925). Persian physician. His main scientific interests lay in alchemy with a strong empirical concern with descriptions of exact processes, closely related to a descriptive and clinical

approach to medicine. Sceptical about \*Galen's theories, he wrote many manuals and distinguished between smallpox and measles. In cosmology and natural philosophy, he took issue with \*Aristotle, believing that the world had been created in time and that there were five eternal principles: Creator, soul, matter, time and space. Time was not—as for Aristotle—a measure of movement or process, but rather a boundary principle, existing independently of objects. In the Islamic world, Razi had a high reputation as an alchemist and medical writer, but his scepticism and pugnacious character led to religious and philosophical attack.

**Razumovsky, Andrey Kyrillovich, Count** (1752–1836). Russian statesman, art collector, amateur violinist and patron of music. Ambassador in Vienna 1792–1807, he was Russia's main representative at the Congress of Vienna in 1814 and was later made a prince. From 1808–14 he maintained the celebrated Razumovsky Quartet. Razumovsky's name was immortalised through the dedication to him of \*Beethoven's three string quartets, Op. 59, and (with Prince Lobkowitz) the Fifth and Sixth Symphonies. He was a munificent and prodigal patron of art: his enthusiasm for music had drawn him to \*Haydn, he knew \*Mozart well and had close associations with Beethoven (1796–1816). However, after the destruction by fire of his Vienna palace, he was forced to discontinue his way of life, and lapsed into obscurity.

**Read, Sir Herbert Edward** (1893–1968). English critic and poet, born in Yorkshire. Educated at Leeds University, he fought in World War I (winning the DSO and MC). His early poetry (*Naked Warriors*, 1919) was influenced by the carnage. He became an anarchist, curator at the Victoria & Albert Museum 1922–39, professor of fine arts at Edinburgh 1931–33, editor of *The Burlington Magazine* (1933–38), and promoted the work of T. S. \*Eliot, Henry \*Moore, Ben \*Nicholson and Carl \*Jung. He taught at Harvard 1953–54. He was an influential thinker on creativity in education (*Education through Art*, 1943) and some aspects of philosophy, especially existentialism.

Woodcock, G., *Sir Herbert Read*. 1972.

**Reading, 1st Marquess of, Rufus Daniel Isaacs** (1860–1935). British lawyer and administrator, born in London. He worked in the family fruit business, at sea, and on the stock exchange, read at the Middle Temple and became a barrister in 1887, without having a university degree. After establishing a reputation as a brilliant cross-examiner, appointed a QC in 1898, he entered parliament in 1904 as a Liberal and in \*Asquith's Government was Solicitor-General 1910 and Attorney-General 1910–13. He was involved (1912) in the Marconi scandal (favour was alleged to have been shown to the company in return for an opportunity to make private profit), but after a parliamentary inquiry he and other ministers

were absolved from blame. He was Lord Chief Justice 1913–21, with a peerage, but led a wartime financial mission to the United States 1915 and served as Ambassador 1918–19. As Viceroy of India 1921–26 he adopted a sympathetic attitude towards Congress moderates but \*Gandhi's leadership was increasingly important. Created a marquess in 1926 (the first commoner to reach this rank since \*Wellington, and the only Jew), he became Chairman of ICI 1928–31 and 1931–35. He briefly returned to political life (1931) as Foreign Secretary in Ramsay \*MacDonald's coalition and was Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports 1934–35.

**Reagan, Ronald Wilson** (1911–2004). 40th President of the US 1981–89. Born in Tampico, Illinois, he graduated from Eureka College and became a radio sports announcer. Between 1937 and 1964 he acted in 54 films, mostly as a second lead. These include *Kings Row* (1942) and *The Hasty Heart* (1950). In 1940 he married the leading actor **Jane Wyman** (1917–2007). They divorced in 1948 and in 1952 he married another actor, **Nancy Davis** (née Anne Frances Robbins) (1921–2016). President of the Screen Actors Guild 1947–52 and 1959–60, he was originally a staunch liberal but became a hard-line conservative in the 1950s. For some years he was an effective spokesman for the General Electric Co., both on television and in public appearances. He supported Barry \*Goldwater for president in 1964 and in 1966 was elected Governor of California 1967–75, defeating Edmund G. (Pat) \*Brown who had beaten Richard \*Nixon in 1962. In 1976 he challenged Gerald \*Ford in a close race for the Republican presidential nomination. He won the nomination in 1980 and defeated Jimmy \*Carter by 51 to 41 per cent of the popular vote, winning 44 states. He proclaimed commitment to small government and to market-force economics, but his administration continued to spend heavily, especially on defence. His robust anti-Communism, appeals to patriotism, support of traditional American values and gifts as a communicator swept him to a second-term victory over Walter \*Mondale (1984) in 49 states, with 59 per cent of the popular vote, the highest aggregate in US history.

In October 1986 his summit meeting with Mikhail \*Gorbachev in Reykjavik led to the Intermediate-Range Nuclear Forces (INF) Treaty (1987). Revelations in November 1986 of his careless or ill-informed handling of arms sales to Iran 1985–87 to finance 'Contra' activity in Nicaragua ('The Iran-Contra Affair') led to vigorous attacks on his credibility, but his popularity remained high. In January 1987 he proposed the first trillion dollar Budget (\$US1,024,000,000) to Congress. The savings and loan scandals and the US's transition from being a creditor to a debtor nation were not held against him and he was often credited with the collapse of Soviet Communism and the ending of the Cold War. George H. W. \*Bush's election as president

in 1988 was a virtual third term for Reagan. He was awarded the British GCB and the US Medal of Freedom. In 1994 he announced that he was suffering from Alzheimer's disease. In 16 Presidential ranking lists by US historians and political scientists, there was a striking divergence in Reagan's scores, from 6th to 26th, No. 14 in the aggregate.

Reeves, R., *President Reagan*. 2005; Brands, H. W., *Reagan: The Life*. 2015; Spitz, B., *Reagan. An American Journey*. 2018.

**Réaumur, René Antoine Ferchault de** (1683–1757). French scientist. His work for the Académie des Sciences, of which he became a member in 1708, led him into such diverse avenues of research as metallurgy, turquoise mines and the manufacture of opaque glass. The thermometer which bears his name has the boiling point of water at 80° and the freezing point at zero.

**Reber, Grote** *see* Jansky, Karl

**Récamier, Françoise Julie Adelaide** (née Bernard) (1777–1849). French beauty and wit. Her salon attracted some of the most notable literary and political personalities of the day. Among them were Madame de \*Staël, Benjamin \*Constant and \*Chateaubriand. Her husband, a middle-aged banker, died in 1830. The painter \*David perpetuated the charm of Madame Récamier as she reclined at ease.

Trouncer, M., *Madame Récamier*. 1949.

**Redford, (Charles) Robert** (1936–). American actor, director and producer, born in California. He acted in many films including *Butch Cassidy and the Sundance Kid* (1969), *The Sting* (1973), *The Great Gatsby* (1974) and *Spy Game* (2001). Films he directed included *Ordinary People* (1980, Academy Award), *Quiz Show* (1994), *The Horse Whisperer* (1998), *Conspirator* (2010) and *All Is Lost* (2013). An active environmentalist, he received the US Presidential Medal of Freedom in 2016.

**Redgrave, Sir Michael Scudamore** (1908–1985). English actor. He went to the stage after a brief career as a teacher, and gained much of his early experience at London's Old Vic. He became outstanding as a Shakespearian actor and returned to the familiar parts, but he also adapted his technique to suit the continental classics (e.g. *The Father*, *Uncle Vanya* and *A Month in the Country*) and to modern plays such as *The Aspern Papers*, where stylish acting combined with acute characterisation was required. His film career, equally varied, included parts in *The Importance of Being Earnest*, *The Browning Version* and *The Dam Busters*. He was knighted in 1959. He married the actor **Rachel Kempson** (1910–2003) and their three children were all successful performers. **Dame Vanessa** (1937–), a stage and film actor, won an Academy Award for her role in *Julia* (1977). She was a strong opponent of US foreign policy and a PLO

supporter. **Corin** (1939–2010) was an able character actor and **Lynn** (1943–2010) won an international reputation with *Georgy Girl* (1966).

**Redmond, John Edward** (1856–1918). Irish nationalist politician, born in Wexford. A barrister, he was an MP in the House of Commons 1881–1918, led the Parnellite (\*Parnell) minority in the Irish Parliamentary Party (from 1891) and the reunited party 1900–18. He accepted \*Asquith's Home Rule Bill (1912–14), but, when Sir Edward \*Carson raised a volunteer force in the north to resist it, Redmond countered him with volunteers raised in the south. Civil war was imminent when World War I broke out. Redmond's commitment to maintaining a united Ireland led to failure to embrace the strong revival of a distinctive Irish culture. He died suddenly after surgery (March 1918) and in November 1918 his party was swept out of Parliament by Sinn Féin.

**Redon, Odilon** (1840–1916). French Symbolist painter, lithographer and etcher. Influenced by \*Goya, he developed a style of fantastic and haunted imagery, which evokes the world of \*Poe and \*Mallarmé. His later works anticipated the psychedelic art of the 1970s.

**Redouté, Pierre Joseph** (1759–1840). French flower painter, born in Liège. He went to Paris and became famous in his specialised field, popularised through engravings. Both \*Marie Antoinette and the empress \*Josephine were among his pupils.

**Reed, Sir Carol** (1906–1976). English film director. Son of Sir Herbert Beerbohm \*Tree, he became an actor and directed 33 films including *Odd Man Out* (1947), *Outcast of the Islands* (1952), *Oliver!* (1968), and three based on Graham \*Greene stories *The Fallen Idol* (1948), *The Third Man* (1949) and *Our Man in Havana* (1959).

**Reed, John** (1887–1920). American journalist. In 1917 he went to the USSR and became a friend of \*Lenin. His *Ten Days that Shook the World* (1919) is considered one of the best eye-witness accounts of the Bolshevik Revolution. He founded a US Communist Party in 1919, returned to the USSR, died of typhus and was buried in the Kremlin Wall.

**Reed, Walter** (1851–1902). American surgeon and bacteriologist. He joined the US army medical corps (1874) as an assistant surgeon and became (1893) professor of bacteriology at the Army Medical School. He headed a commission sent to Cuba to study yellow fever (1899) and his team proved the thesis of Carlos \*Finlay that the disease is transmitted by the *Aedes aegypti* mosquito. He died of appendicitis.

**Rees, Lloyd Frederick** (1895–1988). Australian painter. Deeply influenced by \*Monet, he achieved a late but sustained reputation with his evocative, atmospheric landscapes.

**Rees, Martin John, Baron Rees of Ludlow** (1942–). English radio-astronomer, born in York. Educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, he became Plumian professor of astronomy at Cambridge 1973–91, a Royal Society research professor 1992–2004 and Astronomer Royal 1995–. His books include *Before the Beginning* (1997) and *Just Six Numbers* (1999). Master of Trinity College 2004–12 and President of the Royal Society 2005–10, he received the Order of Merit in 2007 and delivered the BBC's Reith Lectures in 2010, on *Scientific Horizons*. Asteroid 4587 Rees was named for him.

**Reger, (Johann Baptiste Joseph) Max** (imilian) (1873–1916). German composer, conductor, pianist and teacher, born in Bavaria. Influenced by \*Beethoven, \*Wagner, \*Brahms and \*Bach (an unusual combination), he was extraordinarily prolific, acquiring a largely unjustified reputation for writing turgid, ponderous academic music, rarely performed outside Germany. His *Variations and Fugue on a Theme of J. A. Hiller* (1907), piano concerto (1910), *Variations and Fugue on a Theme of Mozart* (1914), violin sonatas and some songs and organ pieces have been brilliantly recorded, leading to a re-evaluation of his achievement. He was professor of composition at Leipzig University 1907–16, conductor of the Meiningen Orchestra 1911–14 and toured extensively.

**Regiomontanus** (Johann Müller) (1436–1476). German astronomer and mathematician, born at Königsberg. Son of a miller, he studied philosophy at Leipzig and astronomy and geometry under Georg von Peurbach at Vienna, from 1452. It was at this time that he came to recognise the inadequacy of the current astronomical tables (the Alfonsine). On Peurbach's death, Regiomontanus completed his work on \*Ptolemy's *Almagest*, which finally appeared in 1496. This digest was a work of current scholarship in its own right. \*Copernicus' careful study of it revealed to him some of Ptolemy's errors, and stimulated the development of his own system of astronomy. Regiomontanus learned Greek from Cardinal Bessarion, and spent much of the 1460s combing Italy for astronomical manuscripts. His concern was to purify the learning of antiquity. He discovered an important manuscript of the mathematician Diophantus, but did not live to edit it. Amongst his completed works, however, were lectures on astrology and important trigonometrical writings that gave tables of tangents and sines. He was more important as a publisher of astronomical data—he made early use of the printing press—than as a theorist in his own right.

**Rehnquist, William Hubbs** (1924–2005). American judge. Educated at Stanford, he was Nixon's Assistant Attorney-General 1968–71, a justice of the US Supreme Court 1971–86 and leader of the

conservative ('strict constructionist') wing, and Chief Justice 1986–2005. He presided at President \*Clinton's impeachment trial in the Senate (1999).

**Reich, Robert B** (ernard) (1946–). American economist. Educated at Dartmouth and Yale, he became a Rhodes Scholar at Oxford, worked in government and taught at Harvard. He wrote influential books about the changing global economy including *The Work of Nations* (1991) and was US Secretary of Labor 1993–97.

**Reich, Wilhelm** (1897–1957). Austrian-American psychoanalyst, born in Vienna. One of the most controversial figures in the history of psychoanalysis, he lived in the US from 1939, and developed a theory of sexuality based on the 'orgone' (a compound word derived from organism and orgasm). He built 'orgone accumulators' to treat patients, but was charged with fraud and when he violated an injunction was sent to jail where he died of heart failure and his publications were burnt by court order.

**Reichstadt, Duke of** *see* **Napoléon II**

**Reid, Sir George Houstoun** (1845–1918). British-Australian politician, born in Renfrewshire, Scotland. He emigrated to Australia at the age of seven, was educated in Melbourne, called to the bar (1879) and entered the New South Wales Parliament 1880–84; 1885–1901. As Minister of Public Instruction he introduced 1883–84 a public system of secondary education, became Leader of the Opposition 1891–94 and was Premier 1894–99. In addition to tax simplification and a factories act, he freed the civil service from political control. A strong free-trader, after an initial hesitancy ('Yes-No Reid'), he supported federation. Elected to the House of Representatives 1901–09, he was the first Leader of the Opposition in the Federal Parliament 1901–04; 1905–08. He became Prime Minister for 11 months 1904–05 in a Free Trade-Protectionist coalition. Appointed by Alfred \*Deakin, he went to London as Australia's first High Commissioner 1910–16, and became a British MP 1916–18. His obesity caused him to be underrated, but he was an outstanding debater, strongly liberal, and an able strategist. He was the first Australian Prime Minister to die.

**Reid, Thomas** (1710–1796). Scottish philosopher. After a number of academic appointments he succeeded Adam \*Smith as professor of moral philosophy at Glasgow 1764–80. In his *Inquiry into the Human Mind on the Principles of Common Sense* (1764) he argued, against \*Hume and others, that in perception we are directly aware of physical objects and not of sensations or 'ideas' which may be related to them. He believed that all knowledge is based on self-evident principles established in 'common sense', a term that came to be applied to his philosophy as a whole. His larger *Essays on the Intellectual Active Powers of Man* (1785) is in effect a theory of knowledge based on these principles, while in his *Essays on the*

*Active Powers of the Human Mind* (1788) he discusses moral issues and arrives at the conclusion that 'moral approbation implies a real judgement'.

Grave, S. A., *The Scottish Philosophy of Common Sense*. 1960.

**Reiner, Fritz** (1888–1963). Hungarian-American conductor, born in Budapest. He conducted the Dresden Royal Opera 1914–21, went to the US in 1922, taught at the Curtis Institute, Philadelphia and directed the Pittsburgh Symphony 1938–48, the Metropolitan Opera 1948–53 and the Chicago Symphony 1953–63.

**Reinfeldt, (John) Fredrik** (1965– ). Swedish politician and economist. He led the Moderate Party 2003–15, and was Prime Minister 2006–14, handling the global financial crisis (GFC) skilfully.

**Reinhardt, Max** (1873–1943). Austrian American theatrical producer. He acted at the Deutsches Theater, Berlin 1894–1905 became its director and filled the next 25 years with a remarkable series of some 450 productions, which brought fame to the theatre and himself. As well as the ancient Greek and European classics he staged the works of \*Ibsen, \*Strindberg and \*Shaw. He was closely identified, too, with the Salzburg Festival. He specialised in spectacular productions, e.g. *The Miracle in London* (1911), which entailed the handling of crowds of performers and remarkable lighting effects. He left \*Hitler's Germany in 1933 and later became a naturalised US citizen.

Adler, G., *Max Reinhardt*. 1964.

**Reis, Oruç** ('Baba Reis', known as Barbarossa = 'Redbeard'), (c.1474-1518). Turkish-Albanian-Greek corsair, born in Lesbos. The elder brother of Kheir ed-Din \*Barbarossa and three others, he founded the family business of privateering. In 1504 the brothers established a base in Tunis, and until 1510 Oruç transported Muslim and Jewish refugees from Spain to North Africa. A fluent linguist, he raided the Lebanon, Italy, Sicily and Sardinia and received support from France. In 1512 he lost his left arm in battle and used a silver prosthetic. He seized control of Algiers in 1516, displacing the Spanish, proclaiming himself as Sultan, but in 1517 became 'chief governor' for the Ottoman Empire. Oruç and his brother Ishak were killed in battle at Tlemcen (Algeria) by the forces of \*Charles V.

**Reis, Piri** (d.1534). Turkish admiral and cartographer. Nephew of the pirate Kemal Reis, he served at Lepanto and commanded the Ottoman fleet under \*Suleyman the Magnificent. In 1513, at Gallipoli, he compiled a detailed map of the Atlantic, now held in the Topkapi Museum in Istanbul, thought to have been based on lost materials, possibly Chinese, including a world map dating from about 1428 and which may have been known to \*Columbus.

**Reith of Stonehaven, John Charles Walsham Reith, 1st Baron** (1889–1971). Scottish administrator, born in Stonehaven. Son of a clergyman, he trained as an engineer and was wounded as an officer in World War I. He became the first general manager of the British Broadcasting Company Ltd 1923–27, and when it became publicly owned, first director-general of the British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC) 1927–38. He implanted a tradition of complete integrity in the presentation of news and of educational and cultural zeal, setting out the mission statement 'inform, educate, entertain'. Autocratic and prudish, his diaries indicate some enthusiasm for \*Hitler and \*Mussolini. Knighted in 1927, he received a peerage in 1940. Reith was the first chairman of BOAC 1939–40, then became Minister for Works 1940–42 under \*Churchill, who detested him. He chaired the Commonwealth Telecommunications Board 1946–50, the National Film Finance Corporation 1948–51 and the Colonial Development Board 1950–59. Created a KT in 1969, the BBC established (1947) an annual series of 'Reith Lectures' in honour of his services to broadcasting.

Reith, J. C. W., *Into The Wind*. 1949; McIntyre, I., *The Expense of Glory*. 1993; Boyle, A., *Only the Wind Will Listen*. 1972.

**Réjane Gabrielle** (née Gabrielle Charlotte Reju) (1856–1920). French comedy actor. She acquired a reputation comparable with Sarah \*Bernhardt: wit, brilliant technique and subtlety of mood, rather than beauty of face or voice, were central to her success.

**Remarque, Erich Maria** (1897–1970). German-American author. He served in World War I and his novel *All Quiet on the Western Front* (1929), one of the most realistic and effective war novels enjoyed great popularity and was filmed twice. He lived in Switzerland (1932–39) and then the US, where he became a citizen. In 1958 he married the actor **Paulette Goddard** (1911–1990), formerly \*Chaplin's wife.

**Rembrandt** (Rembrandt Harmenszoon van Rijn) (1606–1669). Dutch painter, born at Leyden. Son of a miller, he left university early (1621) to study painting. After three years' apprenticeship to a local artist he spent six months in Amsterdam with Pieter Lastman who had been to Italy and had become familiar with the work of \*Carracci and others. Rembrandt seems to have been more influenced by the Dutch followers of \*Caravaggio, who by directing the fall of light from a single direction could create emphasis by contrast and suggest sculptured form. From this technique was developed Rembrandt's famous chiaroscuro, with several illuminated points gradually fading into the golds and browns of deepening shadow. He returned to Leyden (1625) and soon acquired a considerable reputation and several pupils. Chiaroscuro effects are already to be seen in, for example, *Simeon in the Temple*.

In 1631 Rembrandt moved to Amsterdam and quickly became a fashionable portrait painter, and since his subjects were mostly rich burghers whom he did not have to flatter unduly, provided he gave them the dignity and trappings of wealth, he was free to display his great gift for interpreting human personality. The romantic side of his own character was shown (as indeed earlier at Leyden) by his delight in dressing his sitters in all sorts of fantastic finery, not only silks and satins but furs, turbans and even armour. To indulge this taste to the full he painted large numbers of self-portraits, thus arrayed. Biblical and classical subjects continued to attract him and he excelled in dramatic narrative. Group portraits, of which *The Anatomy Lesson of Dr Tulp* (1632) was among the first to achieve fame, were also popular and by their greater size provided scope for the stronger colours he now liked to employ. The year 1642 marked a turning point in his life. His wife, Saskia van Uylenburgh (married 1634), whose dowry combined with his own earnings had enabled him to lead the life of a substantial citizen, died in 1642, a year after the birth of Titus, their only child to survive infancy. In the same year the group portrait *The Night Watch* failed to attract, mainly because the background figures were not sufficiently individualised to please the vanity of the persons portrayed. In the years that followed, Rembrandt's earning power steadily declined until (1656) his house and possessions were auctioned to pay his debts. But, ironically, the change in his circumstances marked no decline in the powers of the artist, but the reverse. His increasing impatience with the artistic conventions of the time may have frightened off his patrons but it completed his emancipation as an artist. The rich burghers may have been less often seen in his studios, but that only left him freer to concentrate upon the intense inner life of those who took their place and who had no social importance that it was necessary to convey. Some of his most perceptive portraits are of his son Titus, of Hendrickje Stoffels (who became his mistress in 1645, bore him a daughter, Cornelia, and was his constant attendant in old age), and the continuing series of self-portraits reflecting alike the passing years and his changes of mood and style. As regards the latter, Rembrandt was becoming increasingly interested in the texture of his works. He abandons the illusionist convention by which the activity of the paint is always concealed and discovers the emotive power of brush strokes left visible. He no longer pursues the search for the dramatic with its attendant contrasts of light and shade; the vivid colours of the middle years are subdued to the browns, russets and olive greens familiar in his later work. Biblical (and sometimes mythological) subjects recur more often but they are simpler and more serene. Among the most famous of the pictures of these later years are *Saul and David* and the group portrait of the *Syndics of the Cloth-makers Guild*. About 300 of his 500 paintings survive, together with 300 etchings and over 1,000 drawings.

Haak, B., *Rembrandt: his Life, his Work, his Time*. 1969; Schama, S., *Rembrandt's Eyes*. 1999.

**Remington, Frederic** (1861–1909). American painter, sculptor and illustrator. He travelled extensively in the West, became a war correspondent, and depicted the violent action of life on the frontier.

**Renan, (Joseph) Ernest** (1823–1892). French religious writer. Brought up for the priesthood, but after a long period of doubt he abandoned his faith and turned to academic work, and became famous with the first volume of an immense work on the history of the origins of Christianity. This volume, the *Vie de Jésus* (1863), tells the life story of an 'incomparable man'. Under \*Napoléon III its anti-religious content cost him his professorship, restored after the Franco-Prussian War. He continued his great history and other works, was elected to the Académie française (1878), and became (1883) Administrator of the Collège de France, playing a notable part in the form of French education. The substance of his personal belief was that though God does not exist he is in the process of becoming, through man's struggle for perfection.

Chadbourne, R. M., *Ernest Renan*. 1968.

**Renault, Louis** (1877–1944). French manufacturer and industrialist. With his brothers Marcel and Fernand, he founded Renault Frères in 1899, made significant improvements in transmission and suspension and in World War I manufactured vehicles, tanks and shells. A supporter of the far right, after German occupation in World War II his company was run by the Wehrmacht but he argued that collaboration was preferable to workers being transported to Germany. In 1944, Renault Frères was nationalised by \*de Gaulle. Renault died in custody, probably having been tortured and beaten, a conclusion which is contested.

**Rendell, Ruth Barbara** (née Grasemann), **Baroness Rendell** (1930–2015). English writer. She wrote 24 detective stories featuring Chief Inspector Reginald Wexford, and also wrote thoughtful novels under the name of **Barbara Vine**. She was a Labour life peer.

**Reni, Guido** (1575–1642). Italian painter, born in Bologna. He became one of the most prominent of the Baroque painters, the main influences on his style being \*Carracci, under whom he studied, and \*Caravaggio, whose contrasting effects of light and shade he adopted, in later years his colours became paler and cooler. His subjects are mainly mythological and Biblical, e.g. *Aurora*, a famous ceiling painting, and *Ecce Homo* and *Mater Dolorosa*.

**Rennie, John** (1761–1821). Scottish civil engineer. Using technologies developed by \*Watt and \*Boulton, he built the great Kennet and Avon canal (1794–1810), 140 km long with 104 locks, which linked Bristol and London. Other works include the old Waterloo Bridge in London (1817), London Bridge (incomplete at his death), dockyards at Chatham, harbours and aqueducts in England and Ireland.

**Renoir, Jean** (1894–1979). French film director. Son of the painter Pierre Auguste \*Renoir, he began work as a director in 1924 and established a reputation by a unique blend of lyricism and realism. His films include *Nana* (1926), *Une Partie de Campagne* (1936), *La Grande Illusion* (1938), *Le Règle du Jeu* (1939) and *French Can-Can* (1956).

Renoir, J., *My Life and My Films*. 1974.

**Renoir, Pierre Auguste** (1841–1919). French painter, born in Limoges. One of the most important of the Impressionists, as a boy he was employed as a painter on porcelain. At Gleyre's studio in Paris (1861) he met and became friends with \*Monet and \*Sisley. With them he worked in the open air concentrating on the problems of sunlight and its reflection, for example, on water or human flesh. It was with the latter that Renoir showed his special skill and the exuberant delight that his painting gave him and which he always wished to impart. There is no exotic frailty about his nudes: their flesh is rosy and their limbs are muscular. For Renoir, love of painting and a love of life were inseparable. A more sophisticated gaiety is seen in *La Loge*, *Les Parapluies* and *Au Théâtre: la Première Sortie*. He experimented briefly with pointillism but in general he was a more scholarly painter and more concerned with composition, e.g. his large paintings of *Bathers* in the 1880s, than many of his contemporary Impressionists. He spent most of his life between Paris and the French countryside and, though his hands were crippled with arthritis, continued to paint in his garden near Cagnes to the time of his death. He achieved a total of 6,000 paintings. He was happily married.

Drucker, M., *Renoir*. 1944; Gaunt, W. (ed.), *Renoir: Paintings*. 1971.

**Repton, Humphry** (1752–1818). English landscape gardener. He began to design gardens c.1790, sometimes working in partnership with the architect John \*Nash. He restored a formal setting to country houses by planting the immediate surroundings of the house in a decorative and obviously artificial style. This was a departure from the carefully 'natural' parkland, unrelieved by planted beds, that was formerly prevalent. He wrote *Observations on the Theory and Practice of Landscape Gardening*. (1794).

**Respighi, Ottorino** (1879–1936). Italian composer, violinist, conductor and musicologist, born in Bologna. An outstanding orchestrator, he scored piano works by \*Rossini for the ballet *La Boutique fantasque* (1918). He composed several high-spirited 'pictorial' orchestral works, e.g. *The Fountains of Rome* (1917), *The Pines of Rome* (1924) and *Roman Festivals* (1929). His edition of Monteverdi's *Orfeo* (1935) exemplified his valuable work in reviving interest in early Italian music. He was important in the revival of interest in \*Vivaldi. His three *Suites of Ancient Airs and Dances* (1917, 1923, 1932) and *The Birds* (1928) were based on works by 17th-century composers.

**Reszke, Jean de** (né Jan Mieczysław Reszke) (1850–1925). Polish tenor, born in Warsaw. He made his operatic debut at Venice (1874) as a baritone, but developed into one of the most famous tenors of his epoch, especially in Wagnerian roles.

**Retz, Gilles de see Rais, Gilles de**

**Retz, Jean François de Gondî, Cardinal de** (1613–1679). French cleric and politician. A colourful character, famed as a young man for his duels, love affairs and wit, he played an important part in the wars and disturbances of the Fronde (1648–53). He was arrested (1652) but escaped from prison (1654) and reached Spain and Italy. In 1662 he became reconciled with \*Louis XIV by giving up his archbishopric (in return, however, for generous compensation elsewhere). His *Mémoires* (published 1717) show a lively talent for describing character and events.

Salmon, J. H. M., *Cardinal de Retz*. 1969.

**Reuchlin, Johann** (1455–1522). German humanist. Having mastered Greek and Hebrew (the latter from a Jewish physician) he became the principal promoter of these two languages in Renaissance Germany. He protested successfully against the destruction of Jewish books and did much, by his writing and teaching, to encourage intellectual tolerance.

**Reuter, Paul Julius, Baron von** (né Israel Beer Josaphat) (1816–1899). Anglo-German journalist and entrepreneur, born in Kassel. Founder of the famous news agency, as a bank clerk at Göttingen he realised the importance for business of speedy information and organised (1849) the transmission of stock exchange prices between Aachen and Brussels by pigeon post. He moved to Paris and then London where he set up (1851) an office for the collection of, not only share prices, but also news items from the Continent. From these small beginnings sprang the huge international news agency which still bears his name. Reuter became a naturalised British citizen and was created baron in 1871 by the Duke of Saxe-Coburg-Gotha.

**Reuther, Walter Philip** (1907–1970). American trade union leader. He began to organise workers in the motor industry in 1935. He became (1952) President of the Congress of Industrial Organisation (CIO), and when it merged (1955) with its rival, the American Federation of Labor (AFL) he became Vice President of the new organisation.

**Revere, Paul** (1735–1818). American patriot, born in Boston. Of French Huguenot descent, he took part in the 'Boston Tea Party', the prelude to the War of Independence, but is remembered as the hero of a famous 'ride' from Charlestown, near Boston, to Lexington and Concord (April 1775). The story is told in a well known poem by \*Longfellow but there were in fact two rides, the purpose of the first being to warn the insurgents to move their stores to

Concord, and that of the second, two days later, to raise the alarm that British troops were on the move. Professionally, he was a silversmith, printer, engraver, bellfounder, and metals processor. His work was of exhibition quality and much of it survives.

Green, M., *Paul Revere, Man Behind the Legend*. 1964.

**Reynaud, Paul** (1878–1966). French politician. A successful advocate from 1908, he was a member of the Chamber of Deputies 1919–24, 1928–42 and the National Assembly 1946–58. Finance Minister 1938–40, he succeeded \*Daladier as Premier March–June 1940 and worked with \*Churchill to organise more effective resistance to the German invasion. But most of his Cabinet were defeatist and he was replaced by \*Pétain who negotiated a surrender. Detained by the Germans 1940–45, Reynaud was a deputy again 1946–58 and Vice Premier 1953–54.

**Reynolds, Sir Joshua** (1723–1792). English painter, born in Plympton, Devon. Son of a schoolmaster, he began his art studies under Thomas Hudson (1740–43), and widened his range by practice and study. The turning point came with a visit to Italy (1749–53) during which he made an intensive study of the work and methods of the great masters, \*Raphael, \*Michelangelo, \*Correggio, \*Titian and the other Venetians. The rest of his life was spent in London where his record as a fashionable portrait-painter was one of continued and remarkable success. The versatility with which he could adapt his knowledge and technique to the changes of time and fashion amazed his contemporaries. He was equally successful with the formal or informal occasion, the latter often enhanced by a parkland or garden setting. He also shows something of \*Van Dyck's pleasure in the texture and decorative value of fine clothes. He was one of the founders of the Royal Academy (1768) and was its first president, remaining in office for the rest of his life. His prize-giving *Discourses* retain their value for the student, and also give a valuable account of his own aims. He visited Flanders and Holland (1781) and a renewed study of \*Rubens in particular brought fresh life into his later pictures. He painted almost every celebrity of his time (over 2,000 in all): *Lady Cockburn and her Children* and Mrs \*Siddons as the *Tragic Muse* are perhaps the best known of his works. Reynolds, sociable and good-natured, was a member of Dr \*Johnson's circle, almost all of whom he painted.

Waterhouse, E. K., *Reynolds*. New ed. 1973.

**Reza Shah Pahlavi** (1878–1944). Shah of Iran (Persia until 1934) 1925–41. A man of unusual energy and untutored intelligence, he rose from the ranks in the army to become a distinguished officer. He led a military coup (1921), became military dictator, and deposed **Ahmed Shah**, last of the Qajars (1925). As shah he adopted the dynastic name 'Pahlavi' to recall an early and famous Persian dynasty. He abolished the veil for women, broke the power of the mullahs

(the Muslim clergy) and strove to modernise the country, whose name, he insisted, should be 'Iran'. His pro-German attitude during World War II led Britain and the USSR to occupy Iran and force him to abdicate (1941) in favour of his son \*Mohammed Reza. He died in Johannesburg.

Avery, P., *Modern Iran*. 1965.

**Rhee (Yi) Syng-man** (1875–1965). Korean politician, born in Whanghae. Educated at a Methodist school, he became a Christian while imprisoned for nationalist activities by the Japanese, then ruling Korea. In 1904 he went to America. After the failure of the Korean rising of 1919 he was Chairman of the Korean government in exile. On the Japanese defeat, Korea was partitioned on the 38th parallel. Rhee was first president of the Republic of Korea (i.e. the south) 1945–60. When the Democratic Peoples' Republic of Korea invaded the south (June 1950), Rhee called on the US and UN for aid. An international force, largely American and led by General \*MacArthur, helped the South Koreans in a long and costly war to restore the frontier. Rhee was re-elected in 1956 and 1960 but his dictatorial rule had become increasingly unpopular, and after hostile demonstrations (April 1960) he was removed and exiled to Hawaii.

**Rhodes, Cecil John** (1853–1902). South African politician and financier, born in Bishop's Stortford. Son of a clergyman, he went for health reasons to South Africa at the age of 17 and secured many valuable claims at the diamond diggings at Kimberley. Eventually he joined 'Barney' Barnato in forming (1888) the De Beers Consolidated Mines Company to unite their interests. Meanwhile he had been to Oxford University, gained a degree and became one of the youngest of self-made millionaires. Already his mind was busy with his dream of a British-controlled Africa from the Cape of Good Hope to Cairo. For this he needed the cooperation of the Cape Dutch and he secured it by promising their leader Jan \*Hofmeyr support for the protection of Cape farmers in return for acquiescence in his northward advance. First he limited the expansion of the Dutch South African Republic (the Transvaal) by inducing the British to declare a protectorate over Bechuanaland. With the same motive he purchased from the Matabele chief \*Lobengula the mining rights in his territory. As a result the British South Africa Company was formed by royal charter (1889). The creation of Rhodesia soon followed. Rhodes was Prime Minister of the Cape 1890–96. Still in cooperation with \*Hofmeyr, he passed an act giving the coloured population votes for their local government. While in pursuit of his expansionist policy he completed the Cape–Cairo telegraph and, to overcome the most difficult obstacle, tried to negotiate a confederation with President \*Kruger's South African Republic (Transvaal). He failed in this. The discovery of gold meant that the Transvaal could remain independent and Kruger refused all political rights to the British and other foreigners (the Uitlanders) who had come to exploit the goldfields and upon whom the country's prosperity



depended. Angry and impatient, he organised the notorious \*Jameson Raid (December 1895–January 1896), an armed incursion from the north that turned into a fiasco when its intended beneficiaries failed to rise. Rhodes was forced to resign when his part in it was discovered, and the divisions it created brought about the Boer War. Rhodes was a supporter of the Liberals in the UK and sympathetic to \*Parnell's Irish nationalism. Rhodes spent much of his remaining life in developing Rhodesia (now Zimbabwe and Zambia). He is buried (with Jameson) at the Malindidzimu Hill ('View of the World') in the Rhodes Matopos National Park, Zimbabwe. He never married. Of his huge fortune, all bequeathed for public purposes, he left a large sum for the foundation of Rhodes scholarships at Oxford University for students from the British Empire, the United States and Germany.

Lockhart, J. G. and Woodhouse, C. M., *Rhodes*. 1963.

**Rhys, Jean** (née Ella Gwendoline Rees Williams) (1890–1979). Anglo-Welsh novelist, born in Dominica. She lived in England from 1907, often precariously, married three times, drank a great deal and wrote powerfully about vulnerable and exploited women and girls. Her novels include *Quartet* (1928), *Voyage in the Dark* (1934), *Good Morning, Midnight* (1939) and *Wide Sargasso Sea* (1966). There is an extensive literature on her work.

Angier, C., *Jean Rhys. Life and Work*. 1990; Seymour, M., *I Used to Live Here Once*. 2022

**Ribbentrop, Joachim von** (1893–1946). German diplomat. Originally a champagne salesman, after working in Canada he joined the Nazi party (1933) and became \*Hitler's advisor on foreign affairs. He negotiated the Anglo-German naval treaty (1935) and served as Ambassador to Britain 1936–38 and Foreign Minister 1938–45. His greatest coup was negotiating the Russo-German Non-Aggression Pact of August 1939 with \*Molotov, a condition precedent to the outbreak of World War II. Ribbentrop, despised by the other Nazi leaders, was tried by the Nuremberg Tribunal and hanged.

Bloch, M., *Ribbentrop*. 1992.

**Ribera, Jusepe** (or José, known as Spagnoletto, 'little Spaniard') (1591–1656). Spanish painter. He studied in Spain and Italy, and eventually settled in Naples (1616) where he became court painter to the viceroys. He adopted \*Caravaggio's style of chiaroscuro and painted subjects such as *The Massacre of St Bartholomew* with brutal realism.

**Ricardo, David** (1772–1823). English economist, born in London. Son of Dutch-Jewish immigrants, estranged by his marriage to a Quaker, he became a successful stockbroker, and added to his business experience the theoretical knowledge of economics acquired through his friendship with Jeremy \*Bentham and James \*Mill to produce the famous

*Principles of Political Economy and Taxation* (1817). In his own words he gives an account 'of the natural course of rent, profit and wages'. The method of assessing value by the amount of labour put into the production of commodities was later abandoned by him (at least in its unmodified form) but was used by Karl \*Marx and so achieved a lasting influence. His theory of 'comparative advantage', a refinement of Adam \*Smith's 'absolute advantage', argued that, in international trade, nations should concentrate on areas where natural endowments, history or experience, provided cost benefits (e.g. Australian wool). This pointed the way towards Free Trade. Ricardo was MP for an Irish pocket borough 1819–23 (Michael \*Porter).

**Ricci, Matteo** (1552–1610). Italian Jesuit missionary. He learned Chinese and went to China (1583) but was expelled from place after place until allowed to settle in Peking (Beijing) in 1601. Here he attracted interest by showing and explaining European clocks and maps and soon made converts. His adaptation of Christian theology to accord with Chinese custom, however, aroused controversy and disapproval in Rome.

Spence, J., *The Memory Palace of Matteo Ricci*. 1985.

**Rice, Condoleezza** (1954– ). American administrator, born in Alabama. Educated at Denver and Notre Dame universities, she taught political science at Stanford, and served George W. \*Bush as National Security Adviser 2001–05 and Secretary of State 2005–09.

**Rich, St Edmund** *see* **Edmund of Abingdon, St**

**Richard I** (known as 'Cœur de Lion') (1157–1199). King of England 1189–99. Born at Oxford, son and successor of \*Henry II and of his queen \*Eleanor of Aquitaine. At the time of his father's death, Richard and his brothers, incited by their mother (by then separated from Henry), were in rebellion against him. Almost immediately after his succession Richard joined the 3rd Crusade provoked by the capture (1187) of Jerusalem by Saladin. He conquered Cyprus (where he married Berengaria of Navarre), proved his military skill by the capture of Acre, but, having quarrelled with, and been deserted by, \*Philippe II of France and Duke Leopold of Austria, he had to be content with only a sight of Jerusalem before making a truce (1192). On the way home he was wrecked in the Adriatic and while trying to return overland in disguise was caught by his enemy Duke Leopold and imprisoned for two years until a sufficient instalment of the vast ransom demanded had been paid. (The legend that the King's place of captivity was discovered by the troubadour \*Blondel de Nesle is unsubstantiated.) On his return he forgave his brother \*John, who had been in arms against him, and spent the rest of his reign defending his French dominions against Philippe II. He was killed by a chance arrow shot at the siege of Chaluz. He had spent only a few months in England during his

reign, but his justiciars, William de Longchamp and Hubert de Burgh ruled well and the ransom was ungrudgingly paid. Richard earned his nickname for his bravery and was generous and chivalrous. He is buried at Fontevraud-l'Abbaye, Anjou.

Harvey, J. H., *The Plantagenets*. 1970; Flori, J., *Richard the Lionheart Knight and King*. 1999.

**Richard II** (also known as **Richard of Bordeaux**) (1367–1400). King of England 1377–99. Born at Bordeaux, he was the son of \*Edward, the Black Prince, and succeeded his grandfather, \*Edward III. During the crisis of the Peasants' Revolt (1381), Richard, though still under the regency of \*John of Gaunt, personally intervened and when their leader, Wat \*Tyler, was struck down he courageously took charge and promised to redress their grievances. From c.1382 Richard tried to assert his kingship, but his aims were frustrated by the magnates in his council (Lords Appellant) who objected to the favours bestowed upon members of the court party. Richard tried to resist, but from 1386 to 1389 the Lords Appellant were in complete control. Their divisions destroyed them. Richard regained the initiative and for the next eight years ruled constitutionally and well. But he foresaw danger, and for an expedition to Ireland (1394) he raised an army dependent only upon himself. Thus fortified, he struck back (1397) at his opponents. Execution or exile was their fate, and with parliament packed and submissive he established a despotism that became increasingly severe. He made the mistake, however, of quarrelling with and exiling his cousin Henry Bolingbroke, and more foolish still, sequestering the Lancastrian estates when his uncle, John of Gaunt, died (1399). While Richard was absent in Ireland, Henry landed in Yorkshire and marched across England gathering adherents. The King returned and, judging the position hopeless, surrendered. He was taken to Pontefract Castle in Yorkshire from which he never emerged. His cause of death is uncertain – he may have been smothered, or starved himself. He was married twice but died childless. Bolingbroke succeeded him as \*Henry IV. Richard encouraged the arts and his court became a centre for culture.

Saul, N., *Richard II*. 1997.

**Richard III** (Richard Plantagenet) (1452–1485). King of England 1483–85. Born at Fotheringhay Castle, Northamptonshire, son of Richard, Duke of \*York, he was created Duke of Gloucester (1461) when his brother \*Edward IV deposed \*Henry VI for the first time. In 1472 Richard married Anne Neville (1453–1485), daughter of \*Warwick the Kingmaker. When Edward IV died (1483), the boy king \*Edward V succeeded and Richard ruled, as protector. The events that followed arose directly from the hostility to him of the widowed queen, **Elizabeth** (Woodville), and the swarm of her relations raised to wealth and power by Edward IV. Richard proceeded to isolate the king from his mother, to seize and kill the most prominent of the queen's relations and then to induce

parliament to declare the queen's marriage invalid and the king a bastard, and consequently to dethrone him. Richard then accepted the crown as next in line of inheritance. Meanwhile, young Edward and his brother Richard were in the Tower of London, where they were killed in circumstances that have never been established: Sir Thomas \*More's narrative (followed by \*Shakespeare), which made Richard Crouchback the exemplar of all wicked uncles, may be exaggerated and certainly contains Tudor bias, and, significantly, there is no contemporary accusation of murder against him. Richard, a successful and just administrator and hitherto very popular, now began to lose adherents, a process accelerated when the Lancastrian claimant Henry Tudor (\*Henry VII) landed at Milford Haven, and Richard was defeated and killed in the battle which ensued at Bosworth in Leicestershire. Richard's reputation has had several champions in recent decades, and he is to some extent rehabilitated. In a 1984 television 'trial' in Britain, with a former lord chancellor as judge and leading criminal QCs as prosecutor and defence counsel, Richard was acquitted. In September 2012 a skeleton, later convincingly identified as Richard's, was excavated in a Leicester car park and he was interred in Leicester Cathedral in March 2015.

Cheetham, A., *The Life and Times of Richard III*. 1972; Horspool, D., *Richard III. A ruler and his reputation*. 2016; Hicks, M., *Richard III: The Self-Made King*. 2019.

**Richard** (Plantagenet), **Earl of Cornwall** (1209–1272). King of the Romans 1257–72. Born at Winchester, son of King \*John and brother of \*Henry III of England, he was Count of Poitou before 1225 and probably created Earl of Cornwall in 1227. He first went on crusade in 1236, was commander-in-chief of the crusaders 1240–41 and ambassador to France and the Papacy in 1250. Extremely rich through extorting taxation from the Jews, he played an important part in continental politics in the confused period following the death (1250) of the Holy Roman Emperor \*Friedrich II. He refused the Sicilian crown offered (1253) by Pope Innocent IV but in 1257 was the successful candidate for the office of King of the Romans (i.e. emperor elect) and was crowned German King at Aachen, but only gained partial recognition. In the baronial civil war in England he tried to mediate but finally sided with his brother, was captured at Lewes and held prisoner until after the Royalist victory at Evesham.

**Richard, Duke of York** *see* **York, 3rd Duke of, Richard Plantagenet**

**Richards, Frank** (pen name of Charles Harold St John Hamilton) (1876–1961). English author. Probably the most prolific author of all time (more than 100 million published words), he wrote two weeklies for boys, *Gem* (as Martin Clifford, 1907–39) and the better known *Magnet* (as Frank Richards, 1908–40). *Magnet*, set at Greyfriars School, featured

the fat boy Billy Bunter (who later appeared in books, on stage and television), Harry Wharton and Bob Cherry. As Hilda Richards he also wrote girls' school stories. George \*Orwell's critical essay *Boy's Weeklies* (1940) provoked a strong defence by Richards.

Richards, F., *Autobiography*. 1952.

**Richards, I(vor) A(rmstrong)** (1893–1979). English literary critic. He taught at Cambridge 1922–29 and Harvard 1939–63 and was a pioneer of New Criticism, applying rigorous scientific and analytical method to the study of texts. With C. K. \*Ogden he devised 'Basic English'.

**Richardson, Henry Handel** (pen name of Ethel Florence Lyndesay Richardson) (1870–1946). Australian novelist, born in Melbourne. She left Australia in 1888 to study music in Leipzig, but after her marriage to the philologist and German literary scholar **John George Robertson** (1867–1933) devoted herself to writing and translation. She lived in Germany until 1903, then in England, only returning to Australia for one brief visit in 1912. Her massive first novel *Maurice Guest* (1908) was set in Leipzig. *The Getting of Wisdom* (1910), semi-autobiographical, with a lesbian sub-text, was her most successful book, filmed in 1978. In her trilogy *The Fortunes of Richard Mahony* (1917; 1925; 1929) the central character, loosely based on her father, is a doctor in Victoria in the turbulent period of the Gold Rush (1850s and 1860s), facing intellectual, religious, physical and financial challenges. She conveys the ruthless inevitability of great tragedy, yearned for the Nobel Prize but was never nominated.

Kramer, L., *Henry Handel Richardson*. 1967; Buckley, V., *Henry Handel Richardson*. 1970; Niall, B., *Friends & Rivals*. 2020.

**Richardson, Sir Ralph David** (1902–1983). English actor. He first won fame by his Shakespearian performances with the Old Vic, and especially in the New Theatre season, immediately following World War II, during which he had done naval service. From the 1930s he was equally well known for his appearances in many films, including *Things to Come* (1936), *Anna Karenina* (1948), *The Fallen Idol* (1948) and *The Heiress* (1949). Among his stages successes were *Arms and the Man*, *The Heiress*, *Flowering Cherry*. He was knighted in 1947.

**Richardson, Samuel** (1689–1761). English novelist. Son of a cabinetmaker 'who understood architecture', he had a grammar school education, after which he was apprenticed to a London printer, whose daughter he married (1721). He established (1724) his own business in Salisbury Square and managed it successfully for the rest of his life. He was already 50 when at the suggestion of two friends he wrote a book of specimen letters for various occasions for the benefit of those unable to express their own thoughts. From one of these letters, 'A Father to a Daughter

in Service on hearing of her Master's attempting her Virtue', sprang *Pamela, or Virtue Rewarded* (1740), the first of three epistolary novels intended, since Richardson was primarily a moralist, 'to promote religion and virtue'. Often described as the first modern novel, *Pamela*, a hugely popular book, was followed by *Clarissa* (1747–48), a prodigious work in seven volumes where death appropriately follows a lapse from virtue. In *Sir Charles Grandison* (1753–54) the hero and heroine, their virtue proof against all trials and misfortunes, ultimately and happily unite. Richardson's influence was various and widespread. *Pamela* was parodied by \*Fielding in *Shamela* and *Joseph Andrews*, and \*Voltaire made use of it for one of his own plays; *Clarissa* was translated by the Abbé \*Prévost, and \*Diderot and \*Rousseau were among the author's fervent admirers.

Duncan Eaves, T. C. and Kimpel, B. D., *Samuel Richardson. A Biography*. 1971.

**Richelieu, Armand Jean du Plessis, Duc de** (1585–1642). French statesman and cardinal, born at Richelieu, Poitou. He was a younger son of François du Plessis, grand provost of France, and at the age of 21 was nominated Bishop of Luçon. Representing the clergy at the States-General of 1614, he made contact with the court and in 1616 was appointed Secretary of State as the protégé of Concino Concini, favourite of the Queen Mother and regent \*Marie de Médicis. Concini's assassination (1617), consented to by \*Louis XIII to assert his independence, seemed likely to end Richelieu's career but, by reconciling the king and his mother, he made himself acceptable to both. Richelieu became a cardinal in 1622, Chief Minister in 1624 and for 18 years was virtual ruler of France. He crushed the political power of the Huguenots (1625–29) by reducing the strongholds granted to them as places of refuge by \*Henri IV. La Rochelle, the most important, fell (1628) after heroically resisting a siege of 15 months, Richelieu himself ensuring the result by building a huge dyke across the harbour and so preventing relief by the English fleet. Richelieu next had to contend with attempts by the feudal nobility, aided by the king's vain and foolish brother Gaston, Duke of Orlans, to undermine his power. Plot after plot Richelieu unveiled and punished, and even overcame a desperate attempt by Marie de Médicis, now turned against him, to have her former adherent removed from office. Having created the centralised autocracy of which \*Louis XIV was to be the beneficiary, Richelieu turned to foreign affairs. The Thirty Years' War was raging and with the death of the Swedish king \*Gustaf II (1632) the Protestant cause might have foundered and France been at the mercy of Habsburg Austria had not Richelieu, Catholic cardinal though he was, stepped in with subsidy and armed forces to fill the gap. During the last two years of Richelieu's life (1640–42), Artois, Alsace and Roussillon were occupied by France. Though primarily a politician, Richelieu proved himself a discerning patron of the

arts and learning, and in 1635 founded the Académie française, his most abiding memorial. Richelieu was known as 'Eminence Rouge', his confidential agent as 'Eminence Grise' (\*Joseph, Père).

Burckhardt, C. J., *Richelieu and his Age*. 1940–70; Church, W. F., *Richelieu and Reason of State*. 1973.

**Richler, Mordecai** (1931–2001). Canadian novelist and essayist, born in Montréal. His novels include *The Apprenticeship of Duddy Kravitz* (1959, also filmed), *Cocksure* (1968), *St Urbain's Horsemen* (1971) and *Solomon Gursky was Here* (1990). He published several collections of essays and edited anthologies of humour.

**Richter, Charles Francis** (1900–1985). American seismologist. He taught at the California Institute of Technology 1927–70 and in 1935, with **Beno Gutenberg**, devised the Richter scale for the measurement of earthquakes.

**Richter, Gerhard** (1932– ). German artist, born in Dresden. Trained in a socialist realist tradition, he escaped to the West in 1961, and worked as a painter, print maker, sculptor and glass worker, in a diversity of styles, influenced by politics, history, science and music, including photorealism, abstraction and pop art. He created a magnificent stained glass window for Köln (Cologne) Cathedral (2007). His *Abstraktes Bild* sold at auction for \$US44.5 million in 2015.

**Richter, Hans** (originally János) (1843–1916). Austro-Hungarian conductor, born in Hungary. A horn and trumpet player, he became \*Wagner's assistant, conducted the first performance of *The Ring* cycle (1876) and remained at Bayreuth until 1912. He was chief conductor of the Vienna Court Opera 1880–99, the Hallé Orchestra, Manchester 1899–1911, the London Symphony Orchestra 1904–11, and premiered major works by \*Brahms, \*Bruckner and \*Elgar.

**Richter, Johann Paul Friedrich** *see* Jean Paul

**Richter, Sviatoslav** *see* Rikhter, Sviatoslav

**Richthofen, Manfred, Baron von** (1892–1918). German aviator. His exploits as a fighter pilot made him an almost legendary figure in World War I; he is said to have shot down 80 planes before being killed in action. \*Goering served in his squadron. His sister, **Frieda von Richthofen** (1881–1956), married (1914) D. H. \*Lawrence.

**Rickover, Hyman George** (1900–1986). American admiral and engineer, born in Russian Poland. He was responsible for the US Navy's nuclear submarine project, leading to the commissioning of the *Nautilus* (1954). He remained on the naval staff until the age of 82.

**Ridgway, Matthew Bunker** (1895–1993). American soldier. Much of his early service was on the staff, but in World War II he commanded a division in Sicily and Italy 1942–44, and during the liberation campaign in northern Europe 1944–45 the 18th Airborne Corps. He was GOC of the US 8th Army in Korea 1950–51 and succeeded (1951) \*MacArthur in the supreme command of UN forces. In 1952 he took over \*Eisenhower's command of NATO forces in Europe and was Chief of Staff of the US Army 1953–55.

Ridgway, M. B., *Soldier*. 1956.

**Riding, Laura** (Jackson) (1901–1992). American poet and critic, born in New York. Educated at Cornell, she worked closely with Robert \*Graves from 1926 and was a pioneer of the New Criticism.

**Ridley, Nicholas** (c.1500–1555). English Protestant martyr. A strong but unbigoted supporter of the Reformed doctrines, he became Bishop of Worcester (1547) and of London (1550). As long as \*Edward VI was alive he had a powerful influence in the Church and helped Archbishop \*Cranmer to prepare the Forty-two Articles. On the king's death he supported the cause of Lady Jane \*Grey, but when Queen \*Mary succeeded he was arrested, tried for heresy at Oxford with \*Latimer and Cranmer, and burned at the stake.

Ridley, J. G., *Life of Nicholas Ridley*. 1957.

**Riebeeck, Jan van** (c.1619?–1677). Dutch administrator. A surgeon, he was sent by the Dutch East India Company (1652) with 70 Dutch burghers to found a settlement at the Cape of Good Hope which could act as revictualling station for ships bound for the East Indies. He remained for 10 years, the settlement he started forming the nucleus of the South African Republic of today. He died in Batavia (Jakarta).

**Riefenstahl, Leni** (Helene) (1902–2003). German actor, film maker and photographer, born in Berlin. She trained as a dancer, starred in several romantic 'ice' pictures in the 1920s and directed four important films: *The Blue Light* (1932); *Victory of Faith* (1933); *Triumph of the Will*, a powerful evocation of Germany's mood at the time of \*Hitler's accession (1934); and *Olympia* 1936 (1938). Barred from film making after 1945 because of her Nazi links, she turned to photography and published three dramatic books, *The Last of the Nuba* (1973), *The People of Kau* (1976) and *Coral Gardens* (1978).

**Riel, Louis** (1844–1885). Canadian insurgent, born in Manitoba. In 1869 he led a rebellion of Métis (mixed European and Indian descent) against the introduction of settled government to Manitoba by the Dominion of Canada. The rising was easily suppressed. Riel fled to the US, then returned, was twice elected as a Dominion MP, but refused to take his seat. He lived in Montana 1879–84 and became

a US citizen. Returning to lead an uprising of Métis in Saskatchewan (March 1885), on its defeat Riel was tried for treason, convicted and hanged in Regina.

Davidson, W. M., *Louis Riel*. 1955.

**Riemann, Georg Friedrich Bernard** (1826–1866). German mathematician. He studied under \*Gauss at Göttingen, where he returned to teach (1851) and was professor of mathematics 1857–66. He put forward (1854) a system of non-Euclidean geometry that includes the idea of a finite but unbounded space capable of any number of dimensions and rejects many of the basic concepts of \*Euclid, e.g. the notion that parallel lines meet only at infinity.

**Rienzo, Cola di** (1313–1354). Italian patriot, born in Rome. Son of an innkeeper, trained as a lawyer, he looked back to the glories of the ancient republic and convinced himself that it was his destiny to restore the squalid city of his own time to its former greatness. He headed a mission (1343) to Avignon, where the papacy was installed in voluntary exile, to secure constitutional reforms from Pope Clement VI. Returning empty-handed, he succeeded by his eloquence in obtaining popular support for the revival of the Roman republic and he was proclaimed Tribune (1347). As long as he used his despotic power to maintain law and order all was well, but by stirring the people against the nobles he provoked fights and bloodshed and his pretensions to exercise the old Roman supremacy over the rest of Italy were resented. Seven months after assuming office he was forced to flee. He went to Prague (1349–50) to enlist the support of the emperor Charles IV in his plans for a revived Roman Empire. Charles sent him captive to Avignon but in 1353 Pope Innocent IV, hoping to use him to restore papal power, sent him back to Rome, where he resumed despotic rule. But now the mob turned against him, stormed the Capitol and killed their former hero. His story is told in \*Lytton's novel and \*Wagner's opera, both called *Rienzi*.

**Rifkind, Sir Malcolm Leslie** (1946– ). British Conservative politician. Educated at Edinburgh University, he was MP 1974–97, Secretary of Defence 1992–95 and Foreign Secretary 1995–97.

**Rikhter, Sviatoslav Teofilovich** (1915–1997). Russian pianist, born in Zhitomir, Ukraine. He worked in the Odessa Opera House as a répétiteur, then studied with **Heinrich Neuhaus** from 1937. He did not visit the West until 1960. He made highly praised recordings of \*Mozart, \*Beethoven, \*Chopin, \*Schubert, \*Schumann, \*Liszt, \*Mussorgsky, \*Rachmaninoff, \*Bartók, \*Prokofiev, \*Shostakovich and \*Britten.

**Riley, Bridget Louise** (1931– ). British painter, born in London. Educated at Goldsmiths' College and the Royal College of Art, she achieved international recognition from 1962. Her paintings were created within the op art tradition, depending on tension

between contrasting colours in stripes and curves, leading to an instability of focus so that the canvas seems to be in motion. She received a CH in 1999.

**Rilke, Rainer Maria** (originally René Karl Wilhelm Johan Josef Rilke) (1875–1926). Bohemian-Austrian poet, born in Prague. After his parents separated, he was unhappily educated at a military school and at Prague, Munich and Berlin universities. His earliest works were melancholy reveries. With \*Nietzsche's friend, Lou Andreas-Salomé, who became his mistress, he visited Russia 1899–1900, met \*Tolstoy and developed a mystical preoccupation with its history and religion. His poems became concerned with the interrelationship of God (identified with Life), Man and Death. He married (1901) a pupil of the French sculptor \*Rodin, and became his secretary (1905–06) and fervent admirer. Though his spiritual search continued, he learnt from Rodin the importance of form; his poems thus lost much of their vague mysticism and as his vision became more objective he directed it to more concrete themes. His novel *The Notebook of Malte Laurids Brigge* (1910) is partly autobiographical. He lived in Duino, near Trieste 1910–12. After further travels he settled in Switzerland (1919), and with the publication (1923) of the 10 *Duino Elegies* (1912–15, 1922) and the *Sonnets to Orpheus* he seemed to have found tranquillity in the cult of beauty. He was preoccupied with the 'inseparability of uniqueness and transience' in human life, and the centrality of courage, awareness and aesthetics, and is regarded as the greatest modern German poet. He died of leukaemia.

Holthusen, H. E., *Portrait of Rilke*. 1971; Prater, D., *A Ringing Glass*. 1994; Freedman, R., *Life of a Poet*. 1996; Corbett, R., *You Must Change Your Life*. 2016.

**Rimbaud, (Jean-Nicolas) Arthur** (1854–1891). French poet, born in Charleville. He reacted against the dominating puritanism of his mother and an unhappy home life by running away from home several times before settling in Paris (1870). His amazing precocity was shown in all his early pieces and especially in his *Le Bateau ivre* (*The drunken boat*) in which the rhythms and images already have the magical quality that appears in the work of the later symbolists. He lived with \*Verlaine in Paris from 1871 but the association ended abruptly when Verlaine was sent to prison for firing two shots at Rimbaud who was threatening to leave. But it was Verlaine who made Rimbaud famous with an analysis of his poems in *Les Poètes maudits* (1884). Rimbaud never knew of this. All his poems were written before he was 20, many under the deliberate stimulation of drink, drugs, or debauchery: all the fragments, *Les Déserts de l'amour* (1871), *Les Illuminations* (the basis of a song cycle by \*Britten, 1872–73), *Une Saison en enfer* (1873) are infinitely revealing of a genius in the making and the spoiling. After that he drifted round the world until, in 1883, he reached Abyssinia, where he established a harem and set himself up in trade. His account of his travels there was published in

1928. He had a working knowledge of Latin, English, Italian, Greek, German, Dutch, Russian, Arabic and Amharic. He died in hospital at Marseilles after an amputation for a tumour on the knee.

Starkie, E., *Arthur Rimbaud*. 3rd ed. 1961; Robb, G., *Rimbaud*. 2000; White, E., *Rimbaud. The Double Life of a Rebel*. 2008.

**Rimsky-Korsakov, Nikolai Andreyevich** (1844–1908). Russian composer, born in Tikhvin. Born to an aristocratic family, he became a naval officer but joined \*Balakirev's group of 'nationalist' composers known as 'the Five' (the other three being \*Borodin, \*Mussorgsky and \*Cui), who made it their rule to introduce the themes and spirit of Russian folk music into all their compositions. His first symphony (1861–65), his second (1868, twice revised and eventually published as a symphonic suite, *Antar*, in 1903), and an opera *The Maid of Pskov* (1868–72) belong to this period. The group broke up c.1870, but, as all lacked academic training, Rimsky-Korsakov was astonished to find himself appointed (1871) professor at the St Petersburg Conservatoire. He succeeded, none the less, in making himself a master of orchestration and contrapuntal technique, and, though the effects upon his work were at first devitalising, he later achieved the brilliance of *Capriccio Espagnol* (1887) and *Scheherazade* (1888). From 1888 he turned to opera but only gave of his best when he had succeeded in shedding \*Wagner's influence with such fairytale operas as *Sadko* (1894–96), *The Snow Maiden* (1880–81) and *The Golden Cockerel* (1906–07), his last work. Rimsky-Korsakov's fame rests on his outstanding gift for orchestration, which influenced \*Debussy, \*Ravel and \*Stravinsky. He revised and re-orchestrated works by other composers who lacked his technical versatility, especially Dargomyzhski's *Stone Guest*, \*Mussorgsky's *Boris Godunov* (here the original has more individuality) and \*Borodin's *Prince Igor*.

Abraham, G., *Rimsky-Korsakov: A Short Biography*. 1948.

**Rinehart, Gina** (née Georgina Hope Hancock) (1954– ). Australian mining heiress, born in Perth. Daughter of **Lang Hancock** (1909–1992), who made a fortune opening up the Pilbara, Western Australia, for iron ore mining, she became Australia's richest person, with \$AU22 billion net worth (2013), and the fourth richest woman in the world. She was a powerful advocate for conservative causes, and was strongly opposed to action on climate change.

**Ripon, 1st Earl of, Frederick John Robinson** (1782–1859). English Tory/Conservative politician. Educated at Harrow and Cambridge, he became a barrister and MP 1806–27, and held office in every Tory Government between 1809 and 1846. He introduced the Corn Laws (1815) and as Chancellor of the Exchequer 1823–27 was known as 'Prosperity Robinson' or 'Prosperity Fred'. Created

**Viscount Goderich** in 1827, on \*Canning's death he became Prime Minister briefly 1827–28 and had the unique distinction that his Ministry never met parliament. (\*Disraeli called him 'a transient and embarrassed phantom'.) His son, **George Frederick Samuel Robinson, 1st Marquess of Ripon** (1827–1909) declared himself a Christian Socialist, first held office as \*Palmerston's Undersecretary for War 1859–63 and retired as \*Campbell-Bannerman's Lord Privy Seal 1905–08. He was Grand Master of the Freemasons 1870–74, then became a Catholic. He chaired the commission that settled the 'Alabama' dispute with the US (1871) and, as \*Gladstone's Viceroy of India 1880–84, encouraged moves towards self-government.

**Ritz, César** (1850–1918). Swiss hotelier. He created Ritz Hotels in London, Paris and New York and his name became synonymous with luxury (as in the adjective 'ritzzy').

**Rivera, Diego** (1886–1957). Mexican painter. He studied in Paris where he came to know the principal Cubists and was influenced by the works of \*Gauguin. His best known works are large murals and frescoes for which he revived the encaustic methods of the ancient Maya sculptors. His themes were revolutionary episodes from history intended to promote the communist cause. His style was a composite of 'folk art', symbolism and Aztec undertones directed towards political ends. He was, for a time, obliged to leave Mexico. After his return (1935) he began to adopt surrealist techniques. His second wife was the painter Frida \*Kahlo.

Wolfe, B. D., *The Fabulous Life of Diego Rivera*. 1963.

**Rivera, Primo de** *see* **Primo de Rivera y Orbaneja, Miguel**

**Rizal** (y Mercado Alonso Realonda), **José Protasio** (1861–1896). Filipino writer and patriot, born in Manila. Of mixed Tagalog, Spanish and Chinese descent, he was trained as an ophthalmologist, with a passion for zoology, and was an accomplished poet. As a writer he aimed at fostering a desire for Filipino independence. His novels *Noli me Tangere* (1886) and *El Filibusterismo* (1891) were eloquent attacks on Spanish misrule. He founded a nationalist society, and was exiled from Manila. When the Filipino revolt of 1896 broke out Rizal was arrested in Spain, brought to Manila and executed. He is regarded as a national hero.

**Rizzio** (or Riccio), **David** (c.1533–1566). Italian musician and secretary, born near Turin. He went to Scotland (1561) and became the favourite and secretary of \*Mary Queen of Scots. His arrogant assumption of power and his personal relations with the Queen roused such anger and jealousy that \*Darnley, her husband, joined a group of nobles in a conspiracy to murder. The Queen was having supper in her room with Darnley, Rizzio and Lady

Argyll, when Lords \*Morton and Ruthven burst in and denounced the favourite. Other conspirators appeared and during the ensuing fracas Rizzio was dragged out and immediately stabbed to death.

**Robbia, Luca della** (1400–1482). Florentine sculptor. A skilled worker in bronze and silver, he is best remembered for his terracotta sculptures to which, in the manner of the Moors in Spain, white and coloured enamels were applied. The Madonna and Child 'type', which he developed, perhaps influenced \*Raphael's Florentine Madonna series. Luca's first dated and justly celebrated major work was the Cantoria or Singing Gallery for Florence Cathedral (1431–38), known for its panels of singing and dancing boys. Luca's nephew, **Andrea della Robbia** (1435–1525), his partner and less accomplished successor, is remembered for the medallions of babes in swaddling clothes on the Foundling Hospital in Florence. His sons, including **Giovanni della Robbia** (1469–1529) and **Girolamo della Robbia** (1488–1566) carried on the family workshop.

Pope-Hennessy, J., *Italian Renaissance Sculpture*. 1971.

#### **Robert I** *see* **Bruce, Robert**

**Robert II** (1316–1390). King of Scotland 1371–90. Son of Walter the Steward, his hereditary office passed to him and so made him the first king of the \*Stewart (Stuart) dynasty. His claim to the throne came through his mother Marjorie Bruce, daughter of Robert I (Robert \*Bruce) and sister of David II, for whom he acted as regent during his captivity in England.

**Robert III** (1340–1406). King of Scotland 1390–1406. Son and successor of \*Robert II, injury from the kick of a horse made him incapable of rule, and power was exercised by his brother, the Duke of Albany. Robert was succeeded by his surviving son \*James I.

**Roberts, Frederick Sleigh, 1st Earl Roberts of Kandahar, Pretoria and Waterford** (1832–1914). British field marshal, born in Cawnpore, India. Educated at Eton and Sandhurst, as a young officer in the Bengal artillery he won the VC during the Mutiny (1858). He became a national hero in the Afghan wars, when in 1880 he led an army of 10,000 men from Kabul through the mountains to the relief of Kandahar, covering a distance of 495 kilometres in 22 days and then defeating the Afghans. After brief service as commander in Natal and Transvaal (1881), he returned to India and was Commander-in-Chief 1885–93, receiving a peerage in 1892. He became Commander-in-Chief in Ireland 1895–99, and was promoted to field marshal (1895). After the serious defeats with which the Boer War opened (December 1899) Roberts was sent out as Commander-in-Chief and quickly retrieved the situation. Pretoria was captured (June 1900) and, though guerrilla warfare

continued, organised operations were at an end. On his return, he succeeded \*Wolseley as Commander-in-Chief of British Forces 1901–04, until the post was abolished. Promoted to an earldom in February 1901, he became the first recipient of the Order of Merit in June 1902. After 1904, with the threat from Germany in mind, he campaigned in vain for conscription for military service. He condoned threats by the Ulster Volunteer Force (UVF) to use force against the establishment of Home Rule in Ireland, and broke with John \*French. He died in France visiting troops in World War I. He had the longest set of post-nominal awards in British history: VC, KG, PC, KP, GCB, OM, GCSI, GCIE.

Hannah, W. H., *Bobs: Kipling's General*. 1972.

**Roberts, John Glover, Jr** (1955–). American jurist, born in Buffalo. A Harvard graduate, he was a legal administrator under \*Reagan and George H. W. \*Bush, a judge of the US Court of Appeals 2003–05, and Chief Justice of the Supreme Court 2005–.

**Roberts, Tom** (Thomas William) (1856–1931). Australian painter, born in Devon. He migrated to Melbourne in 1869 and studied art there, and in London 1881–84. He was a central figure in the Heidelberg School of painters (1887–90), with his friend Arthur \*Streeton. Apart from important portraits and landscapes, his iconic paintings include *Coming South* (1886), *Shearing the Rams* (1890), *A Break Away!* (1891), *Bailed Up* (1895) and *The Big Picture* (opening of first Commonwealth Parliament, 1903). Back in England 1903–19, 1921–23, he returned to live in Victoria, then Tasmania, where he died.

**Robertson, Pat** (Marion Gordon) (1930–). American evangelist, political activist and broadcasting executive, born in Virginia. Son of a conservative Democrat US Senator from Virginia, he became a Southern Baptist minister, founded the Christian Broadcasting Network, was a famous televangelist, sought the Republican nomination for president in 1988 and wrote 13 books.

**Robertson, William** (1721–1793). Scottish historian. A Presbyterian cleric, Principal of Edinburgh University 1762–93, he was a leading figure in the Scottish Enlightenment. His biography of \*Charles V was praised by \*Voltaire and \*Gibbon.

**Robertson, Sir William Robert, 1st Baronet** (1860–1933). English soldier, born in Lincolnshire. Son of a tailor, he was a footman in service and joined the army as a private in 1877. After long service in India, he was an intelligence officer under Lord \*Roberts in South Africa and subsequently held a succession of staff appointments until he became, on the outbreak of World War I, Quartermaster General (QMG) to the British armies in France and Chief of the Imperial

General Staff 1915–18. He commanded the armies on the Rhine 1919–20. He was the only soldier to rise from private to field marshal (1920).

Robertson, W. R., *From Private to Field-marshal*. 1921.

**Robeson, Paul Le Roy** (1898–1976). American singer and actor, born in Princeton. Son of a runaway slave who became a Methodist minister, he became an All-American footballer and studied arts and law at Rutgers and Columbia Universities. He appeared as Brutus Jones in Eugene O'Neill's *The Emperor Jones* in New York (1923), London (1925) and in the film (1933) and was a notable Othello (1930, 1943–45, 1959). He achieved his greatest success with the song 'Ol' man river' in *Showboat* and as Bosambo in *Sanders of the River* and his resonant bass voice was memorable in African-American spirituals and worksongs. He visited the USSR for concert tours and was blacklisted during the 'cold war' for his advocacy of black rights, the peace movement and other radical causes. He lived in England 1958–63, toured Australia in 1960 and was an outspoken advocate for Indigenous rights. He suffered from depression, attempting suicide several times, then returned to the US. He died in Philadelphia.

Duberman, M. B., *Paul Robeson* 1989; Sparrow, J., *No Way But This. In Search of Paul Robeson*. 2018.

**Robespierre, Maximilien François Marie Isidore de** (1758–1794). French Revolutionary leader, born at Arras. Orphaned at 7 and brought up (with his brother Augustin) by maiden aunts, he was a leading lawyer, judge and littérateur in Arras until elected (1789) to the Estates-General, soon renamed the National Assembly. At first little known, he spoke 500 times in the National Assembly—nearly every sitting day. In 1791, having moved to Paris, he was elected to the Paris Commune and consolidated his great support among the Jacobin clubs. His rigidity and honesty earned him Marat's description as 'incorruptible' ('the seagreen Incorruptible' in Carlyle's famous phrase), but it was by his speeches and his gift for putting into words what others were feeling that he gradually gained ascendancy in the Jacobin Club, the meeting place of the extreme republicans encouraged and supported by the Paris mob. As leader of the left Jacobins, he made 100 speeches in Paris between September 1791 and August 1792. He opposed declaration of war on Austria (April 1792) bitterly—and predicted its outcome. He was elected as the first of Paris' 24 delegates to the Convention in September 1792. He proposed and secured the passage of the 1793 Constitution, modelled along the ideas of his idol J. J. Rousseau. In July 1793 the murder of Marat contributed to the proscription of the Gironde and the election of Robespierre to the Committee of Public Safety, where he served from 27 July 1793 to 26 July 1794. This was his first exercise of power, more as a resident conscience than a minister. He called for a regime based on 'virtue without which terror is baneful, terror without which

virtue is powerless' and purged the Convention of 'ultra-revolutionaries' such as Hebert (March 1794) and moderate 'indulgents' led by Danton (April 1794). He introduced the 'Maximum', rigorous government control of the economy, and planned what was virtually a welfare state. He proposed a state cult based on Rousseau's 'civil religion', seeing this as a compromise between atheism and Catholicism. His great day of triumph, presiding at the 'Festival of the Supreme Being' (8 June), marked the beginning of a conspiracy against him by Tallien, Fouché and Barras, corrupt men who feared for their own lives as the Reign of Terror increased in intensity. The battle of Fleurus (June 1794) confirmed that the Committee of Public Safety had placed France militarily in the ascendant, thus removing the main justification of Terror. A scene was staged in the Convention 27 July (9 Thermidor in the Revolutionary calendar) during which Robespierre was denounced and arrested. Next day, after rescue and recapture he was guillotined without trial with 21 other leaders of the Terror. The historians Mathiez and Lefebvre have gone far towards rehabilitating his reputation as a sanctimonious butcher and Crane Brinton has suggested that he was best explained as essentially a religious figure, pledged to destroy corruption and error. Nevertheless he was a flawed character, cold, remote and inflexible. He was a bachelor and owned poodles.

Rudé, G., *Robespierre: Portrait of a Revolutionary Democrat*. 1985; Jordan, D., *The Revolutionary Career of Maximilien Robespierre*. 1985; McPhee, P., *Robespierre. A Revolutionary Life*. 2011.

**Robey, Sir George** (né George George Edward Wade) (1869–1954). English music-hall comedian. Educated in Germany, he was a clerk who played in amateur theatre, made his professional debut in London (1891), and soon being known as 'the Prime Minister of Mirth'. In World War I he had a triumphant success in the revue *The Bing Boys are Here*. In 1935 he played Falstaff on stage in *Henry IV* Part I and repeated it in Olivier's film *Henry V* (1944).

**Robin Hood**. Legendary English folk-hero, probably based on a bandit-rebel active during the reign of Richard I (1189–99). Robin originally in all probability a hero of oral folktales, appears first 'formally' in the 14th-century poems *Piers Plowman*, but popularity was mainly stimulated by 15th-century ballads. These depict him living in Sherwood Forest as the leader of a gang of outlaws, an expert archer and champion of the poor, particularly active against the injustices and extortions of the Sheriff of Nottingham.

Oman, C., *Robin Hood*. 1973.

**Robinson, Edwin Arlington** (1869–1935). American poet, born in Maine. Educated at Harvard, he lived in poverty until Theodore Roosevelt gave him a post in the New York Custom House (1905). He published 26 volumes of epigrammatical and conversational verse in strict classical forms. His best



known poem is *Miniver Cheevy*, from *The Town Down the River* (1910). He sees man as a creature trapped between his animal and spiritual natures and in each he studies 'the small Satanic king': the poet is 'the modern man seeking light in a dark universe'. He wrote a pessimistic Arthurian trilogy in blank verse, *Merlin* (1917), *Lancelot* (1920) and *Tristram* (1927). He won the Pulitzer Prize three times and had four nominations for the Nobel Prize.

**Robinson, (William) Heath** (1872–1944). English illustrator and comic artist. He was best known for his drawings of weird elaborate machines for performing elementary operations.

**Robinson, Jackie** (John Roosevelt Robinson) (1919–1972). American baseball player, born in Georgia. In 1947 he became the first African-American in a major baseball team (Brooklyn Dodgers), stoically resisted racist attacks and was an important role model.

**Robinson, Joan Violet** (née Maurice) (1903–1983). English economist. Educated at St Paul's Girls' School, London and Girton College, Cambridge, she lectured in economics at Cambridge from 1931 and was a professor 1965–71. She worked with J. M. Keynes in the 1930s and wrote several lucid textbooks including three volumes of *Economic Papers* (1951, 1960, 1965).

**Robinson, Sir Ken** (neth) (1950–2020). English educator, born in Liverpool. He studied at Leeds and London universities and was professor of arts education at Warwick 1989–2001. He chaired a UK commission on creativity, education, and the economy (1998) and the report, *All Our Futures: Creativity, Culture, and Education* proposed radical changes in education, with heavy emphasis on the arts and creativity. He became an influential speaker in TED conferences (Harold Kroto).

**Robinson, Mary** (1758–1800). English actor. Known as 'Perdita' from her role in Shakespeare's *The Winter's Tale*, she played at Drury Lane (1776–80) and became (1779) the mistress of the Prince of Wales (\*George IV). She wrote poetry, plays and novels, but despite a pension, she died in poverty.

**Robinson, Mary Therese Winifred** (née Bourke) (1944–). Irish politician, born in Dublin. Educated at Trinity College, Dublin, and at Harvard, she became a lawyer, married a Protestant, joined the Labour Party, taught at Trinity and was active in the International Commission of Jurists. As a senator 1969–89, she was an ardent advocate of women's rights. In November 1990 she was elected as President of Ireland with 53 per cent of the votes, defeating the government's candidate. She resigned to become United Nations Commissioner for Human Rights 1997–.

**Robinson, Sir Robert** (1886–1975). English organic chemist. Educated at Manchester, he held chairs at Sydney, Liverpool, St Andrews, Manchester and

London before becoming Waynflete professor of organic chemistry at Oxford (1930–55), where he headed a team investigating the chemistry of penicillin. His researches into organic chemistry were mainly in the fields of the alkaloids, plant pigments and phenanthrene derivatives. Knighted in 1939, he was President of the Royal Society 1945–50, won the Nobel Prize for Chemistry (1947) and received the Order of Merit in 1949.

**Rob Roy** ('Red Robert'; Robert Roy MacGregor, in Gaelic: Raibeart Ruadh MacGriogair) (1671–1734). Scottish outlaw. A grazier on the braes of Balquhider (where he is buried) in southwest Scotland, he maintained an armed band for the protection of his flocks and those of his neighbours as well as for purposes of his own. His exploits, real and legendary, earned him the reputation of a Scottish Robin Hood, robbing the rich for the benefit of the poor, while at the same time pursuing a personal vendetta against the Duke of Montrose.

**Roberts, Amy** (1532–1560). English noble woman. First wife of Robert Dudley, later Earl of Leicester, she became estranged, and died of a broken neck at the foot of the stairs at Cumnor Place, Berkshire. This aroused suspicions that she had been killed on her husband's order (with or without Elizabeth's most improbable connivance), to enable him to pursue his ambition to marry the queen. Her story forms the basis for Sir Walter Scott's *Kenilworth*.

**Robson, Dame Flora McKenzie** (1902–1984). English actor. She made her debut in 1921 and played her first season at the Old Vic Theatre, London, in 1934, after which she appeared frequently in London, on tour and in New York in an unusually wide variety of classical and contemporary plays. Her first film was Korda's *Catherine the Great* (1934). She was made DBE in 1960.

Dunbar, J., *Flora Robson*. 1960.

**Rocard, Michel Louis Lon** (1930–2016). French Socialist politician. Son of a physicist, educated at the University of Paris and the École Nationale d'Administration (ENA), he became an inspector general of finances and stood in 1969 as a presidential candidate for the Parti Socialiste Unifié (PSU), which later merged with Mitterrand's Socialists. He was Minister for Planning 1981–83, for Agriculture 1983–85 and Prime Minister 1988–91 and had a poisonous relationship with Mitterrand. With Bob Hawke and Jacques Yves Cousteau, he played a central role in organising a 50-year moratorium (1991) against mineral exploration in Antarctica. He was Leader of the Socialist Party 1993–94.

**Rocheffoucauld, Duc de la** see **La Rocheffoucauld, Duc de**

**Rochester, John Wilmot, 2nd Earl of** (1647–1680). English poet and courtier. Son of a Royalist general ennobled by \*Charles I, he was one of the profligate wits who attended the court of \*Charles II, of whom he wrote 'He never said a foolish thing, Nor ever did a wise one'. An exaggerated reputation of being a debaucher overshadowed his achievements as a poet. Some of his lyrics are exquisite expressions of tender feeling, and his *Satire Against Mankind* (1675) sparkles with devastating, sometimes pornographic, wit. Bishop \*Burnet described his deathbed repentance.

de Sola Pinto, V. (ed.), *Poems by John Wilmot, Earl of Rochester*. 1964.

**Rockefeller, John Davison, Sr** (1839–1937). American industrialist and financier, born in Richford, New York. The son of a farmer and patent medicine salesman (who later disappeared), his family moved to Cleveland, Ohio in 1853 and he left school at 16. He progressed from bookkeeper to oil well owner in the young oil industry (1862) and in Ohio founded (1870) the Standard Oil Company. This, by 1878, controlled 98 per cent of the American oil industry. In 1892 the monopoly was broken by court order, but he continued to dominate the industry through a holding company (Standard Oil of New Jersey) until he retired in 1911. He gave over \$550 million to charity, founded Chicago University and the Rockefeller Institute of Medical Research and was reputed to be the richest man in the world. He founded (1931) Rockefeller Center, New York, the largest non-governmental building so far built. His son **John Davison Rockefeller, Jr** (1874–1960) was an active philanthropist and gave the United Nations the site on which it stands (East River, New York) and his son, **Nelson Aldrich Rockefeller** (1908–1979), was Assistant Secretary of State for Latin American Affairs 1944–45 and Undersecretary of State for Health and Public Welfare 1953–54. He was Governor of New York State 1959–73, being the only Republican to score a major victory in 1958. He campaigned as a liberal for the Republican presidential nomination in 1960, 1964 and 1968. Under Gerald \*Ford he was appointed as Vice President of the US 1974–77. He was a notable patron and promoter of ethnographic and modern art.

Collier, P. and Horowitz, D., *The Rockefellers*. 1976.

**Rockingham, Charles Watson Wentworth, 2nd Marquess of** (1730–1782). English politician. A member of the same family as \*Charles I's famous minister \*Strafford, he led the main body of the Whigs after the retirement of \*Newcastle, but he had too many outside interests (including the turf) and too little force of character to be a great leader. He favoured the conciliation of the American colonists and was Prime Minister 1765–66 in the government that repealed the Stamp Act. Prime Minister again March–July 1782, he died in office. He owed many of his political ideas to \*Burke, his private secretary (1765).

**Rodgers, Richard** (1902–1979). American composer. He wrote musical comedies in collaboration with the librettists **Lorenz Hart** (1919–42) and **Oscar Hammerstein** (1942–60). Among the many successes for which he wrote the music are *Pal Joey*, *Oklahoma*, *South Pacific*, *The King and I* and *The Sound of Music*.

**Rodin, (François) Auguste (René)** (1840–1917). French sculptor, born in Paris. He began his art training at the age of 14 but was slow to mature. During a visit to Italy (1875) he was influenced by \*Donatello and \*Michelangelo, while a tour of French cathedrals (1877), about which he wrote a book, led him to call himself a latter-day Gothic artist. This was true only in the sense that he eschewed the plastic smoothness of the antique and expressed spiritual and emotional stresses through the effect of light and shade on roughened surfaces. After his tour he settled at Meudon near Paris and lived there or in Paris itself for the rest of his life. His most famous works include *Danaïde* (1884–85), *The Burghers of Calais* (1884–95), *The Kiss* (1898) and *The Thinker* (1904), the last two intended as part of a vast work *The Gate of Hell* (186 figures), inspired by \*Dante's *Divine Comedy*, which preoccupied him from 1880. His love affairs with Camille \*Claudel and Gwen \*John caused lasting damage to both women. Politically, he was a conservative and a moderate anti-Dreyfusard. The poet \*Rilke was his secretary 1905–06. Rodin did many sculptures, both busts and full length, of famous subjects e.g. \*Balzac, \*Hugo, \*Baudelaire, \*Mahler, \*Clemenceau, Bernard \*Shaw. In 1914 he presented 18 pieces from his London exhibition to Britain in gratitude for its support of France in World War I. He gave the remainder of his unsold works to France and they are now displayed in the Rodin Museum, Paris. In January 1917 he married Rose Beuret, his long term mistress. She died three weeks later.

Chabrun, J. F. and Descharnes, R., *Auguste Rodin*. 1967; Butler, R., *Rodin: The Shape of Genius*. 1993.

**Rodney, George Brydges Rodney, 1st Baron** (1719–1792). British admiral. He served as Governor and Commander-in-Chief in Newfoundland 1748–52, and in the Seven Years' War (1756–63) destroyed the flat-bottomed boats assembled in Le Havre for the invasion of England (1759) and captured Martinique, Grenada and St Lucia (1761). He defeated the Spanish 1779–82 and gained a great victory (the Battle of the Saints) over the French in 1782. A domineering character, Rodney made many enemies, in and out of the navy.

Spinney, D., *Rodney*. 1969.

**Rodrigo, Joaquín** (1902–1999). Spanish composer. Blind from the age of three, caused by diphtheria, he studied with \*Dukas in Paris and was influenced by \*Satie, \*Debussy and Spanish folk music. His *Concierto de Aranjuez* for guitar and orchestra

(1939) is the most popular ever written. He also wrote *Concierto andaluz* for four guitars (1967) and a large amount of piano and vocal music.

**Roebuck, John** (1718–1794). English inventor. He devised (1749) the first commercially practicable method of producing sulphuric acid, and set up (1762) a factory for converting pig iron to malleable iron by means of a blast furnace. He collaborated with \*Watt in producing the steam engine.

**Roemer, Olaus** (1644–1710). Danish astronomer, born in Jutland. He went to Paris (1671) and, working with Picard at the Observatory there, achieved his best known discovery (1675), that the velocity of light is finite, which he deduced from the fact that the observed time of eclipses on one of the satellites of Jupiter varied with the planet's distance from earth. He returned to Denmark (1681) and was professor of astronomy at Copenhagen 1685–1710 and mayor of the city 1705–10.

**Roentgen** *see* **Röntgen, Wilhelm Konrad**

**Roger I** (1031–1101). Norman ruler. Count of Sicily 1072–1101. Son of Tancred of Hauteville, he joined his brother the adventurer Robert \*Guiscard, in an enterprise by which much of southern Italy as well as Sicily was conquered. Left to rule Sicily, he showed great administrative gifts which enabled him to leave his successor a united state. His second son, **Roger II** (1097–1154), who succeeded (1105) his brother, united the Norman conquests into a single kingdom of Sicily, Calabria and Apulia (with Naples and Capua also included). Though the Pope and Emperor temporarily combined against him, he extended his absolute rule over Malta and the African coast from Tripoli to Tunis. His Sicilian capital, Palermo, embellished with buildings in a blend of Romanesque and Saracenic styles, became a great meeting place for scholars from the Greek and Arab worlds.

Norwich, J. J., *The Normans in the South*. 1967; Norwich, J. J., *The Kingdom in the Sun 1130–94*. 1970.

**Rogers, Richard George, Baron Rogers of Riverside** (1933–2021). English architect, born in Florence. Educated at London University and Yale, in 1971 he won the design competition for the Pompidou Centre (Beaubourg) in Paris with Renzo \*Piano. He was also architect for the rebuilding of Lloyds of London, redevelopment of the London Docks, the European Court of Human Rights, Strasbourg, the Inmos factory, Gwent, the Music Research Centre, Paris, and other major projects in Tokyo, Berlin, Florence, Princeton and Quimper. He designed the controversial Millennium Dome at Greenwich. He received the CH in 2008.

Appleyard, B., *Richard Rogers*. 1986.

**Rogers, Will**(iam Penn Adair) (1879–1935). American actor and humorist, born in Oklahoma of Indian descent. His cowboy act in vaudeville,

with its shrewd and homely monologues filled with sharp criticisms of manners and politics, achieved enormous success. Films, newspapers and books, e.g. *Illiterate Digest* (1924), provided him with further outlets. He was killed in a plane crash with the aviator **Wiley Post**.

**Roget, Peter Mark** (1779–1869). English physician, inventor and lexicographer. His work on the slide-rule earned him his FRS, and his investigations into 'persistence of vision' suggested the possibilities of cinematography, but he is best remembered for his *Thesaurus of English Words and Phrases* (1852).

**Rogier van der Weyden** *see* **Weyden, Rogier van der**

**Röhm, Ernst** (1887–1934). German Nazi politician. A professional soldier, he joined the National Socialists before \*Hitler, and with \*Goering founded the *Sturm Abteilungen* (SA: Storm Troops or 'Brownshirts'), a semi-military organisation. He was a military instructor in Bolivia 1928–30. After 1933, in Germany, the SA became a huge auxiliary police force, a potential rival to state power. As leader of the SA, Röhm was a potential threat to Hitler, and on 30 June 1934, 'the Night of the Long Knives', he was murdered with about 180 others and denounced as a vicious sexual pervert.

**Roh Tae-woo** (1932– ). Korean soldier and politician. He served in the army of the Republic of Korea until 1981, becoming a four-star general, then entered politics. He was Foreign Minister 1981–82 and Minister for Home Affairs and Sport 1982–88, with responsibility for organising the successful Olympics in Seoul (1988). Elected as President in 1988 as a candidate of the Democratic Justice Party, he served until 1993 after the democratic election of his successor \*Kim Young Sam. In 1996, with \*Chun Doo Hwan, he was tried for mutiny and sedition, sentenced to 22 years' imprisonment but amnestied in 1997.

**Rokitansky, Karl** (1804–1878). Austrian pathologist, born in Bohemia. He studied medicine at Prague and later Vienna, where he graduated in 1828. From an early stage he specialised in pathology. His first post was in the pathological department of the Vienna Hospital and he became associate and full professor (1834 and 1844) at the university. Together with a small number of assistants, Rokitansky devoted his time entirely to autopsies, insisted upon making the fullest case histories and claimed to have performed 30,000 autopsies between 1827 and 1866. The results of his research were set down in his *Handbook of Pathological Anatomy* of 1846. This work revealed unrivalled knowledge of abnormalities. Rokitansky, in particular, worked out the various forms of pneumonia and enumerated their symptoms, studied the atrophy of the liver, was an expert on gastric diseases, and wrote a famous book on the diseases of the artery.

**Rokossovsky, Konstantin Konstantinovich** (1896–1968). Russian marshal. A major in World War I, he joined the Red Army (1919). In World War II a brilliant turning movement carried out before Moscow (1941) brought him immediate fame. He fought outside Stalingrad (Volgograd), in White Russia and in Poland, where his orders did not include aid to the Warsaw insurrection (1944). In the spring of 1945 he invaded East Prussia and, marching to the north of \*Zhukov's Berlin army, met the British near Lübeck. He was imposed on Poland as Minister of Defence 1949–56.

**Roland** (Old Frankish: Hrōþiland; Italian: Orlando or Rolando) (d. 778). Frankish soldier and hero. He defended \*Charlemagne's domain (Francia) against the Bretons. Killed fighting Basques at Roncevaux Pass in the Pyrenees, he was celebrated in the 11th-century *Chanson de Roland*, \*Ariosto's *Orlando Furioso*, and the operas *Roland* by \*Lully and *Orlando* by \*Händel.

**Roland** (de La Platière), **Jean Marie** (1734–1793). French Girondin politician. An administrator and industrialist in Amiens, he became a leader of the Girondin faction and Minister for the Interior 1792 and 1792–93. His wife **Jeanne-Marie Manon Roland** (née Phlipon) (1754–1793) ran a celebrated Parisian salon for the Girondins and dominated her husband. On the fall of the Girondins, Roland escaped but his wife was imprisoned, then executed. Roland committed suicide.

**Rolfe, Frederick William** (known as **Baron Corvo**, or **Fr Rolfe**) (1860–1913). English novelist and eccentric, born in London. A schoolteacher, with a deep knowledge of history and art, but bitter and isolated, he became a Catholic convert and a rejected applicant for the priesthood, probably because of his homosexuality. He dramatised his experience in his novel *Hadrian the Seventh* (1903), where George Arthur Rose, similarly rejected but then admitted as priest, is unexpectedly elected Pope and proceeds to transform the Church before dying as a martyr. *Hadrian* was later dramatised and also filmed. A morose and embittered drifter, Rolfe lived as a remittance man in Venice, where he died, using the title Baron Corvo. Other novels include *Don Tarquinio* (1905) and *The Desire and Pursuit of the Whole* (1909, published 1934).

Symons, A. J. A., *The Quest for Corvo*. 1934; Woolf, C. and Sewell, B. (eds), *New Quests for Corvo*. 1965.

**Rolland, Romain Edmé Paul Emile** (1866–1944). French novelist, biographer and essayist. After studying archaeology and history in Rome he gained his doctorate (1895) at the Sorbonne in Paris with a thesis on the early history of music, and returned there to teach musical history (1904–10). His early plays, e.g. *Danton* (1900), lacked distinction, and he first achieved success with lives of \*Beethoven (1903), \*Michelangelo (1906) and \*Tolstoy (1911). His

major work of this period was the huge novel *Jean Christophe* (10 volumes, 1904–12), which describes the life of a musical genius in a world of mediocrity. As a pacifist opponent of World War I, he lived in Switzerland from 1914 where he wrote *Au dessus de la mêlée* (1915). He won the Nobel Prize for Literature (1915). Between the wars he wrote another long novel *L'Âme enchantée* (7 volumes, 1922–33) and showed a lively interest in the nonviolent campaign in India by lives of \*Gandhi (1924) and \*Ramakrishna (1930). Growing Communist sympathies took him to Russia, where he spent some months with his friend Maksim \*Gorki, but he modified his pacifist attitude as the Fascist-Nazi threat developed. His later works include *Parla Révolution la paix* (1935). He returned to France in 1938 and offered his full support to the Allies. He died in Vézelay.

Barrere, J. B., *Romain Rolland. L'âme et l'art*. 1966.

**Rollo** (or **Gaange Rolf**) (c.846–c.930AD). Viking/Norman warrior. Of Danish or Norwegian origin, he invaded northern France, seized Rouen in 876, and became Duke of Normandy in 911. \*William the Conqueror was his great-great-grandson.

**Rolls, Charles Stewart** (1877–1910). English aviator and motor manufacturer. A son of Lord Llangattock, he was a pioneer of motoring and aviation. With F. H. \*Royce he founded (1906) the Rolls-Royce Company. He made a two-way cross-channel flight (1910), and he died in a flying accident.

Georgano, G. N. (ed.), *The Complete Encyclopaedia of Motorcars, 1885–1968*. 1968.

**Rolph, C H** (né Cecil Rolph Hewitt) (1901–1994). English sociologist. After serving in the City of London Police 1921–46, rising to Chief Inspector, he joined the editorial staff of the *New Statesman* 1947–70 and became an exceptionally powerful advocate of police reform, abolition of the death penalty and censorship. His books included *The Trial of Lady Chatterley* (1961), *Hanged by the Neck* (with Arthur \*Koestler) and *Law and the Common Man* (1967).

**Romains, Jules** (pen name of Louis-Henri-Jean Farigoule) (1885–1972). French novelist, dramatist and poet. He taught philosophy in French universities, and wrote plays, e.g. *Knock* (1923), poetry and novels. He evolved the literary theory of 'unanisme' an attempt to convey the collective spirit of a city or locality. His major work is the novel sequence known as *Les Hommes de bonne volonté* (27 volumes, 1932–46), a vivid panorama of French life between 1908 and 1933, collectively the longest novel ever published. He lived in the US 1940–45 and was elected to the Académie française in 1946.

**Romano, Giulio** *see* **Giulio Romano**

**Romanov**. Russian dynasty that ruled from 1613 when \*Mikhail Romanov was chosen as Tsar; it included \*Peter (Pyotr) the Great. The direct male

line of descent ended with the death of \*Elizabeth (Yelizaveta) in 1762. \*Peter III, from the \*Oldenburg dynasty, succeeded but adopted the Romanov name, which was used by tsars until \*Nikolai II abdicated after the 1917 Revolution.

Kluchevsky, V., *The Rise of the Romanovs*. 1970.

**Romberg, Sigmund** (1887–1951). American composer, born in Hungary. He composed over 70 operettas including such great successes as *The Student Prince* (1924) and *The Desert Song* (1926).

**Romero y Galdámez, St Óscar Arnulfo** (1917–1980). Salvadorian prelate. Originally a social conservative, close to Opus Dei, he was Archbishop of San Salvador 1977–80, then denounced the use of terror and assassination and failure to relieve poverty. Killed by a gunman after saying Mass, Pope \*Francis took up his cause, resulting in his beatification (2015) and canonisation (2018).

**Romilly, Sir Samuel** (1757–1818). English lawyer. He had already achieved success at the bar, mainly in chancery practice, when his able pamphlet *Thoughts on the probable Influence of the French Revolution on Great Britain* (1790) attracted controversy. Solicitor-General 1806–07, and MP 1806–07, 1808–18, he devoted himself to the reform of the criminal law and especially into reducing the number of offences, then some 200, punishable by death. Bill after bill he presented but the results of his perseverance were seen only after his death. He joined the anti-slavery movement and firmly opposed all arbitrary acts (e.g. suspension of Habeas Corpus) by the government. He committed suicide three days after his wife's death.

**Rommel, Erwin** (1891–1944). German field marshal. He gained the highest decoration for valour in World War I and in 1933 joined the Nazi party. In World War II he commanded an armoured division in France (1940) and in 1941 was given command of the Afrika Korps sent to rescue the Italians in Libya. This he built up with astonishing speed into a powerful instrument of attack and counter-attack and became known as 'the Desert Fox'. In July 1942 he drove the British back into Africa as far as El Alamein, but \*Auchinleck prevented the Germans from racing on to Alexandria. In October, when Rommel was in Berlin, \*Montgomery, with superior forces, won the second Battle of El Alamein, one of World War II's turning points. This offensive eventually drove Rommel's forces westward across the Continent into Tunisia, where the German armies finally surrendered. Before this Rommel had been recalled; later he fought in Italy and in 1944 was given command of an army group resisting the Allied invasion of northern France. In July he was seriously wounded when his car was attacked by a British fighter plane. Following the attempted bomb plot on \*Hitler (July 1944), Rommel was suspected of complicity and forced to commit suicide (October).

Douglas-Home, C., *Rommel*. 1973.

**Romney, George** (1734–1802). English portrait-painter, born in Lancashire. Son of a carpenter, he learnt to draw mainly from copying, but when he went to London (1762) he soon achieved considerable success. He paid his first visit to Paris in 1764 and the delicacy and charm then fashionable there is evident in his work. After a time he ceased to exhibit his pictures and so never became an RA. However, he had no difficulty in attracting sitters especially women, to whose portraits his style with its clean brushwork and clear light colouring was particularly adapted, whereas his drawing and composition were noticeably weak. In 1782 he met and became infatuated with Emma Hart, afterwards Lady \*Hamilton, of whom he painted portrait after portrait, many in the theatrical poses in which she took delight. In later life he developed melancholia and lived as a recluse. He was one of the most esteemed English portrait painters of the 18th century, although artistically excelled by \*Gainsborough and \*Reynolds.

**Romney, (Willard) Mitt** (1947– ). American businessman and Republican politician, born in Detroit. His father, **George W(ilcken) Romney** (1907–1995), headed American Motors 1954–62, serving as Governor of Michigan 1963–69, was a presidential aspirant in 1968 and became \*Nixon's Secretary for Housing and Urban Development 1969–73. Mitt Romney was a Mormon missionary in France 1966–68), gained a Harvard MBA, and was a principal of the venture capital firm Bain & Co from 1984. A moderately progressive Governor of Massachusetts 2003–07, he sought the Republican nomination for president in 2008, gained it in 2012, but lost to Barack \*Obama after having to appeal to support from conservative ideologists in his party. A critic of \*Trump, he was elected US Senator from Utah 2019–. In Donald \*Trump's impeachment trial, Romney voted to convict on the first count (February 2020).

**Romulus Augustulus** (d. after 476). Roman usurper. Sometimes called the last Roman emperor of the West 475–76, this description is a historical convenience, with no constitutional justification and would have surprised his contemporaries. Romulus was a usurper set upon the throne by his father, a rebel general, the patrician Orestes. Almost immediately the German mercenaries rose against him and their leader \*Odovacar (or Odoacer) killed Orestes, contemptuously spared Romulus' life and proclaimed himself King of Italy. The Roman Empire reverted to its original constitutional form with a single ruler, now resident in Constantinople. A century later \*Justinian reasserted the imperial power.

**Ronsard, Pierre de** (1524–1585). French poet, born in Couture-sur-Loir. Son of a courtier of noble family, his boyhood was spent as a page in the royal service. He accompanied \*James V and his bride, Marie de Lorraine, to Scotland where he stayed for three years. In 1540 illness and deafness forced him to give up his career at court and after his father's death (1544) he

went to Paris. Here he became the centre of a small group of poets (later called the Pléiade) whose aim was to improve French poetry by a close study of Greek, Latin and Italian verse, and by the introduction of new words and forms, e.g. the Petrarchan sonnet. The final test should be as for music, that of the ear. Five books of Ronsard's *Odes* were published in 1550–52 and the *Amours*, sonnets addressed to his mistresses, first appeared in 1552. \*Henri II made him court poet (1554), an office he retained under \*François II and \*Charles IX. The first collected edition of his poems appeared in 1560, and was constantly enlarged until his death, that of 1578 containing the *Sonnets to Hélène de Surgres*. In addition he wrote political poems, e.g. *Remonstrance au peuple de France* (1562), which reveal his patriotism, and the ambitious, disappointing and unfinished epic *Le Franciade* (1572). Ronsard has been described as the 'prince of poets and poet of princes'.

Armstrong, E., *Ronsard and the Age of Gold*. 1968.

**Röntgen, Wilhelm Konrad** (1845–1923). German physicist, born in Lennep. Educated in Utrecht and at the Zürich Technical School, he became professor of physics at Strasbourg 1876–79, Giessen 1879–88, Würzburg 1888–94 and Munich 1900–20, and rector of the university of Würzburg 1894–1900. The discoverer of X-rays (X = unknown, also called Röntgen rays) in 1895, he found that when a high-voltage direct current is applied to a discharge tube containing a rarefied gas the resulting stream of electrons from the cathode, if made to bombard a metal target anode, will produce invisible rays capable of passing through many opaque substances. He also made notable contributions to other branches of physics and won the first Nobel Prize for Physics (1901).

**Rooke, Sir George** (1650–1709). English sailor. He played a distinguished part at Cape La Hogue (1692), the anchorage where 12 French warships taking refuge after their defeat off Cape Harfleur (as well as many troopships and storeships assembled for an invasion of England to restore \*James II to the throne) were destroyed. As a reward Rooke was promoted to be Vice Admiral and knighted. Among other important successes was his capture of Gibraltar (1704) with Sir Cloudisley \*Shovell.

**Roos, Albrecht Theodor Emil, Graf von** (1803–1879). German field marshal. After long service on the staff he was Prussian Minister of War 1859–71 and effected the military reorganisation that enabled victory in the Austro-Prussian War (1866) and the Franco-Prussian War 1870–71 to be achieved with such remarkable speed and success.

**Rooney, Mickey** (né Joe Yule, Jr) (1920–2014). American actor. On the stage from infancy, he made his film debut in 1926 and appeared in 140 movies. He was a memorable Puck in *Midsummer Night's Dream* (1935), starred in 15 Andy Hardy films,

and as *Huckleberry Finn* (1939). He became a fine character actor and starred in the Broadway musical *Sugar Babies*.

**Roosevelt, (Anna) Eleanor** (née Roosevelt) (1884–1962). American social worker and journalist. A niece of Theodore \*Roosevelt, she married her cousin Franklin D. \*Roosevelt in 1905 and, although personally estranged from 1918, campaigned hard for him and was a strong liberal influence in the White House. She wrote an influential newspaper column, *My Day*. She remained a popular figure after FDR's death, attended the first United Nations Assembly as a US delegate, and served on the United Nations Commission on Human Rights 1946–53.

Lash, J., *Eleanor and Franklin Roosevelt*. 1974; Rowley, H., *Franklin & Eleanor: An Extraordinary Marriage*. 2011.

**Roosevelt, Franklin D**(elano) ('FDR') (1882–1945). 32nd President of the US 1933–45. Born at Hyde Park, New York, into a distinguished family of Dutch descent he was the only child of **James Roosevelt** (1828–1900) and **Sara Delano** (1854–1941). Educated at home, he briefly attended schools in Germany and Switzerland (1891), entered Groton in 1896, then Harvard and Columbia, where he was only a moderate student. Having already married Eleanor \*Roosevelt (niece of Theodore) in 1905, he joined a New York firm of lawyers. His branch of the family were Democrats and as an opponent of Tammany Hall, the corrupt party machine, he won election as a N.Y. State Senator 1911–13. He supported Woodrow \*Wilson in 1912, and was appointed Assistant Secretary of the Navy 1913–20. James M. \*Cox won the presidential nomination in 1920 and Roosevelt was the vice presidential candidate. They were heavily defeated by \*Harding and \*Coolidge. In August 1921 at Campobello Island, New Brunswick, he was afflicted with poliomyelitis (or possibly Guillain-Barré syndrome (GBS), only identified in 1916), which left him permanently paralysed: he needed assistance to walk with crutches and was later confined to a wheelchair. In 1922 he returned to work in law, banking and insurance. With the support of his wife, a devoted personal staff (notably his secretary Louis Howe) and a strong political network, he developed a new maturity and toughness. He supported Al \*Smith's unsuccessful campaign for the presidential nomination in 1924. He wrote Smith's campaign biography *The Happy Warrior*, when he became the Democratic candidate in 1928 but lost to \*Hoover. However, FDR was elected Governor of New York State, serving 1929–33. The onset of the Great Depression in 1929 limited his scope as a social reformer but he won re-election in 1930 with a large majority.

At the Democratic National Convention in Chicago in June 1932, he defeated Smith and John N. \*Garner of Texas to win the presidential nomination on the fourth ballot, with the support of W. R. \*Hearst,

and named Garner as candidate for Vice President. He flew to Chicago (an unprecedented gesture) to accept nomination and pledged a 'New Deal' for the American people. (Smith was a deeply resentful loser.) Hoover, frustrated by the Depression and 25 per cent unemployment, suffered a humiliating defeat. Roosevelt won 57 per cent of the vote (a popular majority of over 7,000,000 votes), carrying 42 of 48 states. After a short hesitation, he created a team of economic and social advisors, known as the 'Brain Trust' and embarked on a policy of 'relief, recovery, reform ... for the forgotten man at the bottom of the economic pyramid.' FDR's own economic knowledge was shaky, but his team took a central role in transforming the US economy. There were three major approaches to tackling the Great Depression—\*Stalin's, \*Hitler's or FDR's. The 'New Deal', although imperfect, offered the only remedy compatible with democracy. If it had failed, democracy might have been fatally damaged, leading to a World War II which was, like the Spanish Civil War, essentially a struggle between Communism and Fascism. Novel remedies were adopted, parallel to, but not directly influenced by, propositions by J. M. \*Keynes—budgeting for deficit, encouraging consumption, central control of credit, massive spending on public works. Weekly working hours were cut to 48, child labour abolished, minimum wages set and a 'Labor Code' entrenched the principle of collective bargaining. A Social Security scheme was established. The 'New Deal' pioneered soil conservation, reforestation, and flood control, with agencies such as the Civilian Construction Corps (CCC) and the Tennessee Valley Authority (TVA), also providing electricity and irrigation. The Public Works Administration (PWA) employed 4,000,000 at its peak. The National Recovery Administration (NRA) virtually abolished *laissez faire* until the Supreme Court declared it unconstitutional in 1935. The psychological effect was immense and FDR was a persuasive advocate in his radio 'fireside chats': 'The only thing we have to fear is fear itself, unreasoning terror that paralyses the will.' Nevertheless, unemployment remained above 12 per cent until 1939. In the 1936 election he defeated Alf \*Landon by 46 states to two, winning 61 per cent of the vote (an 8,000,000 majority). Roosevelt, frustrated by the conservative Supreme Court, attempted to appoint six younger judges but Congress rejected this. Encouraged by his wife, he took some hesitant steps towards economic and political rights for black Americans (very difficult when the Deep South voted faithfully for the New Deal) and took no action against segregation or lynching.

From 1920 isolationism had been overwhelmingly popular in the US and FDR was slow to challenge the conventional wisdom. He signed the Neutrality Act (1935) without demur but soon found ways of circumventing it. From 1938 he voiced increasing opposition to Hitler and \*Mussolini. In October 1939 he received a warning from \*Einstein about the possibility of building atomic weapons, and directed Vannevar \*Bush to initiate developments, leading to

the 'Manhattan Project' (\*Fermi, \*Oppenheimer) and the beginning of the atomic age. Although he helped Britain with Lend Lease (from September 1940) and built up defence industries, the US avoided military commitment.

FDR won an unprecedented third term in November 1940 with 54.7 per cent of the vote, defeating Wendell \*Willkie. (Henry A. \*Wallace became Vice President.) He took the US out of the tradition of isolationism that \*Washington established, \*Monroe defined, \*Lincoln maintained and Wilson failed to break. He declared that the US 'must become the great arsenal of democracy', proclaimed the Four Freedoms (January 1941), probably influenced by H. G. \*Wells, and met \*Churchill in August 1941 to conclude the 'Atlantic Charter'. The Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor (December 1941) took the US into World War II, followed by the inexplicable German declaration of war by Hitler. After 1942 the US became the great allied powerhouse and FDR dominated the overall direction of strategy, providing resources and articulating allied war aims. He clashed privately with his military advisors, opposing a 'beat Japan first' strategy, insisting on an allied invasion of North Africa rather than premature landings in Europe. His judgment appears to have been vindicated. He had a clear, sometimes naïve, view about developments in the post-war world, including de-colonisation, the end of European empires and extending democracy. His closest confidant Harry \*Hopkins coordinated relations with the Allies. FDR attended conferences at Casablanca (January 1943), Québec (August 1943) and Cairo (November–December 1943). At Teheran (November–December 1943), sandwiched between two parts of the Cairo talks, 'the Big Three' (Roosevelt, \*Stalin, Churchill) met for the first time and final defeat of the Axis powers was planned.

FDR was nominated for a fourth term in 1944. Because of his failing health, Democratic Party leaders, concerned that Wallace was too radical and unpredictable as a potential successor, secured the nomination of Harry \*Truman as Vice President. In November 1944 FDR won 53.4 per cent of the primary vote, and 36 states, to defeat Thomas \*Dewey. He was the principal architect of the United Nations, initiated the World Bank, International Monetary Fund and long term moves towards lower tariffs and global trade. In February 1945 he attended his last international conference at Yalta in the Crimea. He was unduly optimistic that he could negotiate with Stalin, appearing to push Churchill aside (something the British voters did for themselves in July) and has been accused of giving the USSR a free hand in eastern Europe. However, the Red Army was already in occupation and in October 1944 at Moscow, Churchill had conceded 'spheres of influence' to Stalin, acknowledging Russia's dominant role. He contemplated resigning as President to become the first UN Secretary-General.

FDR's powers were weakened by exhaustion, his long physical debility, a mild stroke and possible cancer. In April he died suddenly of a cerebral haemorrhage at Warm Springs, Georgia, while his portrait was being painted, and was buried at Hyde Park.

He remains the most controversial figure in modern US history, denounced variously as 'Fascist', 'revolutionary', 'traitor to his class' and 'madman', while his supporters saw him as courageous, optimistic, creative and deeply committed to democracy and human advancement. His political tradition was continued by Truman, \*Johnson, \*Clinton and \*Obama while his style influenced \*Reagan. In 20 major studies by historians and political scientists ranking US presidents, FDR came No. 2 in the aggregate, behind \*Lincoln and ahead of \*Washington.

Leuchtenberg, W. E., *Franklin D. Roosevelt and the New Deal, 1932–1940*. 1963; Schlesinger, A. M., *The Age of Roosevelt*. 3 vols, 1957–60; Morgan, T., *FDR*. 1985; Friedel, F., *Franklin D. Roosevelt*. 1990; Goodwin, D. K., *No Ordinary Time*. 1994; Black, C., *Franklin Delano Roosevelt. Champion of Freedom*. 2003; Smith, J. E., *FDR*. 2008; Butler, S., *Roosevelt and Stalin*. 2015; Dallek, R. M., *Franklin D. Roosevelt: A Political Life*. 2017.

**Roosevelt, Theodore** ('TR') (1858–1919). 26th President of the US 1901–09. Born in New York to a rich family which emigrated in the 16th century from Holland, he was admitted to the New York bar in 1881. As a Republican member of his state legislature 1881–84 he took his stand against corruption, but after the death (1884) of his wife (née Alice Hathaway Lee of Boston) and a breakdown of health he became a rancher in North Dakota. In 1886 in London he married Edith Kermit Carow of New York and abandoned the outdoor life of a typical Westerner to return to politics. An ardent hunter, he was also an expert naturalist and birdwatcher. Unsuccessful in his bid for election as Mayor of New York, he was appointed (1889) by President \*Harrison to the Civil Service Commission, from which he resigned (1895) to become President of the Board of the New York City police. His spectacular attempt to break the link of corruption between police and underworld made him well known. In 1897 he was appointed Assistant Secretary of the Navy. He resigned on the outbreak of war with Spain (1898) to raise a mounted force known as 'Rough Riders' for the Cuban campaign, and gained national attention for leading a charge up San Juan Hill (July 1898). On his return as a national hero he was elected Governor of New York State 1899–1901 and showed in his legislation (e.g. the laws for slum clearance etc.) a zeal for social reform. In 1900 he was elected Vice President of the US and on the assassination of \*McKinley (September 1901) succeeded him.

As President he used the presidential power more vigorously than any holder of the office since \*Lincoln. He was sympathetic to African-Americans but became preoccupied with falling Anglo-Saxon

birth rates, railed against 'racial suicide' (1903) and encouraged women to breed.

In 1904 he won 56 per cent of the vote defeating Alton B. \*Parker. He helped to settle the great coal strike of 1902, inspired the fight against monopolies ('trust busting'), the passage of the pure food act (1906) and the enforcement of laws against child and female labour. He established national parks and put conservation and environment issues on the political agenda. His interventions in foreign affairs, e.g. when troops were sent to Venezuela (1902) and Dominica (1904) and the seizure of the Canal Zone to facilitate the building of the Panama Canal, were characteristic of his belief in forceful policies. This was further illustrated by his mediation that brought the Russo-Japanese War to an end (Treaty of Portsmouth, 1905) and won him the Nobel Peace Prize (1906). He coined the maxim: 'Speak softly and carry a big stick.'

In 20 Presidential ranking lists by historians and political scientists, TR scored No. 4 in the aggregate, just behind \*Washington.

In 1908 he secured the nomination of his friend William Howard \*Taft, who succeeded him as president. The next year he spent hunting in Africa and touring Europe. On his return Taft's increasing conservatism could no longer command his support. At the Chicago Republican Convention in 1912, he challenged Taft for the nomination but the conservative wing prevailed and Taft won easily. Roosevelt then stood as the candidate of a new Progressive ('Bull Moose') party and in the November election the Republicans split. The Democrat Woodrow \*Wilson won easily, while Roosevelt came second, with Taft holding only two states. TR explored the Brazilian jungle in a scientific expedition 1913–14. A vigorous advocate of US entry into World War I, he was the leading Republican contender for the Presidency in 1920 until his sudden onset of inflammatory rheumatism followed by a fatal heart attack. In 1927 his sculpture by Gutzon \*Borglum joined \*Washington, \*Jefferson and \*Lincoln on Mount Rushmore, South Dakota. In 2001 Bill \*Clinton awarded him the Medal of Honor for his gallantry at San Juan Hill. (His son **Theodore Roosevelt, Jr** (1887–1944), also won the Medal of Honor for his service in Normandy.)

Mowry, G. E., *The Era of Theodore Roosevelt. 1900–1912*. 1958; Morris, E., *The Rise of Theodore Roosevelt*. 1979; Mowry, G. E., *Theodore Rex*. 2001; O'Toole, P., *When Trumpets Call. Theodore Roosevelt after the White House*. 2005; Morris, E., *Colonel Roosevelt* 2010.

**Root, Elihu** (1845–1937). American politician. A lawyer and district attorney, he became Secretary of War under \*McKinley and Theodore \*Roosevelt 1899–1904 and was Secretary of State 1905–09. US Senator from New York 1909–15, he served on The Hague Tribunal from 1910 and won the Nobel Peace Prize (1912).



**Roper, William** (1496–1578). English biographer. In 1525 he married **Margaret More** (1505–1544), collector of the papers and letters—and subsequently the head—of her father Sir Thomas \*More. After More's execution he wrote *Mirror of Vertue in Worldly Greatness or the life of Syr Thomas More* (1535, first published in Paris 1626), one of the earliest biographies in English.

**Rem, Ned** (1923– ). American composer, born in Indiana. Working in New York and Paris, his works include songs, chamber music, five concertos and three symphonies. He won the Pulitzer Prize in 1976 for *Air Music* for orchestra but may be best remembered for his lively diaries.

**Rorty, Richard McKay** (1931–2007). American philosopher. His pragmatism, influenced by \*Hegel, \*Darwin and John \*Dewey, attempted to reconcile historicism and naturalism. He held chairs at Virginia and Stanford and gave the 1987 Clark Lectures in Cambridge. His most quoted work was *Objectivity, Relativism and Truth* (1991).

**Rosa, Carl August Nikolaus** (1842–1889). German violinist, impresario and conductor, born in Hamburg. He married the soprano Euphrosyne Parepa and formed his first opera company in New York (1867), moving to London (1871) and Cairo. The Carl Rosa Opera Company opened with *Figaro* in London 1875 and Rosa gave British premieres of *The Flying Dutchman* (1876), *Lohengrin* (1880) and *Aida* (1880).

**Rosa, Salvator** (1615–1673). Italian painter, born near Naples. He became a pupil of Aniello Falcone, whose taste for battle scenes he acquired. He went to Rome in 1635 and in 1640 to Florence, where he received the patronage of the \*Medici. Back in Rome (1649) he became popular, not only for his energetic landscapes in which with his fine use of chiaroscuro he often produced eerie and fantastic effects, but also for his other accomplishments as musician, satirist and poet. *Babylon*, his satire on Rome, won particular acclaim.

Salerno, L., *Salvator Rosa*. 1963.

**Rosas, Juan Manuel de** (1793–1877). Argentinian dictator. After winning popularity as a leader of irregulars in frontier defence against the Indians, he served as Governor of Buenos Aires province 1829–32. More successes against the Indians resulted in his returning (1835) with full dictatorial powers. For the first time since 1810 the country had stable government, but the methods of terrorism by which it was achieved undermined the popularity of Rosas, and a Franco-British blockade when he intervened in Uruguay weakened the country's economic strength. He was defeated and deposed by General Urquiza (1852) and died in exile in England.

**Roscus, Quintus** (d.62 BCE). Roman actor. The greatest comedian of his age, he won the patronage of \*Sulla and taught oratory to \*Cicero, who defended him in a speech, which survives, when he was sued for debt.

**Rosebery, 5th Earl of, Archibald Philip Primrose, later 1st Earl of Midlothian** (1847–1929). Anglo-Scottish politician and writer, born in London. Educated at Eton and Oxford (where his preference for racing over study led to his expulsion), he inherited his peerage in 1868, and declared three ambitions: to become Prime Minister, marry an heiress and win the Derby. In 1878 he married **Hannah de Rothschild** (1851–1890). He served under \*Gladstone as Undersecretary at the Home Office 1881–83, Commissioner of Works 1884–85, and Foreign Secretary 1886 and 1892–94, leading the Liberal Party's imperialist wing. He was the first chairman of the London County Council 1889–90, an excellent orator, and a race horse owner who won the Derby in 1894, 1895 and 1905. On Gladstone's retirement (1894), Queen \*Victoria chose him as Prime Minister, in preference to Sir William \*Harcourt and Earl Spencer. Rosebery, suffering from insomnia and increasingly isolated from his colleagues, resigned after a snap defeat in the Commons (1895). The Conservatives held office for a decade. He never returned to office and pursued an increasingly independent line. He opposed the entente with France on the grounds that it would provoke a German war and produced a plan of his own for the reform of the House of Lords. He was the richest Prime Minister and, despite his short term in office, well rewarded with a KG, KT, Royal Victorian Chain and a second earldom. His historical studies, e.g. *Pitt* (1891) and *Napoleon, the Last Phase* (1901), were well written.

James, R. R., *Rosebery*. 1963.

**Rosenberg, Alfred** (1893–1946). German writer and politician, born in Estonia. Of mixed German, Russian and Estonian descent, he studied architecture in Moscow, joined the Nazi Party (1920) and edited its daily newspaper *Völkischer Beobachter* (from 1921). He tried to create a new ideology, compounded of anti-Semitism, Nordic mythology and mysticism, and his unreadable book *The Myth of the 20th Century* (1930) promoted the theory of Aryan racial superiority. Even his fellow Nazis regarded him as a crank. Minister for Occupied Territories in the East 1941–44, he was hanged at Nuremberg.

**Rosenberg, Julius** (1918–1953) and **Ethel Rosenberg** (née Greenglass) (1915–1953). American radicals and convicted spies, born in Manhattan. The Rosenbergs, members of the Young Communist League, married in 1939 and had two sons. Julius, an electrical engineer, was charged, with his wife, with 'conspiracy to commit espionage in wartime' for passing, early in 1945, technical details of radar, sonar and a detonation device for an atomic bomb to

the USSR (then an ally). The trial, in March 1951, was conducted in an atmosphere of Cold War hysteria and they were both convicted, sentenced to death and electrocuted at Sing Sing prison in June 1953.

In 1995 the release by the US of intercepted decoded messages (the Venona Project) confirmed that Julius had passed a substantial volume of material to the USSR but its value is still a matter of controversy. While there was a reasonable case against Julius (although the penalty was grossly excessive), the case against Ethel was threadbare, relying entirely on allegations by her brother David Greenglass, a machinist at Los Alamos. It was expected that the threat of her execution would induce Julius to reveal details of a spy ring. There were worldwide demonstrations against their execution. Pope \*Pius XII, \*Einstein, \*Sartre and \*Picasso called for commutation.

Sebba, A., *Ethel Rosenberg. A Cold War Tragedy*. 2020.

**Ross, Harold** (Wallace) (1892–1951). American editor. Co-founder of the *New Yorker* (1925), which he edited until his death, the magazine had a major impact on writing and cartooning. Ross promoted the work of \*Thurber, \*Arno, \*Addams, \*Steinberg, \*Perelman, \*White, \*De Vries, Edmund \*Wilson, Dorothy \*Parker and many others.

**Ross, Sir James Clark** (1800–1862). British polar explorer. He was the nephew of the Arctic explorer **Sir John Ross** (1777–1856), under whose command he discovered (1829) the north magnetic pole. While leading a scientific expedition (1839–43) to the Antarctic for the British Government he discovered Mounts Erebus and Terror (named after his two ships) and the Ross Ice Shelf. He was knighted on his return. His last polar expedition (1848–49) searched for Sir John \*Franklin.

Dodge, E. S., *The Polar Rosses*. 1973.

**Ross, Sir Ronald** (1857–1932). British bacteriologist, born in India. After qualifying as doctor (1881) he served in the Indian Medical Service until 1889. During this time he studied the causes of malaria and concluded that it was transmitted by the female Anopheles mosquito. This discovery won him the Nobel Prize for Medicine (1902) and a KCB in 1911. As professor of tropical medicine at Liverpool University 1902–12 he carried his studies further in many expeditions to the tropics. He went to King's College Hospital, London, as physician for tropical diseases (1912) and became (1926) Director of the Ross Institute, founded at London University in his honour. He wrote *Memoirs* (1923).

**Rosse, 3th Earl of** (Irish peerage), **William Parsons** (1800–1867). Irish astronomer, born in York. Educated in Dublin and Oxford, MP 1821–35, he became a passionate, and expert, astronomer, building two telescopes with ground speculum reflectors, and apertures of 0.91 m and 1.83 m. The latter, known as 'the Leviathan', was the world's largest telescope from

1845 to 1917. He identified and named the Crab nebula and spiral galaxies and was President of the Royal Society 1848–54. Sir Charles \*Parsons was his son.

**Rossellini, Roberto** (1906–1977). Italian film director. Son of an architect, he made propagandist films during World War II, then became a leader of the neo-realist school. His *Open City* (1945) was the first internationally recognised European film after the war, followed by *Paisan* (1946), *Ways of Love* (1948) and *Stromboli* (1949). His affair with Ingrid \*Bergman led to an unofficial boycott of their films and his career never recovered, although he continued to be a prolific producer, screenplay writer and operatic director.

**Rossetti, Christina Georgina** (1830–1894). English poet. Of Italian extraction, sister of Dante Gabriel \*Rossetti, her first published verse appeared in 1847. She continued to write poems that showed an exceptional sense of beauty combined with strong religious instincts. The best known collections are *Goblin Market* (1862) and *The Prince's Progress* (1866).

Packer L. M., *Christina Rossetti*. 1963.

**Rossetti, Dante Gabriel** (1828–1882). English painter and poet, born in London. Son of **Gabriel Rossetti** (1783–1854), a political refugee from Naples, he studied art at the Royal Academy School with Ford Madox \*Brown, an important influence, and Holman \*Hunt. He and \*Millais discussed their aim of returning to the principles of pre-Renaissance painting by imposing upon themselves the disciplines of a noble subject, truth to nature and meticulous detail. The result was the formation of the Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood in 1848, the year after Rossetti had written his best known poem *The Blessed Damozel*. The paintings produced (among which was Rossetti's *Ecce Ancilla Domini*, now in the National Gallery, London) were received with such abuse that he was discouraged and after 1850 produced no important oil painting for 10 years. In 1860 he painted an altarpiece for Llandaff Cathedral, followed by portraits and pictures in a highly individual imaginative style, with jewelled colouring and of a dreamlike character. The first of the new style portraits was an ethereal, idealised representation of his dead wife, Elizabeth Siddal. Only two years after their marriage (1860) she had died from an overdose of laudanum. In despair he buried his poems with her and only in 1870 were they retrieved and published, but attacked for belonging to the 'fleshly school of poetry'. His *Ballads and Sonnets* appeared in 1881. Meanwhile he had continued to paint. His most frequent model was the beautiful wife of William \*Morris, with whose ventures in the applied arts Rossetti was closely connected. Of his other pictures the large *Dante's Dream* (1870) and *The Blessed Damozel* (1875–76) are among the best known. Partial paralysis marked the onset of his final illness.

Grylls, R., *Portrait of Rossetti*. 1965.

**Rossini, Gioachino Antonio** (1792–1868). Italian composer, born at Pesaro. He studied at Bologna, but claimed that he had been more influenced by the music of \*Haydn and \*Mozart than by his teachers. At 14, he was already working in local theatres, and by the age of 21 he had composed a dozen operas including *L'Italiana in Algeri* (1813). In all he wrote nearly 40 operas, serious and comic. Most of the latter enjoyed outstanding contemporary success for their vivacity, humour and boisterous spirits. The best known include *The Barber of Seville* (1816), based on \*Beaumarchais—probably his best and certainly his most popular work—*La Cenerentola* (1817), and *Le Comte Ory*, which were triumphantly acclaimed in Vienna, Paris and London. His last opera *William Tell* (1829), based on \*Schiller, was premiered in Paris. Suddenly, at the age of 37, he abandoned opera composition and apart from a Mass (1864) his only subsequent major work was his *Stabat Mater* (1832–41). There were also a few songs and piano pieces, some orchestrated by \*Respighi for the ballet *La Boutique fantasque* and by Benjamin \*Britten for *Soirées musicales*.

Weinstock, H., *Rossini*. 1968.

**Rostand, Edmond** (1868–1918). French dramatist and poet, born in Marseille. An early volume of verse, *Les Musardises* (1890), was followed by a series of light poetic plays, *Les Romanesques* (1894), *La Princesse Lointaine* (1896) and *La Samaritaine* (1897). Fame came with the play *Cyrano de Bergerac* (1897), based on the life of a 17th-century soldier and poet disfigured by his grotesque nose. This was followed by *L'Aiglon* (1900) about the life of the son of \*Napoléon and Marie Louise at the Austrian court: Sarah \*Bernhardt played the young prince. *Chantecler*, a farmyard fantasy in which Lucien \*Guitry appeared (1910), proved disappointing. Rostand was elected to the Académie française in 1901.

**Rostovtzeff, Michael Ivanovich** (1870–1952). Russian historian. He was a professor at St Petersburg (Leningrad) from 1898 but after the Revolution went to the US, where he was professor of ancient history at Wisconsin 1920–25 and Yale 1925–44. His best known work *The Social and Economic History of the Roman World* (3 volumes, 1941), is important in being the first application of archaeological research to expand and illuminate ancient history.

**Rostropovich, Mstislav Leopoldovich** (1927–2007). Russian cellist, pianist and conductor. He made his debut in 1942, became a professor of the Moscow Conservatoire in 1957 and gained an international reputation as a solo cellist. Many works were written for him by \*Shostakovich, \*Prokofiev, \*Britten and other composers. In 1955 he married the soprano **Galina** (Pavlovna) **Vishnevskaya** (1926–2012). He left the USSR in 1974, became Director of the National Symphony Orchestra, Washington 1977–94 and received a KBE and the US Presidential Medal of Freedom in 1987. He was an outstanding campaigner for human rights.

**Rotblat, Sir Joseph** (1909–2005). British physicist, born in Poland. He worked on the 'Manhattan Project' which built the first atomic bombs. He was co-founder (1957) of the Pugwash Conferences on Science and World Affairs and shared the 1995 Nobel Peace Prize with the organisation.

**Roth, (Moses) Joseph** (1894–1939). Austrian-Jewish novelist and journalist, born in Galicia. His essays *The Wandering Jew* (1927) and the novel *Radetzky March* (1932) were eerily prophetic of the Holocaust.

**Roth, Philip** (Milton) (1933–2018). American novelist, born in Newark, New Jersey. His books include *Goodbye Columbus* (1959), *Portnoy's Complaint* (1969), *Sabbath's Theatre* (1995), *American Pastoral* (1997) and *The Plot Against America* (2004). Nine of his novels were centred on Nathan Zuckerman, essentially Roth's alter ego. After a long liaison, he was unhappily married to Claire \*Bloom from 1990 to 1995. He suffered constant pain from acute muscular problems. He won the Pulitzer Prize 1997, the Man Booker International Prize 2011 and four PEN Awards for lifetime achievement.

Bailey, B., *Philip Roth: The Biography*. 2021.

**Rothenstein, Sir William** (1872–1945). English artist. A friend of \*Whistler, he studied in London and Paris and joined the New English Art Club (1894). An official war artist in World War I, he made many fine portrait drawings. As principal of the Royal College of Art 1920–35 he exercised a conservative influence on a generation of artists. He wrote *Men and Memoirs* (1932). His son **Sir John** (Knewstubb Maurice) **Rothenstein** (1901–1992), was a critic who wrote studies of \*Manet and \*Turner, and was Director of the Tate Gallery, London 1938–64. Conservative in his acquisitions, he rejected major European and US contemporary works. He wrote an aggressive three-volume autobiography (1965, 1966, 1970).

**Rothermere, Harold Sidney Harmsworth, 1st Viscount** (1868–1940). English newspaper proprietor. He worked closely with his brother, Lord \*Northcliffe, in many enterprises, providing the business acumen to match the other's journalistic flair. He bought the *Daily Mirror* (1914) and founded (1915) the *Sunday Pictorial*. He took over Northcliffe's business interests on his death and in turn handed them on to his son. As Air Minister 1917–18 he helped to create the RAF from the Flying Corps and the Naval Air Service and was made a viscount (1919). His newspapers were consistently pro-German 1933–39.

**Rothko, Mark** (originally Markus Yakovlevich Rothkovitch) (1903–1970). American painter, born in Latvia. His Russian-Jewish family migrated to the US in 1913. He grew up in Oregon and later studied painting in New York. After 1948 he became a leading figure of the Abstract Expressionist

movement and his huge, brooding canvasses rely on the use of colour alone for their emotional impact. He is strongly represented in major US galleries and at the Tate in London. He committed suicide and the 658 paintings left in his estate were the subject of bitter litigation between his heirs and his agents. His *Orange, Red and Yellow* (1961) sold at auction for \$US87 million in 2012.

Waldman, D., *Mark Rothko*. 1978; Breslin, J. E. B., *Mark Rothko: A Biography*. 1993.

**Rothschild, Mayer Amschel** (1743–1812). German banker. During the Revolutionary and Napoleonic Wars he ensured the family fortunes (whatever the outcome of the wars) by sending his sons to operate in different European capitals. The eldest stayed with his father at Frankfurt-on-Main and the others went to London, Paris, Vienna and Naples. **Nathan Mayer Rothschild** (1777–1836), the London representative, made more than £1 million by arranging to receive speedy news of the result of the Battle of Waterloo and being able to speculate on the basis of knowledge. His son **Lionel Nathan de Rothschild** (1808–1879) was, from 1847, repeatedly elected MP for the city of London, but took his seat only when the act removing Jewish disabilities was passed (1858). He arranged the £4 million that enabled \*Disraeli to secure for the British Government a controlling interest in the Suez Canal (1875), and was the model for Sidonia in \*Disraeli's *Coningsby*. His son, **Nathan Mayer Rothschild, 1st Baron Rothschild** (1840–1915), Liberal MP 1865–85 and raised to the peerage in 1885, was the first Jew to sit in the House of Lords. His grandson, (Nathaniel Mayer) **Victor Rothschild, 3rd Baron Rothschild** (1910–1990), educated at Harrow and Trinity College, Cambridge, became a zoologist, succeeded his uncle in the peerage in 1937, joined MI5 and worked in disinformation and espionage. Despite allegations that he was a KGB agent ('The Fifth Man'), essentially based on his friendship with Guy \*Burgess and Anthony \*Blunt, his denials were plausible, and—although a Labour peer—he was trusted by Edward \*Heath and, to a degree, Margaret \*Thatcher. His sister, **Dame Miriam Louisa Rothschild** (1908–2005), educated at home, was a code-breaker in World War II and conducted research into fleas, butterflies and schizophrenia. His son, (Nathaniel Charles) **Jacob Rothschild, 4th Baron Rothschild** (1936–), was a banker, philanthropist and arts administrator, deeply involved in archaeological conservation. He was awarded the OM in 2002. The 4th Baron's sister, **Emma Georgina Rothschild** (1948–), was an economic historian, Professor of History at Harvard and wife of Amartya \*Sen.

Morton, F., *The Rothschilds*. 1962.

**Rouault, Georges Henri** (1871–1958). French painter, born in Paris. He first trained as a glass painter, which influenced his use of broad black outlines, enhancing the luminous colours in his pictures. His earliest paintings were of religious subjects in the

manner of his teacher Gustave \*Moreau. Later, as his constitutional pessimism deepened, he painted in passionate and horrified protest scenes in brothels or other places where human misery abounds. In his later work, the horror changes to pity, he returns to religious themes, but they are painted with the same passion and reveal the same distortions as his pictures of everyday life. These distortions are a reminder of his link with the group known as the 'Fauves', but though he joined them he was never truly of them: the conventions they used for decoration he used for emphasis; he was in fact an isolated figure in the world of art. His pessimism is seen also in his etchings, e.g. *Miserere* and *Guerre* (reminiscent of \*Goya).

Courthion, P., *Georges Rouault*. 1962.

**Roubiliac, Louis François** (c.1695–1762). French sculptor. Trained in France, he lived in England as a Huguenot refugee from 1727. His works include impressive sculptures of \*Shakespeare and \*Newton. His reputation was established by a statue of \*Händel made (1737) for Vauxhall Gardens. Strong modelling and subtle characterisation, in the style of \*Bernini, distinguish his works. His powerful tomb of Lady Elizabeth Nightingale (1761) is in Westminster Abbey.

Whinney, M. D., *Sculpture in Britain, 1530–1830*. 1970.

**Rouget de Lisle, Claude Joseph** (1760–1836). French author and composer. He wrote *La Marseillaise* (1792), the French national anthem, while an engineer officer in the Revolutionary army. It was adopted as a marching song by a Marseilles battalion bound for Paris and its stirring words and music soon gave it national fame.

**Rouhani, Hassan** (originally Fereydu) (1948–). Iranian cleric and politician. He secured a PhD in Glasgow and had a diverse career as lawyer, cleric, diplomat and administrator, serving in the Majlis (parliament) 1980–2000 and on the Supreme National Security Council 1989–2005. Regarded as a moderate, he was President of Iran 2013–21.

**Rous, Francis Peyton** (1879–1970). American physician. Educated at Johns Hopkins University, he worked at the Rockefeller Institute for Medical Research from 1909 and in 1911 identified the first tumour virus, known as the 'Rous chicken sarcoma virus'. In 1966 he shared the Nobel Prize for Medicine for his work on the chicken virus. At 87 he was the oldest recipient of the award and the gap between research and recognition (55 years) is a record.

**Rousseau, Henri** (known as 'le Douanier') (1844–1910). French painter. His nickname derives from his position as a customs officer 1871–85. At the age of 41 he went to Paris to devote his time to painting. He was a naive and natural painter belonging to none of the contemporary groups, but he was able to transfer to canvas with a wonderful child-like assurance the

pictures that his vision saw, his memory recalled or his rich imagination conceived. It was as natural to him to paint streets, landscapes, neighbours as the mysterious jungles where tigers prowl. Animals and birds, human beings, he paints them all as they pass before his inner or outer vision, the colour schemes seeming the more original because they are seldom schemed at all. \*Gauguin, \*Seurat, \*Signac and \*Pissarro were among his friends and in 1908 \*Picasso gave a memorable banquet in his honour.

**Rousseau, Jean-Jacques** (1712–1778). Swiss-French writer and political philosopher, born in Geneva. His father, a watchmaker, abandoned him to relatives. He was apprenticed to an engraver but ran away from his harsh treatment, crossed the frontier into Savoy and found a refuge, half-servant, half-lover, with Madame **Françoise-Louise de Warens**, a woman of generous affections. In the years of vagrancy that followed he would always be welcomed back to her home and in the domestic interludes found time to study music, literature, and philosophy. In 1744 he was settled in Paris making a living by copying music and writing comedies, and having as mistress a kitchenmaid named Thérèse Levasseur with whom he lived for 25 years. Each of the five children she bore him he deposited on the steps of a foundling hospital, an inconsistency between principle and practice of which he became increasingly ashamed. Meanwhile his opera *Les Muses galantes* (1747) had led to a correspondence with \*Voltaire and an acquaintance with \*Diderot, for whose great *Encyclopédie* he wrote articles on music and political economy. His winning (1749) of a prize for an essay in which he argued that the arts and sciences merely corrupted the natural goodness of man may have encouraged him to develop the theme of the 'noble savage' which pervades much of his work. His political thoughts spring from the same romantic origins. In their natural state men are free, equal and good; it is institutions that have made them otherwise. His *Discours sur l'origine de l'inégalité parmi les hommes* (1755) explains how this came about. Even more influential was his *Du contrat social* (1762). The famous opening words, 'Man is born free, but everywhere is in chains', show the same romantic starting-point, the problem of political association being to enable the noble impulses of free man to find collective expression. Much of the book relates to the way in which there can emerge in a community a 'general will' in which the individual wills of each participant will find identification. Sovereignty lies with the people as a whole and is the exercise of the general will. There is an implied contract that each individual hands over all his personal rights to the community on the understanding that the precepts of the general will are observed. Sophistries abound in the book. It provides an intellectual preparation for the French Revolution, but has equally provided texts in support of the state despotisms of our own times. In *Émile* (1762) Rousseau uses the form of a novel to give views on education that resemble those described as 'modern' today: education should release and not

inhibit natural tendencies; a child's natural curiosity should provide the incentive to learn; experience rather than book-learning is the key to knowledge. However, by 'child' he meant 'boy' and could see little point in educating girls for a life outside domesticity. In a lighter vein *La Nouvelle Héloïse* (1761), a novel in the form of letters, again takes up the theme of 'return to nature' in the context of sex and the family. After his death were published his *Confessions* (1781), where vanity and candour often compete. There are to be found episodes of his childhood and early manhood, his inner reveries and descriptions of the beauties of nature, and though there are many lapses of judgement and taste in this book, it contains, with its supplementary volume, *Réveries d'un promeneur solitaire* (1762), some of the most exquisite passages of French literature. Since *Émile* had provoked a threat of arrest, Rousseau went to Switzerland and then, on David \*Hume's invitation, to England. Signs of delusional insanity began to appear here. (He imagined Hume was plotting against him.) He returned to France (1770) still suffering at times from insanity and died eventually of a heart attack. In 1794 his remains were buried in the Panthéon near those of Voltaire.

Guehenno, J., *Jean-Jacques Rousseau*. 1966.

**Rousseau, Théodore** (1812–1867). French landscape painter. He painted in the Auvergne and Normandy before he became a leading figure of the Barbizon school, called after a village in the forest of Fontainebleau (\*Millet). Groupings of trees, marshy patches, all the quiet details of an unspoiled countryside are the subjects in which he takes unwearying delight.

**Rousseff, Dilma Vana** (1947– ). Brazilian economist and politician, born in Belo Horizonte. Of Bulgarian parentage, she became an economist and worked closely with Luis \*Lula de Silva, becoming his Minister for Mines and Energy 2003–05 and Chief of Staff 2005–10. She was the first woman (and the first economist) to be president of Brazil 2011–16. In 2015, charged with budgetary offences, she was impeached by the House of Representatives and removed from office in August 2016 in a highly partisan vote by the Senate.

**Roussel, Albert** (1869–1937). French composer. Originally a naval officer, he devoted himself to music from 1893, studying (1898–1907) under Vincent D'Indy in Paris at the Schola Cantorum, where he was also professor of counterpoint 1902–14. From 1918 he was forced by ill health to live in the country. His orchestral works include four symphonies and the ballets *Le Festin de l'Araignée* (*The Spider's Banquet*, 1912) and *Bacchus and Ariadne* (1930). He also wrote piano and chamber music. His sturdily individual style blends French influence with that of \*Stravinsky.

**Rowe, Nicholas** (1674–1718). English poet and dramatist. Among the best known of his plays were *Tamerlane* (1702), *The Fair Penitent* (1703) and

*Jane Shore* (1714), the last two of which provided excellent parts for Mrs \*Siddons. He also published a translation (highly praised by Dr \*Johnson) of Lucan's *Pharsalia*. His edition of \*Shakespeare (1709) divided the plays into acts and scenes. He became poet laureate in 1715.

Rowe, N., *Dramatic Works*. 1971.

**Rowland, Henry Augustus** (1848–1901). American physicist. Professor of physics at Johns Hopkins University 1867–1901, he developed methods of producing better and larger diffraction gratings, and made (1882) the first concave grating. The Rowland circle, a circle having the radius of curvature of a diffraction grating, is named after him. He improved on the determinations of the mechanical equivalent of heat made by \*Joule. He also investigated electromagnetic effects and made an accurate determination of the value of the ohm.

**Rowland, (Frank) Sherwood** (1927–2012). American chemist. Professor of Chemistry at the University of California, Irvine 1964–92, he shared the 1995 Nobel Prize for Chemistry with Paul \*Crutzen and Mario Molina for their work in investigating and explaining depletion of the ozone layer by the use of chlorofluorocarbons, leading to the adoption of the Montréal Protocol (1989).

**Rowlandson, Thomas** (1756–1827). English draughtsman and caricaturist. Extravagant tastes, love of travel and a zest for life, combined with a determination to pay his way to make him one of the most industrious and prolific of artists. Wherever he went, he drew. He is best known for his book illustrations (e.g. *A Sentimental Journey*, by \*Sterne, and *Baron Münchhausen's Travels*) and political cartoons and caricatures, the quality of which he and his contemporary \*Gillray raised almost to the level of a new art.

George, D. M., *Hogarth to Cruikshank*. 1967.

**Rowling, J(anne) K(athleen)** (1965– ). English novelist, born near Bristol. Educated at Exeter University, she worked for Amnesty International, then taught in Portugal. Her series of seven novels about Harry Potter began with *Harry Potter and the Philosopher's Stone* (1997). After rejection by 12 publishers, her Harry Potter books sold 500 million copies. She received a CH in 2017.

**Rowling, Sir Wallace Edward** [Bill] (1927–1995). New Zealand Labour politician. A teacher and army officer, he was a Labour MP 1962–84, Prime Minister 1974–75 and Ambassador to the US 1985–88.

**Rowntree, Joseph** (1801–1859). English Quaker philanthropist and chocolate manufacturer. He founded the firm at York that still bears his name and helped to found the Friends' Education Society (1837) as well as schools in York and elsewhere. His grandson (Benjamin) **Seebohm Rowntree**

(1871–1954), also combined his duties as head of the family firm with social work. His *Poverty* (1901) and *Poverty and Progress* (1941) resulted from social surveys in York, which set a pattern for later surveys and led to the foundation of the Industrial Welfare Society and similar organisations, in which he was active.

Brigg, A., *Seebohm Rowntree*. 1961.

**Rowse, A(lfred) L(eslie)** (1903–1997). English historian, novelist, poet and critic, born in Cornwall. Proud of his working class origins, he was educated at Oxford, taught there but retired to Cornwall in 1952. He made many enemies, published 105 books, including works on \*Shakespeare, \*Marlowe, \*Swift and the \*Churchills, and received a CH in 1996.

Cauveren, S., *A. L. Rowse: A Bibliophile's Extensive Bibliography*. 2000.

**Royal, (Marie-) Ségolène** (1953– ). French Socialist politician, born in Dakar. Educated at the ENA, she was a deputy in the National Assembly 1988–92, 1993–97, 2002–2012, Minister for the Environment 1992–93 and Vice Minister for Family and Childhood 2000–02. She adopted Blairite 'third way' policies, won the Socialist nomination for president of France, losing to Nicolas \*Sarközy in 2007. She was the partner of François \*Hollande from 1970 to 2007, had four children by him and served as his Minister for Ecology, Sustainable Development and Energy 2014–17.

**Royce, Sir Frederick Henry, 1st Baronet** (1863–1933). British engineer. He was founder (with C. S. \*Rolls), and for many years engineer-in-chief of the firm of Rolls Royce at Derby.

Bennet, M., *Rolls Royce Story*. 1974.

**Rubbia, Carlo** (1934– ). Italian physicist. Educated at Rome and Columbia universities, he was a research physicist at the Conseil Européen pour la Recherche Nucléaire (CERN), Geneva from 1960, professor of physics at Harvard 1972–88, and Director of CERN 1989–93. He shared the 1984 Nobel Prize for Physics with **Simon van der Meer** (1925–2011), also at CERN, for their work in demonstrating the existence of massive short-lived particles called bosons.

**Rubbra, Edmund Duncan** (1901–1986). English composer. Pupil of \*Vaughan Williams and \*Holst, his compositions include 11 symphonies, a Sinfonia Concertante for piano and orchestra, piano and viola concertos, choral works (including unaccompanied settings of the Mass) and chamber music. He became a lecturer at Oxford University 1947–68. Influenced by the polyphonic composers of the late 16th and early 17th centuries, and in the main unaffected by modern trends, his music is reflective in manner.

**Rubens, [Sir] Peter Paul** (1577–1640). Flemish painter, born in Westphalia. His father, a burgomaster of Antwerp, was exiled during the religious wars.

Rubens returned with his mother (1587) after his father's death, was trained as a court page and was taught art in local studios. Art never consumed Rubens' full talents. He studied antiquity, absorbed the classics, learnt six languages and became an accomplished diplomat. In 1600 he went to Italy as court painter to the Duke of Mantua and in frequent travels had the opportunity of studying the works of the great Renaissance masters, especially \*Titian and \*Tintoretto. He absorbed with a natural eclecticism the features of each, necessary for the maturing of his own style, which, as he gradually shed the effects of his early Manneristic training, displayed the full exuberance of the Baroque. In 1608 he returned to Antwerp where he became court painter to the Spanish regents. From his studios came a continuous flow of religious pictures, battle pieces and mythological subjects, portraits both singly and in groups. In the first category the *Descent of the Cross* can be contrasted with the *Raising of the Cross* (1610, both in Antwerp Cathedral), the latter (and earlier) showing a much greater sense of strain; in the second category, the *Rape of the Daughters of Leucippus* is well known, and the first *Bacchanales*, the nudes revelling in their unrestrained sensuality, bear witness to the intoxicating joy of life. Among the portraits, one of the artist himself with his first wife Isabella Brant (d 1626) is of special interest. By 1621, the year in which he depicted for \*Marie de Médicis, the French Queen, episodes of her life in a magnificent allegorical sequence, Rubens had reached full maturity. Movement is freer, composition and colour more dramatic, draughtsmanship (e.g. his daring foreshortenings), confident and secure. His masterpiece was probably *Fall of the Rebel Angels* (c.1621), now in the Alte Pinakothek, Munich.

The death of his first wife left him freer to undertake confidential missions for which he was well equipped by his artistic and diplomatic talents. Thus he negotiated and painted in France (1620–28), in Spain (1628) and in England (1629–30) with \*Charles I, to whom he presented *Allegory of the Blessings of Peace*, and for whom he designed the ceiling panels for the Banqueting Hall at Whitehall and received a knighthood. Whenever he was at home the outflow of his pictures continued. For this purpose he maintained an elaborate organisation of assistants, of whom \*Van Dyck was among the chief, others being employed for painting, e.g., fruit and flowers (Jan \*Brueghel) or animals. Rubens abandoned court life in 1633 and retired to his estate at Steen with his young second wife Helena Fourment whom he had married in 1630 and who appears in the nude as *Andromeda* and in several fine portraits, e.g. *The Fur Coat*. His subjects are little changed but outlines are softer, shadows less opaque and the colours more delicate, often with a silvery tone. Some of his most famous pictures belong to this period, e.g. *The Rape of the Sabines* (1635), *The Judgement of Paris* (1638–40) and the 'martyrdoms' (1635–40) e.g. *Crucifixion of St Peter*. Rubens ranks among the greatest of the

world's artists not only because of the brilliance of his painting techniques, his superb draughtsmanship, inventiveness and observation, but also because his buoyant satisfaction with his life, his success, and his art communicates itself through his work.

Wedgwood, C. V., *The World of Rubens, 1577–1640*. 1967.

**Rubinstein, Anton Grigoryevich** (1829–1894). Russian composer and pianist. First director of the St Petersburg Conservatorium 1862–67, 1887–91, he toured Europe and the US, as a pianist, but his many compositions, including operas, symphonies, cantatas, and chamber and piano music are now infrequently performed. His brother **Nikolai Grigoryevich Rubinstein** (1835–1881) was an outstanding pianist, conductor and—to a lesser degree—composer.

**Rubinstein, Arthur** (1887–1982). Polish-Jewish-American pianist, born in Łódź, then part of Russia. He first played in public at four, studied in Warsaw, made his debut in Berlin under \*Joachim (1900), followed by New York (1906) and London (1912). After early success as a virtuoso, he gained a more serious reputation after 1937 as an interpreter of \*Chopin, \*Mozart, \*Beethoven and \*Ravel. A prolific recording artist, he toured incessantly for more than 60 years, appeared frequently on film and television, wrote a lively autobiography and was a witty raconteur. He received an honorary KBE and the US Presidential Medal of Freedom.

**Rubinstein, Ida Lvovna** (1883–1960) Russian-French dancer, actor and art patron, born in Kharkov. From a rich family, after dancing for \*Diaghilev's Ballet Russes, she formed her own company, commissioned \*Ravel's *Boléro* and also acted on stage, and in film. Bisexual, she was generous, courageous, the subject of many paintings and a Catholic convert.

**Rublev, Andrei** (c.1365–c.1429). Russian icon painter. Trained in the Byzantine tradition, he painted in Zagorsk and Moscow and became a monk. The biographical film *Andrei Rublev* (1966), directed by **Andrei Tarkovsky**, was released in 1971 in a censored form.

**Rudd, Kevin Michael** (1957– ). Australian Labor politician, born in Queensland. Educated at the Australian National University, he became a diplomat, serving in Sweden and China (and achieving mastery in Mandarin), was head of the Queensland Cabinet office 1991–95, and a Federal MP 1998–2013. Shadow Foreign Minister 2001–06, he was Leader of the Opposition 2006–07, and Prime Minister 2007–10, defeating John \*Howard. He made powerful enemies in the ALP factions, compounded by concentrating power in his own office. Following polling which suggested a sharp fall in the party's primary vote, he was removed from the leadership in a coup (June 2010) and replaced by Julia \*Gillard. He was Foreign Minister 2010–12, resigning after

having been provoked into making a failed bid for the leadership. After polls put the ALP's primary vote at 29 per cent, Rudd contested the leadership, defeated Gillard in Caucus and was Prime Minister again June–September 2013, then suffered a heavy election loss to Tony \*Abbott. He relocated to New York, became a consultant and sought election as Secretary-General of the United Nations in 2016. He returned to live in Queensland in 2019.

Weller, P., *Kevin Rudd: Twice Prime Minister*. 2014; Rudd, K. M., *Not for the Faint-hearted*. 2017; *The PM Years*. 2018.

**Rudolf** (Franz Karl Joseph) (1858–1889). Austrian Archduke, born near Vienna. The only son and heir of Kaiser \*Franz Joseph, he married **Princess Stéphanie of Belgium** (1864–1945), daughter of King Léopold II, in 1881. Regarded as a moderate liberal, he was interested in science, was an expert ornithologist and received a KG in 1887. In January 1889 the bodies of Rudolf and his lover, **Baroness Marie** (but known as 'Mary') **von Vetsera** (1871–1889), were found at his hunting lodge at Mayerling. Both had been shot. Suicide due to an 'unbalanced mind' was announced and murder can be presumed, but since all state records were destroyed the details remain obscure. The Mayerling story has been the subject of films, plays, musicals and a ballet. His widow invented the hostess trolley.

**Rudolf II** (1552–1612). Holy Roman Emperor 1576–1612. One of the most ineffective rulers of the Habsburg dynasty, after a half-hearted attempt to stiffen the laws against Protestants he ceased to play an active part in government and withdrew into his palace at Prague where he practised astrology, alchemy and, so it was said, demonology. His interest in more normal science was shown when, on Tycho \*Brahe's departure from Denmark (1597), he gave him a pension and established him, with \*Kepler as his assistant, in an observatory near Prague. In 1608 the Habsburg archdukes transferred their allegiance from Rudolf to his brother Matthias to whom the emperor ceded Hungary, Austria and Moravia. Rudolf retained only Bohemia, but this too had to be yielded in 1611.

**Rumford, Sir Benjamin Thompson, Count [Graf] von** (1753–1814). Anglo-American scientist and administrator, born at Woburn, Mass. From 1770 he was a schoolmaster in Rumford, New Hampshire. His Anglophile views in the events that led to American independence caused him to go to England where he worked for the Colonial Office. His experiments with gunpowder won him election as FRS. He returned to America (1782) as a British officer, but the coming of peace (1783) brought him back to England and he was knighted. The next phase of his career, resulting from a friendship with the Elector Karl Theodor, was in Bavaria where, as Minister of War and Police and also Grand Chamberlain, he introduced army education, drained marshes, established workshops, and provided relief for the unemployed. In 1791

he was made a count of the Holy Roman Empire, choosing his title from his former American home. He received the Copley Medal in 1792. He finally left Bavaria in 1799, eventually settled in France, married \*Lavoisier's widow in 1804 (but separated three years later) and died in Paris. Meanwhile, he had endowed Rumford medals for English and American scientists, had conducted researches and had written a paper (1798) for the Royal Society concerning the causes of heat, his conclusion being that heat was not a substance but a form of motion. He invented more efficient fireplaces, furnaces, ovens, gates and chimneys, which were immediately adopted and made him rich.

Larsen, E., *An American in Europe*. 1953.

**Rumi** (Jalāl ad-Dīn Muḥammad Balkhī) (1207–1273). Persian poet and mystic, born in Balkhi, Afghanistan. A Sufi, he lived at Rum (now Konya, in Turkey), wrote *Mathnawi*, a poetic account of Sufism, and was virtual founder of the 'whirling dervishes'.

**Rumsfeld, Donald Henry** (1932–2021). American administrator and Republican politician, born in Illinois. Educated at Princeton, he served in the US Congress 1963–69 and became Ambassador to NATO 1973–74 and White House Chief of Staff 1974–75. He worked as a CEO in the pharmaceutical and electronics industries and had two terms as Secretary of Defense, 1975–77 and 2001–06. His interests included wrestling and poetry.

**Runcie, Robert Alexander Kennedy, Baron Runcie** (1921–2000). English prelate. Educated at Oxford and Cambridge, he served in World War II, and was Bishop of St Albans 1973–80 and Archbishop of Canterbury 1980–91.

**Runciman, Garry** (Walter Garrison), **3rd Viscount Runciman of Doxford** (1934–2020). English historical sociologist. He had an active life as ship owner and company director but as a fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge 1959–63, 1971–2020, was a productive and original sociologist and expert on Max \*Weber. He chaired the Royal Commission on Criminal Justice 1991–93 and was President of the British Academy 2001–05. His books include *Great Books, Bad Arguments: Republic, Leviathan, and The Communist Manifesto* (2010). His son, **David Walter Runciman, 4th Viscount Runciman** (1967– ), a professor of political theory at Cambridge, wrote *The Politics of Good Intentions* (2006), *Political Hypocrisy* (2008), and *The Confidence Trap* (2013).

**Runciman, Sir Steven** (James Cochrane Stevenson) (1903–2000). English historian. Educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, his books include *The First Crusade* (1951), *The Sicilian Vespers* (1958) and *The Fall of Constantinople 1453* (1965). He received a CH in 1984. The sociologist Garry \*Runciman was a nephew.

Dinshaw, M., *Outlandish Knight*. 2016.



**Rundstedt, (Karl Rudolf) Gerd von** (1875–1953). German field marshal. Born into an old Junker family, he fought in France, Russia and Turkey in World War I but, despite his seniority, he was passed over in favour of \*Brauchitsch for chief command in World War II. He proved himself one of the greatest German generals. He commanded an army group in Poland (1939), he directed the drive across the Meuse (1940), which reached the Channel ports, and was in charge of the great sweep through southern Russia (1941). The massacre of Jews at Babi Yar (September 1941) took place under his command, but he denied direct responsibility. In 1942, he was transferred to the West to prepare for, and resist (1944), the Allied attack. Briefly supplanted by von \*Kluge owing to strategical disputes, on his return he staged the last spectacular counter-attack in the Ardennes. Held prisoner in England for a time after the war, ill and old, he was never sent for trial to Nuremberg.

**Runeberg, Johan Ludvig** (1804–1877). Finnish poet. His works, written (as was then customary) in Swedish, include the long narrative poems *The Elk-hunters* (1832) and *The Tales of Ensign Stal* (1848), an old soldier's memories of the war with Russia of 1808, the opening poem of which has become Finland's national anthem. *King Fjaler* (1844) is a romance cycle of the Viking period. Many of Runeberg's ballads and lyrics were set to music by \*Sibelius.

**Runyon, Damon** (1884–1946). American writer. Originally a sports writer, he gains fame by his stories and sketches of New York characters written in the present tense in a racy, continuously flowing style which gives an exciting immediacy. Among his characters are Harry the Horse, Ambrose Hammer, Little Dutch, Ropes McGonagle and many more. His tales make successful films, e.g. *Guys and Dolls* (1931), and *Little Miss Marker* (1934) starring Shirley \*Temple.

**Rupert of the Rhine, Prince** (Ruprecht von Wittelsbach), **1st Duke of Cumberland** (1619–1682). Anglo-German general and admiral, courtier and inventor, born in Prague. Son of the elector Palatine \*Frederick (Friedrich) V, and of Elizabeth, daughter of \*James I of Great Britain, after fighting in the Thirty Years' War he went to England (1642) to support his uncle \*Charles I. His brilliance as a cavalry officer won many successes in the early part of the conflict, though his reckless impetuosity sometimes led him to continue the pursuit instead of returning to consolidate victory. Criticism of his surrender of Bristol (1645) caused him to demand a court martial, which acquitted him. Convinced that the Royalist cause was lost, he urged Charles to negotiate with Parliament. After Charles' defeat and imprisonment, he continued the Civil War as a privateer in the Caribbean, explored Gambia and invested in the slave trade. He lived in France for a decade. He returned to England after the Restoration and served as an admiral in the Dutch Wars. He was Lord High Admiral 1668–82. His military exploits

were supplemented by his achievements as artist, scientist and inventor. He was active in the formation of the Royal Society in 1662 and introduced (but probably did not invent) the mezzotint process. In 1668 he spent the winter in the Arctic, and he helped to found the Hudson's Bay Company (1670).

Ashley, M., *Rupert of the Rhine*. 1976; Kitson, F., *Prince Rupert*. 1994.

**Rurik** (d.879). Russian ruler and dynastic founder. A Varangian (Scandinavian), he probably reached Novgorod in 962 and after his death his descendants formed principalities in Kiev, Moscow and elsewhere. Indeed, until the failure of the Muscovite line in 1598 with the death of Feodor I, usurpers all over Russia claimed to be of Rurik's blood. Even in later times Rurik's descendants were automatically styled 'prince'.

**Rush, Benjamin** (1746–1813). American chemist and medical practitioner, born near Philadelphia. He studied medicine at the College of New Jersey, and at Edinburgh under William Cullen and Joseph \*Black. He received an Edinburgh MD in 1769, then became professor of chemistry at the College of Philadelphia. In 1789 he moved to the chair of the Theory and Practice of Physick. His chemical thinking closely followed that of Black, but he was more original in his medical outlook. Whereas Cullen had explained most diseases in terms of the nervous system, Rush thought the arterial system more important. Thinking that most diseases originated from excessive tension in the arterial system, he became an enthusiastic exponent of reducing that pressure by heroic quantities of bleeding. Later in his life, his interest turned chiefly towards mental illness, having been placed in charge of the insane at Pennsylvania Hospital in 1787. His *Medical Inquiries and Observations upon the Diseases of the Mind* (1812) is the first American work of psychiatry. Rush was an ardent supporter of American Independence, being a signatory of the Declaration. He was opposed to slavery and capital punishment, and a promoter of women's education, being a founder of Dickinson College. He was an important teacher and one of the inspirational figures of American medicine.

**Rush, Geoffrey Roy** (1951– ). Australian actor and producer, born in Toowoomba. He gained international recognition as a film actor, winning the Academy Award for best actor in *Shine* (1996), an Emmy Award for *The Life and Death of Peter Sellers* (2004) and a BAFTA Award for *The King's Speech* (2010). He was Australian of the Year (2012) and foundation President of the Australian Academy of Cinema and Television Arts.

**Rushdie, Sir (Ahmed) Salman** (1947– ). Indian-British writer. Born in Mumbai (Bombay) to a Muslim family on the day of Indian independence, he was educated at Mumbai, Rugby School and Cambridge and worked as an advertising copywriter and actor. His novels include *Midnight's Children*,

about the separation of India and Pakistan on the day of Rushdie's birth, which won the 1981 Booker Prize, *Shame* (1983), *The Satanic Verses* (1988) and *The Moor's Last Sigh* (1995). Publication of *Satanic Verses* led to international protests in the Islamic community and the pronouncing of a fatwah (excommunication and sentence of death) by Ayatollah \*Khomeini, who had been satirised in the novel, alleging blasphemy as the justification. Bookshops carrying the book were also attacked and protest marches occurred as far away as China. Rushdie then went into hiding. He also wrote *The Jaguar Smile: A Nicaraguan Journey* (1987), *Imaginary Homelands: Essays and Criticism 1981–91* (1991) and books for children. . In August 2022 he was savagely stabbed in New York State.

**Rusk, (David) Dean** (1909–1994). American administrator, born in Georgia. After a professorship at Mills College, California, and army service (1940–46), he was Deputy Undersecretary of State under \*Truman 1946–52, President of the Rockefeller Foundation 1952–61 and Secretary of State under \*Kennedy and \*Johnson 1961–69. He took a leading role in negotiating for the nuclear test ban treaty (1963) but was a prominent 'hawk' during the Vietnam war.

**Ruskin, John** (1819–1900). English author, art critic and social reformer, born in London. Son of a wealthy wine merchant, he was brought up in a cultured and religious family, but his mother's over protectiveness undoubtedly contributed to his later psychological troubles. On his frequent trips in Europe, he took an artist's and a poet's delight both in landscape and in works of art, especially medieval and Renaissance. His first great work, *Modern Painters* (5 volumes, 1843–60), began as a passionate defence of \*Turner's pictures, but became a study of the principles of art. In *The Seven Lamps of Architecture* (1849) and *The Stones of Venice* (1851) he similarly treated the fundamentals of architecture. These principles enabled him, incidentally, to appreciate and defend the Pre-Raphaelites, then the target of violent abuse. To Ruskin the relationship between art, morality and social justice was of paramount importance and he increasingly became preoccupied with social reform. His concern inspired, among others, William \*Morris and Arnold \*Toynbee. He founded the Working Men's College (1854) and backed with money the experiments of Octavia \*Hill in the management of house property.

In his essay 'Unto This Last' (1860), he coined the word 'illth', the underside of 'wealth', the collateral damage caused by change and accumulation of power. He advocated social reforms which later were adopted by all political parties: old age pensions, universal free education, better housing. Nevertheless, he described himself as a 'violent Tory of the old school, of Walter \*Scott—and \*Homer', working with Thomas \*Carlyle to defend Edward John \*Eyre against prosecution for murder after his

violent suppression of a rebellion in Jamaica (1865).

Gothic was for Ruskin the expression of an integrated and spiritual civilisation; classicism represented paganism and corruption; the use of cast iron, and the increasing importance of function in architecture and engineering seemed to him a lamentable trend. He was Slade professor of art at Oxford 1870–79 and 1883–84. His later works, e.g. *Sesame and Lilies* (1865), *The Crown of Wild Olives* (1866) and *Fors Clavigera* (1871–84), contain the program of social reform in which he was so interested. Ruskin married (1848) Euphemia (Effie) Gray (the child for whom he had written *The King of the Golden River*) but in 1854, after six years of non-consummation, the marriage was annulled and Effie later married the painter John \*Millais. Ruskin did not remarry, although on other occasions he fell in love with girls much younger than himself. His last disappointment over Rose la Touche contributed to a mental breakdown and his last years were spent in seclusion at Brantwood on Lake Coniston, where he wrote *Praeterita*, an unfinished account of his early life. Much of his wealth he devoted to the 'Guild of St George', which he founded, and other schemes of social welfare. Ruskin had (despite his sometimes violent views) profound influence on \*Gandhi and \*Proust.

Rosenberg, J. D., *The Darkening Glass*. 1961; Hilton, T., *John Ruskin*. 2002; Cooper, S. F., *To See Clearly. Why Ruskin Matters*. 2019; Hill, A., *Ruskinland. How John Ruskin Shapes Our World*. 2019.

**Russell**. Family name of the dukes of Bedford. The family fortunes were founded by **John Russell** (c.1486–1555), favourite of \*Henry VIII, who created him Earl of Bedford and gave him Woburn Abbey and other Church lands. Drainage of the Bedford Level in the Fens was begun by **Francis**, the **4th Earl**. **William**, the **5th Earl** (1613–1700), who had helped to restore \*Charles II, was created **1st Duke of Bedford** (1694) by \*William III. The names of the Bloomsbury squares (Russell, Bedford, Woburn) recall an enterprising piece of property development by the Russell family (\*Russell, Bertrand; \*Russell, Lord John; \*Russell, Lord William).

**Russell, Bertrand Arthur William, 3rd Earl Russell** (1872–1970). English philosopher and mathematician, born in Wales. Son of the radical **John Russell, Viscount Amberley** (1842–1876) and grandson of Lord John \*Russell, he studied mathematics at Trinity College, Cambridge where he was a Fellow 1895–1921, 1944–70 and lecturer 1910–15, 1919–21, being elected FRS in 1908. Having also studied philosophy (his *Philosophy of Leibniz* appeared in 1900), he was particularly well equipped to write (in collaboration with Alfred North \*Whitehead) *Principia Mathematica* (3 volumes, 1910–13), an attempt to show that the truths of mathematics are derivable from the basic truths of logic; this great work had immense influence. The appearance of *Problems of Philosophy* (1912) marked a gradual transference of

interest to less purely abstract fields. He had already abandoned his early Hegelian idealism for a form of realism demanded by his faith in mathematical truth. He now offered a theory of knowledge which had at its centre not idealistic inferences from the unknown but logical constructions out of sense data and other ascertainable phenomena.

He was greatly influenced by Gottlob \*Frege and his own student Ludwig \*Wittgenstein. With the austerity of Russell's academic thought is his exuberant championing of the unorthodox view in public life. A characteristic essay explained why he was not a Christian. He defended sexual freedom, and from a study of his own children established a progressive 'school'. In World War I he was fined and imprisoned (1918–1919) for sedition. A visit to Russia disillusioned him about Communism and he wrote *The Practice and Theory of Bolshevism* (1920) and several popular books about philosophy, science and education. He succeeded his brother Frank as 3rd Earl in 1931, married four times and had many amours. After being sacked from a New York chair (1940) for his writings on sexuality, he gave lectures at the \*Barnes Foundation, Merion, Pa. (1941–42) which became the basis of his popular *A History of Western Philosophy* (1945). He abandoned his pacifist views in World War II, but later became a notable supporter of the Campaign for Nuclear Disarmament and the Committee of 100. He was imprisoned again in August 1961. Among his many honours were the OM (1949) and the Nobel Prize for Literature (1950).

Russell, B., *Autobiography*. Vol 1. 1967, Vol. 2. 1968; Clarke, R. W., *The Life of Bertrand Russell*. 1975; Moorehead, C., *Bertrand Russell*, 1992; Monk, R., *Bertrand Russell: The Spirit of Solitude*. 1996; *The Ghost of Madness*. 2000.

**Russell, Charles Taze** (1852–1916). American preacher. Founder (1872) of the International Bible Students, in 1884 the movement was renamed the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society, the members of which became known (1931) as Jehovah's Witnesses. They hold firm pacifist views and believe in the imminence of a second armageddon and a period of 1,000 years when sinners will be given a second chance to reform and repent.

**Russell, George William** (1867–1935). Irish writer. Better known under his pseudonyms AE, A E and A.E., he was closely linked with other leaders of the Irish literary renaissance, notably W. B. \*Yeats, with whom he was associated in the creation (1904) of the Abbey Theatre, Dublin. Russell's drama *Deirdre* had been produced only two years before. Earlier he had joined Horace Plunkett's Irish Agricultural Organisation Society (IAOS) designed to improve the conditions of poor farmers, and edited the *Irish Statesman* 1923–30. Among his prose works are *Imaginations and Reveries* (1915) and *Song and its Fountains* (1932); his poems are mostly mystical.

**Russell, John, 1st Earl Russell** (1792–1878). English Liberal politician, born in London. Third son of the 6th Duke of Bedford, educated at Westminster School and Edinburgh University (but leaving without a degree), as **Lord John Russell** he was MP 1813–17, 1818–61. The nickname 'Finality Jack' indicated his firm support for all measures of civil and religious liberty, in the tradition of Charles James \*Fox. He was a member of Earl \*Grey's ministry which carried the Parliamentary Reform Act of 1832, which Russell had a principal part in framing. As Home Secretary 1835–39 in Lord \*Melbourne's second ministry he passed the Municipal Reform Act (1835) and the Titles Commutation Act (1836), but a moderate attempt to secure freer trade caused the defeat and fall of the government. To prove that he had the support of the financial community Russell stood for and was elected by the City of London, which he represented until 1861. When \*Peel became Prime Minister, Lord John was Leader of the Opposition. He pronounced (1846) in favour of the complete repeal of the Corn Laws. The government fell but Russell was unable to form a ministry. Peel returned and, having legislated repeal with Whig support, was immediately defeated and again resigned. Russell now became Prime Minister 1846–52 and proved his worth by coping with the Irish famine and the Chartist agitation, until friction with \*Palmerston, his Foreign Secretary (whom he dismissed), broke up the ministry. Russell was Foreign Secretary 1852–53 in Lord \*Aberdeen's coalition but criticisms of the conduct of the Crimean War caused him to resign from Cabinet (1855). As British delegate to the Vienna Conference the compromise he tried to agree with Russia was rejected by Cabinet, and Russell was without office until, in 1859, he came to terms with Palmerston. As Foreign Secretary 1859–65 and Prime Minister 1865–66 he supported the unification of Italy under King \*Vittorio Emanuele and maintained British neutrality in the American Civil War. He resigned after failing to secure the passage of a new Reform Bill.

**Russell, Mary Annette Russell** (née Beauchamp), Countess *see* **Arnim, Elizabeth von**

**Russell, William, Lord Russell** (1639–1683). English Whig politician. Son of the 5th Earl (later 1st Duke) of Bedford, educated at Cambridge, he was a Whig MP 1660–79, passionately anti-Catholic, deeply opposed to the prospect of \*Charles II being succeeded by his Catholic brother James (later \*James II) and hostile to the influence of the 'Cabal' (\*Clifford of Chudleigh). He was convicted of treason after a reasonably fair trial and was beheaded for his alleged participation in the Rye House plot to assassinate \*Charles II on his return from Newmarket. Of Russell's ignorance of this conspiracy there is no doubt, but it is equally certain that he, Algernon \*Sidney and the more violent Whigs were planning rebellion. Popular indignation aroused

by the unmasking of the Rye House plotters spread to the others and enabled a charge of treason to be maintained.

**Russell, Sir William Howard** (1820–1907). Anglo-Irish journalist, born near Dublin. The first, and one of the greatest, war correspondents (a description he disliked), he began his career reporting the stormy politics of Ireland. In 1854, *The Times* sent him to the Crimea where his vivid descriptions of the great battles of Balaclava and Inkerman shocked readers with revelations of appalling sufferings caused to the troops by the failures of the supply and medical services, the latter leading to the dispatch of Florence \*Nightingale. Later he reported the Indian Mutiny (and by his articles stayed indiscriminate punishments), the US Civil War (where he sympathised with the Union but made enemies with his critical reporting) and, finally, the Austro-Prussian, Franco-Prussian and Zulu wars. He founded (1860) the *Army and Navy Gazette*.

Russell, W. H., *Despatches from the Crimea, 1854–1856* (ed. Bentley, N.). 1970.

**Ruth, 'Babe'** (né George Herman, Jr) (1895–1948). American baseball player, born in Baltimore. The greatest player of the period 1914–35 (often called 'the Sultan of Swat'), and a left-hander, he established many records, e.g. the most home runs secured in a season (60 in 1927). He played for the Baltimore Orioles (1914), the Boston Red Sox (1914–19) and the New York Yankees (1920–34). After retirement he coached the Brooklyn Dodgers. In 2018 he was posthumously awarded the Presidential Medal of Freedom by Donald \*Trump.

**Rutherford, Ernest, 1st Baron Rutherford of Nelson** (1871–1937). New Zealand physicist, born in Nelson. Educated at Canterbury College, Christchurch, he won an exhibition that took him to Cambridge where he worked with J. J. \*Thomson on the long series of fundamental researches into radioactivity and the structure of the atom for which he became famous. His progress was marked by professorships of physics at McGill University, Montréal 1898–1907, Manchester 1907–19 and the Cavendish chair at Cambridge 1919–37. With \*Soddy, he put forward (1903) the radioactive transformation theory, which showed that radioactivity arises from spontaneous disintegration of atoms. He also deduced the laws governing the transformations producing radioactivity. He suggested (1911) that the atom consists of a minute nucleus around which electrons orbit, and his model of the nuclear atom became the basis of modern concepts of atomic structure. He realised that if the atom could be split artificially, very large amounts of energy would be released. He succeeded in transforming nitrogen into an isotope of oxygen (1919) and thus, for the first time, achieved transmutation of elements. Apart from his own important discoveries, Rutherford was a great teacher and had, as pupils, many eminent scientists, e.g. \*Appleton, \*Bohr, \*Cockcroft, \*Walton, \*Hahn,

\*Kapitza, \*Chadwick and \*Oliphant. He won the 1908 Nobel Prize for Chemistry (a surprise as he had expected Physics), was knighted in 1914, received the Copley Medal in 1922, the OM in 1925, became President of the Royal Society 1920–25 and a baron in 1931. A great experimenter, the next step for him was often the right one, although sometimes his judgment was wrong e.g. his dismissal of nuclear power as 'moonshine'. One of the greatest figures in the history of science, he had a warm, open nature and a kindly common sense for which he was loved by pupils and contemporaries alike.

Chadwick, J. (ed.), *The Collected Papers of Lord Rutherford of Nelson*. 1962–1965; Ramsey, A., *The Basis of Everything. Rutherford, Oliphant and the Coming of the Atomic Bomb*. 2019.

**Rutherford, Dame Margaret** (née Margaret Taylor Rutherford-Benn) (1892–1972). English actor. Her father murdered his own father and was certified insane. Famous for portraying elderly eccentrics, she was originally a teacher of elocution, and made her stage debut in 1925. Her most famous roles were Madam Arcati in *Blithe Spirit* (1941) and Miss Whitechurch in *The Happiest Days of Your Life* (1948). Her film career included the character of Miss Marple in the filmed detective novels of Agatha \*Christie, and she made films with Charles \*Chaplin and Orson \*Welles. She won an Academy Award in 1963 and was made DBE in 1967.

**Rutskoi, Aleksandr Vladimirovich** (1947– ). Russian soldier and politician. A fighter-bomber pilot, he served in Afghanistan and formed the Peoples' Party of Free Russia, which included many former CP hardliners. Vice President of Russia 1991–93, he was sacked by \*Yeltsin and claimed the presidency himself.

**Ruysdael** (or Ruisdael), **Jacob van** (1628–1682). Dutch landscape painter, born at Haarlem. Originally a physician, probably trained by his uncle **Solomon van Ruysdael** (c.1600–1670), his quiet pictures of dunes, marshes, rivers and woodlands, mostly in golden-brown tones, are inspired with strong feeling and had much influence on the German Romantics, the *Mill at Wijk* being among the best known. His Scandinavian landscapes are also notable.

**Ruyter, Michiel Adriaan de** (1607–1676). Dutch sailor. He first went to sea as a cabin boy in a merchantman, but having transferred to the navy was a captain by 1635. In the first Dutch War (1652–53), fought during the Commonwealth, he and \*Tromp contended with varying fortunes against the English admiral \*Blake. In the second Dutch War (1664–67) against England he captured forts on the African coast, preyed upon shipping in the West Indies and fought (1666) a four-day battle against Prince \*Rupert and \*Monk off Dunkirk. In 1667 he made sensational raids up the Medway to Rochester and the Thames to Gravesend, burning ships as he

went. In 1676—Holland and England having come to terms—he took his fleet into the Mediterranean to aid Spain, but died from wounds after a defeat by the French off Sicily.

**Ryan, Paul Davis** (1970– ). American Republican politician, born in Wisconsin. Catholic, originally inspired by reading Ayn \*Rand, he studied at the curiously named Miami University (at Oxford, Ohio) and was a Member of the House of Representatives 1999–2019. Candidate for Vice President 2012, he was Speaker of the House 2015–19.

**Ryan, Thomas Joseph** (1876–1921). Australian Labor politician and lawyer, born in Part Fairy, Victoria. Son of Irish immigrants, educated in Melbourne, he was a teacher and lawyer, then moved to Queensland. A State MP 1909–19, he became ALP leader 1912–19, and Premier and Attorney-General of Queensland 1915–19. His reforming government had an ambitious social and economic agenda, but his Bill to abolish capital punishment (1916) was blocked by the Legislative Council. He transferred to the Federal Parliament 1919–21 and was regarded as certain to become leader when he died suddenly, of influenza, at Barcaldine.

**Ryckmans, Pierre** *see* **Leys, Simon**

**Rykov, Aleksei Ivanovich** (1881–1938). Russian politician. Originally a Social Democrat, he joined the Bolsheviks in 1905. Arrested and imprisoned several times, after the Revolution he was head of the Supreme Council of National Economy 1918–21; 1921–24, Deputy Premier of the USSR 1921–24, a Politburo member 1922–30. He succeeded Lenin as Premier 1924–30. \*Stalin dismissed him, but he re-entered the government as Commissar for Communications 1931–37 when he recanted his opposition to Stalin's policies. Charged with complicity in a plot to murder Stalin (1936) he was tried and executed with Nikolai \*Bukharin.

Schapiro, L., *The Communist Party of the Soviet Union*. 1960.

**Rylands, 'Dadie'** (George Humphrey Wolferstan) (1902–1999). English literary scholar and director. A Fellow of King's College, Cambridge 1927–99, he was close to the Bloomsbury Group, directed many innovative productions of \*Shakespeare, \*Marlowe and \*Eliot, and received a CH in 1987.

**Ryle, Sir Martin** (1918–1984). English astronomer. He worked on radar during World War II, and at Cambridge (from 1945) developed new techniques involving the use of radar devices and, later, computers, leading to the aperture synthesis interferometer. He directed the Mullard Radio Astronomy Laboratory 1957–84, was a professor of radio-astronomy at Cambridge 1959–84 and Astronomer Royal 1972–84. He shared the 1974 Nobel Prize for Physics with

Antony \*Hewish for their work on quasars, originally discovered by Jocelyn \*Bell who was excluded from the award.

**Rysbrack, John Michael** (1693–1770). Dutch sculptor. He worked in England from 1720, first worked for James Gibbs and William \*Kent on figures for tombs in Westminster Abbey (e.g. Matthew Pryor, \*Newton). Later the family tomb (1733) erected for the Marlborough family at Blenheim and the bronze equestrian statue of \*William III at Bristol led to a steady flow of commissions. He executed the statue of \*George II at Greenwich Hospital and many fine portrait busts (e.g. \*Pope, \*Milton and Sir Robert \*Walpole).

**Ryti, Risto Heikki** (1889–1956). Finnish politician, economist and banker. A progressive Anglophile, Governor of the Bank of Finland 1923–39; 1944–45, he served as Prime Minister 1939–40 and President of Finland 1940–44. The 'Continuation War' with Russia 1941–44 forced him into an uneasy alliance with Nazi Germany, which broke down in 1944. In 1945, under pressure from the USSR, Ryti was convicted of 'war responsibility', a new offence. He was sentenced to 10 years jail, but was released and pardoned in 1949.

## S

**Saarinén, Eero** (1910–1961). American architect, born in Finland. Son of the architect **Eliel Saarinen** (1873–1950), his family lived in the US from 1923. Eero's buildings include the General Motors technical centre at Detroit, the TWA terminal at Kennedy Airport, the US Embassy in London, and major buildings at MIT, Yale and Dulles Airport, Washington.

Temko, A., *Eero Saarinen*. 1962.

**Sabatier, Paul** (1854–1941). French chemist. Professor of chemistry at Nîmes, Bordeaux and Toulouse, he is best known for his discovery (1899), with **Jean-Baptiste Senderens** (1856–1937), of the method of converting oils into fats by hydrogenation over a catalyst of finely divided nickel. This is the basis of present-day manufacture of margarine from materials such as palm oil and whale oil. He won the 1912 Nobel Prize for Chemistry.

**Sabatini, Rafael** (1875–1950). English novelist, born in Italy. His popular historical novels and adventure stories include *Scaramouche* (1921), *Captain Blood* (1922) and *The Black Swan* (1932).

**Sabin, Albert Bruce** (1906–1993). American virologist, born in Russia. He graduated in medicine from New York University, worked for the Rockefeller Institute, Cincinnati University and the National Institute of Health. A rival of Jonas \*Salk, he developed an oral vaccine against poliomyelitis which was adopted universally.

**Sabine, Sir Edward** (1788–1883). British soldier and scientist. After being commissioned in the Royal Artillery he accompanied several voyages of exploration as an astronomer. He carried out much research on terrestrial magnetism and discovered the connexion between sunspots and magnetic disturbances on the earth. He was President of the Royal Society 1861–71.

**Sacagawea** ('Bird Woman') (1787?–1812). American Indian (Shoshone) guide. Married to a Canadian trapper, she accompanied the expedition of \*Lewis and \*Clark (1805).

**Sacco, Nicola** (1891–1927), and **Bartolomeo Vanzetti** (1888–1927). Italian anarchists, resident in the US. Following the murders of a paymaster and a guard at a shoe factory in South Braintree, Mass. (April 1920), they were tried and convicted at Dedham (1921) on circumstantial evidence. Because they were anarchists, it was widely believed that they were the victims of political prejudice. International protests followed but appeals were refused and they

were electrocuted. In 1977, following a review, Governor Mike \*Dukakis declared them to have been 'unfairly tried and executed'. Their case has been the basis for many books, a film, documentaries, songs and art works. Further research suggests that Sacco was probably guilty and Vanzetti innocent.

Russell, F., *Tragedy in Dedham*. 1971; *Sacco and Vanzetti: The Case Resolved*. 1986; Avich, P., *Sacco and Vanzetti: The Anarchist Background*. 1991; Watson, B., *Sacco and Vanzetti: The Men, the Murders, and the Judgment of Mankind*. 2007.

**Sacheverell, Henry** (1672–1724). English clergyman. He shared rooms with \*Addison at Oxford and later became well known as a 'High-Church' preacher. He preached at Derby and St Paul's, in 1709, sermons so violent in their denunciation of the Act of Toleration and the Whig ministry that he was impeached and, despite his skilful defence and the encouragement of a yelling crowd of supporters outside, was suspended from preaching for three years. At the end of this time the government had changed, Sacheverell was invited to speak before the House of Commons and became rector of St Andrew's, Holborn, where he is buried. Quarrels with parishioners and Jacobite intrigues occupied his remaining years.

Holmes, G., *The Trial of Doctor Sacheverell*. 1973.

**Sachs, Hans** (1494–1576). German poet and Meistersinger. A shoemaker by trade, he became a 'master singer' in the Nuremberg guild (1517), wrote more than 4,000 'master songs' and led the guild from 1554. An enthusiastic Lutheran, he is the central figure in \*Wagner's opera, *Die Meistersinger von Nürnberg* (1868).

**Sacks, Oliver Wolf** (1933–2015). British writer and neurologist. Educated at Oxford, he worked in the US from 1962 and wrote a series of successful books about neurological conditions and treatment, including *Migraine* (1970), *Awakenings* (1973, also filmed), *The Man who Mistook his Wife for a Hat* (1985, also an opera) and *Seeing Voices: a Journey into the World of the Deaf* (1989). *Uncle Tungsten* (2001) is a memoir of boyhood.

**Sackville-West, Victoria Mary** ('Vita') (1892–1962). English poet, novelist and gardener, born in Knole, Kent. Daughter of 3rd Baron Sackville, she was largely educated at home. She married (1913) Sir Harold \*Nicolson, and was the lover of Virginia \*Woolf. In *Knole and the Sackvilles* (1922) she described her family's historic home, and set her novel *The Elizabethans* (1930) there. Her long poem *The Land* (1927) won the Hawthornden Prize. Best remembered as a gardener, especially at Sissinghurst Castle, Kent, she received a CH in 1948.

**Sadat, Mohamed Anwar el** (1918–1981). Egyptian soldier. He was commissioned in 1938, rising to the rank of colonel. He took part in the army officers'

coup of 1952 which deposed King Farouk and was Minister of State 1955–56, Speaker of the United Arab Republic National Assembly 1961–69 and Member of the Presidential Council 1962–64. Vice President of Egypt 1964–66 and again in 1969, he was elected President in October 1970. Particularly noted for his initiative in going to Israel for peace talks in November 1977, his action put an end to a longstanding policy of Israeli–Egyptian confrontation. A peace treaty was finally signed in 1979. He shared the Nobel Prize for Peace with Prime Minister Begin in 1978. He was assassinated by dissident officers.

Sadat, M. A. el, *In Search of Identity*. 1978.

**Saddam Hussein** (1937–2006). Iraqi politician, born in Tikrit. Educated in Baghdad and Cairo, he was a militant in the Arab Ba'ath Socialist Party and was twice exiled. In 1968, the Ba'athists seized power, **Ahmed Hassan al-Bakr** (1914–1982) became President of Iraq 1968–79, and Saddam, Deputy Chair of the Revolutionary Command Council, was Vice President 1968–79. Saddam pushed the ailing al-Bakr to resign and as President of Iraq and Commander-in-Chief of the Iraqi armed forces 1979–2003, he exercised absolute power. Secular Iraq was at war with Islamic fundamentalist Iran 1980–88 and both sides received material aid from the US. He suppressed minorities, especially the Kurds. In August 1990 Iraq occupied Kuwait and this led to the formation of an international coalition organised by President \*Bush under UN auspices, which imposed economic sanctions and resulted in military invasion. The Iraqi forces were heavily defeated by 'Operation Desert Storm' in the Gulf War in February 1991. Saddam was forced to give up Kuwait but he remained in power, still a popular hero. UN forces resumed air attacks in January 1993. Saddam's failure to open up weapons storage sites to UN inspectors led to threats of US air attacks (February–March 1998), a situation averted by a settlement negotiated by the UN Secretary-General Kofi \*Annan. In December 1998 after Saddam's refusal to cooperate with UN arms inspectors, the US and UK launched four days of attack on Baghdad: this merely consolidated his position. The US led a 'coalition of the willing' against Iraq, claiming that 'weapons of mass destruction' posed a serious threat to world peace. Iraq was occupied in April 2003 after 28 days of fighting, but continuous acts of violence continued. Saddam disappeared but was found near Tikrit in December 2003, and his trial for the murder of Shi'ites in 1982 began in November 2005. After an appeal court upheld his death sentence, Saddam was speedily hanged in Baghdad.

**Sade, Donatien Alphonse François, Marquis de** (1740–1814). French author. He fought in the Seven Years' War, and was imprisoned many times for crimes of wanton cruelty (hence the word 'sadism'). To avoid a death penalty he lived for a time in Italy

but returned (1777) and was again imprisoned. Released in 1791, he began to publish a number of 'novels' (e.g. *Justine*) which are in part sexual fantasy, in part pseudo-philosophical attempts to justify his vices. He also wrote a melodrama, *Otiern*. He was confined on the orders of \*Napoléon in a criminal lunatic asylum where he died.

Gorer, G., *The Life and Ideas of the Marquis de Sade*. 1963.

**Sa'di** (or **Saadi**) (Abū-Muhammad Muslih al-Dīn bin Abdallāh Shirāzi) (1210–1291). Persian poet, born and lived in Shiraz. His many books are concerned with morals and ethics and his long poem *Bustan*, and *Gulistan*, a miscellany in verse and prose, are still highly regarded and used as models of style in Iranian schools.

**Safdie, Moshe** (1938– ). Canadian architect, born in Israel. He worked with Louis \*Kahn, created the controversial Habitat '67 for the Montréal Expo, and taught urban design at Harvard 1978–89. Other buildings included the National Gallery of Canada, Ottawa, the Toronto Ballet and the Museum of Civilisation, Québec.

**Sagan** (originally Quoirez), **Françoise** (1935–2004). French novelist. Her books, *Bonjour Tristesse* (1954) and *Aimez-vous Brahms?* (1959), probe with frankness and subtlety the sexual relationships of sophisticated youth in her social environment and achieved immense contemporary success. Later novels had less impact. She also wrote the plays *Château en Suede* (1960), *Les Violons, parfois* (1961) and *Un piano dans l'herbe* (1970).

**Said, Edward Wadie** (1935–2003). American-Palestinian academic and critic, born in Jerusalem. Educated at Princeton and Harvard, he became professor of English and comparative literature at Columbia University 1977–2003. His book *Orientalism* (1978) was enormously influential, and Said was identified (and attacked) as a pioneer of multiculturalism and the post-structural Left. A strong advocate for Palestinian statehood, he broke with Yasser \*Arafat, and worked on cultural causes with Daniel \*Barenboim.

**Saigo Takamori** (1827–1877). Japanese field marshal. A samurai from Satsuma, he was a notable warrior, famous for his bravery and height (1.8m), who led imperial troops in the final overthrow of the shogunate. He urged invasion of Korea (1873) and resigned in a fury when his plans were rejected. He led the Satsuma revolt (January–September 1877) against foreign influence and the adoption of western technologies during the Meiji restoration, but was defeated by a conscript peasant army. Wounded in battle, he asked a friend to behead him. Japanese militarists in the 1930s regarded him as a hero.

Morris, I., *The Nobility of Failure*. 1980.

**Sainsbury.** English retailing dynasty. **John James Sainsbury** (1844–1928), a London grocer, began a chain of stores that expanded throughout Britain. Family members became active in philanthropy, politics and support for the arts, science and mental health. There were three life peers (two Labour, one Tory); the Sainsbury Wing at the National Gallery, London; the Sainsbury Institute for Art in East Anglia; a Sainsbury Laboratory in Cambridge.

**Saint Arnaud, Jacques Leroy de** (1796–1854). French soldier. After achieving a high reputation in Algeria, he was created a marshal for helping to effect the *coup d'état* by which \*Napoléon III became Emperor. He commanded French troops cooperating with the British in the Crimean War and took part in the Battle of the Alma. He died nine days later.

**Saint-Beuve, Charles Augustin** (1804–1869). French critic. After studying medicine he took to journalism and joined the group of Romantic writers of whom Victor \*Hugo was the centre. Successful neither with his own poems nor a self-analytical novel, *Volupté* (1835), he turned to criticism, an art form much more suited to his natural scepticism. In a long series of critical studies beginning with *Portraits littéraires* (1832–39) and *Portraits le femmes* (1844), he arrived at his literary verdicts by identifying himself with the writers concerned, aided in this by his medical knowledge, psychological insight and analytical mind. His thoroughness is shown in his vast *Histoire de Port Royal* (1840–60) which, in order to explain the characters and background of the learned members of this headquarters of Jansenism, includes a series of vivid portraits of such great 17th-century figures as \*Corneille, \*Molière, \*Racine. After the revolution of 1848, Sainte-Beuve withdrew for a time to Belgium, but soon returned and became reconciled with the new regime. He was given teaching posts at the Collège de France and the École Normale Supérieure and, with a critical article produced regularly week after week, became one of the great literary figures of the Second Empire, and is considered one of the greatest critics.

Lehmann, A. G., *Sainte-Beuve: a Portrait of the Critic 1804–1842*. 1962.

**Saint-Evremond, Charles de Saint-Denis de** (1616–1703). French critic and essayist. Having offended \*Mazarin by incautious criticism, he was imprisoned in the Bastille and later took refuge first in Holland and then in England where he spent the rest of his life except for a five-year interval following a flight from the plague of 1665. From 1675 he was in devoted attendance upon Hortense, Duchesse de Mazarin, who had also fled from her uncle's displeasure. He kept in close touch with Paris, and the essays and correspondence of this wise and witty observer of the literary and political scene long remained popular. He was buried in Westminster Abbey.

**Saint-Exupéry, Antoine Marie Roger de** (1900–1944). French aviator and writer. He became a pilot in 1926, pioneered several commercial air routes, and despite his age flew for the French Air Force in World War II. He disappeared on a reconnaissance flight over the Mediterranean. Flying had always fascinated him, and he conveyed the rare sense of exaltation he derived from flying in books such as *Vol de nuit* (1931) and *Pilote de guerre* (1942). In this way he inspired a whole generation of flyers. Thought and fantasy make a successful blend in his children's story *Le Petit Prince* (1943).

**Saint-Gaudens, Augustus** (1848–1907). American sculptor, born in Dublin. Of French-Irish parentage, he settled in New York in 1875 and was highly praised for his memorials (\*Lincoln, \*Sherman, Mrs Henry \*Adams, \*Farragut) and coin designs.

**Saint-Just, Louis Antoine Lon de** (1767–1794). French revolutionary. One of the most implacable of the extremist section, he voted for the death of \*Louis XVI, and later turned against the Girondins. He was a member of the Committee of Public Safety, and a follower and friend of \*Robespierre, whose downfall he shared, being executed two days after his leader.

Curtis, E. N., *Saint-Just, Colleague of Robespierre*. 1955; Soboul, A., *Proceedings de Saint-Just Symposium*. 1968.

**Saint Laurent, Yves** (Henri Donat) (1936–2008). French couturier, born in Algeria. He worked for and succeeded Christian \*Dior as the dominant figure in French fashion, and also manufactured shirts, ties and stockings. He designed stage sets and costumes for films (e.g. *Belle de Jour*, 1967), ballets and plays.

**St Laurent, Louis Stephen** (1882–1973). Canadian lawyer and Liberal politician, born in Quebec. After a distinguished career as a lawyer and academic, he was recruited into government by his friend Mackenzie \*King as Minister for Justice 1941–46, then succeeded King as Secretary of State for External Affairs 1946–48. As King's preferred successor, St Laurent became the Liberal Party Leader and Prime Minister 1948–57. His government was heavily defeated by \*Diefenbaker's Progressive Conservatives in 1957.

**Saint-Pierre, Charles-Irénée Castel, Abbé de** (1658–1743). French political theorist. Son of the Marquis de Saint-Pierre, he became a priest and was a significant influence on the Enlightenment, especially on \*Rousseau and \*Kant. He proposed an international court, free education for boys and girls, a progressive income tax, constitutional monarchy, and a European union. He wrote *Project pour rendre la paix perpétuelle en Europe* (1713).

**Saint-Saëns, (Charles) Camille** (1835–1921). French composer, pianist and organist, born in Paris. An infant prodigy, he first attracted recognition as a pianist, playing all \*Mozart's concertos and \*Beethoven's



sonatas. \*Liszt praised him, especially as an organist, and he played at the Madeleine Church 1857–77. He studied composition with Halévy at the Paris Conservatoire and was also an accomplished writer, linguist and amateur scientist. He promoted the music of \*Bach, \*Mozart and \*Wagner, and toured extensively, visiting Russia, the US, Argentina, Brazil, Uruguay and Algeria. Of his 13 operas only *Samson et Dalila* (1877) remains in the repertoire, of five symphonies (only three of them numbered), the 'Organ' symphony No. 3 (1886) is often played and recorded. His best known work, *Le carnaval des animaux* (1886), a brilliant set of parodies, was not performed until 1922, at his direction, except for 'The Swan'. He also composed five piano, three violin and two cello concertos, *Marche héroïque* (1871), *Le rouet d'Omphale* (1872) and *Danse macabre* (1875). He taught \*Fauré and was a contemptuous antagonist of \*Debussy and \*Stravinsky.

**Saint-Simon, Claude Henri, Comte de** (1760–1825). French social philosopher. Belonging to the same family as the Duc de \*Saint-Simon, he fought in the American War of Independence, but during the French Revolution was suspected an aristocrat and briefly imprisoned though he resigned his title. His 'experiments in living', undertaken to prepare him for his task as a social philosopher reduced him to poverty, but his self-confidence was unbounded, as was shown by his unsuccessful proposal to Madame de \*Staël on the grounds that the marriage of two such remarkable people would produce an even more remarkable child. His thought was revealed in such books as *Du Systeme industriel* (1821) and the more important *Nouveau Christianisme* (1825). The latter contained his fundamental precept, which was the Christian 'Love one another'. This was to be put into practice by reorganising society so that it should be controlled by industrial chiefs instead of military or feudal leaders and by scientists instead of priests. His ideas were, however, diffuse and vague and Saint-Simon can be described as the 'founder of socialism' only through the activities of his followers and his influence on such thinkers as \*Comte.

Booth, A. J., *Saint-Simon and Saint-Simonism*. 1971.

**Saint-Simon, Louis de Rouvroy, Duc de** (1677–1755). French writer of memoirs. Having resigned a commission in the King's Musketeers because of his failure to gain promotion, he attended court and from 1710 to 1723 he lived at Versailles, an embittered observer of a way of life he shared but affected to despise. After the death of \*Louis XIV (1715) he was a member of the regency council but never played an effective political role. His fame rests on his posthumously published *Memoires* which he began to write in their final form in 1740. With malice and prejudice but with unique powers of memory and observation he recalls quarrels, love affairs, intrigues, dress, mannerisms and personal foibles with an authenticity and minuteness of detail seldom if ever equalled in descriptions of court life.

**St Vincent, 1st Earl of, John Jervis** (1735–1823). English admiral of the fleet. He served with \*Wolfe in Québec and in the West Indies during the Seven Years' War (1756–63). MP 1783–94, he was Commander-in-Chief of the Mediterranean Fleet 1795–99, and, with \*Nelson's support he defeated the Spanish fleet at Cape St Vincent (the southwest extremity of Portugal) in February 1797 and was created earl. A moderate reformer, he was First Lord of the Admiralty 1801–04.

**Sakharov, Andrei Dimitrievich** (1921–1989). Russian nuclear physicist. A pupil of Pyotr \*Kapitza and Igor Tamm, he gained his PhD for work on cosmic rays and led research on hydrogen fusion, playing a decisive role in creating the hydrogen bomb (1953). After 1958 he campaigned against nuclear proliferation, calling for Soviet-American friendship and a convergence of capitalism and Communism in his *Progress, Co-existence and Intellectual Freedom* (1968). In 1970 he founded the Committee for Human Rights. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Peace in 1975. In 1980 he was exiled to Gorky and kept under police surveillance. Reports of his failing health led to international concern about his welfare. In December 1986 \*Gorbachev allowed him to return to Moscow. He became the leader of the democratic movement in the USSR and was elected to the Congress of Peoples' Deputies in 1989, where he exerted an immense moral and intellectual influence. Within 11 months, at the height of his influence, he was dead.

**Saki** (pen name of Hector Hugo Munro) (1870–1916). Scottish author, born in Burma. Son of a colonial inspector-general of police, about 1900 he started in journalism in London as a political satirist on the *Westminster Gazette* and was the *Morning Post* correspondent in Russia and France (1902–08). The first of the volumes of fantastic, elegant and witty short stories for which he became famous was published in 1904 under his pseudonym and in 1912 appeared his novel *The Unbearable Bassington*. Interest in his work was later revived by television versions of many of his stories and a collected edition of his works (1963). He was killed in France during World War I.

**Saladin** (Salahal Din Yusuf ibn Ayyub) (1137–1193). Sultan of Egypt and Syria 1174–93. Born in Mesopotamia of Kurdish origin, he succeeded his uncle as Vizier of Egypt (1169). In 1171 the Caliph of the Fatimid dynasty in Egypt died. No successor was appointed and in 1174 Saladin was confirmed as Sultan of Egypt and Syria by the Caliph of Baghdad. He consolidated his hold over Syria, and conquered Mesopotamia (1180). He ruled his new empire from Damascus and in 1187 invaded the Christian kingdom of Jerusalem. The fall of the city provoked the 3rd Crusade, during which \*Richard Coeur de Lion won back the coastal towns from Acre to Jaffa. Saladin retained Jerusalem but allowed

pilgrims access. His chivalry was much admired by the Crusaders and he was a just and efficient ruler as well as a fine soldier. He built many roads and canals.

**Salam, Abdus** (1926–1996). Pakistani physicist. He was a pioneer in the study of superfields and directed the International Centre for Physics, Trieste, 1964–93. He shared the 1979 Nobel Prize for Physics for attempting to reconcile the weak and electromagnetic interactions in elementary particles. He won the Copley Medal in 1990.

**Salazar, António de Oliveira** (1889–1970). Portuguese economist and dictator. Originally trained for the Church, he became professor of economics at Coimbra University 1916–28, and became General \*Carmona's Minister for Finance 1926; 1928–40. Prime Minister 1932–68, in 1933 he installed a corporatist regime, Estado Novo ('New State'), analogous to Austrian fascism, which held power until overthrown in 1974.

Conservative and nationalist, Salazar rejected political parties, parliament and popular democracy, suppressed opposition, relied on support from the church and the army but kept both at distance. He eschewed a cult of personality. He supported \*Franco during the Spanish Civil War but regarded \*Hitler and \*Mussolini as 'pagan Caesars', kept Portugal neutral during World War II, enabled refugees to escape from Europe and permitted Britain to use facilities in the Azores. He brought Portugal into NATO, the OECD and GATT. In 1968 he suffered a stroke in his bath and was apparently unaware that he was no longer premier at the time of his death in 1970.

**Salieri, Antonio** (1750–1825). Italian composer, born near Verona. A protégé of \*Gluck, he served as court composer to the Habsburg emperors from 1774–88 (when \*Mozart was a young rival) and music director 1788–1824. He composed 42 operas, instrumental, orchestral and sacred music. Suggestions that he poisoned Mozart, the basis of a dramatic poem (1830) by \*Pushkin and an opera by \*Rimsky-Korsakov, were revived in Peter \*Shaffer's play *Amadeus* (1979): the poisoning was almost certainly metaphorical. Salieri was a friend of \*Haydn and teacher of \*Beethoven, \*Schubert and \*Liszt.

**Salinas de Gortari, Carlos** (1948– ). Mexican politician. Educated at the National University of Mexico and Harvard, he became a statistician, entered the Department of Finance and became its Director-General 1978–79. He directed economic and social policy in the Budget Ministry 1979–81 and was Minister for Planning and Federal Budget 1982–87. Selected as the Party of Revolutionary Institutions (PRI) candidate in 1987, he was elected narrowly as President of Mexico and served 1988–94. He concluded the North American Free Trade Agreement (NAFTA) with the US and Canada in 1992. In 1995 he went into exile in the US after his brother Raul was charged with assassinating a party official.

**Salinger, J(erome) D(avid)** (1919–2010). American writer. He won acclaim with his novel *The Catcher in the Rye* (1951), the acutely observed story of a boy's teenage problems. *Franny and Zooey* (1961) and his short stories continued to deal with the subject of adolescents' ways of seeing and problems.

Hamilton, I., *In Search of J.D. Salinger*. 1986; Beller, T., *J. D. Salinger. The Escape Artist*. 2014.

**Salisbury, 1st Earl of, Robert Cecil** (1563–1632). English statesman, born in Westminster. Son of William Cecil, Baron \*Burleigh, and a cousin of Francis \*Bacon, he was briefly educated in Cambridge and the Sorbonne and became a silent MP. Appointed as Secretary of State 1596–1612 by Queen \*Elizabeth, he succeeded his father as Lord Privy Seal 1598–1608. He dealt successfully with the rebellion of \*Essex but was increasingly occupied with the intrigues by which he secured the succession of the Scottish James VI as \*James I of England. Not unnaturally, he was retained in office (as Lord Treasurer from 1608). He discovered the Gunpowder Plot and was largely responsible for the downfall of Sir Walter \*Raleigh, whose bellicose attitude towards Spain conflicted with his own pacific policy. Salisbury showed wisdom and moderation as a ruler but lacked his father's personality and was extremely conscious of the spinal deformity (scoliosis) that gave him a dwarf-like appearance. He was created Baron Cecil (1603), Viscount Cranbourne (1604) and Earl of Salisbury (1605). He devoted much time to the building and adorning of Hatfield House, Hertfordshire, still the family's palatial seat.

**Salisbury, 3rd Marquess of, Robert Arthur Talbot Gascoyne-Cecil** (1830–1903). English Conservative politician, born in Hatfield, Hertfordshire. After an unhappy childhood, he attended Eton and Oxford, left early and visited South Africa, Australia and New Zealand 1851–52. A Member of Parliament 1853–68 (as Viscount Cranbourne), he served as Secretary of State for India 1866–67, 1874–78 and Chancellor of Oxford University 1869–1903. Foreign Secretary for 12 years 1878–80, 1885–86, 1886–92, 1895–1900, he found this office very congenial. He went with \*Disraeli to the Congress of Berlin where he revealed an independent mind unhampered by party shibboleths. He served three terms as Prime Minister June 1885–January 1886, July 1886–August 1892, June 1895–July 1902, a total of nearly 14 years. He declined Queen \*Victoria's offers of a dukedom in 1886 and 1892. He was mainly concerned with agreements that secured peace in Egypt and the Mediterranean lands, and with the problems of African partition. He worked closely with \*Bismarck but refused an alliance. He was a keen amateur botanist and astronomer, bored with the routine of politics, and was deeply anti-democratic. He allowed his ministers to retain involvement in business, despite conflict of interest, and the 'spoils system' was applied in judicial and imperial appointments and

honours. He was succeeded as Conservative leader and Prime Minister by his nephew Arthur \*Balfour. So many family members were accommodated in government that the term 'Hotel Cecil' was applied as a sneer. His successors in the marquessate and his younger sons, Robert (Viscount \*Cecil of Chelwood) and Hugh (Lord Quickwood), were all politically prominent.

Kennedy, A. L., *Salisbury, 1830–1903. Portrait of a Statesman*. 1953; Roberts, A., *Salisbury: Victorian Titan*. 1999.

**Salk, Jonas Edward** (1914–1995). American virologist and bacteriologist, born in New York. Graduate of CCNY and NYU, he was a consultant on epidemic diseases during World War II and held a series of professorships at the University of Pittsburgh 1947–63. He produced the first successful vaccine against poliomyelitis (1954) but refused to patent it. The Salk vaccine was speedily adopted throughout the world. In 1963 he founded the Salk Institute for Biological Studies at La Jolla, California, which he directed until 1975. In 1970 he married the painter Françoise \*Gilot. Awarded the Lasker Medal (1956) and the Presidential Medal of Freedom (1977), oddly, he was never nominated for a Nobel Prize.

**Sallust** (Gaius Sallustius Crispus) (86–35/6 BCE). Roman historian. Having served under \*Caesar and enriched himself as a proconsul in north Africa, he bought \*Caesar's villa at Tivoli, there built the famous 'Sallustian gardens' and settled down to write histories of the Catiline conspiracy and the Jugurthine wars as well as the more general *Histories*, of which only fragments survive.

Syme, R., *Sallust*. 1964.

**Salmond, Alex**(ander Elliot Anderson) (1954– ). Scottish Nationalist politician, born in Linlithgow. MP (United Kingdom) 1987–2010; 2015–17, he led the Scottish National Party (SNP) 1990–2000, 2004–14. He was First Minister of Scotland 2007–14, resigning after a referendum on Scottish independence was defeated.

**Salomé, Lou(ise) Andreas-** (or Luíza Gustavovna Salomé) (1861–1937). Russian psychoanalyst, writer and fascinator, born in St Petersburg. Daughter of a general, her ancestry was French and German. She studied in Zürich, was twice proposed to by \*Nietzsche, became the lover and muse of \*Rilke, had a close relationship with \*Freud and, from 1887, a celibate marriage to the linguist Carl Friedrich Andreas. She wrote studies on \*Ibsen, Nietzsche and Rilke, many novels, pioneered the study of female sexuality and appeared as a character in plays, films and an opera.

Astor, D., *Lou Andreas-Salomé*, 2008; Vickers, J., *Lou von Salomé*. 2008.

**Salomon, Johann Peter** (1745–1815). German impresario, violinist and composer. A friend of C.P.E. \*Bach, he lived in London from 1781, gave solo concerts, conducted, brought \*Haydn to England for two successful seasons and was dedicatee of his Symphonies Nos 93–104.

**Samaranch Torello, Juan Antonio** (1920–2010). Spanish diplomat, born in Barcelona. He was Ambassador to the USSR 1977–80, President of the International Olympic Committee 1980–2001 and was created a marquess in 1991.

**Samson** (Shimshon) (fl. 11th century BCE?). Hebrew hero. From the tribe of Dan, he was one of the 'judges' of Israel and probably an authentic hero of the war against the Philistines. The Bible tells how he was charmed by the Philistine Delilah to reveal that the secret of his strength lay in the flowing locks on one who had taken the Nazarite vow. She cut off his hair, and thus weakened, he was captured, blinded and taken to Gaza, where, with a last effort of renewed strength, he pulled down the supporting pillars of the temple, killing both himself and his enemies. \*Milton's *Samson Agonistes* is a poetic reconstruction of the tale.

**Samuel** (Shmu'el) (fl. 1040 BCE). Hebrew prophet. The last of the Hebrew 'judges' and the first of the prophets, when the people were attacked by the Philistines, inspired by God and yielding to the persuasions of the people, he anointed \*Saul as the first king of Israel and Judah, but later broke with him and chose \*David as his successor.

Hertzberg, H. W., *I and II Samuel: A Commentary*. 1964.

**Samuel, Herbert Louis Samuel, 1st Viscount** (1870–1963). English-Jewish politician and administrator, born in Liverpool. Educated at Oxford, he became a Liberal MP 1902–18, 1929–35, served as a minister under \*Campbell-Bannerman and \*Asquith, was Home Secretary 1916 but resigned when \*Lloyd George became Prime Minister. After World War I, he became the first British High Commissioner to Palestine 1920–25, Leader of the Liberal Party 1931–35 and again Home Secretary 1931–32 in the National Coalition. He wrote on philosophic and autobiographical themes, including *In Search of Reality* (1957), and received the OM in 1958.

**Samuelson, Paul Anthony** (1915–2009). American economist. Educated at Chicago and Harvard, he was a professor of economics at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology 1940, a proponent of \*Keynes' ideas during wartime government work and wrote a standard text *Economics* (1948), which has remained in print. He advised the \*Kennedy and \*Johnson administrations and won the 1970 Nobel Prize for Economics.

**Sancroft, William** (1617–1693). English prelate, born in Suffolk. After living abroad during the Commonwealth period he returned at the Restoration and rose quickly in the Church to become Dean of York and (1664) of St Paul's, and (1678) Archbishop of Canterbury. The same out-spokenness which he is said to have used at \*Charles II's deathbed marked the dealings of this robust Tory High Churchman with later monarchs. He was the leader of the seven bishops tried by order of \*James II for presenting a petition against having to read out publicly the Declaration of Indulgence, their acquittal being regarded as the starting point of the Glorious Revolution. However, having taken an oath of allegiance to James, Sancroft refused one to \*William and \*Mary. He was therefore deprived of his see and ejected from Lambeth Palace. He retired to the Suffolk village of his birth.

**Sand, George** (Aurore-Lucile Dupin) (1804–1876). French novelist, born in Paris. She was brought up by her grandmother, an illegitimate daughter of Marshal de Saxe, at the château de Nohant, in the province of Berry; it is now a museum maintained in her memory. She grew up with feminist views, an independent mind and a romantic disposition. After an incompatible marriage to Baron Dudevant, she went to Paris (1831) where she lived with Jules Sandeau, from whose name her pseudonym was derived. Her novels tended to be linked with the circumstances of her life: *Indiana* (1832) glorifies free love, *Elle et lui* (1859) and *Lélia* (1833) relate to her love affair with \*Musset; her socialism inspired other novels. Meanwhile her search for the perfect lover went on but she could offer only an excess of sentiment or maternal care for the passion demanded. Her love affair with the exiled and ill \*Chopin (1838–47) was the nearest to her needs but even that progressed with bickering and ended with bitterness. The château at Nohant was her most constant and abiding love and there, after 1848, she retired to write rustic novels, e.g. *La Mare au Diable* (1846), and to show in her *Histoire de ma vie* (20 volumes, 1855) and her *Correspondance* (1882 and 1904) that her own life and character were more interesting than anything she could invent.

Cate, C., *George Sand: A Biography*. 1975.

**Sandburg, Carl** (1878–1967). American writer, born in Galesburg, Illinois. He led a wandering life collecting folksongs and ballads, and writing his own poems in the idiom of the country people he met. His collecting produced, e.g. *The American Songbag* (1927). His own verse is in such books as *Smoke and Steel*. His most ambitious enterprise was a four-volume biography of *Abraham Lincoln* (1926–42) which won the 1940 Pulitzer Prize for history. His *Collected Poems* won the 1951 Pulitzer Prize for poetry.

**Sanders, Bernie** (Bernard) (1941– ). American politician, born in Brooklyn. His father migrated from Poland in 1921 and his mother was of Russian-Jewish descent. Educated at the University of

Chicago, he moved to Vermont in 1968, had a variety of jobs, including carpenter and film maker, and was Mayor of Burlington 1981–89. US Congressman 1991–2007 and Senator from Vermont 2007– , he contested the Democratic nomination for president against Hillary \*Clinton in 2015–16. In 2020 he was a major contender for the Democratic nomination, identified himself as a 'socialist', but after polling strongly in early primaries fell behind Joe \*Biden and withdrew in April.

**Sandwich, John Montagu, 4th Earl of** (1718–1792). English politician. Despite notorious profligacy he held several ministerial posts during an undistinguished career, including terms as First Lord of the Admiralty 1748–51, 1763 and 1771–82. The Sandwich Islands (now Hawaii) were named after him by Captain \*Cook. He is best known for inventing the sandwich to enable him to eat without interrupting his play at cards.

**Sanger, Fred(erick)** (1918–2013). English biochemist, born in Gloucestershire. A Quaker and pacifist, educated at St John's College, Cambridge, he worked at the Medical Research Council's Laboratory of Molecular Biology, Cambridge 1951–83. He won two Nobel Prizes in Chemistry: in 1958, for determining the first complete structure and the amino-acid sequencing of a protein (bovine insulin); in 1980, sharing the award for work on determining the chemical structures of elements in DNA. He was awarded the Copley Medal (1977), the CH (1981) and the OM (1986).

Brownlee, G. G., *Fred Sanger: Double Nobel Laureate*. 2020.

**Sanger, Margaret** (née Higgins) (1883–1966). American birth control advocate. Born to a large family, she worked as a teacher, nurse and set up the first US birth control clinic in Brooklyn (1916). She founded the American Birth Control League in 1921 and organised the first World Population Conference in Geneva in 1927. She also advocated more passionate and enjoyable sex and her lovers included H. G. \*Wells and Havelock \*Ellis.

**San Martín, José de** (1778–1850). Soldier, born in Yapeyú (Argentina). Having returned to Spain with his parents from South America as a child, he served with the Spanish army in the Peninsular War but in 1812 again crossed the Atlantic and volunteered his services to the revolutionary government of Buenos Aires. In 1816, independence was declared with his support. Regarding the whole of Spanish America as a single country he enlarged the area of independence by a daring march over the Andes, by passes across four cordilleras up to 4,000 metres high, into Chile; the Spaniards were defeated at Chacabuco, and Santiago occupied. Chileans and Argentineans, helped by a naval contingent under \*Cochrane, now combined to liberate Peru. San Martín occupied

Lima (1812) and declared himself 'protector', but the interior was still in Spanish hands while \*Bolívar had reached Ecuador. The two 'liberators' met but, as they were unable to agree, San Martín with characteristic self-denial withdrew. He left South America (1824) and died in poverty and exile at Boulogne. He was buried in Buenos Aires.

**Santa Anna, Antonio López de** (in full, Antonio de Padua María Severino López de Santa Anna y Pérez de Lebrón) (1794–1876). Mexican soldier and politician. Having helped to overthrow \*Iturbide he led a successful Liberal revolution in 1828. He forced the surrender of a Spanish expedition sent to recover Mexico. He held the office of President of Mexico 11 times between 1833 and 1855, but his exercise of power was erratic and after a few months he would retire to the country. Originally a liberal, he became conservative and gained support from both the church and army. His victory over the Texans at the Alamo in March 1836 was soon followed by defeat by Sam \*Houston. Victory over a French debt-collecting expedition (1838) made him again a popular hero. Another period of dictatorship (1841–46) was followed by exile, but he returned to lead the Mexicans to defeat against the US (1847–48). In 1853, he was again dictator, but was overthrown again in 1855. After many years in exile in Cuba and the United States, where he tried to promote cockfighting and chiclets (the basis of chewing gum), he was amnestied (1874), old, crippled and nearly blind.

**Santamaria, B(artholomew) A(ugustine) ('Bob')** (1915–1998). Australian political activist, born in Melbourne. He worked for the Catholic Rural Movement, founded the National Civic Council, campaigned passionately against Communist influence in trade unions and was a major figure in the Labor split (1954–55) which kept the ALP out of office nationally until 1972 (\*Whitlam) and in Victoria until 1982. He encouraged Catholics to become active in the Liberal and National parties and was an effective publicist on television and in print.

Henderson, G., *Santamaria: A Most Unusual Man*. 2014.

**Santayana, George** (Jorge Agustín Nicolás Ruiz de Santayana y Borrás) (1863–1952). Spanish philosopher, novelist, essayist and poet, born in Madrid. He lived in the US 1872–1912, studied at Harvard, Berlin and Cambridge, and taught philosophy at Harvard 1889–1912, where his students included Robert \*Frost, Gertrude \*Stein, Felix \*Frankfurter and T. S. \*Eliot. He never became a US citizen, left in 1912 and never returned, living first in England, then, from 1924, in Rome. In his philosophy he was sceptical about proving the existence of matter or indeed anything, and suggested that ordinary beliefs derive from 'animal faith'. His view of the world was thus a species of naturalism. He also accepted, in a somewhat poetic

way, the existence of a realm of universals or essences similar to the 'forms' of \*Plato. His philosophical ideas are contained in *The Life of Reason* (5 volumes, 1905–06), *Scepticism and Animal Faith* (1923) and the 'realm' series, *The Realm of Essence* (1927), ... *of Matter* (1938) and ... *of Spirit* (1940). His more general books include *Sense of Beauty* (1896), a novel, *The Last Puritan* (1936), two volumes of poetry and autobiographical works. All reveal the author's wisdom and cultivated wit.

Cory, D., *Santayana: The Later Years*. 1963.

**Santos-Dumont, Alberto** (1873–1932). Brazilian aviation pioneer, born in Palmira, Minas Gerais. The son of a rich coffee producer, after building balloons and airships in France he experimented with aeroplanes and became the first man to fly one in France (1906). He campaigned for the creation of the Iguazu National Park (1916). He committed suicide (or was murdered) in Sao Paulo. His birthplace was renamed for him.

**Sappho** (b.c.600 BCE). Greek poet. Born in Lesbos where she spent most of her life, her poems, with one or two exceptions, survive only in fragments. Passionate, graceful and intensely personal, they are mostly addressed to a group of young women, perhaps fellow devotees of the love goddess Aphrodite. She was married and had at least one daughter. Enough remains of her work to support the belief of the ancients that she was the greatest poetess of their time.

**Saragat, Giuseppe** (1898–1988). Italian Socialist politician. He led a minority group of Socialists that broke away from \*Nenni's leadership in protest against the alliance with the Communists. He founded (1947) the Social Democratic party, which entered into coalition with the Christian Democrats. Deputy Premier 1947–49 and 1954–57, he was President of Italy 1964–71.

**Saramago, José** (1922–2010). Portuguese novelist. He won the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1998, the first awarded to a writer in Portuguese.

**Sarasate** (y Navascues), **Pablo Martín Meliton** (1844–1908). Spanish violinist and composer. A brilliant player in the \*Paganini tradition, he wrote many works that have remained in the repertoire, including *Zigeunerweisen* (1878) and *The Carmen Fantasy* (1883).

**Sarasvati, Dayanand** (1820–1883). Indian religious reformer. He founded (1875) an association called the Arya-Samaj which claimed for all Hindu castes the right to study the Vedas. The many adherents of the society form one of the most progressive elements of modern Hinduism.

**Sardou, Victorien** (1831–1908). French writer. The most successful playwright of his day, for 40 years from 1860, when he was first acclaimed, he produced success after success, the result not only of his superb

technique but of his gift for creating parts specially adapted to the particular talents of the great players of his time. Thus the title roles of *Fedora* (1882), *La Tosca* (1887) and *Cismonda* (1894) were created for Sarah \*Bernhardt and the comedy *Madame Sans Gene* (1893) was written for \*Réjane. He also wrote for \*Irving and others. His plays now seem artificial, and revivals are rare.

**Sargent, John Singer** (1856–1925). American artist, born in Florence. He studied painting there and in Paris, moved to England (1884) and soon won great success as a fashionable portrait painter. If his work sometimes seems too facile, he showed at his best a brilliant technique (e.g. in evoking the shimmer of satin) modelled on that of \*Velázquez, and an eye for character, at times too penetrating for the comfort of his sitters (e.g. the Wertheimer portraits at the Tate Gallery, London). In America he worked on a series of decorative paintings for public buildings, including the *Evolution of Religion* for the Boston Library.

Olson, S., *John Singer Sargent*. 1986.

**Sargent, Sir (Harold) Malcolm** (Watts) (1895–1967). English orchestral conductor. Trained as an organist and composer, he was Chief Conductor of the Royal Choral Society from 1928, conducted concerts for children sponsored by Robert \*Mayer, and became Musical Director of the Hallé Orchestra 1939–42, the Liverpool Philharmonic 1942–49 and the BBC Symphony 1950–57. He conducted the London Proms with great success, recorded many choral works and became an accomplished broadcaster.

**Sargon I (or Šarru-ukīn) of Akkad** (d.c.2284 BCE). King of the Akkadian Empire c.2334–2284 BCE. His origins were mysterious: found in bulrushes (like Moses) and raised by a gardener, he became a cupbearer to the king of Kish, whose successor **Lugal-zage-si** he deposed. With its capital at Akkad, his kingdom, by conquest, included all of Sumeria, extending to the edge of Arabia, Syria and Anatolia. Sargon is referred to in Isaiah 20:1.

**Sargon II** (d.705 BCE). King of Assyria 722–705 BCE. He inaugurated a period of great expansion by conquering Elam and Babylonia, subduing the Medes and extending his power from Anatolia to Egypt. He exiled whole nations of conquered peoples to the remoter reaches of his territories. The excavations of his palace at Khorsabad bear witness to his magnificence.

**Sarközy** (de Nagy-Bócsa), **Nicolas Paul Stéphane** (1955– ). French politician, born in Paris. Son of a Hungarian father and Greek-Jewish mother, he became a lawyer, municipal councillor, Minister for the Budget 1993–95, for the Interior 2002–04, 2005–07, and for the Economy 2004. Combative in style, he won political support from a coalition stretching from the centre to far right. Leader of the Union pour un Mouvement Populaire (UMP) 2004–07; 2014–16,

he led in the first ballot for President of France (April 2007) and won 53 per cent of the vote in the second round (May 2007), defeating Ségolène \*Royal, serving as President of France 2007–12. He was created an honorary GCB in March 2008. Defeated in 2012 by François \*Hollande, he sought the presidency in 2017 but lost decisively in the primaries. In 2018, he was arrested and charged with bribery. His trial began in December 2020. Convicted in March 2021, he was sentenced to three years jail (two of them suspended). In September 2021 he was sentenced to one year in home detention.

**Sarmiento, Domingo Faustino** (1811–1888). Argentinian politician. A rural schoolteacher who was exiled to Chile, he became an influential journalist and his book *Facundo: Civilization and Barbarism* (1845) was an important examination of the gaucho tradition and culture and an attack on the \*Rosas regime. Elected as Argentina's first civilian president 1868–74, he introduced public education in primary, secondary and technical schools.

**Sarnoff, David** (1891–1971). American entrepreneur, born in Russia. He worked for \*Marconi, became a pioneer broadcaster and a founder of RCA (Radio Corporation of America, 1921) and NBC (National Broadcasting Company, 1926) which developed radio and television networks in the US. He was President 1930–47 and Chairman 1947–70 of RCA/NBC.

**Saro-Wiwa, Ken** (ule Beeson) (1941–1995). Nigerian writer and political activist. A leader of the Ogoni people, he was arrested by Nigeria's military rulers, charged with murder and hanged with eight others after a rushed trial.

**Saroyan, William** (1908–1981). American author. Of Armenian descent, his first work was a volume of short stories, *The Daring Young Man on the Flying Trapeze* (1934). He wrote a number of novels and plays, including *The Time of Your Life* (1939) for which he was awarded (but did not accept) a Pulitzer Prize. *The Human Comedy* (1943) exemplifies the simplicity and optimism of much of his work.

Saroyan, W., *The Bicycle Rider in Beverly Hills*. 1952.

**Sartre, Jean-Paul** (1905–1980). French philosopher, playwright and novelist, born in Paris. A nephew of Albert \*Schweitzer, he was educated at the École Normale Supérieure and the Sorbonne. In 1929 he met Simone de \*Beauvoir, who shared his life from 1931 until his death, as mistress intermittently and confidante always and whom he exploited shamelessly, despite her strong feminist views. He taught (1931–39) at lycées in Le Havre, Laon and Paris, and published the novel *La Nausée* (1938, *Nausea*) and the short stories *Le Mur* (1939, *Intimacy*). After brief army service he was a prisoner of war 1940–41. During German occupation of Paris, Sartre became a successful playwright with *Les Mouches* (1942, *The Flies*) and *Huis-clos* (1943,

*No Exit*). His major philosophical works were *L'Être et le néant* (1943, *Being and Nothingness*, translated 1956) and *L'Existentialisme est un humanisme* (1946, *Existentialism and Humanism*, 1948). Identified as the founder of existentialism (although \*Kierkegaard was there first), his philosophy is often summarised as 'man's existence precedes his essence', by which is meant that a man's essence or essential being is determined by the facts of his nature. Standing alone in a godless world, man can, within the limits of these facts, determine and develop his own essence: thus men choose to make themselves what they become and they are therefore responsible for what they are.

He remained in France during the Occupation and, despite his known 'leftist' politics seems—like Pablo \*Picasso—to have been left alone. Having avoided political engagement before and during the war, Sartre became hyperactive from 1945. He edited the influential left-wing journal *Les Temps modernes* 1945–80 and became leader of left-bank literary society in Paris. He had an increasingly antagonistic rivalry with Albert \*Camus. He pursued radical causes after the war, was an avid Stalinist 1952–56, then switched allegiance to \*Mao, finally to \*Castro. Clive James wrote: 'Sartre ... never actually killed anybody. But he excused many who did, and most of those never actually killed anybody either: they just gave orders for their subordinates to do so.' He campaigned against \*de Gaulle and US intervention in Vietnam. Other works include the novels *L'Âge de raison* (1945, *The Age of Reason*) and *Le Sursis* (1945, *The Reprieve*), the play *Les Mains sales* (1948, *Dirty Hands*), a biography of his protégé Jean \*Genet (1952), some film scripts, the autobiography *Les Mots* (1963, *Words*) and a huge unfinished work on \*Flaubert (1972). He was awarded, but declined, the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1964, on the grounds of his opposition to bourgeois society. Buried at Montparnesse cemetery, Simone de Beauvoir is next to him.

Cohen-Solal, A., *Sartre: A Life*. 1987.

**Sassoon, Siegfried Loraine** (1886–1967). English poet. Member of an ancient Jewish family from Baghdad, his father was disinherited for marrying a Christian. He dropped out of Cambridge, but became an officer in World War I, winning a MC and befriending Wilfred \*Owen. The disgust produced by his experiences in World War I produced the fierce satire of *Counter-attack* (1918) and *Satirical Poems* (1926). He also wrote a series of semi-autobiographical works including *Memoirs of a Foxhunting Man*, which won the Hawthornden Prize (1929), *Memoirs of an Infantry Officer* (1930) and *Sherston's Progress* (1936). Other books more directly autobiographical followed, e.g. *The Old Century* (1938).

Sassoon, S. L., *Siegfried's Journey 1916–1920*. 1945; Egremont, M., *Siegfried Sassoon*. 2005.

**Satie, Erik Alfred Leslie** (1866–1925). French composer, born in Honfleur. An eccentric (a fanatical collector of umbrellas), he lived obscurely until, from 1910, he was hailed as leader of the younger, more advanced composers, notably of the groups 'L'École d'Arcueil' and 'Les Six'. His work, harmonically advanced, also influenced \*Ravel and other contemporaries. He wrote limpid, beautiful piano works, including the three *Gymnopédies* (i.e. 'naked feet', 1888, two later orchestrated by \*Debussy); some with bizarre titles (e.g. *Three Pear-shaped Pieces* and *Limp Preludes for a Dog*); ballets, e.g. *Parade* (1917), commissioned by \*Diaghilev's Ballets Russes with sets and costumes by \*Picasso; the more serious symphonic drama *Socrate* (1919); and a *Messe des pauvres* (1895).

Myers, R., *Erik Satie*. 1948.

**Sato Eisaku** (1901–1975). Japanese politician. Younger brother of \*Kishi Nobusuke, he gained a law degree at Tokyo Imperial University and became a railway administrator until elected a member of the Diet 1949–75. A follower of \*Yoshida Shigeru, he was a major figure in forming the Liberal Democratic Party, served as Finance Minister 1957–60 under his brother, and minister of nuclear science, energy and technology 1960–64. As Prime Minister 1964–72, he was identified with Japan's rapid economic expansion and concluding the 1969 Sato-Nixon treaty with the US. The award to him of the Nobel Prize for Peace in 1974 was greeted with some international scepticism. Sato was a complex character—forceful and ruthless, but also a gifted calligrapher.

**Satyarthi, Kailash** (1954– ). Indian social activist. He founded the Bachpan Bachao Andolan ('Save the Children Movement') in 1980, campaigned against child labour, and for children's rights, and shared the Nobel Peace Prize for 2014 with \*Malala Yousafzay.

**Sauckel, Fritz** (né Ernst Friedrich Christoph) (1894–1946). German Nazi administrator. From a poor working-class background, he rose through the party hierarchy and was Reich Governor of Thuringia 1933–45. As General Plenipotentiary for Labour Deployment 1942–45, in control of manpower in occupied territories, he deported millions of slave labourers. He was hanged after condemnation by the Nuremberg Tribunal.

**Sa'ud, Abdulaziz Ibn** *see* **Ibn Sa'ud, Abdulaziz**

**Saul** (Sa'ul) (d.c.1012 BCE). First King of Israel and Judah. Son of Kish, of the tribe of Benjamin, he was anointed by the prophet \*Samuel in response to the need for a single warrior king to lead the Hebrew tribesmen in unity against the Philistines. A melancholic, Saul was at first successful, but his jealousy of \*David and the bitter quarrel that followed so weakened national unity that he was defeated by the Philistines and killed at the Battle of Mount Gilboa.

**Saul, John Ralston** (1947– ). Canadian novelist, essayist and lecturer, born in Ottawa. Educated at McGill University, he wrote collections of penetrating essays about the dilemmas of modern society, including *Voltaire's Bastards: The Dictatorship of Reason in the West* (1992), *The Doubter's Companion: A Dictionary of Aggressive Common Sense* (1994) and *The Unconscious Civilization* (1995). His wife, **Adrienne Clarkson** (née Poy) (1939– ), broadcaster and journalist, born in Hong Kong, was Governor-General of Canada 1999–2005.

**Saunders, Dame Cicely Mary Strode** (1918–2005). English physician and social worker. Author of *Care of the Dying* (1960) and *Living with Dying* (1983), she founded St Christopher's Hospice, Sydenham in 1967 and became recognised as a leader of the palliative care and hospice movement. She was awarded the OM in 1989.

**Saussure, Ferdinand de** (1857–1913). Swiss linguist. The father of modern linguistics and a pioneer of 'structuralism' who anticipated 'semiotics', he distinguished between 'synchronic' linguistics (language at any given moment) and 'diachronic' linguistics (language as it evolves over time). He was a professor at the University of Geneva from 1891 (Roland \*Barthes).

**Saussure, Horace Bénédict de** (1740–1799). Swiss scientist. Professor of Philosophy at Geneva University 1762–86, he gained fame for his exhaustive studies of Alpine botany, geology and meteorology. He invented the anemometer. His experiments with glass 'hot boxes', capturing radiant heat from the Sun (1767), anticipated research on the 'Greenhouse effect' and he developed a solar oven. He offered a prize won (1786) by two guides, for the first ascent of Mont Blanc; he made the climb himself in the following year. His *Voyage dans les Alpes* (1779–96) is a personal record of seven expeditions. A lunar crater is named for him. His daughter **Albertine Adrienne de Saussure** (later Necker) (1766–1841) was a strong advocate for education for girls and having a life outside marriage. Ferdinand de \*Saussure was his great-grandson.

**Sauvé, Jeanne Mathilde** (née Benoit) (1922–1993). Canadian Liberal politician. She was a teacher, journalist and broadcaster, MP 1972–84, minister for science and technology 1972–74 and the environment 1974–75, Speaker of the House of Commons 1980–84 and the first woman Governor-General 1984–90.

**Savage, Michael Joseph** (1872–1940). New Zealand politician, born in Victoria. He arrived from Australia in 1907, entered parliament in 1919, and in 1935 became the first Labour Prime Minister of New Zealand. His pledge to Britain at the outbreak of World War II became historic, 'Where she goes we go—where she stands we stand.' He died in office.

**Savage, Richard** (1697?–1743). English poet and dramatist. He claimed the 4th Earl Rivers and Anne, Countess of Macclesfield as his parents, a theme he pursued in his poems *The Bastard* (1728) and *The Wanderer* (1729). His best known play was *The Tragedy of Sir Thomas Overbury* (1724) in which he performed. His life was colourful and after a timely reprieve he escaped hanging for murder (1727). He died in debtors' prison. *The Life of Savage* (1744) by his friend Samuel \*Johnson, more colourful than accurate, was the first literary biography written in English.

Holmes, R., *Dr Johnson and Mr Savage*. 1993.

**Savall (i Bernadell), Jordi** (1942– ). Catalan (Spanish) composer, conductor and viol player. Educated in Barcelona and Basle, he was a specialist in medieval and baroque music, founding *Hespèrion XX* (known since 2000 as *Hespèrion XXI*) in 1974 and Le Concert de Nations in 1989, recording and touring extensively. His wife **Montserrat Figueras** (1941– 2011) was an outstanding soprano.

**Savery, Thomas** (1650?–1715). English engineer. He patented (1698) a 'fire engine' which by direct steam pressure could raise water to a height of 1,330 metres (4,050 feet). The patent did not expire until 1733 and was held to cover the very different engine of Thomas \*Newcomen. Savery was elected FRS in 1705.

**Savonarola, Girolamo** (1452–1498). Florentine preacher. In 1475 he became a Dominican friar. He was sent to the convent of S. Marco in Florence in 1481 and again in 1490, after which he gained enormous influence by his sermons denouncing corruption, sensuality and luxury. When the 'Scourge' constantly predicted by him came (1494) in the form of the French army, which drove out the \*Medici, he emerged as the dominating figure of the new republic. Many great works of art (as well as rich dresses and other signs of luxury) perished in the 'bonfire of vanities' on the grounds that they commemorated pagan cultures. Savonarola was blamed for the inefficient administration of the republic as well as for his adherence to the French alliance. He was excommunicated (1497) by Pope \*Alexander VI who was building an alliance against the French. His opponents in Florence gained the upper hand and after a trial by papal commissioners for heresy, Savonarola with two companions was strangled and burned.

Ridolfi, R., *Life of Girolamo Savonarola*. 1959.

**Savoy** (Savoia). Burgundian dynasty, founded by Umberto Biacamano (Humbert the Whitehanded), which ruled the county of Savoy (south of Lake Geneva) from 1003. Its members became kings of Sicily, then of Sardinia, Piedmont and of Italy 1861–1946.



**Saxe, Maurice, Comte de** (1696–1750). French soldier. Usually known as Marshal de Saxe, he was an illegitimate son of \*August II of Saxony and Countess Aurora von Königsmark. As a boy he ran away to join \*Marlborough's army in Flanders; in 1711 he was fighting with Russo-Polish forces, and next with Prince \*Eugène against the Turks. Made Duke of Courland, he had to withdraw in 1729 and thereafter fought only for France. In the War of the Austrian Succession he invaded Bohemia and took Prague (1741). He became a marshal in 1744, and defeated the Duke of \*Cumberland at Fontenoy (1745), and again at Laffett (1747), whereas on other occasions he lost the full benefit of victory by failure to pursue. He wrote a book on the art of war, *Mes Reveries* (1757).

**Saxe-Coburg-Gotha** (or **Sachsen-Coburg-Gotha**). German dynasty that provided sovereigns of Belgium, Great Britain and Bulgaria. The family name—rarely used—was \*Wettin.

**Saxe-Coburggotski, Simeon Borisov** *see* **Simeon II**

**Saxo Grammaticus** (also known as **Saxo cognomine Longus**) (c.1150–c.1220). Danish historian and cleric. Secretary to the Archbishop of Lund, he wrote, in Latin, *Gesta Danorum* (16 volumes), the first complete history of Denmark. Early books relate episodes from the Danish and Norse legendary past, including the story of Amlæth (Hamlet), in Books 3 and 4, written about 1216. The last volume describes struggles with the Slavs in the Baltic. The surname 'Grammaticus' was added in the 15th century to commemorate Saxo's learning.

**Say, Jean Baptiste** (1767–1832). French economist. In preparation for a business career he spent some of his early years in England. On his return to Paris he became a journalist and wrote effectively about the new economic theories of Adam \*Smith. He was the most influential economist in France. His chief work was *Traité d'économie politique* (1803). He later lectured on political economy at the Conservatoire des Arts et Métiers and (from 1831) at the Collège de France.

**Sayers, Dorothy L**(eigh) (1893–1958). English novelist, poet, playwright and translator, born in Oxford. Educated at Somerville College, Oxford, she wrote 28 volumes of detective fiction, distinguished by fine writing, e.g. *Busman's Holiday* (1933) and *The Nine Tailors* (1934), in which the hero is an aristocratic detective, Lord Peter Wimsey. Her religious works include the series of radio plays *The Man Born to be King* (1942). She regarded the translation of \*Dante's *The Divine Comedy* (*Hell*, 1949; *Purgatory*, 1955 and *Paradise*, 1962, completed by Barbara Reynolds) as her greatest achievement.

**Scalfaro, Oscar Luigi** (1918–2012). Italian politician and lawyer. A Christian Democrat deputy 1948–92, he served in many ministries and became a compromise choice as President of Italy 1992–99.

**Scalia, Antonin Gregory** (1936–2016). American jurist, born in New Jersey. Educated at Harvard, he was a Justice of the US Supreme Court 1986–2016, a 'strict constructionist', interpreting the US Constitution as it would have been understood by the Founding Fathers (no Mothers involved).

**Scaliger, Joseph Justus** (1540–1609). French scholar. Of Italian descent, he was son of the scholar **Julius Caesar Scaliger** (1484–1558), notorious for his scurrilous attacks on \*Erasmus. At the University in Paris he acquired a complete mastery of Greek and Latin and some Hebrew; he also became a Protestant. After travels in Italy and England he was professor (1570–72) at \*Calvin's academy at Geneva and then for 20 years lived in France with the Roche-Pozay family. During this time he produced the editions of \*Catullus, \*Tibullus and \*Propertius which made him famous, and above all his *De Emendatione Temporum* (1583) by which he is ranked as the founder of the modern science of chronology. He spent his last years at Leyden University preoccupied with controversies engendered by his arrogant disposition, which did not prevent his recognition as one of the greatest scholars of the age.

**Scanderbeg** *see* **Skanderbeg**

**Scarlatti, Alessandro** (c.1659–1725). Italian composer, born at Palermo, Sicily. He was maestro di cappella (i.e. court or household musician) to the eccentric Queen \*Christina of Sweden in Rome, to the viceroy of Naples, and to Cardinal \*Otoboni. He wrote over 100 operas of which 35 survive, as well as about 600 cantatas for solo voices, and choral works. He is believed to have invented or introduced the *aria da capo* which was of fundamental importance in 18th-century opera. For the opera *Tigrane* (1715) horns were introduced into the orchestra.

Dent, E. J., *Alessandro Scarlatti*. 1960.

**Scarlatti, (Giuseppe) Domenico** (1685–1757). Italian composer and harpsichordist, born in Naples. Son of Alessandro \*Scarlatti, in Rome he wrote operas for the exiled Queen of Poland, and church music, including *Stabat Mater* (1715) for St Peter's 1715–19. He worked in Lisbon 1719–27, in Rome again 1727–29, then in Spain, first in Seville, then Madrid, where he died. In Spain, he was a patron of the castrato \*Farinelli and composed his famous keyboard sonatas, some of them called *Essercizi*, of which 555 survive; short brilliant works, in binary form (two matching parts, often repeated), mostly in one movement, catalogued 'K' by Ralph Kirkpatrick, written for harpsichord (or, possibly, the early piano forte).

Kirkpatrick, R., *Domenico Scarlatti*. 1953.

**Scarron, Paul** (1610–1660). French writer. Known (from 1643) as a writer of burlesque verse, equally successful was *Le Roman comique* (1651–57), a satiric novel about strolling players which provided

an agreeable contrast to the artificial romances then in vogue. From 1638 he was half paralysed. When a beautiful 15-year-old girl, Françoise d'Aubigné, was taken to visit him (1651) she wept in pity. The pity was mutual: it grieved him that so lovely a girl should be so poor, he offered to provide a dowry and when she refused he proposed marriage. They were married in 1652 and she showed her gratitude by watching over his health and his career for the rest of his life. She was later better known as Madame de \*Maintenon.

**Schacht, (Horace Greeley) Hjalmar** (1877–1970). German financier, born in Tinglev (then in Prussia, now in Denmark). His mother was Danish, and his parents had lived in the US. He became President of the Reichsbank 1923–30 and 1933–39 and, as \*Hitler's Minister for the Economy 1934–37, was much admired for the manoeuvres by which he enabled German rearmament to be financed. He lost to \*Goering in a power struggle over direction of the German economy. Minister without Portfolio 1937–43, he was arrested by the Gestapo in 1944. He claimed at the Nuremberg trials that he had never been a Nazi and was acquitted. An eight year sentence of imprisonment by the German denazification court was quashed on appeal.

Schacht, H., *My First 76 Years*. 1955.

**Schama, Sir Simon Michael** (1945– ). Anglo-American historian, born in London. Educated at Cambridge, he was professor of history at Harvard 1980–94 and of the humanities at Columbia 1994– . His books include *The Embarrassment of Riches* (1987), *Citizens* (1989), *Landscape and Memory* (1995), *Rembrandt's Eyes* (1999) and *The Power of Art* (2006). His television documentaries include *A History of Britain* (2000), *John Donne* (2009) and *Shakespeare* (2012).

**Scharnhorst, Gerhard Johann David von** (1756–1813). Prussian officer. After the Prussian defeats in the Napoléonic Wars he undertook (1807), with August \*Gneisenau, the complete reorganisation of the Prussian army, and forged the more efficient forces which won victories (e.g. Leipzig, 1813) against the French.

**Schatz, Albert Israel** (1920–2005). American microbiologist. He studied at Rutgers University, and as a graduate student identified (1943) that streptomycin, found in soil, was effective as an antibiotic in treating tuberculosis. His supervisor, Selman \*Waksman, appropriated sole credit for the discovery. It was only in 1994 that Schatz's priority was recognised.

**Scheel, Walter** (1919–2016). German politician. He served in the Luftwaffe during World War II, became a merchant banker and was a Bundestag member 1953–74 and Leader of the Free Democratic Party 1968–74. He was Vice Chancellor and Foreign Minister 1969–74, and President of the Federal Republic of Germany 1974–79.

**Scheele, Carl Wilhelm** (1742–1786). Swedish chemist. He made many important discoveries while working as an apothecary. Using very primitive equipment, he identified and isolated eight elements (chlorine, manganese, barium, molybdenum, tungsten, nitrogen, hydrogen and oxygen)—more than any other chemist—but was strikingly unlucky and his priority was not recognised for decades. He discovered oxygen in 1772 (two years before Joseph \*Priestley did so independently) but did not publish his findings until 1777. He was the first to prepare chlorine, phosphorus, hydrogen sulphide, glycerine, and many organic acids. He also discovered the action of light upon silver salts, a reaction basic to photographic reproduction. His work disproved the phlogiston theory three years ahead of \*Priestley and \*Lavoisier. His death was hastened by his practice of tasting elements (such as mercury) on which he was working. The mineral from which tungsten is extracted was named scheelite for him.

**Scheer, Reinhard** (1863–1928). German sailor. During World War I he was appointed (January 1916) Commander-in-Chief of the High Seas Fleet and was in command at the Battle of Jutland (May 1916, \*Jellicoe). After Jutland, he called for unrestricted submarine warfare and became Chief of Naval Staff August–November 1918.

**Schiele, Egon** (1890–1918). Austrian expressionist painter and designer. A follower of \*Klimt, he developed a tight linear style and his figure drawings show great virtuosity. An important painter in the Sezessionist school, he died of influenza, aged 28.

**Schiff, Sir András** (1953– ). Hungarian-Jewish-British pianist and conductor, born in Budapest. An outstanding interpreter of \*Bach, \*Mozart, \*Beethoven, \*Schubert and \*Schumann, he toured extensively and became a British subject in 2001.

**Schikaneder, Emanuel** (1751–1812). Austrian dramatist, actor and theatre director. He wrote the libretto for \*Mozart's opera *Die Zauberflöte* (*The Magic Flute*, 1791), a Masonic allegory, and created the role of Papageno.

**Schillebeeckx, Edward** (1914–2009). Belgian-Dutch theologian, born in Antwerp. He joined the Dominicans and became professor of theology at Nijmegen University 1958–83. As advisor to the radical Dutch bishops he was suspected of heresy by conservatives in the Vatican. His many books include the magisterial *Jesus* (1974, published in English 1979), *Christ* (1977: 1980) and *Jesus in Our Western Culture* (1987).

**Schiller, Ferdinand Canning Scott** (1864–1937). English philosopher. He taught at Corpus Christi College, Oxford 1897–1926 and was professor of philosophy at the University of Southern California 1926–36. His chief contribution to

English philosophy was his part in the revival of the empirical tradition. Under the influence of William \*James, with whom he formed an early friendship, he emphasised that the primary cause of human thinking is the need to act. He looked on pragmatism as a form of philosophical humanism, which rejected, as secondary or unreal, metaphysical idealism and the formal logic that so often fortified it. He had a deep knowledge of the physical sciences, wrote on eugenics, and was an active member of the Society for Psychical Research. His more general works include *Studies in Humanism* (1907) and *Logic for Use* (1929).

**Schiller, (Johann Christoph) Friedrich von** (1759–1805). German poet and dramatist, born at Marbach near Stuttgart. His father was a captain in the service of the Duke of Württemberg, at whose instigation the promising boy became (1773) a pupil at the new academy for officers and public servants. He became an army surgeon but absented himself without leave to watch a performance of his first play *Die Räuber* (1782, *The Robbers*) at Mannheim. For a similar offence he was briefly imprisoned, fled from the Duke's service and took refuge at Mannheim where, after an interval, he was appointed theatre poet. He continued to write plays but it was after a move (1785) to Leipzig and Dresden, on the invitation of admirers, that he completed his first dramatic masterpiece *Don Carlos* (1785), which, though involved with the fate of the unhappy son of \*Felipe II of Spain, finely expressed the 18th-century ideals of political and religious liberty. His next moves were to Weimar and Jena where he was professor of history 1789–99 and published his *History of the Revolt of the Netherlands* (1788) and *History of the Thirty Years War* (1789–93). After an illness from which he was slow to recover, he studied \*Kant's philosophy, especially those parts relating to aesthetics, and wrote essays on such subjects as the nature of tragedy, the meaning of beauty, and aesthetic education. His philosophic poems of this time reflect the same themes. From 1794 he was a close friend of \*Goethe and in 1799 he settled at Weimar to be near him. To the last period of his life belong some of his greatest plays, *The Death of Wallenstein* (1799), *Mary Stuart* (1800), *The Maid of Orleans* (1881) and *William Tell* (1804). He is also well known for his lyrics and ballads (e.g. *Die Glocke*, in which the processes of casting a bell symbolise the events and influences that make up the life of man).

Mainland, W. F., *Schiller and the Changing Past*. 1957.

**Schindler, Oskar** (1908–1974). German entrepreneur. Although a Nazi Party member, he saved more than 1,100 Jews in factories in Poland and Czechoslovakia during the Holocaust (1943–45), became honoured as a 'righteous gentile' in Israel, died in Argentina and was buried in Jerusalem. Thomas \*Keneally's book *Schindler's Ark* (1982) was filmed as *Schindler's List* (1993) by Steven \*Spielberg.

**Schinkel, Karl Friedrich** (1781–1841). German architect, town planner, painter and stage designer. He laid out Berlin, worked in classic, Gothic and romantic traditions and designed atmospheric productions of works by \*Mozart and \*Goethe.

**Schirach, Baldur von** (1907–1974). German Nazi politician. Youth leader of the Nazi Party 1936–40 and Gauleiter of Vienna 1940–45, he was sentenced to 20 years' imprisonment by the Nuremberg tribunal.

**Schlegel, August Wilhelm von** (1767–1845). German critic. In 1797 he became professor of literature at Jena, and his lectures there and at Berlin and Vienna provide a clear exposition of the romantic viewpoint. He is best known, however, for his translations of \*Shakespeare's plays (1798–1810) and of \*Dante, \*Calderon and \*Camões. His brother, (Karl Wilhelm) **Friedrich von Schlegel** (1772–1829), is regarded as the finest critic produced by the Romantic movement and, with \*Hegel, one of the most important influences on German thought of his period. He also wrote poetry and a novel, *Lucinde* (1799), based on his own love affair with a daughter of the philosopher Moses \*Mendelssohn. He lectured at Jena 1800–01. First an atheist, then Catholic convert (1808), he worked for \*Metternich. Among the first in Germany to study Sanskrit, he wrote *Über die Sprache und Weisheit der Indier* (On the Language and Wisdom of India, 1808).

**Schleicher, Kurt von** (1882–1934). German general and politician. He served on the general staff in World War I and became politically important in 1932 as Defence Minister in June and Chancellor in December. His attempt to find a basis of power by alternately angling for the support of the Nazis and of the trade unions lost him the confidence of all. He resigned in January 1933 and was murdered during the Nazi's 'Night of the Long Knives' in June 1934.

**Schleiden, Mathias Jakob** (1804–1881). German botanist, born in Hamburg. He practised law unhappily, took up botany as a hobby and after studying in Göttingen and Berlin, became professor of botany at Jena 1839–64. His lifelong concern was to orientate botany away from the obsession with classification which had followed from the work of \*Linnaeus. His interest was in plant physiology, with cellular structure and growth. With \*Schwann he helped to formulate the notion of the cell structure of plants. He believed wrongly that cells formed out of a nucleus and then became encased in cell walls. Schleiden pursued a great variety of plant studies with the aid of the microscope. He was involved with the pathology of plants, and investigated fungoid infections that attacked plant roots. He was a strong supporter of \*Darwin.

**Schlesinger, Arthur Meier, Jr** (1917–2007). American historian, born in Ohio. Son of a historian of the same name, he taught at Harvard 1946–61, became special

assistant to President \*Kennedy 1961–63 and held the chair of humanities at the City University of New York 1966–. His books include *The Age of Jackson* (1945), and *A Thousand Days: John F. Kennedy in the White House* (1965), which both won a Pulitzer Prize, *The Age of Roosevelt* (3 volumes, 1957–60) and *Cycles of American History* (1986).

#### **Schleswig-Holstein-Sonderburg-Glücksburg.**

Danish-German dynasty. Descendants of \*Christian IX of Denmark became rulers of Greece and Norway and included Philip, Duke of \*Edinburgh.

**Schlieffen, Alfred, Graf von** (1833–1913). German soldier. He was a staff officer in the Prussian Wars of 1866 and 1870 and Chief of the Imperial General Staff 1891–1906. From 1894 he later developed a strategic plan for future wars by which France would be attacked through Belgium whilst only a holding operation would be fought on the Russian front. This plan was closely followed in both 1914 and 1940.

**Schliemann, Heinrich** (1822–1890). German archaeologist. He amassed a fortune as a merchant and contractor in Russia and in the US, retiring in 1868 to devote himself to archaeology. He mastered 15 languages. He claimed to have been fascinated by \*Homer from childhood and dreamed of proving that *The Iliad* had a historical basis. He accepted in 1868 Frank Calvert's identification of Hisarlik as the site of Troy (Ilium) but the slow granting of permission to excavate delayed his major work until 1871–73. He worked at Troy 1876, 1882, 1889–90. He found nine layers of occupation and assumed that Homer's Troy was second from the bottom (Troy II). In 1890 his assistant **Wilhelm Dörpfeld** (1853–1940) persuaded him that Troy II was a millennium too early, the correct level being Troy VI or VIIa (c.1250 BCE). In 1876 his excavations at Mycenae proved the richness of its civilisation and made him world famous. He also worked at Orchomenos (1880–81, 1886) and Tiryns (1884) with Dörpfeld. He wrote several books about his discoveries, including *Troia* (1884), written in collaboration with Dörpfeld. He planned to excavate Knossos (Arthur \*Evans) and Ithaca but died suddenly in Naples. His second wife **Sophia Engastromenos** (1852–1932) worked on the excavations with him. The artefacts in 'Priam's Treasure' were displayed in Berlin, taken to the USSR in 1945, and most are exhibited at the Pushkin Museum in Moscow. Negotiations for its return began in 1993. It is now generally agreed that the objects long predate Priam's Troy, as recorded in *The Iliad*.

Moorehead, C., *The Lost Treasures of Troy*. 1994; Traill, D. A., *Schliemann of Troy: Treasure and Deceit*. 1995.

**Schmeling, Max** (imilian Adolph Otto Siegfried) (1905–2005). German boxer, born in Pomerania. In 1930 he won the world heavyweight championship in New York when Jack Sharkey was disqualified; however, in 1932 Sharkey regained the title.

**Schmidt, Brian Paul** (1967–). American-Australian astrophysicist, born in Montana. He grew up in Alaska and went to university in Arizona and at Harvard. In 1994 he moved to Australia, where he held a chair at The Australian National University and worked at the Mt Stromlo observatory. He shared the 2011 Nobel Prize for Physics with Saul Perlmutter and Adam Riess 'for the discovery of the accelerating expansion of the Universe through observations of distant supernovae', and worked on 'dark energy'. He was elected FAA and FRS, and awarded an AC in 2013. He became Vice-Chancellor of The Australian National University 2015–.

**Schmidt, Helmut** (Heinrich Waldemar) (1918–2015). German politician, born in Hamburg. He joined the Social Democratic Party in 1946 and was active in Land politics in Hamburg as Manager of Transport Administration 1949–53 and Senator for Domestic Affairs 1961–65. He became a member of the Bundestag 1953–61, 1965–87. Chairman of the Social Democratic Party in the Bundestag 1967–69, he was appointed Minister of Defence 1969–72, Minister of Finance 1972–74 and Federal Chancellor 1974–82. He was a gifted pianist.

Schmidt, H., *Balance of Power*. 1970; Schmidt, H., *Als Christ in der Politischen Entscheidung*. 1976.

**Schnabel, Artur** (1882–1951). Austrian pianist, teacher and composer, born in Lipnik, then in Moravia, now in Poland. A pupil of Theodor \*Leschetizky, he lived in Berlin 1900–33 and became internationally famous for his interpretations of \*Beethoven, \*Mozart, \*Schubert and \*Brahms. In 1932 he recorded all 32 Beethoven sonatas. He toured Australia in 1938 and lived in the US from 1939. His advanced compositions were in the style of \*Schoenberg.

**Schneerson, Menachem Mendel** (1902–1994). American rabbi, born in Nikolayev, Russia (now Ukraine). In 1950 he succeeded his father-in-law as chief rabbi of the Lubavitcher (Hasidic) sect, with its headquarters in New York, with 200,000 followers and synagogues worldwide. Some followers believed him to be the Messiah.

**Schnittke, Alfred** (1934–1998). Russian composer, born in Engels. Son of a German-Jewish journalist who migrated to the USSR, he studied in Vienna. Enormously prolific, his works included nine symphonies, eight concertos, six concerti grossi, chamber music, three operas, three ballets, many choral works and film scores. His piano quintet (1976) and three sonatas for violin and piano are powerful and original. He was professor of composition at the Hamburg Hochschule 1989–98.

**Schnitzler, Arthur** (1862–1931). Austrian physician dramatist and novelist. His medical profession made him interested in psychological problems, usually erotic but sometimes morbid. He is at his best in

cycles of short plays, e.g. *Anatol* (1893) and *Reigen* (1900) in which one or more characters of one play are carried on into the next. (The French film *La Ronde* was based on his work.) Schnitzler was a Jew and the theme of *Professor Bernhardt* (1912) is conflict between a Jewish doctor's sense of duty and Roman Catholic principles in an anti-Semitic country.

**Schoenberg** (Schönberg), **Arnold** (Franz Walter) (1874–1951). Hungarian-Czech-American composer, theorist, teacher and painter, born in Vienna. Raised in an Orthodox Jewish family, Schoenberg struggled with religion as he did with politics and aesthetics, became a Lutheran in 1898, and reconverted to Judaism in 1933. He worked as a bank clerk, was largely self-taught as an instrumentalist but had some lessons in composition from **Alexander von Zemlinsky**. His early work, notably *Verklärte Nacht* (*Transfigured Night*: string sextet, 1899) attempted to reconcile the influences of \*Wagner and \*Brahms. His massive cantata *Gurre-Lieder* (*Songs of Gurre*: 1911), for four soloists, four choruses and large orchestra, in a romantic post-Wagnerian idiom, is based on Danish legend. He then began a process of discarding traditional tonality, based on a key in the diatonic (seven-note) scale, adopting the chromatic (twelve-note) scale. He first used this transformation in *The Book of the Hanging Gardens* (1908, settings of Stefan \*George) and the monodrama *Erwartung* (1909). The word 'atonal' was applied to his works, but not by Schoenberg who insisted that he used pitches and chords that continued to relate to a tonic centre. In *Pierrot lunaire* (1912), a cycle based on poems by Albert Giraud, employing 'speech song' and instrumental accompaniment, he developed 'the twelve-tone row' in which notes in the chromatic scale are arranged in an arbitrary order. It is hypnotic and compelling. Schoenberg and his disciples Alban \*Berg and Anton \*Webern are sometimes described as the Second Viennese School, although it is not clear who attended the first one.

Influenced by the Expressionists, Schoenberg became a prolific painter, notably self-portraits, exhibiting with \*Kandinsky's *Blaue Reiter* group. He was an expert chess and tennis player. The period 1916–23 was his 'years of silence'. Almost all his work from the *Serenade* (1923) onwards was composed according to the twelve-tone row, one of the most important innovations in the history of music. The tone row for his Violin Concerto (1936), one of his most accessible works, is: A, Bb, Eb, B, E, F#, C, Db, G, Ab, D, F. Later works include the String Quartets Nos 3 (1927) and 4 (1936), the Piano Concerto (1942), *Ode to Napoleon* (1943), *A Survivor from Warsaw* (1947), expressing passionate fury about the Holocaust, and the opera *Moses und Aron*, which was unfinished at his death. He lived in Vienna (apart from a few years in Berlin) until, at 51, he became a professor at the Prussian Academy of Arts in Berlin. Dismissed by the Nazis in 1933, after a brief stay in Paris he went to the US where he taught in New York and Boston, then

became a professor at the University of California at Los Angeles. Schoenberg wrote, with good reason: '... if it is art, it is not for all, and if it is for all, it is not art.' (1946).

Reich, W., *Schoenberg: A Critical Biography*. 1971; Rosen, C., *Schoenberg*. 1975.

**Scholl, Andreas** (1967– ). German counter tenor. Born into a family of singers, he studied in Switzerland with René \*Jacobs, and developed a style of exceptional agility, musicality and interpretive depth, especially in works by \*Vivaldi, \*Händel and \*Bach.

**Scholl, Sophia Magdalena** (1921–1943). German resister. A student in Munich, she became active in the White Rose, a non-violent resistance group. She and her brother **Hans Scholl** were convicted of treason for handing out leaflets and both were guillotined.

**Scholz, Olaf** (1958– ). German Social Democratic politician. A lawyer, then a Bundestag member 2002–11; 2017–, he was Minister for Labour and Social Affairs 2007–09, Mayor of Hamburg 2011–18, and Vice-Chancellor and Minister of Finance 2018–21, in a Coalition with Angela \*Merkel's CDU. Chancellor of Germany 2021–, he led a 'traffic-lights' coalition of the SDP, the Free Democratic Party (FDP) and the Greens.

**Schöngauer, Martin** (c.1430–1491). German artist, born in Colmar, Alsace. Son of a goldsmith, he studied (and taught?) at Leipzig and was influenced by the Flemish masters, especially Rogier van der \*Weyden. His masterpiece, *The Madonna of the Rose Garden* (1473), the only surviving painting certainly by him, is in St Martin's Dominican church in Colmar. He was the greatest German engraver before \*Dürer and 115 of his plates survive.

**Schopenhauer, Arthur** (1788–1860). German metaphysical philosopher, born in Danzig (now Gdansk). Best known for his view that will is the reality of the universe, he was a lecturer in philosophy at Berlin (1820–31) and suffered a dramatic reverse when he deliberately lectured at the same time as \*Hegel and did not win away students. Influenced by eastern philosophy, he stressed the existence of human suffering and is sometimes called the philosopher of pessimism. His major work is *The World as Will and Idea*, the will being the active principle, a blind irrational impulse, a term which includes all active processes, even those of gravity or motivation. The 'idea' on the other hand was merely something received, a brain picture, a nothing of itself and with no exploratory function such as would be implied in such phrases as 'intellectual intuition'. Schopenhauer's ethical system rests on sympathy which to him is much more than fellow feeling, the actual identification of self with another. But asceticism he places even above sympathy, since through it is attained the subjection of the will to live and the intellect is freed to pierce

the veil of illusion. Schopenhauer spent the last 30 years of his life in isolation at Frankfurt-am-Main. He gained little acceptance until old age and received few academic distinctions. His subsequent influence has been partly due to his emphasis on the irrational.

Gardiner, P., *Schopenhauer*. 1963.

**Schreiner, Olive** (Emilie Albertina) (1855–1920). South African author, born in Lesotho. Daughter of German missionaries, she wrote *The Story of an African Farm* (1883), an outspoken story of life in a Boer homestead and of spiritual problems similar to her own. Its rebellious attitude to the subordination of women caused much controversy at the time. She supported Cecil \*Rhodes, then broke with him on the issue of political rights for women and black people. She wrote *Woman and Labour* (1911), became a pacifist and corresponded with \*Gandhi.

First, R. and Scott, A., *Olive Schreiner*. 1980.

**Schröder, Gerhard Fritz Kurt** (1944– ). German Social Democratic politician. He was a lawyer and administrator, Bundestag deputy 1980–86, Minister-President of Lower Saxony 1990–98, and SPD candidate for Chancellor 1998, defeating Helmut \*Kohl and forming a coalition with the Greens. He was Chancellor 1998–2005 until defeated by a coalition led by Angela \*Merkel. Married four times, known as ‘Audi man’ or ‘Lord of the Rings’, he left politics and entered business. He became close to Vladimir \*Putin.

**Schrödinger, Erwin** (1887–1961). Austrian theoretical physicist. Educated at Vienna University, after a comparatively mediocre career, he had a sudden burst of creativity in a period of six months in 1926 when he wrote several brilliant papers which tackled major problems in quantum theory. He became professor of physics at Berlin University 1927–33. He was largely responsible for the development of wave mechanics, for which he deduced the fundamental equation (Schrödinger’s wave equation). This makes it possible to treat atomic structure on a more mathematical basis than is permitted by \*Rutherford’s mechanical model. With \*Dirac, Schrödinger won the Nobel Prize for Physics (1933). He taught in Rome and Oxford and was professor of physics at the Institute for Advanced Studies, Dublin 1939–56. His book *What Is Life?* (1944) influenced a generation of young scientists to turn from physics to the biological sciences. He also wrote *Nature and the Greeks* (1954).

Moore, W. J., *Schrödinger: Life and Thought*. 1989; Gribbin, J., *Erwin Schrödinger and the Quantum Revolution*. 2012.

**Schubert, Franz Peter** (1797–1828). Austrian composer, born in Vienna. Son of a schoolmaster, he was the 12th of 14 children (only 5 surviving infancy). He showed precocious musical talent, and from 1808

studied at the choir school in Vienna which provided singers for the Imperial Court chapel, and his teachers included \*Salieri. In 1813, the year he left school, he composed his first symphony. In 1814, when he went to teach at his father’s school, he composed his first opera *The Devil’s Pleasure Palace*, the first six masses. Schubert was the first major Austrian composer to express the pleasure-loving, nostalgic and partly rustic atmosphere of Vienna, in the many songs and dances in which folk influence is discernible. He wrote in the Viennese classical tradition, with extraordinary melodic gifts and an increasing mastery of complex forms.

His lyricism, which has never been surpassed, found its finest expression in his songs (*Lieder*), which number 651 in the Deutsch (D) catalogue and he created the modern art of song. He set 63 of \*Goethe’s poems, some in several versions, beginning with *Gretchen at the Spinning Wheel* (1814), ending with *Mignon’s Song* (*Knowest thou the land?* 1826), and including some masterpieces: *The Erl-King* (*Erkönig*), *Hedgeroses*, *To the Moon*, and *The King of Thule*. (Sadly, the poet was indifferent.) He also set texts by \*Schiller, \*Klopstock, \*Shakespeare, \*Heine, Wilhelm Müller and Friedrich von Matthisson. In 1815 he wrote 145 songs (nine on a single day) including many of his best. The song cycle *Die schöne Müllerin* (*Fair Maid of the Mill*, 1823), 20 poems by Müller, marks the highpoint of his lyricism. *Winterreise* (*Winter Journey*, 1827), 24 poems, also by Müller, set for tenor (or baritone) and piano is, appropriately, chilling.

Schubert wrote four operas, none of which were performed in his lifetime and have only been rarely performed since, and was strikingly lacking in theatrical gifts, despite the drama, pathos and psychological insight of his songs. Choruses, both sacred and profane, poured from his pen. Twenty of his songs and many popular piano pieces were published in 1821. He derived his small income from music sales and teaching.

In 1816 he gave up school teaching, living a more or less hand-to-mouth existence, returned to his father’s school in 1817, then was a music master in Count Johann Esterhazy’s household in Hungary in 1818 and 1824. Schubert, a convivial character with many friends, frequently played and sang at concert parties (*Schubertiaden*) and receptions. He never married. The Piano Quintet (*‘The Trout’*, 1819) and Symphonies No. 4 (1816), 5 (1816) and 6 (1818) were rarely played until the 1930s.

Much of his finest music dates from his last years e.g. the song cycles *Die Schöne Müllerin* (Müller, 1823) and *Die Winterreise* (Müller, 1827), the famous Symphony No. 8 (*Unfinished*, 1822: first performed 1865), and Symphony No. 9 (*The Great*, 1825–28: first performed 1839, but regarded as too long and ignored for decades). Later chamber works include the Octet in F (1824), the String Quartets in A Minor (1824), D Minor (*Death and the Maiden*, 1824) and G Major (1826). The String Quintet in C major, D 956 (two

violins, one viola, two cellos), written in the year of his death but unperformed until 1850, is his masterpiece, full of a passionate intensity and symphonic in its range, lyrical, dramatic, tragic, even violent at times. The Adagio is one of the greatest movements in all music: it cuts to the heart. The Quintet is especially poignant because Schubert faced an early death, while his creative powers were still developing. He was a prolific writer for piano, including 21 Sonatas, the *Wanderer Fantasy* (1822), two sets of four Impromptus, the *Fantasy* in F Minor for piano duet, the *Moments musicaux* and many lively dances. The last three Piano Sonatas, ranking with \*Beethoven's, were written only months before he died, and were dedicated to \*Schumann (who failed to appreciate them). They were published first in 1838. Sonata No. 21 in B flat major, D. 960, is a long masterpiece, poignant, threatening, self-revelatory, and confronting.

The misfortunes of his last years—ill health, financial difficulties, failure (1826) to obtain salaried posts were offset by belated recognition. He met the dying Beethoven, who appreciated his work. In March 1828 his only public concert took place in Vienna where, in November, he died of typhoid fever at the age of 31. He had long suffered from syphilis, complicated by alcoholism, which makes his productivity all the more astounding. Schubert, the shortest lived of the great composers, was much influenced by Beethoven, and suffered by appearing to be in his shadow (an accusation which later haunted \*Brahms). This was only an optical illusion. Schubert plumbed the depths of human emotion, of isolation, the separated soul, as few others have, before or since. He was buried next to Beethoven and had a profound influence on \*Bruckner and \*Mahler.

Deutsch, O. E., *Schubert. A Documentary Biography*. 1977; Rosen, C., *The Romantic Generation*. 1995; Mackay, E. N., *Franz Schubert. A Biography*. 1996; Newbould, B., *Schubert: The Music and the Man*. 1999; Gibbs, C. H., *The Life of Schubert*. 2000; Bostridge, I., *Schubert's Winter Journey*. 2015.

**Schumacher, Ernst Friedrich** (1911–1977). British economist, born in Germany. He lived in Britain from 1937, worked for the National Coal Board, then devoted himself to promoting 'intermediate' and alternative technology. His book, *Small is Beautiful* (1973) was a major bestseller.

**Schuman, Robert** (1886–1963). French politician, born in Luxembourg. He first became a deputy in 1919, played an active part in the Resistance during World War II and after the war was a prominent member of the MRP (Mouvement Républicain Populaire). Prime Minister 1947–48, as Foreign Minister 1948–53 in 10 administrations he proved himself a strong supporter of European integration. The 'Schuman plan' led to the European Coal and Steel Community (ratified 1952). In 1958 he became first president of the European Parliamentary Assembly.

**Schumann, Clara Josephine** (née Wieck) (1819–1896). German pianist and composer, born in Leipzig. Daughter of the important piano teacher **Friedrich Wieck** (1785–1873), she was a child prodigy, toured extensively and composed many piano pieces and songs. Despite her father's passionate opposition, she married Robert \*Schumann in 1840, bore eight children between 1841 and 1854 and supported him during his mental breakdown. The intimate friend (but not lover) of Johannes \*Brahms, she disapproved of \*Liszt's florid style, introduced the practice of playing from memory, was recognised as the definitive interpreter of \*Beethoven \*Chopin, Schumann and Brahms, and taught in Frankfurt. She toured Britain 16 times.

**Schumann, Elisabeth** (1888–1952). German soprano. She sang opera and lieder, and was a member of the Vienna State Opera 1919–37. Much of her international success came from her recordings of songs by \*Schubert. She settled in New York in 1938.

**Schumann, Robert Alexander** (1810–1856). German composer, born in Zwickau in Saxony. Son of a publisher and bookseller, he showed early musical ability but went as a law student to Leipzig, where he was unhappy, and to Heidelberg where law competed unsuccessfully with music and a gay and extravagant social life. From 1830 he was committed to music, studying piano with **Friedrich Wieck**, whose daughter (Clara \*Schumann) he married. His hopes of a career as a virtuoso were ended by focal dystonia in his right hand. He founded and edited *The New Journal of Music* (Leipzig, 1834–44) in which his vividly written criticisms did much to promote the reputations of \*Chopin and \*Berlioz. Of his compositions in this first period the set of piano pieces known as *Carnaval* were inspired by an early love affair, while his love for Clara is immortalised in the C Major Fantasia, the *Kreisleriana*, the *Etudes Symphoniques* (1837) and other piano works. In 1840 he was absorbed by the romantic poems of \*Heine, many of which he turned into songs. In 1841 he turned to composition on a more extended scale: the Symphony No. 1 (*Spring*), the first version of the Symphony No. 4 and the first movement of the Piano Concerto (completed 1845) date from this year. In 1842 there followed three String Quartets and the great piano Quintet (op. 44). His first large choral work, *Paradise and the Peri*, was finished in 1843. A move to Dresden with its opera house suggested experiment in the theatrical field (e.g. incidental music for \*Byron's *Manfred*). The directorship of the Dusseldorf Orchestra 1849–1853 proved too much for his health and mental stability, and despite the solace of the friendship of the young \*Brahms, he tried to drown himself (1854) and spent his last two years in an asylum at Eendenich, near Bonn, at his own request. He presumably suffered from a manic-depressive disorder, complicated by heavy drinking, and died of malnutrition.

Except for the Symphony No. 3 (*Rhenish*), two violin sonatas and the cello concerto (op. 129, 1850), his works in the last phase show a decline in creative power. With notable exceptions he was not at his best in the large instrumental works which demanded extended abstract musical thinking. He made his unique contribution in those miniature forms (the character piece for piano and the song) which he was able to fill at the prompting of a poet's idea. His *Dichterliebe* cycle and *Liederkreis* collection (both 1840) provide the perfect musical counterparts to the romantic poetry of \*Heine and \*Eichendorff respectively, and Schumann is ranked amongst the greatest of song composers.

Chissell, J., *Schumann*. 1967; Ostwald, P., *Schumann—the inner voice of a musical genius*. 1985; Worthen, J., *Robert Schumann. Life of a Musician*. 2007.

**Schumer, Chuck** (Charles Ellis). (1950–). American Democratic politician. Harvard educated, he represented New York in the House of Representatives 1981–99 and the Senate 1999– and proved to be an exceptionally skilled campaigner, negotiator and party leader.

**Schumpeter, Joseph Alois** (1883–1950). Austrian economist. He served as Minister for Finance 1919–20 in the first Austrian republican government, became professor of economics at Bonn in 1925 and in 1932 moved to the US where he held a Harvard chair until his death. His *Capitalism, Socialism and Democracy* (1942) and *History of Economic Analysis* (1950) were enormously influential. His third wife, **Elizabeth Boody** (1898–1953), an economic historian, edited his work.

**Schuschnigg, Kurt Alois Josef Johann von** (1897–1977). Austrian politician, born in the Tyrol. A lawyer, he was a Christian Social deputy 1927–38, serving under \*Dollfuss as Minister for Justice 1932–33 and Education 1933–34. An Austro-Fascist, with strong links to the Catholic Church and \*Mussolini's regime, he opposed \*Hitler's policy of annexation of Austria. After Dollfuss' murder, he became Chancellor of Austria 1934–38 until forced out after the Anschluss. Imprisoned 1938–45, he was a professor of political science at St Louis University, Missouri, 1948–67.

Schuschnigg, K. von, *Austrian Requiem*. Eng. ed. 1947.

**Schütz, Heinrich** (in Latin Henricus Sagittarius) (1585–1672). German composer, born in Saxony. He studied in Venice under Giovanni \*Gabrieli, became an organist in Kassel and worked in Dresden from 1615 until his death, except for short periods in Venice (where he may have known \*Monteverdi) and two years in Copenhagen. He wrote the first German opera, *Dafne* (1627, now lost), and much Church music, including three *Passions* (Luke, John, Matthew) and *Christmas Oratorio*. His *Seven Words from the Cross* (1645) and *Resurrection* (1623)

represent a link between the 16th-century polyphonic composers and the accompanied choral works of \*Bach and \*Händel. He wrote more than 500 works.

**Schuyler, Philip John** (1733–1804). American politician. He was a member of the colonial assembly (from 1768) and delegate to the Continental Congress (1775). As well as being Commissioner for Indian affairs, he sat in Congress between 1778–81 and was a senator 1789–91 and 1797–98. He was a leader of the Federal Party in New York and helped to prepare the state's Constitution.

**Schwab, Charles Michael** (1862–1939). American industrialist. He worked his way up from being a stake-driver to become first President of the United Steel Corporation (1901–03) and President of the Bethlehem Steel Corporation (from 1903).

**Schwann, Theodor** (1810–1882). German physiologist, born in Cologne. Educated in Berlin, Bonn and Würzburg, he worked with J. P. \*Müller and all his great achievements were in the 1830s, investigating the chemistry of life processes. He devoted himself to the study of digestion, and discovered the enzyme 'pepsin'. He worked on the formation of sugar solutions and the role of yeast in ferments. His denials of spontaneous generation led to experiments on sterilisation which \*Pasteur was later to build upon. Schwann is perhaps best known for his contributions to cell theory in plants and animals. He was concerned with showing the differentiation of cell structure in very different tissues (e.g. cartilage and bones). All aspects of animals and plants were either cells or their products. Cells had a physiological and chemical life of their own, which was, however, subordinate to the overall life of the organism. He coined the term 'metabolism'. Professor of Anatomy at Louvain 1838–47 and Liege 1847–80, he was awarded the Copley Medal in 1845.

**Schwarzenegger, Arnold Alois** (1947–). American actor and politician, born in Austria. In the US from 1968, he worked as a body-builder and appeared in the films *The Terminator* (1984) and *Kindergarten Cop* (1990). After a referendum recalled the Governor of California, Grey Davis, in September 2003, Schwarzenegger, the Republican candidate, was elected to succeed him, serving until 2011.

**Schwarzkopf, Dame** (Olga Maria) **Elizabeth** (Friederike) (1915–2006). German soprano (naturalised British). Her career flourished after World War II with the encouragement of her husband **Walter Legge** (1906–1979), record producer and founder of the Philharmonia Orchestra. Her enormous ability as singer and actor, combined with striking good looks, made her the most admired operatic and concert soprano of her time, and she made several films. She was a notable Countess in *Figaro* and Feldmarschall in *Rosenkavalier*, and made many lieder recordings.



**Schwarzkopf, H(erbert) Norman** (1934–2012). American general. Son of a brigadier, he grew up abroad, then graduated from West Point and the University of Southern California. He served in Vietnam, Grenada and Washington, and was appointed as Commander of the UN's 'Operation Desert Storm', in which 500,000 troops (mostly US) defeated Iraq in the Gulf War (1991). He wrote an autobiography *It Doesn't Take a Hero* (1992).

**Schweitzer, Albert** (1875–1965). French-German (Alsatian) medical missionary, theologian, philosopher, organist, biographer, born in Kayserberg, Alsace. Son of a Lutheran pastor, he studied organ in Mulhouse, theology in Strasbourg, and gained a PhD in Paris with a thesis on \*Kant. His *German and French Organ Building and Organ Art* (1906) was influential in reviving interest in baroque organs, but he remained an enthusiast for \*Cavaillé-Coll's instruments. He first became known as an interpreter of J. S. \*Bach and wrote an authoritative biography (1905/08, translated into English by Ernest \*Newman). With C.-M. \*Widor, he edited *The Complete Organ Works of J.S. Bach* (8 vols, 1912–14). (He also made some much-admired recordings.) His controversial book *The Quest of the Historical Jesus* (1906, translated 1910) argued that \*Jesus' mission was to warn of an impending end of the world. In 1905 Schweitzer decided to become a medical missionary in Africa and, after qualifying in medicine in Strasbourg, he established a mission hospital at Lambaréné in French Equatorial Africa (now Gabon), treating leprosy, sleeping sickness and other tropical diseases. He worked there 1913–17, 1923–65, apart from a period of internment in World War I (1917–18) and concert and lecture tours in Europe (1919–23, 1928, 1935, 1937, 1949–50, 1952–53) to raise funds. In 1949 he visited the US. He was criticised for neglecting modern methods of hygiene, e.g. by letting wives and children accompany the patients to hospital and cook meals etc. in the hospital precincts. His answer was that his methods won the affection and trust of those for whom he worked and that the fear of hospital was removed. Improvements were, however, gradually introduced. In his *Civilisation and Ethics* (1923) he urged adoption of the philosophy of 'reverence for life' (*Ehrfurcht vor dem Leben*). *The Mysticism of Paul the Apostle* (1931), a revisionist work, explains Paul in the context of Hellenism and is sharply critical of \*Luther's interpretation. He wrote several autobiographical works, e.g. *From my African Notebook* (1936). In the early years of the Cold War, Schweitzer was often linked with Albert \*Einstein and Bertrand \*Russell in campaigning against atomic weapons. He received the 1952 Nobel Prize for Peace, having been nominated 30 times since 1930. His Nobel Prize address is a careful examination of the causes of war and attempts to create organisations, which can eliminate the risk of annihilation. He refers to the horrors of World War II, including atomic bombs, fire bombings and displacement of refugees but, bizarrely, made no

reference to \*Hitler, the Holocaust, the Middle East or Africa. He used his Nobel Prize money to build a leprosarium and died in Lambaréné.

His many honours included election to the Académie française (1953) and the British OM (1955). He was a second cousin of Jean-Paul \*Sartre and related by marriage to the conductor Charles \*Munch.

Seaver, G., *Albert Schweitzer: The Man and His Mind*. 6th ed. 1969; Brabazon, J., *Albert Schweitzer*. 1975; Brabazon, J., *Albert Schweitzer: A Biography*. 2000; Oermann, N. O., *Albert Schweitzer: A Biography*. 2016.

**Schwepe, (Jean) Jacob** (1740–1821). German-Swiss inventor, born in Hesse. A jeweller in Geneva, he followed the experiments of Joseph \*Priestley and invented a machine that produced the first aerated soft drinks. He was in commercial production by 1783 and set up a factory in London in 1792.

**Schwinger, Julian Seymour** (1918–1994). American theoretical physicist, born in New York. He was Robert \*Oppenheimer's assistant on the 'Manhattan Project', shared the 1965 Nobel Prize for Physics with Richard \*Feynman and Sin-Itiro Tomonaga for their work in formulating quantum electrodynamics.

**Schwitters, Kurt** (1887–1948). German artist and poet. A leader of the Dada movement, he developed three dimensional collages (collectively called *Merz*—from the German word *Kommerz*), using everyday objects. He lived in England from 1940.

**Sciascia, Leonardo** (1921–1989). Italian novelist, born in Sicily. He wrote thrillers that attacked the Mafia, Red Terrorism and Church indifference, and served in the European Parliament.

**Scipio Aemilianus, Publius Cornelius** (185–129 BCE). Roman general. The adopted son of Publius Scipio, the son of \*Scipio Africanus, he was elected consul (147), commanded the Roman forces in the Third Punic War and after a long siege took and utterly destroyed Carthage (146). Back in Rome, he became a leader of the conservative opposition to the reforms (especially the agrarian law) of his brother-in-law Tiberius Gracchus (\*Gracchi). Scipio's death was generally believed to be a political murder.

Astin, A. E., *Scipio Aemilianus*. 1967.

**Scipio Africanus, Publius Cornelius** (236–183 BCE). Roman general. Having gained self-confidence and public esteem in battle against \*Hannibal in Italy, he was appointed, at the early age of 27, proconsul in Spain. One by one he reduced the Carthaginian strongholds and by 207 had conquered the whole country, thus depriving Hannibal of his base. He was elected consul (205) but instead of directing his forces against Hannibal, still in Italy, he conceived the plan, which he carried out against strong opposition, of going direct to Africa and by a threat to Carthage itself ensuring Hannibal's recall. So it transpired.

Scipio was victorious on the plains outside Carthage and Hannibal's army on its return was surrounded and destroyed at Zama (202). For the next 10 years Scipio's prestige gave him almost unlimited power, though his love of all things Greek and a policy to accord with it created a conservative opposition under Marcus Porcius \*Cato. Scipio's campaign (190–189) against \*Antiochus of Syria provided an opportunity for his enemies. Lucius Scipio, Africanus' brother, was asked to account for using part of the indemnity received from Antiochus as a bonus to his troops. Africanus, who realised that he was the real target, was insulted by what he felt to be base ingratitude and retired from public life. By his victories and breadth of vision he had ensured the future of Rome as a great imperial power.

Scullard, H. H., *Scipio Africanus: Soldier and Politician*. 1970.

**Scofield, (David) Paul** (1922–2008). English actor. He created the stage role of Thomas \*More in Robert \*Bolt's *A Man for All Seasons* (1962) and \*Salieri in *Amadeus* (1979) and toured as Hamlet and Lear. His films include John Schlesinger's *The Train* (1964), *A Man for All Seasons* (1966, for which he won an Oscar) and Peter \*Brook's *King Lear* (1971). He received the CH in 2001.

**Scopes, John Thomas** (1901–1970). American teacher. After being dismissed for teaching the Darwinian theory of evolution (forbidden by Tennessee law), he was the protagonist of the famous 'monkey' trial at Dayton, Tenn. (1925). Defended by Clarence \*Darrow against a prosecution led by William Jennings \*Bryan, he was fined \$100 but the sentence was reversed on appeal.

**Scorsese, Martin** (1942– ). American film director, screenwriter and actor, born in New York. He began making documentaries in the social realist tradition and his feature films include *Mean Streets* (1973), *Taxi Driver* (1976), *Raging Bull* (1980), *King of Comedy* (1982), *The Last Temptation of Christ* (1988) and *The Age of Innocence* (1993).

**Scott, C(harles) P(restwich)** (1846–1932). English newspaper editor, born in Bath. Educated at Oxford, he was editor of the *Manchester Guardian* 1872–1929 and made it a radical force, supporting Home Rule for Ireland and opposing the Boer War. Scott was a Liberal MP 1895–1906 but insisted 'Comment is free, but the facts are sacred'. When the proprietor J. E. Taylor died in 1905, Scott bought the paper.

**Scott, Sir (George) Gilbert** (1811–1878). English architect. After being articled to a London firm he gained a major success by winning (1844) an open competition for designing St Nikolai Church, Hamburg (now a ruin). From then on he was constantly in demand for building new churches, mainly in the Gothic style, and restoring old ones, including Westminster Abbey and the cathedrals of Hereford, Salisbury, Chester, Ripon, Exeter,

St Albans and Bath Abbey. Among his secular works were Reading Gaol (1844), the Foreign and Commonwealth Office (1868), St Pancras railway station and hotel (1868) and the Albert Memorial (1872) in London.

Clark, K., *The Gothic Revival*. Repr. 1950.

**Scott, Sir Giles Gilbert** (1880–1960). English architect. Grandson of Sir George Gilbert \*Scott, he won a competition for designing the Anglican Cathedral for Liverpool (1902) and supervised its construction for many years. Among his other designs were those for the Cambridge University Library, the new Bodleian Library, Oxford, the new Waterloo Bridge, London, the new chamber of the House of Commons after World War II (designed 1944, completed 1950), and the Battersea Power Station (converted to the Tate Modern). He received the OM in 1944.

**Scott, Michael** (1175–1234). Scottish scholar. He translated parts of \*Aristotle from Arabic and became official astrologer to the emperor \*Friedrich II. His magical powers are referred to by \*Dante. Some of his works survive. He was buried at Melrose Abbey, where his grave is still marked.

**Scott, Sir Peter Markham** (1909–1989). British ornithologist and artist. Son of Robert Falcon \*Scott, he worked for the conservation of endangered species partly through the World Wildlife Fund but principally through his own Wildfowl Trust at Shimbridge which he founded in 1946. He led ornithological expeditions to Iceland, the Galapagos Islands and the Antarctic.

Scott, P., *The Eye of the Wind*. 1961.

**Scott, Robert Falcon** (1868–1912). English sailor and Antarctic explorer. He joined the navy (1881) and was promoted captain in 1906. He led two expeditions to the Antarctic: the first (1901–04) explored the Ross Sea area, in a second voyage (begun 1910) to the same area he commanded the *Terra Nova* and among his objectives, which included much scientific and exploratory work, was a sledge journey to the South Pole. When Scott and his four companions, E. A. Wilson, L. E. G. \*Oates, H. R. Bowers and E. Evans reached their goal (18 January 1912) they found that the Norwegian explorer Roald \*Amundsen had been there a month earlier. Disappointment became tragedy when, already delayed by a sudden drop in temperature, intense blizzards, and illness, the party remained in its tent until provisions were exhausted. Scott recorded the last days in his diary, later discovered and published in 1913.

Solomon, S., *The Coldest March*. 2001; Fiennes, R., *Captain Scott*. 2003.

**Scott, Sir Walter, 1st Baronet** (1771–1832). Scottish writer, born in Edinburgh. Partly crippled by polio (1773), he was increasingly lame throughout life. To

please his father, an Edinburgh lawyer, he studied law and advanced in the profession, but medieval history and the Romantic literature becoming popular in Germany were his more fruitful regions of study. The collection *Minstrelsy of the Scottish Border* (1802–03) was followed by his own original *The Lay of the Last Minstrel* (1805), *Marmion* (1808) and several more ballads. Popular fame and wealth immediately ensued, the latter encouraging him to start building what was intended to be the ancestral home of Abbotsford on the Tweed near Melrose. He now turned from poetry to prose and *Waverley* (1814), published anonymously, introduced the great romantic and historical series known as the Waverley novels, from their author's thin disguise as 'the author of Waverley'. The best known include *Guy Mannering* (1815), *Rob Roy* (1818), *The Heart of Midlothian* (1818), *The Bride of Lammermoor* (1819) which inspired \*Donizetti's opera, *Ivanhoe* (1819), *The Monastery* and its sequel *The Abbott* (both 1820), *Kenilworth* (1821), *Quentin Durward* (1823) and *The Talisman* (1825). Fiercely reactionary, he was created a baronet in 1820.

Coincident with the publication of *Woodstock* (1826) came the disaster that shadowed Scott's last years. Partly to meet the cost of Abbotsford he had entered into partnership with his friend James \*Ballantyne, the publisher. The firm crashed, Scott, with his delicate sense of honour, refused bankruptcy and with immense courage and industry assumed the task of repaying in full a sum of £130,000 due to creditors. This was eventually achieved by the sale of copyrights after his death, hastened by strain and exhaustion. The quality of his work inevitably declined but to this last period belong three more novels (e.g. *Anne of Geierstein*), the collection of stories from Scottish history titled *Tales of a Grandfather* (1828–30), and his *Life of Napoleon* (1827).

Scott's particular form of romanticism is out of fashion, his characterisation was often poor, but some of his historical portraits, e.g. of \*Louis XI of France in *Quentin Durward*, are remarkable. He played an important part in the development of the historical novel. In his *Journal* (March 1826), he wrote, after commenting on Jane \*Austen, 'The big bow-wow strain I can do myself like any now going; but the exquisite touch, which renders ordinary commonplace things and characters interesting, from the truth of the description and the sentiment, is denied to me.'

Abbotsford passed eventually to Scott's granddaughter Charlotte (child of his daughter Sophie and J. G. \*Lockhart, his biographer), then to her descendants. Scott's fame was spread by the Caledonian diaspora. (In Melbourne alone, four suburbs are named for his home and novels.)

Johnson, E., *Sir Walter Scott: The Great Unknown*. 1970; Lincoln, A., *Walter Scott and Modernity*. 2007; Duncan, I., *Scott's Shadow*. 2007; Kelly, S., *Scott-Land*. 2010.

**Scott, Winfield** (1786–1866). American soldier and politician, born in Virginia. Originally a lawyer, he served in the War of 1812 in Canada and was wounded, led campaigns against the Black Hawks, Seminoles, Creeks and Cherokees, becoming a skilled negotiator in ending the Patriot War (1837–38). He sought the Whig nomination for president in 1840, 1844 and 1848, losing, in turn, to \*Harrison, \*Clay and \*Taylor. As Commanding General of the US Army 1841–61, he introduced French tactics, and in the Mexican War (1846–48) defeated \*Santa Anna and captured Mexico City. He won the soubriquet 'Old Fuss and Feathers'. In 1852 as an anti-slavery candidate he defeated Millard \*Fillmore for the Whig presidential nomination, but lost to Franklin \*Pierce (who had been a subordinate in Mexico). He remained loyal to the Union in the Civil War, retiring in November 1861.

**Scott Moncrieff, C(harles) K(enneth)** (1889–1930). Scottish writer and translator. Educated at Winchester and Edinburgh University, he translated *Beowulf* and \*Stendhal, served as an officer in World War I and was injured. From 1921 until his death, he devoted himself to translating \*Proust's *À la recherche du temps perdu*, as *Remembrance of Things Past*, a masterpiece in its own right, poetic but not always strictly literal. He lived in Italy from 1923, in Florence, Pisa and Rome, reporting to British Intelligence on \*Mussolini and the Fascist regime. He also translated \*Pirandello.

Findlay, J., *Chasing Lost Time: The Life of C. K. Scott Moncrieff, Soldier, Spy and Translator*. 2014.

**Scriabin (or Skryabin), Aleksandr Nikolayevich** (1872–1915). Russian composer and pianist. A contemporary of \*Rachmaninoff at the Moscow Conservatoire, he became professor of pianoforte there 1898–1904. His early piano works were strongly influenced by \*Chopin. After leaving Moscow he devoted himself to composition and lived in Switzerland, Belgium and France. Later under the influence of theosophy he developed doctrines that attached religious significance to all forms of art, and in his compositions subordinated everything to the achievement of ecstasy for which purpose he used such effects as clanging bells, incantations and blaring trumpets. The orchestral works *Poem of Ecstasy* (1908) and *Prometheus* (1911) and the last five piano sonatas (Nos 5–10) illustrate this development. In his later works he introduced a harmonic system based on a 'mystic' chord of ascending fourths.

**Scribe, (Augustin) Eugène** (1791–1861). French dramatist. He was a prolific writer of plays that entertained mainly by the skill of the plot and clever denouements, e.g. *Adrienne Lecouvreur* (1849, later an opera by \*Puccini). He also wrote about 90 libretti, for operas by \*Adam, \*Auber, \*Bellini, Boieldieu, \*Donizetti, \*Halévy, \*Meyerbeer, \*Offenbach, \*Rossini and \*Verdi. He believed that the function of the theatre was to amuse, not to be a reflection of life or a means of instruction.

**Scullin, James Henry** (1876–1953). Australian Labor politician, born near Ballarat. He was a grocer, journalist and union organiser, a member of the House of Representatives 1910–13, 1922–49 and Leader of the Australian Labor Party 1928–35. His term as Prime Minister 1929–32 coincided with the onset of the Great Depression in which Australia was severely hurt. His party split over means of combatting the crisis, with Jack \*Lang defecting to the Left and J. A. \*Lyons to the Right. In the December 1931 election, the ALP national vote fell to 26.7 per cent and Lyons led the United Australia Party to a landslide victory.

**Sculthorpe, Peter Joshua** (1929–2014). Australian composer, born in Launceston. After studying in Melbourne and Oxford, he taught composition at Sydney University 1963, becoming a Professor in 1992. Encouraged by the conductor **Sir Bernard Heinze** (1894–1982) and by the Australian Broadcasting Commission (now Corporation) his music was frequently performed. His works include 15 string quartets, *Irkanda I* and *Irkanda IV* for violin, *Cello Dreaming*, and *Sun Music I, II and III*, *Earth Cry* for didgeridoo and orchestra (1986), *Kakadu* (1988) for orchestra and *Port Arthur In Memoriam* (1996). Naxos and ABC/Eloquence produced two valuable collections of Sculthorpe's music.

**Seaborg, Glenn Theodore** (1912–1999). American physicist, born in Michigan. Educated at the University of California at Los Angeles and Berkeley, he worked on transuranic elements with Edwin \*McMillan and shared the 1951 Nobel Prize for Physics with him. He co-discovered (and named) the elements plutonium (No. 94), americium (95), curium (96), berkelium (97), californium (98), einsteinium (99), fermium (100), mendelevium (101) and nobelium (102). He chaired the US Atomic Energy Commission 1961–71 and campaigned for an end to nuclear testing. Seaborgium (106) was named for him in 1994, and Asteroid Seaborg in 1995.

**Searle, Ronald William Fordham** (1920–2011). English artist and cartoonist. He published his first work in 1935 and joined *Punch* in 1956. He was also attached to *Life* from 1955 and to the *New Yorker* from 1966. He published 60 books (21 with collaborators) of drawings and cartoons in a detailed, linear style and first gained wide popular success with his grotesque school children, whom he drew as inky-fingered caricatures of juvenile delinquency. The most famous of these, the girls of St Trinian's, appeared in the early 1950s.

**Sebald, W. G.** (né Winfried Georg Maximilian Sebald: he used the name **Max**) (1944–2001). German author, born in Wertach, Bavaria. He grew up in the small town of Sonthofen: his father, a Nazi party member and prisoner of war, returned home in 1947. World War II and the Holocaust was never spoken of. He studied at the universities of Freiburg (Germany), Fribourg (Switzerland), taught

at Manchester 1966–67 and East Anglia 1970–2001, and was Professor of European Literature 1987–2001. Despite spending more than half his life in England and his complete mastery of English, he retained German nationality and published only in German. His four 'prose works with pictures' combine elements of novels, essays, biographies, natural histories, travel guides, and include photographs: *Vertigo* (1990), *The Emigrants* (1992), *The Rings of Saturn* (1995) and *Austerlitz* (2001). His works deal with the suppression of memory, the decay of civilization and the impact of the Holocaust. He had just begun to achieve international recognition when he died in a car crash in Norwich, after suffering an aneurysm. His work is powerful, disturbing and mysterious.

Angier, C., *Speak, Silence. In Search of W.G. Sebald*. 2021.

**Sebastião** (Sebastian) **I** (1554–1578). King of Portugal and the Algarves 1557–78. A posthumous child, he succeeded his grandfather \*João III. He grew up with an antipathy to women and a fanatical sense of mission to lead a crusade against the Muslims of North Africa. He sailed to Morocco in 1578 but was defeated and never seen again. The mystery of his disappearance produced impostors and led to the growth of a legend that he would return to deliver Portugal in time of need.

**Seddon, Richard John** (1845–1906). New Zealand politician, born in Lancashire. He emigrated to Australia in 1863 and then went to the Westland goldfields of New Zealand (1866). First elected to the House of Representatives in 1879, he became (1891) a minister in the Liberal Government of John Ballance, whom he succeeded as Prime Minister 1893–1906. Known as 'King Dick', he straightened the affairs of the Bank of New Zealand, assisted Britain in the Boer War with New Zealand troops, introduced Imperial Preference (1903), and annexed the Cook Islands. He was no socialist but to control prices he introduced state coal-mining (1901), fire insurance (1903), and house-building (1905). He died at sea.

**Sedgwick, Adam** (1785–1873). English geologist. Son of the curate of Dent in Yorkshire, he studied at Trinity College, Cambridge, and became a Fellow in 1810. Despite having no knowledge of the subject, he was appointed Professor of Geology at Cambridge 1818–73, learned on the job and became one of the foremost British geologists. An empirical geologist, with strong Christian sentiments, he disapproved of \*Lyell's Uniformitarianism, was suspicious of Glacial Theory, and rejected all theories of evolution, especially \*Darwin's. He excelled in two fields, in palaeontology, especially palaeozoic fossils, and in understanding the stratigraphy of the British Isles, using fossils as an index of relative time. His greatest work lay in the geology of Wales, bringing to birth the concept of the Cambrian System on which he

eventually quarrelled with \*Murchison, another proponent of the Devonian system. He was awarded the Copley Medal in 1863.

Speakman, C., *Adam Sedgwick*. 1982.

**Sedley, Sir Charles** (1639–1701). English poet and dramatist. A member of the circle of wits and profligates who surrounded \*Buckingham and \*Rochester at the court of \*Charles II, he wrote charming lyrics, excellent translations of \*Virgil and \*Horace, and plays, e.g. the comedies *The Mulberry Garden* (1667), based on \*Molière's *L'École des maris*, and *Bellamira* (1687).

**Segovia, Andrés** (1893–1987). Spanish classical guitarist. Regarded during his active period as the greatest in the world, he made his debut at 14 and established an international reputation mainly with Spanish music. He inspired many works for the guitar, notably by \*Villa-Lobos, Ponce and Castelnuovo-Tedesco and adapted pieces by \*Bach and \*Mozart. He was ennobled as Marqués de Solobrefia in 1981.

**Segrè, Emilio Gino** (1905–1989). American nuclear physicist, born in Italy. Professor of physics at the University of Palermo 1935–38, he then worked in the US, where he became professor of physics at the University of California 1946–72. He helped to prepare artificially the elements technetium (No. 43) and astatine (No. 85), which are below uranium in atomic number but not found naturally on earth. Segrè was a pioneer in the investigation of anti-matter and discovered (1955) the anti-proton. He won the Nobel Prize for Physics (1959). His publications include *Nuclei and Particles* (1964).

**Seidler, Harry** (1923–2006). Australian architect, born in Vienna. Of Jewish-Romanian parentage, he escaped to London in 1938 and was briefly interned in Canada, studied architecture in Manitoba, then won a scholarship to Harvard where he worked with \*Gropius and \*Breuer, and in Boston with \*Aalto. In Sydney from 1948, he designed more than 180 buildings, including the Australian Embassy in Paris. He was associated with \*Niemeyer in Brasilia. *The Grand Tour, Travelling the World with an Architect's Eye* (2004) presents 1,000 photographs by Seidler.

O'Neill, H., *A Singular Vision: Harry Seidler*. 2013.

**Sejanus, Lucius Aelius** (d.31 CE). Roman politician and conspirator. A favourite of \*Tiberius, he ran the praetorian guard, arranged murders inside the imperial family, but was detected in treachery and executed.

**Selden, John** (1584–1664). English jurist, parliamentarian and scholar. From 1621 he sat almost continuously in parliament. He helped to draw up the Petition of Right and (1629–31) was imprisoned in the Tower, but though he sat in the Long Parliament his refusal to vote for the attainder of \*Strafford made him suspect and he gradually

withdrew from public life. His *Titles of Honour* (1614) and *History of Tithes* (1618) still have value, but most of his learned works are long forgotten and he is remembered mainly for his *Table Talk* (1689), a record collected by his secretary of his conversations and remarks during his last 20 years. He was also an orientalist whose collection of manuscripts came to the Bodleian Library, Oxford. The Selden Society (for legal publications) was founded in his honour.

**Seleucus I Nicator** (d.280 BCE). Macedonian general, founder of the Seleucid dynasty. After the death of \*Alexander the Great (323) his conquests were divided among his generals. By 312 Seleucus, one of the ablest and most ambitious, had married a Persian princess and ruled Babylonia. He gradually enlarged his empire until it included much of Asia and extended from Syria to India. He was assassinated. Under his successors, known as the Seleucids, the eastern provinces were gradually lost and the power of the dynasty continued in Syria until 64 BCE, when the country was conquered by the Romans, though the Hellenistic culture introduced by the Seleucid dynasty survived.

**Selīm I Yavuz** (= 'the Grim', also 'the Resolute': Selīm ṣāh bin Bāyezīd Hān) (1470–1520). Ninth Sultan of the Ottoman Empire 1512–20, Caliph of Islam 1517–20. Youngest son of \*Bāyezīd II, he defeated his father in battle and executed his brothers and some nephews. The Ottoman Empire expanded by 70 per cent during his reign. A fierce Sunni, he ordered the massacre of thousands of Shiites. He claimed the Caliphate in 1517. His forces occupied Egypt, Syria, Palestine and the Hejaz in 1516–17 and Algeria, Tunisia and Libya soon followed. He died as he was about to invade Hungary. He was also a gifted poet in both Turkish and Persian. His son \*Süleyman succeeded.

**Selkirk, Alexander** (1676–1721). Scottish seaman. While serving under William \*Dampier on a privateering expedition he was marooned (1704). According to one account he was left at his own request on one of the Juan Fernandez Islands in the Pacific. He was rescued (1709) and his story inspired \*Defoe's *Robinson Crusoe*.

**Sellers, Peter** (1957–). American theatre and opera director, born in Pittsburgh. The most innovative director of his time, he worked at many international festivals. His productions included works by \*Aeschylus, \*Shakespeare, \*Bach, \*Mozart, \*Ligeti and John \*Adams.

**Sellers, Peter** *see* Goons, The

**Selznick, David O** (liver) (1902–1965). American film producer, born in Pittsburgh. He worked in publishing and real estate, then moved to Hollywood and, after an unhappy period with Paramount, MGM and RKO, became the most important independent

producer. His films include *Anna Karenina* (1935), *David Copperfield* (1935), *Gone with the Wind* (1939), *Rebecca* (1940), *Duel in the Sun* (1946) and *The Third Man* (1949). He married the actor **Jennifer Jones** (1919–2009). She won the 1943 Academy Award for best actress in *The Song of Bernadette*, appeared in *Madam Bovary* (1949), *Beat the Devil* (1953) and *Love is a Many Splendoured Thing* (1957), and married the industrialist, philanthropist and art collector **Norton Simon**, whose gallery in Pasadena she chaired.

**Semenov, Nikolai Nikolayevich** (1896–1986). Russian physical chemist. Assistant professor of physics at Leningrad Polytechnic Institute 1928–31, he directed the Academy of Sciences Institute of Chemical Physics 1931–66 and was professor of physical chemistry at Moscow State University 1944–66. He carried out important researches in chemical kinetics and shared the Nobel Prize for Chemistry (1956) with \*Hinshelwood for their important discoveries in this field.

**Semmelweis, Ignác Philipp** (1818–1865). Hungarian obstetrician. Working in a Vienna hospital he discovered in 1847 that the death rate from puerperal fever was far higher (10 per cent against 3 per cent) in the ward attended by doctors who had come straight from post mortem rooms than in that attended by midwives. He worked in Pest from 1849. By insisting on adequate use of antiseptics he reduced the death rate from infection to 1 per cent. The value of his work was recognised after his death but provoked much controversy at the time. Infected by a cut, he died of septicaemia in an asylum.

Gortvay, G. and Zoltán, I., *Semmelweis, his Life and Work*. 1968.

**Sen, Amartya Kumar** (1933– ). Indian economist and philosopher, born in Bengal. Educated at Calcutta and Cambridge, he held chairs in Calcutta, London, Oxford and was professor of Economics and Philosophy at Harvard 1987–97, 2004– and Master of Trinity College, Cambridge 1998–2003. He wrote *Poverty and Famines* (1981), *Inequality Reexamined* (1992), *Development as Freedom* (1999), *Rationality and Freedom* (2004) and *The Idea of Justice* (2009). He devised the Human Development Index (HDI) as an alternative to the gross domestic product (GDP) figures to measure quality of life. He won the 1998 Nobel Prize for Economics for his fundamental work on development and welfare economics, restoring an ethical dimension, combining tools from economics and philosophy. He received a CH in 2000 and was awarded more than 90 honorary degrees.

**Senanayake, Don Stephen** (1884–1952). Ceylonese (Sri Lankan) politician. He led Ceylon's independence movement, and as Minister of Agriculture 1941–46 he achieved much in irrigation and land reclamation. He became (1948) the first Prime Minister of the

newly created dominion, dying in office after falling from a horse. His son, **Dudley Senanayake** (1911–1973), was Prime Minister 1952–53, 1960, 1965–70.

**Seneca, Lucius Annaeus** (c.4 BCE–65 CE). Roman tragedian and politician, born in Córdoba. His fame as an orator roused the jealousy of \*Caligula and almost cost him his life. Under \*Claudius the favour of the Emperor's sister brought the hostility of \*Messalina, the Emperor's wife, and Seneca was banished to Corsica. He was recalled (49 CE) to be tutor to the young \*Nero and when his pupil became Emperor provided five years (the famous *quinquennium Neronis*) of model government. Later he became involved in a conspiracy and was forced to commit suicide. As a philosopher he inclined towards modified Stoicism and wrote essays on such subjects as *Calm of Mind*, *Shortness of Life*. He is better known for his nine surviving verse tragedies, which elaborate the familiar classical stories (*Medea*, *Phaedra*, *Oedipus* etc); with much melodrama, moralising and horror, they influenced Elizabethan drama and \*Corneille and \*Racine. Though Seneca's private life was blameless, he lacked strength of character, became a time-serving flatterer and condoned vices he could not prevent. He even wrote the oration defending Nero's matricide of \*Agrippina. Nevertheless, as his 124 *Moral Epistles* show, he was, in his timid way, a seeker after virtue.

**Senghor, Leopold Sédar** (1906–2001). Senegalese politician and poet. A Member of the French National Assembly 1945–58, he became President of Senegal 1960–80 and was elected to the Académie française in 1983.

**Sennacherib** (d.681 BCE). King of Assyria 705–681 BCE. He successfully maintained the empire of his grandfather, \*Tiglath-Pileser III and his father \*Sargon II. He destroyed Babylon, constantly in revolt, and punished a revolt in Judea (see 2 Kings) by laying waste part of the country and besieging Jerusalem. His greatest achievement was the building of a large part of the capital city of Nineveh (on the Tigris opposite Mosul), where magnificently carved reliefs illustrated his campaigns. The remains of magnificent aqueducts near Mosul suggest that the famous 'Hanging Gardens', one of the world's seven wonders, were actually in Nineveh, not Babylon. He is the subject of \*Byron's *The Destruction of Sennacherib*. He was murdered by his sons and succeeded by his youngest, \*Esarhaddon.

**Sennett, Mack** (Michell Sinott) (1880–1960). American film director and producer, born in Québec. He worked in film from 1908, as an actor, then director, and formed Keystone Films in 1912, directing a long series of comic shorts which featured Charles \*Chaplin and later the Keystone Kops. He was a victim of the transition to talking films but received a special Academy Award in 1937.

**Senussi** (or Sanusi), **Muhammad ibn Ali as-** (c.1787–1859). Arab religious and political leader, born in Algeria. Claiming descent from \*Fatimah, he established an order or fraternity that aimed at a return to the pure and simple Islamic doctrines untainted by later ‘reformers’. Forced to leave Arabia, he established himself and his followers in Cyrenaica, where the Senussi, whose numbers grew eventually to over 200,000, formed a semi-independent state under him and his successors. The Senussi proved the most tenacious opponents of the Italian regime that succeeded that of Turkey after the war of 1911–12. Their leader Muhammad \*Idris became the first (and only) king of Libya in 1951.

**Septimius Severus, Lucius** *see* **Severus, Lucius Septimius**

**Sequoia** *see* **Sequoyah**

**Sequoyah** (Ssiquoyah or Sequoya, also known as George Giss) (c.1770–1843). American Cherokee silversmith and soldier, born in Tuskegee, Tennessee. From 1809 he developed a written form of the Cherokee language, a syllabary, adopting Latin, Greek and Arabic letters. The genus *sequoia* is probably not named for him (1847).

**Serra, Junipero** (1713–1784). Spanish missionary, born in Mallorca. A Franciscan friar, he worked in Mexico (1750–69), then established nine missions in California along the Camino Real. He was sympathetic to the Indians and introduced them to European agriculture.

**Serra, Richard** (1939– ). American sculptor, born in San Francisco. Of Spanish and Russian-Jewish descent, he studied at the University of California, also working at a steel mill, then studied painting at Yale, where Josef \*Albers and Philip \*Guston were influential, and won a \*Fulbright Scholarship to work on sculpture in Rome. Serra produces huge metal works made from Cor-ten steel sheets. His works are not objects, but intended to transform space. His *Torqued Ellipses* (1996ff), stimulated by \*Borromini’s San Carlo alle Quattro Fontane, in Rome, challenged clock time and spacial perceptions. *The Hedgehog and the Fox* (1999), inspired by an essay of Isaiah \*Berlin, is at Princeton University. The Museo Guggenheim in Bilbao features a collective permanent exhibition of eight works by Serra, with the collective name *The Matter of Time* (1994–2005), described by Robert \*Hughes as ‘the greatest sculpture of the past century’, it incorporates *Snake*, a trio of sinuous steel sheets, 4.3 metres high, with a total length of 31.7 metres. The *Te Tuhirangi Contour* (1999/2001), at the Gibbs Farm, New Zealand, 257 m x 6 m, with an 11° lean, is made of 56 Corten steel plates. *East-West/West-East* (2014) was erected in the Qatari desert. Serra also produced films, prints and drawings.

**Sertorius, Quintus** (123–72 BCE). Roman soldier. In the civil war between \*Sulla and \*Marius, Sertorius was among the most successful of the latter’s generals and, after Sulla’s victory, withdrew to Spain of which he had obtained complete mastery by 77. Assassinated by a disloyal adherent, he was described by \*Mommsen as ‘one of the greatest men, if not the very greatest man, that Rome had hitherto produced’.

**Servetus, Michael** (Miguel Serveto) (1511–1553). Spanish theologian and physician. While studying law at Saragossa and Toulouse he became interested in theology, an interest heightened by visits to Italy and Germany, where he encountered \*Bucer and other reformers. An essay on the Trinity (1531), though not going so far as to express Unitarian views, was far from orthodox. In 1536 he went to Paris to study medicine and from 1541 practised at Vienna. He is famous for his demonstration of the pulmonary circulation of the blood. After secretly printing *Christianismi Restitutio* (1553) he was denounced to the Lyons inquisitor, but escaping from arrest he went to Geneva, where John \*Calvin ruled with rigid intolerance. Servetus, whose views were as antagonistic to the reformers at Geneva as to the Catholics, was again arrested and, after a prolonged trial, was burned alive in Geneva.

Wilson, E. M., *A History of Unitarianism*. 1945.

**Service, Robert William** (1874–1958). Canadian poet. Famous for his songs and ballads told in the rough idiom of the frontier country, the best known, often used as a recitation, is ‘The shooting of Dan McGrew’. Titles of his verse collections include *Songs of a Sourdough* (1907) and *Rhymes of a Rolling Stone* (1912). He also wrote novels.

**Seth, Vikram** (1952– ). Indian novelist and poet, born in Kolkota. His mother became Chief Justice of India, his father was an executive with a shoe manufacturer. Educated at Oxford and Princeton, his books include *From Heaven Lake: Travels through Sinkiang and Tibet* (1983), *Golden Gate: A Novel in Verse* (1986) and a successful novel of almost unprecedented length (1349 pages) in English, *A Suitable Boy* (1993). *An Equal Music* (1999) was also a bestseller.

**Seti I** (Menmaatre Set) (d.1279 BCE). Egyptian pharaoh of the XIXth dynasty 1290–1279 BCE. Son of \*Ramesses I and father of \*Ramesses II, his capital was Memphis.

**Seurat, Georges** (1859–1891). French painter. At the Salon des Indépendants (1884) he exhibited *Une Baignade* (now in the Tate Gallery, London), the first of the huge pictures in which he excelled. With \*Signac and \*Pissarro he developed, under the influence of optical theorists, the ‘pointillist’ technique by which the canvas is covered with dots of unmixed colour (‘confetti’ according to the scoffers) which merge at a distance into the required tones. This technique was the hallmark of the

neo-Impressionists, more distinctive of Seurat was the nobility he gave to ordinary activities by strictly disciplined composition.

de Hauke, C., *Seurat et son oeuvre*. 1961; Russell, J., *Seurat*. 1985; Rewald, J., *Seurat*. 1990.

**Severus, Alexander** *see* **Alexander Severus**

**Severus**, (Lucius) **Septimius** (146–211). Roman Emperor 193–211. Born in Leptis Magna, now in modern Libya, he was governor of Upper Pannonia (parts of Austria and Hungary) when news of the murder of \*Pertinax reached his troops, who immediately proclaimed him Emperor. He marched at once to Rome and, having overcome his rivals, turned against the Parthians, annexed northern Mesopotamia and built forts in Arabia and Mauretania. He introduced a complicated administrative system involving strict delimitation of function under imperial control. By encouraging troops to live and marry in the frontier regions, he increased the incentive to vigorous defence at the cost of mobility. In 208 he completed \*Hadrian's Wall in stone, and with an army of 40,000 attempted to conquer Caledonia (Scotland) and after protracted asymmetrical warfare with the Scots, reached the Central Lowlands. He became fatally ill and died at Eboracum (York). The Romans then retreated to Hadrian's Wall. Septimius established a dynasty (Severan), was succeeded by his son \*Caracalla and deified by the Senate. The claim by \*Eusebius that he persecuted Christians appears to be wrong.

Elliott, M., *Septimius Severus in Scotland*. 2018.

**Ségné Marie de Rabutin-Chantel, Marquise de** (1626–1696). French noblewoman. After the death of her husband in a duel (1651) she went to Paris where she wrote to her daughter in Provence her famous letters, which record with wit and apparent spontaneity her impressions of society in Paris and the provinces at the time of \*Louis XIV.

**Seward, William Henry** (1801–1872). American Republican politician, born in New York. An attorney, he entered state politics as a Whig and was Governor of New York 1839–43. As a US senator 1849–61, he campaigned for emancipation of the slaves, sought Republican nomination for the presidency in 1860, lost to \*Lincoln but became Secretary of State 1861–69. He drew up the Emancipation Proclamation (1863). After Lincoln's murder (he was stabbed on the same night) he continued to serve under Andrew \*Johnson and was statesman enough to foresee the advantage to be obtained by the purchase (1867) of Alaska from Russia, although this was denounced as 'Seward's folly'. His incomplete *Autobiography* was published in 1877.

**Sewell, Anna** (1820–1878). English author, born and died in Norfolk. From a Quaker family, she was crippled in an accident and is remembered for a single book, *Black Beauty* (1877), written to draw attention to the cruel treatment of animals.

**Seymour, Edward** *see* **Somerset, 1st Duke of**

**Seymour, Horatio** (1810–1886). American Democratic politician. Governor of New York State 1853–54 and 1863–64, he was drafted as Democratic candidate for president (1868), being narrowly defeated by U. S. \*Grant in the popular vote, losing heavily in the Electoral College.

**Seymour, Jane** *see* **Jane Seymour**

**Seymour of Sudeley, Thomas Seymour, 1st Baron** (1508?–1549). English nobleman. Brother of Edward Seymour, Duke of \*Somerset, and of Jane \*Seymour, third wife of \*Henry VIII and mother of \*Edward VI, he married Henry's widow \*Catherine Parr. In 1547 he was appointed Lord High Admiral but two years later was beheaded for intrigue against his brother, who had become protector of England during Edward's minority.

**Seyss-Inquart** (né Zajtich), **Arthur von** (1892–1946). Austrian Nazi politician. A lawyer, he was Chancellor and Governor of Austria for two days (March 1938) after \*Hitler's annexation (Anschluss), administrator of southern Poland 1939–40, and Reichkommissar in the Netherlands 1940–44. He was Foreign Minister for a few days (1945) after Hitler's suicide. For the brutality of his rule in the Netherlands he was sentenced to death by the Nuremberg tribunal and hanged.

**Sforza, Carlo, Conte** (1872–1952). Italian diplomat. After a period of successful foreign service and a short spell (1920–21) as Foreign Minister, he resigned when \*Mussolini came to power. He lived in Belgium and (from 1940) in the US, where he became prominent for his anti-Fascist views. After Mussolini fell he helped to form the provisional government of 1944 and was Foreign Minister under de \*Gasperi 1947–51.

**Sforza, Ludovico** ('Il Moro') (1451–1508). Italian nobleman, Duke of Milan 1482–99, known as 'The Moor' for his dark skin. His father, **Francesco Sforza** (1404–1466), was a famous *condottiere* who fought on both sides in the struggle between Venice and Milan but whose allegiance was finally determined by his marriage to Bianca, an illegitimate daughter of the Visconti Duke of Milan. This enabled him to become duke in 1450. The duchy passed to his son, then to his grandson the seven-year-old **Gian Galeazzo Sforza** (1476–1494) whose authority was usurped by his uncle Ludovico, strongly suspected of hastening his death. The court of Ludovico, and his brilliant wife Beatrice d'Este became a centre of Renaissance culture, \*Leonardo da Vinci being the most famous of the artists he befriended and employed. Ludovico was expelled (1499) by \*Louis XII of France and, after failing to regain his duchy, was imprisoned at Loches on the Loire, where he died.



**Shackleton, Sir Ernest Henry** (1874–1922). Anglo-Irish Antarctic explorer, born in Kildare. He joined the RN and was with \*Scott on his first voyage of exploration, and sailing in the *Nimrod* he led his first expedition (1907–09) during which the magnetic pole and a record southern latitude of 88°23' were reached. Knighted in 1909, he was a celebrity but constantly in debt and embarked on some dubious business enterprises. His second expedition (1914–16) was an attempt to cross Antarctica from the Weddell to the Ross Sea. After his ship, the *Endurance*, had been trapped in ice (January 1915), then crushed (November 1915), Shackleton and five companions made a hazardous journey from the Weddell Sea to Elephant Island, then to South Georgia Island, to bring relief. All 22 of his expedition, left behind, were saved. He helped to organise the northern expeditionary force intervening in the Russian Civil War (1918–19) and died in South Georgia while on a third voyage to Antarctica. He wrote about his expeditions in, e.g. *Heart of the Antarctic* (1909) and *South* (1919). His son, **Edward Arthur Alexander Shackleton, Baron Shackleton** (1911–1994) was an explorer, writer, BBC producer, Labour MP 1946–55 and Minister 1964–70, awarded a KG, AC and FRS.

Huntford, R., *Shackleton*. 1985.

**Shadwell, Thomas** (1642–1692). English poet and dramatist. His first play, *The Sullen Lovers* (1668), was followed by 16 more, the best of them comedies and the majority successful. As plays were used for political propaganda, he was, as a Whig, unable to produce plays from 1681, when the party fell into disfavour, until the revolution of 1688. In 1689 he replaced the Tory \*Dryden as Poet Laureate. Shadwell's reputation for dullness is largely due to the brilliant but cruel lampoon of him in Dryden's *MacFlecknoe*, in fact he often presents a vivid and entertaining picture of contemporary life.

**Shaffer, Peter Levin** (1926–2016). British playwright. His plays include *Five Finger Exercise* (1958), *The Royal Hunt of the Sun* (1964), *Equus* (1973) and *Amadeus* (1979). All were successful in Britain and the US and also as films. His twin brother **Anthony Shaffer** (1926–2001) wrote *Sleuth* (1972) and many film scripts.

**Shaftesbury, Anthony Ashley Cooper, 1st Earl of** (1621–1683). English politician. In the Civil War he first fought as a Royalist, but in 1644 went over to the parliamentary side. A member of \*Cromwell's Council of State, by 1659 he was imprisoned as a suspected royalist. Thus at the Restoration he was favoured by \*Charles II, created Baron Ashley in 1661 and from then until 1672, when he was made Earl of Shaftesbury, he acted as Chancellor of the Exchequer (from 1667 as a member of the famous Cabal ministry). Lord Chancellor 1672–73, always disliked, he was then dismissed by Charles II and became the force behind the movement to exclude the

Roman Catholic Duke of York (\*James II) from the succession, making use of the infamous Titus \*Oates to 'expose' a Catholic plot. In the ensuing reaction Shaftesbury was acquitted of treason but took refuge in Amsterdam where he died.

The most skilful politician of his day, he was the virtual founder of the Whig Party. His methods were devious, but, as is shown by his association with John \*Locke and the part he played (1679) in amending the Habeas Corpus Act, he had liberal causes at heart. An envenomed satirical portrait of him is contained in \*Dryden's *Absalom and Achitophel*.

Haley, K. H. D., *The First Earl of Shaftesbury*. 1968.

**Shaftesbury, Anthony Ashley Cooper, 3rd Earl of** (1671–1713). English philosopher. His chief work, *Characteristics of Men, Manners, Opinions, Times* (1711) discusses virtue, integrity, self-respect and the 'Affections' which he believed men had naturally for themselves, other men and even fellow living creatures. The good of society and the good of the individual in the nature of things run into one another. Men have a 'moral sense'—he introduced the term—which enables them to separate right from wrong.

**Shaftesbury, Anthony Ashley Cooper, 7th Earl of** (1801–1885). English philanthropist. As Lord Ashley he was an MP 1826–51 until he succeeded to the peerage. He took the lead in securing the passage of a succession of Factory Acts and the Coal Mines Act of 1842. Among the many improvements he secured were the appointment of factory inspectors to ensure that children under nine were not employed in the mills, and that women and children should not work underground in the mines. Another of his measures prohibited the employment of children (such as Tom in \*Kingsley's *Water Babies*) to climb and clean chimneys; he was closely associated with the 'Ragged Schools' movement, and legislation to provide lodging houses for the poor; he helped the work of Florence \*Nightingale and numerous other good causes. Politically he was a strong Tory and in religion strictly evangelical. He is commemorated by the statue of Eros (Love) in Piccadilly Circus, London.

**Shah Jahan** (1592–1666). Emperor of India 1627–58. The fifth of the Mughals, he fought successfully against the Deccan princes but several attempts to recover Kandahar from Persia eventually failed. He was an able ruler and by skilful financial management maintained a court of the greatest magnificence (he constructed the 'peacock throne'). He built the palace and great mosque at Delhi, and at Agra the beautiful 'pearl mosque' and the Taj Mahal, the most famous of all his buildings, erected as a mausoleum (1631–53) for his favourite wife **Arjuman** (the more familiar **Mumtaz** is a description—'ornament'—not a name). In 1658 he fell ill and his son \*Aurangzeb, successful in a struggle for the succession, deposed him and held him prisoner until his death. \*Dryden's *Aureng-Zebe* (1676), is based loosely on these events.

**Shahn, Ben**(jamin) (1898–1969). American artist, born in Lithuania. He was a painter, photographer, lithographer and graphic designer, who achieved early fame with his 23 paintings on the \*Sacco and Vanzetti executions (1930). He had a wide range, from political issues to abstractions.

**Shaka** (Chaka or Tshaka) **kaSenzangakhona** (c.1787–1828). Zulu chief 1816–28. A military genius, sometimes called ‘the black Napoléon’, he began the Difaqane (Mfecane) or ‘Crushing’ which destroyed rival tribes in the Natal and Transvaal area, leading to depopulation. (After his death this gave an opportunity for the Boer \*Voortrekkers under \*Pretorius to occupy the Transvaal.) He became psychotic after his mother died (1827) and was murdered by his half-brother \*Dingaan.

**Shakespeare, William** (1564–1616). English dramatist and poet, born at Stratford-on-Avon, Warwickshire, on St George’s Day, 23 April. Very few of the traditional stories of his early life can stand up to serious examination. His father, **John Shakespeare** (c.1529–1601) was a glover and wool-dealer who became an alderman, bailiff and money-lender in Stratford and, after a period of financial difficulty and obscurity, received a grant of arms in 1596. His mother, **Mary Arden** (c.1537–1608), came from a landed family whose genealogy could be traced to Anglo-Saxon times.

Educated at the King’s New School (which had covert Jesuit connections), he would have been well grounded in Latin and rhetoric. Some scholars suggest that he was a servant or teacher in Catholic households in Lancashire 1581–82 (a variant of John \*Aubrey’s story that he was ‘a schoolmaster in the country’) and he seems to have known five men who were executed as recusants. The next positive evidence of Shakespeare’s existence is the licence to marry Anne \*Hathaway (1582). The christenings of their children are recorded, that of his elder daughter Susanna in May 1583, that of the twins Judith and Hamnet in February 1585. The boy Hamnet died aged 11 but Judith married and survived her father; his granddaughter Elizabeth (d.1670), the daughter of Susanna, who had married John Hall, a Stratford physician, was his last known descendant. A familiar, but less likely, legend relates that he left Stratford (c.1585) to avoid prosecution for poaching on the estate of Sir Thomas Lucy of Charlecote. He probably arrived in London between 1585 and 1587, drawn by the appeal of city life and growing realisation of his own talents, probably as an actor-writer with ‘Lord \*Strange’s Men’, an acting troupe, in theatres originally managed by James \*Burbage. A disparaging reference to Shakespeare in 1592 by the dramatist Robert \*Greene confirms that he was well established in London. Circumstances favoured him: nine open-air theatres were built in London in Shakespeare’s lifetime, beginning in 1576, some accommodating audiences of up to 3,000, remarkable for a city of

200,000 people. There was an ever increasing demand for plays and spectacles (including bearbaiting), a situation unprecedented until the explosive impact of cinema and television more than 300 years later.

London’s theatres were closed in 1592–94 because of the plague. When they re-opened, Shakespeare was with ‘The Lord Chamberlain’s Men’, which acted at court, as actor, writer and probably director. In 1603 the company was renamed ‘The King’s Men’, under \*James I’s patronage.

Shakespeare’s writing mirrors the circumstances of his times: drama in the theatre filled a psychological gap after the suppression of the Mass and abandonment of mystery plays, the upsurge of patriotic feelings after the defeat of the Spanish Armada in 1588, and publishing poetry when the theatres were closed.

There was an extraordinary burst of creativity in drama towards the end of the Elizabethan and in the early Jacobean periods, unparalleled until the literary explosion in Russia in the 19th century. Shakespeare’s contemporary dramatists and poets included \*Spenser, \*Sidney, \*Greene, \*Middleton, \*Marlowe, \*Nash, \*Jonson, \*Kyd, \*Webster, \*Beaumont, \*Fletcher, \*Tourneur, \*Dekker, \*Ford, Thomas \*Heywood, George Wilkins, \*Donne and the Metaphysical poets. Francis Meres, in *Palladis Tania. Wit’s Treasury* (1598), rated Shakespeare highly both in comedy and tragedy.

Shakespeare’s first published works were the narrative poems *Venus and Adonis* (1593), very successful and much reprinted, and *The Rape of Lucrece* (1594), both based on \*Ovid and dedicated to Henry Wriothesley, the young Earl of Southampton. Most of the sonnets may date from this period.

Eleven plays (13 including disputed attributions) are based on mistaken /double identity. Answers to the questions ‘Who are you?’ or ‘Are you who you say you are?’ could be matters of life or death in Elizabethan England, after convulsive changes from Catholicism, to Anglicanism, back to Catholicism and returning to modified strains of Anglicanism.

Three of Shakespeare’s plays (*As You Like It*, *Twelfth Night*, *The Tempest*) do not specify a location, 14 are set (in whole or in part) in England, 12 in Italy (Northern Italy 6, Ancient Rome 4, Sicily 3), 5 (in whole or part) in France, 2 in Turkey (Ephesus and Ancient Troy), 2 in Athens and Ancient Britain, 1 each in Bohemia, Croatia (Illyria), Egypt, Denmark, Scotland, Lebanon (Tyre), and Vienna.

Some have several locations, for example *Henry V* in England and France, *Antony and Cleopatra* in Rome, Alexandria, Messina and Athens, *Othello* in Venice and Cyprus.

He drew on material from \*Homer, \*Terence, \*Plautus, \*Virgil, Ovid, \*Seneca, \*Plutarch, \*Boccaccio, \*Chaucer, \*Caxton, \*Bandello, \*Holinshed, \*Montaigne and the Geneva Bible (especially Job and St Matthew.)

In Shakespeare's time, all the female characters, some of the greatest in all drama—Juliet, Lady Macbeth, Gertrude, Rosalind, Desdemona, Cleopatra, Portia, Beatrice—were played by men or boys. There are only two functional marriages in the 38 plays, Macbeth and Lady Macbeth, Claudius and Gertrude, suggesting that Shakespeare took a bleak view of the institution. Bill Bryson's conclusion that there is 'no evidence that Shakespeare had a warm relationship with any other human being' is probably correct.

The earliest plays included the political-historical tetralogy *Henry VI Part 1*, *Part 2* and *Part 3* and *Richard III* (1589–92). The *Henry VI* plays, popular in their time, are now sometimes cut and bracketed together and performed as a single work. However, *Richard III* is a dramatic masterpiece, despite the unremitting Tudor partisanship of Shakespeare's portrayal of \*Richard.

*The Comedy of Errors* (a free adaptation of Plautus) and *Titus Andronicus* (from Seneca) are also early and despite skill in plot construction and versification, there are crudities which disappeared as the playwright matured. When the later tetralogy *Richard II*, *Henry IV Part 1* and *Part 2* and *Henry V* (1594–99) is compared with the first, it is clear how far Shakespeare's power and psychological insight have strengthened, notably in \*Henry IV's torment about the murder of \*Richard II.

Sir John Falstaff, fat, scheming and disreputable, Shakespeare's greatest comic creation, is a central character in *Henry IV*, parts 1 and 2, and *The Merry Wives of Windsor*, and his death is reported in *Henry V*.

In comedy, Shakespeare was gaining an increased sureness of touch in combining farcical incident with subtle understanding of human nature, demonstrated in *The Taming of the Shrew*, which, with *The Two Gentlemen of Verona* and *Love's Labour's Lost*, was almost certainly written before 1594. Some of his most popular plays were written in the period 1594–99: *Romeo and Juliet* and *A Midsummer Night's Dream*, followed by *The Merchant of Venice* and *The Merry Wives of Windsor*, and another history play, *King John*, now rarely performed.

Increasingly rich, in 1597 he bought New Place, a substantial house in Stratford. In 1599 Shakespeare's company acquired the Globe Theatre, which burned down in 1613.

On the eve of \*Essex's rebellion in February 1601, his supporters commissioned a special performance of *Richard II*, where a weakening sovereign is overthrown. Shakespeare's company was never accused of complicity in the plot: the play was well known and it was clearly a commercial transaction.

Shakespeare's finest comedies were *Much Ado About Nothing* (1598), *As You Like It* (1599) and *Twelfth Night* (1600–02).

As a playwright he now reached his zenith, beginning with *Julius Caesar* (1599), the first of three Roman plays based on Plutarch, with powerful characterisation of Brutus—by far the longest part, Mark Antony and Caesar, and a chilling cameo of Octavian (the future Caesar \*Augustus.)

The second and third of the Roman plays were *Antony and Cleopatra* (1606–07) and *Coriolanus* (1608).

*Antony and Cleopatra*, written in 42 scenes, is a complex epic, involving love, betrayal and conflicting loyalties, and critical opinion has long been divided on its ranking. Shakespeare borrowed from Plutarch and Virgil (whose account of Dido and Aeneas was in part a tactful account of Cleopatra and Antony, their contemporary prototypes). Frank \*Kermode marvelled at the play's 'glamour ... and magnificence' and the contrasts between 'melting Alexandria and ... rigid, stony Rome.'

*Coriolanus*, a dark, rarely performed, late play, considered superior to *Hamlet* by T. S. Eliot, is the most overtly political work in the canon, with a disconcerting contemporary relevance: the central character's chilling sense of his own honour drives his ambition and self-justification.

*Hamlet* (1600–01) is the longest, greatest, most performed, most filmed, most quoted of all the plays and the one most resembling a novel, with its seven interior monologues (soliloquies), exploring the problem of self-knowledge and emotional paralysis. Then came *Othello* (1604), with its themes of sexuality, race and treachery, *King Lear* (1605–06), the darkest of all, with its paroxysms of grief, a metaphor for reversion from civilization to barbarism, and *Macbeth*, psychologically one of the most complex (1605–06).

*Troilus and Cressida* (1602), *Measure for Measure* (1603) and *All's Well that Ends Well* (1604–05) are sometimes described as Shakespeare's 'problem plays', where the boundary between comedy and tragedy is becoming blurred and mood changes are sudden and sometimes inexplicable.

*Cymbeline* (1610), set in Ancient Britain, is an extraordinary mixture of genres, full of anachronisms but with fine poetry. *The Winter's Tale* (1610–11) is a complex and uneven work about separation in families: a return to life after 16 years. Kermode points to ranting and pathology in the first part, then calm and acceptance in the last acts

His last completed play, *The Tempest* (1610–11), shows his creative powers at their highest and the character of Prospero, the deposed Duke of Milan, a magus-like figure on a remote island, seems to be strongly autobiographical and may have been played by Shakespeare himself. *The Tempest*, the most musical of the 38 plays, represents a farewell to his creative life in the theatre.

Montaigne's influence, with its intense speculation about the inner life and its contradictions, is apparent in *Hamlet* and *King Lear* and he is quoted (without attribution) in *The Tempest*. Montaigne's *Essays* were translated by John \*Florio who, like Shakespeare, enjoyed the patronage of the Earl of Southampton.

The plays are not dated and attempts to arrange them in chronological order have provoked endless controversy. At least 18 were published in Shakespeare's lifetime in quarto form, and they are of particular interest because of their relevance to specific productions, so that the name of an actor may appear in the text instead of the character played.

A collected edition of 36 plays, known as the First Folio, appeared posthumously in 1623, and the names of the editors, **John Heminges** and **Henry Condell**, friends and fellow-actors, vouched for its general authenticity, although the texts were drawn from actors' reconstructions and spellings and rhymes are inconsistent. The First Folio includes the rarely performed *Timon of Athens* (1605–06, probably written with Thomas \*Middleton), the pageant play *Henry VIII* (1613, mostly written by John Fletcher) but excludes the collaborations *Pericles, Prince of Tyre* (1607, with George Wilkins?), and *The Two Noble Kinsmen* (1613, Fletcher). *Cardenio*, based on a story in \*Cervantes' *Don Quixote*, and a collaboration between Shakespeare and Fletcher, performed in 1613, is now lost.

About 750 copies were printed, selling for £1. Eighteen plays, including *Macbeth*, only survive because they appear in the First Folio. The Folger Shakespeare Library in Washington DC holds 82 of the surviving copies.

Shakespeare's plays are generally far longer than those written by his contemporaries.

*The Sonnets* were published in book form, possibly without authorisation, in 1609: Sonnets Nos 1–126 are homoerotic, addressed to a 'fair youth', Nos 127–154 to an unidentified 'dark lady'. The dedication, by the publisher Thomas Thorpe (or T.T.) to 'Mr W. H.', as the 'onlie begetter' of the sonnets, has caused much unresolved speculation.

Very little is known about Shakespeare's life: what he read (other than the obvious sources), if he travelled, the inspirations for his powerful and original ideas, his political or religious beliefs, his sexual orientation. The richness, diversity and depth of his work led to the rise of 'bardolatry' in the 18th century but the meagre evidence of his personal life raised some questions, although it was not until 1856 that alternative authors were proposed. Francis \*Bacon came first, then Edward de Vere, Earl of \*Oxford. The 19th-century fiction that creative writing had to be autobiographical was picked up by \*Freud, who should have known better.

Seventy-nine alternate candidates have now been proposed. Three are royal, 16 are peers or peeresses, one a cardinal, one a saint, and 32 are published authors. None is remotely plausible. (J. S. \*Bach also had an enigmatic interior life but his authorship is virtually unchallenged.)

Slips in writing about Europe or classical antiquity provide support for Shakespeare's authorship: no writer from a university would expose himself to such errors. Ulysses quotes Aristotle. There are clocks in *Julius Caesar*. There are striking examples of anastrophe, having something out of place. *The Winter's Tale* refers to the coasts (and also a desert) of Bohemia. Characters in *Two Gentlemen of Verona* sail from Milan to Verona (although he might have been referring to travel by canal), and from Milan to the Adriatic in *The Tempest*. The only banks in Venice were mercantile and lovers would not be sitting on them. Shakespeare was a man of genius who trawled and reworked the secondary sources rather than having direct exposure to life outside England. His Venetians, Romans, Athenians, Sicilians, Ancient Britons are essentially Londoners.

Shakespeare's last five years were divided between London and New Place, Stratford, where his wife had remained. He died there on his birthday, 23 April 1616 (the same date as Cervantes, but 10 days later under the unreformed Julian calendar), and is buried in Holy Trinity Church. A GPR (ground penetrating radar) scan of Shakespeare's grave (2010) suggests that the skull is missing, possibly stolen in the 1790s. New Place was substantially rebuilt in 1702, finally demolished in 1759. Archaeology continues on the site and the gardens have been imaginatively restored.

Shakespeare's plays remained popular in his lifetime and some 20 years after. The theatres closed from 1642–60 during the Civil War and the Commonwealth, and as fashions changed his work suffered some eclipse. (After the Restoration, \*Pepys recorded seeing 15 performances of plays by and 26 adaptations of Shakespeare and 76 performances of plays by Beaumont and Fletcher). However, \*Dryden, and later \*Johnson, proclaimed his pre-eminence, which has never been challenged since.

*Henry IV*, Parts 1 and 2, were the first plays by Shakespeare performed in Australia (1800).

More than 270 operas are based on Shakespeare's plays, the finest being by \*Purcell, \*Berlioz, \*Bellini, \*Thomas, \*Verdi, \*Gounod, \*Vaughan Williams, \*Tippett, \*Britten, \*Bernstein and \*Adès.

There have been more than 400 television productions or films of Shakespeare's plays, beginning with short excerpts from the silent era, e.g. *King John* (1899).

In Shakespeare's hands blank verse became an instrument of great delicacy whether for dialogue, narrative, description or argument; adaptable equally

to any plot or situation, tragic or comic. His vocabulary was exceptionally large for his time: David Crystal cautiously estimates that Shakespeare used between 17,000 and 20,000 words, allowing for divergent spellings, definitions and ambiguities. Bill Bryson credits Shakespeare with the coinage, or first recorded use, of 2,035 words (including 'accommodation', 'addiction', 'assassination', 'barefaced', 'bloodstained', 'courtship', 'fashionable', 'frugal', 'generous', 'gossip', 'hobnob', 'lack-lustre', 'leapfrog', 'majestic', 'moonbeam', 'mountaineer', 'negotiate', 'obscene', 'premeditated', 'quarrelsome', 'rant', 'restoration', 'scuffle', 'torture' and 'vast'); 170 of them in *Hamlet*. His works have been translated more than any other author and many characters are household names. No writer has given more continuous delight or shown greater insight into the heart and mind, although we know so little of his own.

Chambers, E. K., *William Shakespeare: A Study of Facts and Problems*. 1930; Tillyard, E. M. W., *The Elizabethan World Picture*. 1966; Schoenbaum, S., *Shakespeare's Lives*. 1993; Kermode, F., *Shakespeare's Language*. 2000; *The Age of Shakespeare*. 2004; Wood, M., *In Search of Shakespeare*. 2003; Greenblatt, S., *Will in the World: How Shakespeare Became Shakespeare*. 2004; Ackroyd, P., *Shakespeare: The Biography*. 2005; Rosenbaum, R., *The Shakespeare Wars*. 2006; Bate, J., *Soul of the Age: the Life, Mind and World of William Shakespeare*. 2008; Bryson, B., *Shakespeare. The World as a Stage*. 2009.

**Shalmaneser III** (d.824 BCE). King of Assyria 859–824 BCE. Son and successor of Ashur-pasir-pal, after regaining control of the Phoenician cities he achieved the great victory commemorated by the Black Obelisk in the British Museum, which shows the biblical King Jehu of the Israelites and other rulers bowing before him.

**Shalom Aleichem** ('Peace be upon you!', pseudonym of Shalom Rabinowitz) (1859–1916). Russian-Jewish writer, born in the Ukraine. Originally a rabbi, he wrote first in Russian and Hebrew, devoting himself to Yiddish after 1883 and producing more than 40 volumes. His plays and stories describe life in small Jewish towns during the tsarist era. The story cycle, *Tevye and his Daughters*, was adapted by Joseph Stein for the play *Fiddler on the Roof*, later a successful film (1971). He moved to the US, became known as the 'Jewish Mark Twain', and died in New York.

Samuel, M., *The World of Shalom Aleichem*. 1943.

**Shamir, Yitzhak** (1915–2012). Israeli politician, born in Poland. Migrating to Palestine in 1935, he was an activist in the Stern Gang and was imprisoned by the British during World War II. A Knesset member 1973–96, he became Speaker 1977–80, Foreign Minister 1980–83 and succeeded Menachem Begin as Prime Minister 1983–84. In a 'national unity' coalition he became Foreign Minister again 1984–86 and Prime Minister 1986–92.

**Shannon, Claude Elwood** (1916–2001). American mathematician, electrical engineer and cryptographer, born in Michigan. A graduate of the University of Michigan, in 1937, at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, he recognised Boolean logic (George \*Boole) as being central to the operation of a universal computer (a discovery made independently by Victor Shestakov in Moscow in 1935, but not published until 1941). A cryptographer in World War II, he worked at the Bell Labs 1941–56, collaborated briefly with Alan \*Turing, and taught at MIT 1956–78. His paper 'The Mathematical Theory of Communication' (with Warren Weaver, 1949) is regarded as the beginning of information theory: he developed \*Boltzmann's insight (1894) that 'entropy is missing information' and pointed to entropy as the link between energy and information. The 'Shannon number' ( $10^{120}$ ) was his calculation of the number of possible moves in a game of chess.

Campbell, J., *Grammatical Man*. 1982; Gleick, J., *The Information*. 2011; Nahn, P. J., *The Logician and the Engineer: How George Boole and Claude Shannon Created the Information Age*. 2013; Soni, J. and Goodman, R., *A Mind at Play: How Claude Shannon Invented the Information Age*. 2017; Sen, P., *Einstein's Fridge*. 2021; Brooks, M., *The Art of More*. 2021.

**Sharif**, (Mian Muhammad) **Nawaz** (1949– ). Pakistani politician and businessman, born in Lahore. Appointed Premier of Punjab 1985–88 by President \*Zia ul-Haq, he became leader of the Pakistan Muslim League and was Prime Minister of Pakistan 1990–93 (removed by the military, then lost the following election), 1997–99 (replaced by Pervez \*Musharraf after an army coup) and 2013–17, being removed by the Supreme Court following charges of corruption. (His brother was named as his successor.)

**Sharon** (originally Scheinermann), **Ariel** (1928–2014). Israeli soldier and politician, born in Palestine. He served in the police and army, and, as Defence Minister 1981–83, took responsibility for the murders of Palestinian detainees by Lebanese Phalangists at Chatila and Sabra in 1982. Foreign Minister 1996–99 and Leader of the Likud 1999–2005, he defeated Ehud \*Barak to become Prime Minister 2001–06. A secular Jew, he took tough military action against the Palestinian *intefada*, but after \*Arafat's death he negotiated with the Palestinian Authority and formed a coalition with Labour. In 2005 he cleared Israeli settlers from the Gaza strip. This split Likud which he left in November 2005, forming a new centre party, Kadima, but in January 2006 he suffered an incapacitating stroke. His party won the March 2006 elections, but Sharon remained in a vegetative state.

**Sharp, Cecil James** (1859–1924). English collector of folk songs and dances. He began collecting folksongs in 1903 and thereafter made it his life's work. Like \*Grainger, he helped save the English folk tradition from extinction, although he bowdlerised a good many

songs. He wrote *English Folk Song—Some Conclusions* (1907) and founded (1911) the English Folk Dance Society. The London headquarters of the English Folk Dance and Song Society is named after him.

**Shastri, Lal Bahadur** (1904–1966). Indian politician, born in Uttar Pradesh. Son of a schoolmaster, he became one of the most active workers for the Indian National Congress Party and for nine years was imprisoned for civil disobedience. He served in three of \*Nehru's Cabinets, as Minister for Railways 1952–56, for Transport and Communications 1956–61 and for Home Affairs 1961–64. On Nehru's sudden death he succeeded as Prime Minister 1964–66. Much of his brief term of office was occupied with disputes with Pakistan and the frontier war that followed. He had just reached an agreement for a ceasefire at a conference held under Soviet auspices at Tashkent when he died. Of very small stature, he had a gentle, persuasive manner that commanded much affection.

**Shaw, G(eorge) Bernard** (1856–1950). Anglo-Irish dramatist, born in Dublin. He paid little attention to school subjects but acquired a cultural background at art galleries and concerts. After five years in a Dublin land agent's office, he went to London (1876), where his mother, a singing teacher, supported him while he wrote unsuccessful novels and haunted the British Museum to improve his education. He was already a vegetarian, teetotaler, and non-smoker, and now, having studied \*Marx, became a socialist. As a St Pancras Borough councillor 1879–1903, he observed social distress at close range. He was among the first members of the Fabian Society (1884) and, having overcome his shyness, became a noted public speaker. His professional career began when as 'Corno di Bassetto' he was music critic on the *Star* (1888–90) and on *The World* (1890–94). He was a champion of \*Wagner, wrote *The Perfect Wagnerite* (1898), and also warmly championed \*Ibsen when he was appointed dramatic critic of *The Saturday Review*, then under the editorship of Frank \*Harris. Since his defence of Ibsen was combined with attacks on \*Shakespeare, Shaw doubly shocked many of his readers, but others revelled in the flippant irreverence of his style and were stimulated by his paradoxes. Thus when his first play *Widowers' Houses* was produced (1892) he had at least a nucleus of fervent support to set against the general disapproval. Nevertheless, his next play, *The Philanderers* (1893), was rejected by managements and the third, *Mrs Warren's Profession* (1893), by the censor (until 1924). These 'unpleasant plays' were followed by 'pleasant' ones: *Arms and the Man* (1894), *Candida* (1894), *You Never Can Tell* (1895–96), and *The Devil's Disciple* (1896). After a serious illness (1898) Shaw gave up regular journalism and married **Charlotte Payne-Townsend** (d.1943). He was always grateful for the money she then brought although his own earnings were soon to become prodigious. To what extent his emotions were involved with women is questionable. He was probably too self-centred for love and was at his happiest when in flirtatious

correspondence with women he admired, e.g. Ellen \*Terry or Mrs Patrick \*Campbell. For the former he wrote *Captain Brassbound's Conversion* (1899). He had already written *Caesar and Cleopatra* (1898–99), a delightfully modern conception of a historic theme, for Johnston \*Forbes-Robertson, his favourite actor. His views on creative evolution are expounded (1901–03) in *Man and Superman* (and he returned to the theme in the epic *Back to Methuselah* of 1917–20), a play which with *John Bull's Other Island*, *Major Barbara* and some of his earlier ones was produced under the management of Harley \*Granville-Barker at the famous repertory season at the Court Theatre. This finally brought the full recognition for which he had worked so long. *Pygmalion* (based on a Greek legend) was completed in 1912 and performed in Vienna and New York before its London première in 1914. *Heartbreak House*, begun just before World War I, during which Shaw's political views made him unpopular, analysed the breakdown of European society in a domestic setting evocative of \*Chekhov. The most financially successful of his plays was *Saint Joan* (1924) which was followed by the political satire *The Apple Cart* (1929). In 1925 he was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature which he had previously declined. Among the non-dramatic works of his later period the best known are *The Intelligent Woman's Guide to Socialism and Capitalism* (1928) and *The Black Girl in Search of God* (1932). He declined the OM. He developed a perverse enthusiasm for \*Mussolini, \*Hitler and \*Stalin, visited the USSR and New Zealand, but not Australia. In old age, Shaw became obsessed with the idea of simplifying English spelling and left most of his money for that end. Shaw's wit made his audiences laugh and his flippancy often made them angry. These reactions would not have displeased him for his purpose was, by goading, provoking, ridiculing or cajoling them, to make them think. The subjects of Shaw's plays became anachronistic and they are now rarely performed. However, *Pygmalion*, a great success as a film (1938), directed by Gabriel Pascal, was transformed into the musical *My Fair Lady* (1956), by Alan Jay Lerner (script and lyrics) and Frederick Loewe (music), and performed throughout the world for six decades.

Holroyd, M., *Bernard Shaw*. 4 vols, 1988, 1989, 1991, 1992. 1 vol. abridgement 2011; O'Toole, F., *Judging Shaw*. 2017.

**Shaw, Richard Norman** (1831–1912). English architect. Under the influence of William \*Morris he broke away from current Victorian Gothic and returned, in many London and country houses, to the classic principles of Georgian architecture and to traditional craftsmanship and use of materials. His London buildings included New Scotland Yard (1891), the Gaiety Theatre (1905), now demolished, and the Piccadilly Hotel (1905).

**Shaw, Sir Run Run** (Shao Renleng) (1907–2014). Hong Kong-Chinese film producer and philanthropist, born in Ningbo. He grew up in

Singapore, established a film studio in Shanghai and moved to Hong Kong in 1937. He became a dominant figure in television and endowed many schools and universities.

**Shawn, William** (1907–1992). American journalist. He worked on the *New Yorker* from 1933 and was its editor 1952–87.

**Shchedrin, Rodion Konstantinovich** (1932– ). Russian composer and pianist, born in Moscow. The son of a composer and teacher, he was deeply influenced by \*Prokofiev, and composed some much performed works, notable for their wit and panache, including the *Carmen Suite* (1967, for strings and percussion), the ballet *Anna Karénina* (1972), five concertos for orchestra, six piano concertos and three symphonies. In 1958, he married **Maya Plisetskaya** (1925–2015), prima ballerina at the Bolshoi 1960–90.

**Shelburne, 2nd Earl of, William Petty**, later **1st Marquess of Lansdowne** (1737–1805). English Whig politician, born in Dublin. Following distinguished army service in Germany in the Seven Years War he entered politics. After joining George \*Grenville's ministry (1763) he became closely associated with Chatham (William \*Pitt) both in office, as Secretary of State 1766–68, and later in opposition to Lord \*North and his American policy. Again Secretary of State 1782 under \*Rockingham, on his death he formed a government as First Lord of the Treasury (i.e. Prime Minister) 1782–83, notable because \*Pitt the Younger served as Chancellor of the Exchequer. Shelburne was a man of great ability and a natural radical (favouring free trade, Roman Catholic emancipation and parliamentary reform) but the time was not ripe, his political shifts and turns to approach his objectives were misunderstood and secured him the nickname 'the Jesuit of Berkeley Square'. Given a consolatory marquessate on retirement (1784), he was a patron of the arts and a collector of manuscripts, purchased for the British Museum in 1807.

**Shelley, Mary Wollstonecraft** (née Godwin) (1797–1851). British novelist. Daughter of the rationalist philosopher William \*Godwin and the feminist writer and radical Mary \*Wollstonecraft, she became the second wife of the poet Percy Bysshe \*Shelley. She wrote *Frankenstein or the Modern Prometheus*, about a man who created a monster (1818), and three other novels.

White, N. I., *Shelley*. 2nd ed. 1947; Shelley, P. B., *Letters* (ed. F. L. Jones), 1964; Leighton, M., *Shelley's Mary: A Life of Mary Godwin Shelley*. 1973; Mellor, A. K., *Mary Shelley*. 1990; Schor, E. (ed.), *The Cambridge Companion to Mary Shelley*. 2003; Seymour, M., *Mary Shelley*. 2000.

**Shelley, Percy Bysshe** (1792–1822). English poet, born near Horsham, Sussex. Grandson of a baronet, at Eton he read *Enquiry into Political Justice* by his future

father-in-law William \*Godwin, a book that did much to encourage his desire to reform contemporary social systems. He was expelled from Oxford (1811) for writing *The Necessity for Atheism*. This led to a breach with his father which left the poet constantly short of money. Soon afterwards he married his sister's school friend, the beautiful 16-year-old Harriet Westbrook, childish even for her years. Even on the prolonged honeymoon Shelley needed the mental stimulus of his great friend Thomas Jefferson Hogg who committed the quickly forgiven indiscretion of falling in love with Harriet. In London Shelley joined the radical Godwin circle: Shelley and Harriet were already estranged when he fell violently in love and (1814) eloped with Mary Godwin; they married two years later, when Harriet drowned herself. Shelley always refused to accept responsibility for her death, as he had never hidden his views about free love, but he was deeply wounded when the courts gave the care of his children by her into other hands. From 1818 the Shelleys lived in Italy where he, while composing some of the loveliest lyrics ever to be written in English, became involved in the tangled financial, emotional and political affairs of the Godwins, \*Byron and Leigh \*Hunt. In 1822 the Shelleys were living in a villa at Lerici on the Gulf of Spezia and on 8 July while Shelley, after a meeting with Byron, was sailing back from Leghorn (Livorno) his boat, the *Ariel*, was upset in a storm; he and his two companions were drowned. His ashes are buried in Rome, near \*Keats. Shelley had first revealed his greatness as a poet by long poems, e.g. *Queen Mab* (1813) and *Alastor* (1816), but with the exception of his verse plays, of which the greatest are *The Cenci* (1819), a grim tale of incestuous passion and *Prometheus Unbound* (1820), he is best remembered by his songs and odes. *Ode to a Skylark*, *Ode to the West Wind* and *Adonais* (1821), the great lament for the poet Keats, are among the many familiar titles. Mary Shelley's son by the poet inherited his grandfather's baronetcy.

White, N. I., *Shelley*. 2nd ed. 1947; Shelley, P. B., *Letters* (ed. F. L. Jones), 1964.

**Shepard, Sam** (Samuel Shepard Rogers) (1943–2017). American dramatist. After some years of wandering in the Midwest, he began writing a series of plays which John Lahr described as 'dreamscapes of the American landscape where past and present coexist'. They include: *Chicago* (1966), *Red Cross* (1966), *Tooth of Crime* (1974), *Buried Child* (1979, Pulitzer Prize), *Curse of the Starving Class* (1985) and *A Lie of the Mind* (1985).

**Sheppard, Jack** (1702–1724). English criminal. Whilst apprenticed to a London carpenter he took to crime (1720). In 1724 he was caught four times but always escaped, on one occasion forcing six of Newgate Prison's great doors. On the last occasion he was held and hanged at Tyburn before a vast and admiring crowd. He was the hero of many ballads and of a novel by Harrison \*Ainsworth.

**Sher, Sir Antony** (1949–2021). British actor, director and writer, born in Cape Town. Of Jewish-Lithuanian background, in the UK from 1968, he was a powerful interpreter of Shakespearean roles e.g. Iago, Richard III, Shylock, Macbeth and Lear.

**Sheraton, Thomas** (1751–1806). English furniture designer, born at Stockton-on-Tees. Before moving to London (c.1790) he was a journeyman cabinet-maker and may later have supervised the manufacture of some furniture, but his style became influential through his illustrated design manuals, notably the *Cabinet-maker and Upholsterer's Drawing Book* (1791). Sheraton furniture is distinguished by lightness and simplicity, an emphasis on straight, vertical lines and a preference for inlay decoration.

Fastnedge, R., *Sheraton Furniture*. 1962.

**Sheridan, Philip Henry** (1831–1888). American soldier, born in New York State. A captain when the Civil War began (1861), \*Grant soon gave him command of all the cavalry of the army of the Potomac and he became famous for his spectacular raids behind the enemy lines, in one of which he reached the outskirts of Richmond, the Confederate capital. Later as commander of the army in the Shenandoah Valley 1864–65, he at first showed unwonted caution, but while he was absent his army suffered a severe setback at Cedar Creek. A dramatic ride back to the battlefield enabled him to reverse the situation with a counter-attack in which 24 guns were taken. Sheridan displayed his dash and brilliance to the full as Grant's principal lieutenant in the operations leading to the surrender at Appomattox. He was Commander-in-Chief of the US army 1883–88.

**Sheridan, Richard (Butler) Brinsley** (1751–1816). Anglo-Irish dramatist and politician, born in Dublin. The son of an actor, his mother, **Frances Sheridan** (1724–1766), was a minor novelist and dramatist. Having fought two duels on behalf of Elizabeth Ann Linley with whom he eloped and (1773) married, he soon won fame with his three brilliant comedies, *The Rivals* (1775), *The School for Scandal* (1777) and *The Critic* (1779). *The Duenna* (1775) and others are much inferior. He bought \*Garrick's share of the Drury Lane Theatre (1776), assumed the managership and built (1794) a new theatre, burnt down in 1809. He was a Whig MP 1780–1812, a friend of Charles James \*Fox and an imprudent advisor to the Prince of Wales (later \*George IV), and was appointed Undersecretary for Foreign Affairs 1782, Junior Secretary to the Treasury 1783, Receiver-General of the Duchy of Cornwall 1804–07 and Treasurer of the Navy 1806–07. He became renowned as an orator, especially for his speech in the Commons (1787) calling for the impeachment of Warren \*Hastings, and was a manager of the prosecution in the long drawn out trial. When fire destroyed Drury Lane Theatre (1809), Sheridan was financially crippled and arrested for debt (1813). He was buried in Westminster Abbey.

**Sherman, William Tecumseh** (1820–1891). American soldier, born in Ohio. When the Civil War broke out (1861) Sherman, who had abandoned his career as an officer to become a banker and a lawyer, was a professor at the Louisiana military academy. He at once rejoined the Union army, commanded a brigade at Bull Run and saved the day at Shiloh. Appointed by \*Grant to command in the southwest he captured Atlanta (September 1864). Unable to bring his opponent, Hood, to battle, he began in November the great march through Georgia which created a wide band of destruction from Atlanta to the port of Savannah. The march incurred lasting odium, and its military usefulness has been a matter of controversy ever since. It seems certain that then, and on other occasions, Sherman showed himself more adept at destroying communications than in coming to grips with the enemy. He was Commander-in-Chief of the US army 1869–83. In 1884 he rebuffed attempts to draft him as Republican candidate for president with the words: 'I will not accept if nominated and will not serve if elected.' His brother, **John Sherman** (1823–1900), was a US senator from Ohio 1861–77 and 1881–97, Secretary of the Treasury 1877–81, sponsored the Anti-Trust Act (1890) that bears his name and became Secretary of State 1897–98.

Wilson, E., *Patriotic Gore*. 1962.

**Sherriff, Robert Cedric** (1896–1975). English dramatist. His play about World War I, *Journey's End* (1929), achieved an outstanding success not repeated by his later work.

**Sherrington, Sir Charles Scott** (1857–1952). English physiologist, born in London. He studied at Cambridge and St Thomas' Hospital, London, where, after research into cholera in Spain and Italy, he became a lecturer in physiology. Later appointments included professorships at Liverpool University 1895–1913 and Oxford 1913–35. He introduced the term 'synapse' (1897) to describe the point of transmission of neurons. His work on the nervous system and its control of muscles was of great importance, especially on the effects of reflex actions. He was elected FRS (1893) and PRS 1920–25, won the Royal (1905) and Copley (1927) medals and received the OM (1924). With E. D. \*Adrian, he was awarded the Nobel Prize for Medicine (1932) for 'their discoveries regarding the function of neurons'. His books include *Integrative Action of the Nervous System* (1906) and *Man on his Nature* (1940). He was also a poet and an inspiring teacher whose students included Howard \*Florey and John \*Eccles.

**Sherwood, Robert Emmet** (1896–1957). American author. His successful plays include *Idiot's Delight* (1936), *Abe Lincoln in Illinois* (1939) and *There shall be no Night* (1941). He wrote some of President Franklin \*Roosevelt's speeches and won the Pulitzer Prize (1949) for *Roosevelt and Hopkins: An Intimate History*.



**Shevardnadze, Eduard Amvrosis dze** (1928–2014). Georgian politician. Active in the Komsomol and Communist Party in Georgia, he became Interior Minister 1965–72 and First Secretary 1972–85, gaining a reputation for toughness. A member of the CPSU Politburo from 1985, \*Gorbachev unexpectedly appointed him as Soviet Foreign Minister 1985–90. Despite his lack of international experience, he played a central role in ending the Cold War. He resigned dramatically in December 1990, warning of dictatorship and protesting against Gorbachev's increased dependence on opponents of reform. A founder member of the Democratic Reform Movement 1991, After the break-up of the USSR, he became the effective head of an independent State of Georgia as Head of State 1992–95 and President 1995–2003.

**Shi Huang Di** *see* **Qin Shihuang**

**Shinwell, Emanuel, Baron Shinwell** (1884–1986). English politician. He entered parliament as Labour member for Linlithgow in 1922 and became Financial Secretary to the War Office in 1929. He was Parliamentary Secretary to the Department of Mines in 1924 and again 1930–31. In Atlee's Government he was Minister of Fuel and Power 1945–47, and Minister for War 1947–50 and of Defence 1950–51. In 1986 he became the oldest peer in British history.

Shinwell, E., *I've Lived Through It All*. 1973.

**Shipley, Dame Jenny** (Jennifer Mary, née Robson) (1952– ). New Zealand National politician. MP 1987–2002, she displaced Jim \*Bolger as Prime Minister 1997–99, until defeated by Helen \*Clark.

**Shirley, James** (1596–1666). English dramatist. After leaving Oxford he became a Roman Catholic and took up teaching but soon began writing for the stage. He wrote over 40 plays: the tragedies, e.g. *The Maid's Revenge* (c.1626), *The Traitor* (1631) and *The Cardinal* (1641), are undistinguished, but the comedies, e.g. *The Gamester* (1633), later adapted by \*Garrick, and *The Lady of Pleasure* (1635), were revived after the return of \*Charles II (1660) and strongly influenced Restoration comedy. He died from stress and exposure during the Great Fire of London.

**Shockley, William Bradford** (1910–1989). American physicist, born in London. He studied at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, worked at the Bell Labs 1936–55 and conducted research on radar in World War II. He was co-inventor with \*Brattain and Bardeen of the germanium transistor and shared with them the Nobel Prize for Physics (1956). He had already determined that silicon was superior to germanium, but colleagues refused to work with him. He relocated to Silicon Valley, California, became a professor at Stanford University 1963–75 and held controversial views on eugenics, intelligence and race.

**Shoenberg, Sir Isaac** (1880–1963). Russian-British engineer. He worked in England for \*Marconi from 1914, pioneered stereo recording and, in parallel with \*Zworykin in the US, developed electronic scanning techniques for television which were adopted by the BBC, displacing \*Baird's mechanical scanning.

**Sholokhov, Mikhail Aleksandrovich** (1905–1984). Russian novelist. In his first major work, *And Quiet Flows the Don* and its sequel *The Don Flows Home to the Sea* (1928–40), he gave an account of the events leading up to and following the Revolution and Civil War (in which he fought in the Red army) and the effects on a Cossack village. His second epic, *Virgin Soil Upturned* (1932–33), dealt with the collectivisation of agriculture. *They Fought for their Country* (from 1959) is an epic of World War II. He also published many short stories and won the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1965.

**Shore, Jane** (d.1527?). English mistress of \*Edward IV. Wife of a London goldsmith, famed for her beauty and wit, she was accused of sorcery and forced to do public penance by \*Richard III. Sir Thomas \*More writes of her and her story is the theme of ballads and of a tragedy by Nicholas \*Rowe.

**Shorten, Bill** (William Richard) (1967– ). Australian Labor politician and union official, born in Melbourne. Educated at Xavier College, Monash and Melbourne Universities, and working briefly as a lawyer, he became a trade union official, and National Secretary of the Australian Workers' Union (AWU) 2001–07. Federal MP 2007–, he was the architect of a national disability policy, and served as Minister for Workplace Relations 2011–13 and for Education 2013. An effective and assiduous advocate, supported by the Right, he became the first Labor leader chosen by a combination of votes in the Caucus and ALP branch members, and was Leader of the Opposition 2013–19. Defeated by Scott \*Morrison in 2019, he became Minister for Government Services 2022–.

**Shostakovich, Dimitri Dimitrievich** (1906–1975). Russian composer, born in St Petersburg. Son of an engineer of Polish descent, he was a child prodigy, entering the Petrograd Conservatorium at the age of 13 to study under \*Glazunov. He won early recognition with his vivacious Symphony No. 1 (1925), No. 2 (1927) being dedicated to the *October Revolution*. His output included songs, choral works, many orchestral suites (mostly drawn from other compositions), the opera *The Nose* (after \*Gogol, 1928) and the ballet *The Age of Gold* (1930). His 36 film scores, nine for \*Kozintsev, written, as he said, 'to pay the rent', include *New Babylon* (1928), *The Gadfly* (1955), *Hamlet* (1964) and *King Lear* (1970), and music was adapted for many stage productions.

Brooding seriousness and ironical gaiety are the dominant moods of Shostakovich's music.

A magnificent pianist himself, his piano works include 24 preludes Op. 34 (1932–33), Concerto for Piano and Trumpet, Op. 35 (1933), Piano Quintet Op. 57 (1940), 24 preludes and fugues, Op. 87 (1950–51), and Piano Concerto No. 2, Op. 102 (1957).

His opera *Lady Macbeth of Mtsensk* (1934) was an outstanding success until seen by \*Stalin, leading to a denunciation in *Pravda* and a 30-year ban. To conform with political reality he duly changed his style with the popular Symphony No. 5 (1937). Symphony No. 7 (the *Leningrad*, 1941) commemorates the German siege and was an immediate international success.

Fifteen powerful string quartets, a form in which he vied for mastery with Belá \*Bartók, appeared between 1938 and 1974. He originally planned to write 24, one in each key, major and minor. No. 8 in C (1943) is the most played, followed by No. 2, No. 4 and No. 13, but all are outstanding, particularly the last six, which like \*Beethoven's, explore an inner world and can be profoundly disturbing.

He admired \*Mussorgsky, re-orchestrated *Boris Godunov* (1939–40) and orchestrated his *Songs and Dances of Death* (1962).

In 1948 \*Zhdanov attacked Shostakovich for 'bourgeois formalism' and dismissed him from the Moscow Conservatorium. Despite decades of frustration (and fear) he learnt how to reconcile Soviet ideological demands and his own creativity in some of his finest works: Symphonies No. 8 (1943), No. 10 (1953), No. 13 (1962), No. 14 (1969) and No. 15 (1971).

He was probably the greatest composer of symphonies since \*Mahler, who had been a profound influence, and certainly since \*Sibelius.

Symphony No. 13 (*Babi Yar*) in B flat minor, op. 113, a long work, turns on five poems by Yevgenyi \*Yevtushenko, for bass, male chorus and orchestra. It begins with a meditation on the Nazi massacre of Jews at Babi Yar in 1943, and ends with 'A Career', a despairing cry against the cynical acceptance of playing safe to secure promotion.

Violin concertos (1948, 1967) were written for \*Oistrakh, cello concertos (1959; 1966) for \*Rostropovich and a violin sonata, Op. 134 (1968) for Oistrakh and \*Rikhter.

Diffident and obsessive, a heavy drinker and smoker, a sports enthusiast, constantly exhibiting physical tension, he joined the Communist Party in 1960, largely as a protective measure, and had trophy status at international peace congresses. He outwardly conformed to successive regimes (serving as a member of the Supreme Soviet 1962–75) but his music can be understood as a profound protest. The book *Testimony: The Memoirs of Shostakovich* (1979), edited by Solomon Volkov, remains deeply controversial, with some parts apparently authentic, others conjectural. His son **Maksim Dmitrievich Shostakovich** (1938–) was a conductor and pianist.

MacDonald, I., *The New Shostakovich*. 1990; Fay, L. E., *Shostakovich: A Life*. 2000; Wilson, E., *Shostakovich: A Life Remembered*. rev. 2006.

**Shovell, Sir Clowdesley** (1650–1707). English admiral of the fleet, born in Norfolk. He ran away to sea, and from being a cabin boy rose by sheer ability to become a rear admiral. When he was a lieutenant he burned four pirate ships in the Mediterranean (1674). He was knighted for his conduct at the Battle of Bantry Bay (1689). At Cap La Hogue (1692), now a rear-admiral, he burned 20 enemy ships. He served as MP 1695–1707. He took part in the capture of Barcelona (1705) but failed at Toulon (1707). On the way home his ship struck a rock and sank off the Scilly Isles, and he and 800 aboard were lost. How his body came to be found in Cornwall is a mystery (was it washed ashore? or was he murdered after landing?). He was buried in Westminster Abbey.

**Shrapnel, Henry** (1761–1842). English soldier. An artillery officer in the Duke of \*York's army in Flanders (1793), he invented the spherical case shell, first used in 1804 and later named after him. It explodes in the air at a fuse-controlled height and propels bullets in a forward cone. He became a lieutenant general in 1837.

**Shrewsbury, 1st Earl of, John Talbot** (1388?–1453). English commander. His exploits in the period when \*Joan of Arc's death was followed by the decline of English power made his name one of odium and terror to the French. Among his successes were a victory over the Burgundians at Crottoy (1437) and the recapture of Harfleur (1440). A reckless and precipitate attack at Castillon (1453) brought defeat and death.

**Shriver, Lionel** (originally Margaret Ann) (1957–). American-British novelist, born in North Carolina. Her novels include *We Need to Talk About Kevin* (2003), *So Much for That* (2010), and *Big Brother: A Novel* (2013). She became a British citizen in 2012.

**Shultz, George Pratt** (1920–2021). American administrator. Educated at Princeton and the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, he taught economics in Chicago, serving as Secretary of Labor 1969–70, Director of the Office of Management and Budget 1970–72, and Secretary of the Treasury 1972–74. He was President of the Bechtel Corporation, engineers, 1975–82, and Secretary of State 1982–89.

**Sibelius, Jean** (Johan Julius Christian) (1865–1957). Finnish composer, born in Hämeenlinna. Regarded as an embodiment of national culture, after abandoning law for music he studied in Helsinki, Berlin and Vienna (under \*Goldmark). His gifts were early recognised by the Finnish authorities with a grant for life which enabled him to devote himself to composition. Though not a conscious nationalist in music—he did not base his work on folklore—he was interested

in Finnish mythology. He first won international recognition with the tone poem *En Saga* (1892, revised 1902). The first movement of the Symphony No. 2 (1902) introduces Sibelius' individual approach to formal structure: the movement is built up not from two clearly defined groups of subjects as in classical sonata form, but from a number of short phrases that gradually fuse and develop organically. This method, apparent also in the last movement of the Symphony No. 3 (1907), was to dominate the rest of the series. No. 4 (1911), remarkable for the compression of its material, economical orchestration and bitterness of mood, was followed by the glowing and expansive No. 5 (1915, revised 1916, 1919), the restrained No. 6 and the one movement No. 7 (1924). Comparable with the symphonies in mood and sometimes in manner, are the tone poems *The Bard* (1913), *Luonnotar* (1910) for soprano and orchestra, *The Oceanides* (1914) and *Tapiola* (1926), the last of his important works. He also wrote incidental music for plays (e.g. \*Maeterlinck's *Pelléas et Mélisande* and \*Shakespeare's *The Tempest*) and songs. His idiom was unmistakably personal in its melodic, harmonic and orchestral expression. The comparative lack of lyricism in his music and its preoccupation with nature (especially its sinister aspect) must partly account for lack of appreciation outside Scandinavia and the English-speaking world. His structural changes have not been significantly adopted. Long promoted by \*Koussevitzky and \*Beecham, his work was neglected after the revival of interest in \*Mahler's symphonies (and, to a degree, his own contemporary Carl \*Nielsen) until taken up by Leonard \*Bernstein, Colin \*Davis and Lorin \*Maazel.

Layton, R., *Sibelius*. 1965; Blum, F., *Jean Sibelius: An International Bibliography*. 1965; Grimley, D., *Jean Sibelius and His World*. 2011.

**Sica, Vittorio de** (1901–1974). Italian film director and actor. After a stage career which began in 1923 he made films such as *Bicycle Thieves* (1948), *Miracle in Milan* (1950) and *Umberto D.* (1951) in which pathos, whimsical humour and a keen sense of character are combined. As a character actor in such films as *Bread, Love and Dreams*, he also won high esteem.

**Sickert, Walter Richard** (1860–1942). British painter of Danish descent, born in Munich. He studied in London at the Slade School and under \*Whistler, and in Paris with \*Degas. In 1886 he began to exhibit at the New English Art Club which he helped to found, and lived mainly in London, Dieppe and Venice. After returning to London (1905) he headed a group of artists who formed (1911) the 'Camden Town Group', which later (1913) became part of the 'London group'. Under Degas' influence he painted scenes of theatre life but many of his subjects were the dark rooms and dismal streets familiar to him from his early London days, painted in the subdued colour schemes he had learnt from Whistler, using French Impressionist and post-Impressionist techniques. In

later years he introduced colour and sunshine into his pictures using a fuller and richer palette. He became an ARA in 1924 but, having been elected RA in 1934, resigned a year later. In *Portrait of a Killer* (2002), the writer Patricia Cornwell, after extensive research costing \$US6 million, concluded that Sickert was Jack the Ripper—but her verdict was unpersuasive.

Sickert, W. R., *A Free House*. 1947; Baron, W., *Sickert*. 1973; Sutton, D., *Walter Sickert*. 1976; Sturgis, M., *Walter Sickert. A Life*. 2005.

**Sickingen, Franz von** (1481–1523). German knight. After serving as a soldier of fortune under \*François I of France and the emperor \*Charles V, he conducted, on behalf of the Protestant reformers, his own private war against the ecclesiastical princes. Placed under the ban of the empire, he died of wounds while besieged in his own castle. His death symbolised the end of the independent power of German knighthood.

**Sickles, Daniel Edgar** (1819?–1914). American soldier and politician. A New York attorney and state politician, he was a US Congressman 1857–61 and 1893–95. He married (1852) the daughter of Lorenzo \*da Ponte's ward. In 1859 he was tried for murdering her lover, Philip Barton Key, son of Francis Scott \*Key, and acquitted on the grounds of 'temporary insanity'. He served as a major-general in the Civil War, losing a leg at Gettysburg, then, as Minister to Spain 1869–73. He became the lover of \*Isabella II.

**Siddons, Sarah Kemble** (1755–1831). English tragic actor. She came of a famous stage family, the Kembles, and was a sister of John \*Kemble. At the age of 17 she married a member of her father's company, and two years later made her debut (1775), under \*Garrick's management at Drury Lane as Portia. She was not notably successful and for the next six years she toured the provinces. She made a triumphant return to London (1782) and until her retirement (1812) dominated the London stage. In tragic roles, above all as Lady Macbeth, perfection was claimed for her, beauty of face, form and voice being allied with vibrant emotional power. She is immortalised in paintings by \*Gainsborough and, as *The Tragic Muse*, by \*Reynolds.

**Sidgwick, Henry** (1838–1900). English moral philosopher. Educated at Cambridge, he taught there from 1859 and became Knightsbridge professor of moral philosophy 1883–1900. A disciple of J. S. \*Mill, in his *The Methods of Ethics* (1874) he compared three approaches to decision making: hedonism (self interest), utilitarianism (the greatest good for the greatest number) and intuitionism (instinct). In 1888 he founded the Society for Psychical Research. He campaigned against religious texts and founded Newnham College (1876) to promote education for women. His wife **Eleanor Mildred Sidgwick** (née Balfour) (1845–1936) was President of Newnham College 1892–1910.

**Sidmouth, 1st Viscount** *see* Addington, Henry

**Sidney, Algernon** (1622–1683). English radical. Son of the 2nd Earl of Leicester and a grandnephew of Sir Philip \*Sidney, in the Civil War he fought for the parliamentary forces. Though he opposed Cromwell's Protectorship he was forced after the Restoration to live as an exile on the Continent until 1677. After another visit to France (1679) during which it was alleged (without proof) that he was bribed by \*Louis XIV, he returned to England and was arrested after the discovery of the Rye House plot to murder \*Charles II on his way back from Newmarket. Tried by Judge \*Jeffreys, he was condemned on doubtful evidence for treason, and beheaded. His name was officially cleared in 1689. His *Discourses Concerning Government*, attacking the patriarchalism of \*Filmer and advocating aristocratic republicanism, were printed in 1689.

**Sidney, Sir Philip** (1554–1586). English poet, scholar, courtier and soldier, born in Penshurst, Kent. Nephew of Robert Dudley, Earl of \*Leicester, he was educated at Shrewsbury and Oxford. Travels as a young man enabled him to absorb continental and especially Italian culture, and on his return to \*Elizabeth I's court he seemed, with his looks, his birth, talents and chivalrous attitude to life, the English personification of the Renaissance ideal. There were numerous portraits (including miniatures) painted of him. Ill-timed advice to the Queen against her proposed French marriage robbed him of her favour, but he returned to court in 1583 and was knighted. He married (1583) the daughter of Sir Francis \*Walsingham. After his death at Zutphen (where he was said to have passed a cup of water to a wounded soldier in even greater need) during Leicester's campaign to aid the Dutch against the Spaniards, he became a national hero. Over 200 poems were produced in commemoration of his death.

None of his works was published in his lifetime. *Arcadia*, a pastoral prose romance with poems interspersed, was begun in 1580 and published in 1590. *The Apologie for Poetrie* (called in a later edition *Defense of Poesie*) was written about the same time; it was the first application of Italian critical methods to English poetry. *Astrophel and Stella*, consisting of 108 Petrarchan sonnets and 11 songs, is believed to have been inspired by his love for Penelope Devereux, daughter of the 1st Earl of Essex, after she had been forced to marry against her will (1580).

His sister **Mary Sidney** (1561–1621) married the 2nd Earl of Pembroke, was a lady in waiting to \*Elizabeth I, a patron of Edmund \*Spenser, a gifted translator and a powerful (if neglected) poet.

Duncan-Jones, K., *Sir Philip Sidney. Courtier Poet*. 1991.

**Siemens, (Ernst) Werner** (1816–1892). German electrical engineer, born in Lenthe. He invented the pointer telegraph (1846), the self-excited dynamo, new techniques for electroplating, the first electric tramway (1879) and electric train (1881). With

**Johann Georg Halske** he founded Siemens & Halske in 1847 and it became the largest international telegraph construction company. His brother **Sir William** (Karl Wilhelm) **Siemens** (1823–1883), Anglo-German engineer, was born in Hanover. He first visited England in 1843 and 1844 to launch two of his own and his brother's processes and settled there to take advantage of the more favourable patent laws. His principal researches were on applications of heat and electricity. Among his many inventions were a gas-fired regenerative furnace (1848) later used for open-hearth steel production, an early platinum resistance thermometer (1871), and the electric arc steel furnace (1879). He also designed the steamship *Faraday*, which laid the first transatlantic cable (1874). He was naturalised in 1859, elected FRS in 1862, became President of the British Association for the Advancement of Science 1882 and received a knighthood in 1883.

Scott, J. D., *The Siemens Brothers*. 1958.

**Sienkiewicz, Henryk** (1846–1916). Polish novelist. His early novels belong to the idealistic school but in 1883 he published *Fire and Sword* which, with *The Deluge* (1884) and *Pan Michael* (1887), pictured the troubled scene of the 17th century in Poland. With *Quo Vadis?* (1896), a story of Nero's persecution of Christians, he won an international reputation, later enhanced by *The Crusaders* (1900), which told of the Polish struggle against the Teutonic knights. He won the Nobel Prize for Literature (1905).

**Sieyès, Emmanuel Joseph, Comte** (1748–1836). French politician. Often known by his pre-Revolutionary title, Abbé Sieyès, his pamphlet, *Qu'est-ce que le tiers état?*, written on the eve of the revolution and indicating the role the 'third estate' might take in bringing about constitutional change, had great influence. In the early days he was a prominent adherent of \*Mirabeau in the National Assembly and helped to draw up the Constitution of 1791. Later, though he voted for the king's execution, he was cautiously inactive. 'I survived' was his answer when asked what part he had played in 'the Terror'. At first he refused to join the Directory but became a member when it was reformed under \*Barras' leadership (June 1799). But he saw the need for further change: 'We must have a head and a sword', he said. For 'the head' he did not have to look far, for the 'sword' he chose the popular General \*Bonaparte and joined with him in staging the revolution of 18 Brumaire (9 November 1799). Unfortunately, Bonaparte was not content to be 'sword' alone. He emerged as First Consul and Sieyès' constitution was doctored to ensure Bonaparte's primacy. Disappointed, Sieyès refused to be Second Consul and was compensated by a seat in the Senate and a large estate. He was an exile in Brussels after Napoléon's defeat, returning after the 1830 Revolution.

**Signac, Paul** (1863–1935). French painter. With \*Seurat and \*Pissarro he was a pioneer of 'pointillism', but with greater intensity, and a major theorist of Neo-Impressionism.

**Signorelli, Luca** (1441?–1523). Italian painter. A member of the Umbrian school, and a follower of \*Piero della Francesca, his apocalyptic frescoes in Orvieto Cathedral, including a powerful *Last Judgment*, anticipated (and probably influenced) \*Michelangelo.

McLellan, D., *Luca Signorelli's Last Judgment Cycle at Orvieto*. 1992.

**Sihanouk** *see* **Norodom Sihanouk**

**Sikorski, Wladyslaw** (1881–1943). Polish soldier and politician. In the Poland made independent by World War I he distinguished himself against the Russians (1920). He was Prime Minister (1922–23) and then Minister of War, but soon resigned after opposing the dictatorship of \*Pilsudski. After Poland was overrun at the beginning of World War II he became Prime Minister of the government in exile, at first in France and then in England, raising troops among the Polish miners in northern France and elsewhere. He was killed in an air crash.

**Sikorsky, Igor Ivanovich** (1889–1972). Russo-American aeronautical engineer, born in Kiev. He studied engineering at the St Petersburg Naval Academy, in Paris and in Kiev, built experimental helicopters (following an idea of \*Leonardo da Vinci) in 1909 and 1910 and on their failure turned to fixed wing aircraft. In 1913 he flew the first four-engine aircraft. The Bolshoi (Le Grand) and the 'Clippers' introduced by Pan American Airways in 1937 were a modification of his design. He lived in the US from 1919. Sikorsky's first successful single-rotor helicopter was flown in September 1939.

Sikorsky, I. I., *Recollections and Thoughts of a Pioneer*. 1964.

**Silhouette, Étienne de** (1709–1767). French administrator. As Minister of Finance (1759), he acquired such a reputation for parsimony that his name was given to likenesses obtained cheaply by tracing the shadow of a face in profile thrown by a lighted candle onto a sheet of paper and then blackening the enclosed space.

**Sillanpää, Frans Emil** (1888–1964). Finnish novelist. The Finnish Civil War of 1918 provided the background of *Mark Heritage* (1919), by which he first became known. *The Maid Silja* (1931, *Fallen Asleep While Young*) brought international acclaim. He won the Nobel Prize for Literature (1939).

**Silone, Ignazio** (Secondo Tranquilli) (1900–1978). Italian novelist. Communist and socialist by turns, he was imprisoned several times by \*Mussolini before escaping to live in Switzerland (until 1944). His best

known novel, *Fontamara* (1933), describes the effects of Fascism on an Italian village. Other works include *The School for Dictators* (1938), *The Secret of Lucca* (1958), and a play, *The Story of a Humble Christian* (1969).

**Simenon, Georges** (Joseph Christian) (1903–1989). Belgian novelist, born in Liège. He left school at 16, became a journalist and in 1922 went to Paris, where he wrote more than 400 short popular novels under 16 different pseudonyms. His best known character, Inspector Jules Maigret, featured in 75 novels and 28 short stories, written in 1930–35 and 1941–72 and there were more than 300 dramatisations for film or television. Maigret's popularity diverted attention away from Simenon's penetrating psychological novels (*romans dur*), including *The Man Who Watched the Trains Go* (1938) and *Teddy Bear* (1960). André \*Gide wrote to Simenon: 'You are living on a false reputation—just like Baudelaire or Chopin ... You are much more important than is commonly supposed.' Suspected of collaboration, he left France for Canada, lived in the US 1945–55, then in Switzerland. Simenon published more than 200 novels in his own name and autobiographical studies, *When I was Old* (1972) and *Intimate Memoirs* (1981). He received seven nominations for the Nobel Prize (1958, 1961, 1963). Simenon claimed to have had sex with 10,000 women but his second wife accused him of gross exaggeration: the correct figure was about 1,200.

Marnham, P., *The man who wasn't Maigret*. 1992; Bresler, F., *The Mystery of Georges Simenon*. 1989; Assouline, P., *Simenon: A Biography*. 1992.

**Simeon II** (Simeon Borisov Saxecoburggotski) (1937– ). Tsar of Bulgaria 1943–46. Son of \*Boris III, he was subject to a regency until deposed by \*Dimitrov's Communist Government. He went into exile in Spain, married an heiress and succeeded in business. He returned to Bulgaria, formed the National Movement which won the Parliamentary elections and became Prime Minister 2001–05.

**Simeon Stylites, St** (c.390–459). Christian ascetic, born in Cilicia. He is said to have spent about 30 years in preaching and contemplation on the top of a tall pillar (Greek stylos, hence his name), near Antioch. This feat, which attracted many imitators, is the subject of a poem by \*Tennyson.

**Simić, Charles** (originally Dušan) (1938– ). Serbian-American poet and essayist, born in Belgrade. His family migrated to the US in 1954. He was educated in New York, then taught in New Hampshire. He won the 1990 Pulitzer Prize for Poetry for the collection *The World Doesn't End*, was extremely prolific as poet and essayist, wrote the memoir *A Fly in the Soup* (2000) and became Poet Laureate of the US 2007–08. His urgent, immediate, economic style is reminiscent of Emily \*Dickinson.

**Simnel, Lambert** (c.1475–c.1525). English pretender. Of humble birth, he was carefully coached by a priest, Roger Simon, to play the part of the Earl of Warwick, son of the Duke of Clarence and nephew of \*Edward IV. He was 'recognised' by Warwick's aunt, the Duchess of Burgundy, was taken to Ireland (1486) and crowned in Dublin as Edward VI (1487). With a small Yorkist following and a few mercenaries sent from Burgundy, he then crossed to England, but was defeated and captured near Stoke-on-Trent. As a sign of contempt \*Henry VII employed him in the royal kitchen.

**Simon, St** (Shimon in Aramaic, known as 'the Less', 'the Canaanite' or 'the Zealot') (fl. 1st century CE). Christian apostle. One of the 12, his name is often linked with St \*Jude and he is said to have been martyred in Persia.

**Simon, Herbert Alexander** (1916–2001). American social scientist. He held chairs at the Carnegie-Mellon University, Pittsburgh, from 1949 and was professor of computer science and psychology 1965–81. He worked on the 'behavioural' theory of how firms work and on computer modelling. His books include *The Sciences of the Artificial* (1969) and *Human Problem Solving* (with Alan Newell, 1972). He won the 1978 Nobel Prize for Economics.

**Simon, John Allsebrook Simon, 1st Viscount** (1873–1954). English lawyer and politician, born in Manchester. Son of a Congregational minister, he was elected to a fellowship at All Souls College, Oxford, and was called to the bar in 1899. He had a brilliant legal career (KC in 1908) and having entered parliament as a Liberal (1906) was Solicitor-General 1910–13, Attorney-General 1913–15, and then Home Secretary. He resigned (1916) in opposition to conscription in World War I and after brief military service returned to the bar, where for a time his income was £50,000 a year. His declaration that the May 1926 General Strike was illegal contributed to his collapse. He chaired a statutory commission on Indian constitutional reforms 1927–30. In 1931 he adhered to the coalition as Leader of the National Liberals, and was Foreign Secretary 1931–35, Chancellor of the Exchequer 1937–40 and Lord Chancellor 1940–45. He was a distinguished lawyer but, despite the force and clarity of his intellect, lacked the human qualities that would have made him a great politician.

Simon, J. A., *Retrospect*. 1952.

**Simon, (Marvin) Neil** (1927–2018). American playwright. Simon's plays were skilfully crafted and subtly written, numerous and phenomenally successful in their middlebrow appeal on television, stage and film. They include *The Odd Couple* (1965), *Sweet Charity* (musical, 1966), *Plaza Suite* (1968), *California Suite* (1976) and *Biloxi Blue* (1984).

**Simon, Paul** (1942– ) and **Art(hur) Garfunkel** (1941– ). American songwriters and singers. Simon and Garfunkel achieved great success as a singing duo 1964–71, performing their own spare, elegant, evocative works including *The Sounds of Silence*; *Parsley, Sage, Rosemary and Thyme*; *Bridge over Troubled Water*; *Scarborough Fair* and *Mrs Robinson*. Simon, educated at Brooklyn Law School, won many awards as a composer and toured extensively after 1972. Garfunkel, educated at Columbia University, was a lyricist and actor who appeared in several films e.g. *Catch 22* and *Carnal Knowledge*.

**Simons, Menno** (1492–1559). Dutch religious leader. After the suppression of the Anabaptists he organised the less fanatical remnants into a religious group known as Mennonites. More concerned with a Christian life than dogma, among their tenets are adult baptism and refusal to bear arms, to take oaths or to serve in public office. They were persecuted from the 1530s, many settled in West Prussia and from 1683 in Pennsylvania. \*Catherine the Great invited them to set up colonies in the Ukraine in 1770 but a century later many Russian Mennonites migrated to Canada and the US.

Dyck, C. J., *A Legacy of Faith: The Heritage of Menno Simons*. 1962.

**Simpson, Sir James Young, 1st Baronet** (1811–1870). Scottish physician. Professor of medicine and midwifery at Edinburgh University 1839–70, he introduced the use of anaesthetics in childbirth (1847), using ether at first. He discovered (1847), the anaesthetic properties of chloroform previously used only as an antiseptic. The original antagonism to its use was overcome when it was given to Queen \*Victoria for the birth of Prince Leopold. In 1866 he was made a baronet. He anticipated the discovery of Röntgen (or X-) rays.

**Simpson, O(renthal) J(ames)** (1947– ). American footballer, broadcaster and actor, born in San Francisco. He was an outstanding running back, first in college, then professional football, breaking records and winning many awards. He achieved legendary status, made many television advertisements, acted in films and became a sports broadcaster. He distanced himself from controversies about race and Vietnam. In June 1994 his former wife, Nicole Brown, and her friend Ron Goldman, were stabbed to death. Simpson was charged with murder. His televised trial (and acquittal, in October 1995) became a media sensation and also revealed sharp racial divisions about attitudes to crime and the law. After a civil trial, Simpson was ordered to pay \$US33.5 million in damages to the family of the murder victims (Feb. 1997).

In 2008 he was convicted, in Nevada, of armed robbery and kidnapping and sentenced to 33 years in jail. He was released on parole in 2017.

**Sinan** (Koca Mi'mâr Sinân Âğâ, known as 'Sinan the Architect') (c.1491–1588). Turkish architect, born in Cappadocia. Of Christian parentage, he became a military engineer in the Janissaries, then chief architect for the sultanate, constructing 130 mosques, 34 palaces and many other public buildings. The mosques of Sultan \*Süleyman I in Istanbul and Sultan Selim at Edirne and the Sokolovic bridge (1577) in Bosnia are considered to be his masterpieces. 196 of his works survive.

**Sinatra, Frank** (Francis Albert) (1915–1998). American singer and film actor, born in Hoboken, New Jersey. He began his career as a crooner with the Harry James and Tommy Dorsey bands in the 1930s, and made his first film in 1941. The most popular and successful of his early films were *Anchors Aweigh* (1945) and *On The Town* (1949). As an actor, the best of his 40 films were *From Here to Eternity* (1953, winning him an Oscar), *The Man with the Golden Arm* (1955) and *The Manchurian Candidate* (1962). He also gained an international audience as a cabaret singer. His style changed from the romantic to the abrasive c.1960, but he remained extremely popular, and a figure of legendary influence in politics and business.

Kaplan, J., *Frank. The Voice*. 2010.

**Sinclair, Archibald Henry Macdonald, 1st Viscount Thurso** (1890–1970). British Liberal politician. He served in World War I, becoming very close to \*Churchill. An MP 1922–45, he was Secretary of State for Scotland 1931–32, Leader of the Liberals 1935–45 and Secretary of State for Air 1940–45 in the wartime coalition.

**Sinclair, Ian McCahon** (1929– ). Australian National politician. A lawyer and grazier, he was a Commonwealth MP 1963–98, Minister 1965–72, 1975–79, 1980–83, Leader of the National Party 1984–89, Chairman of the Constitutional Convention on the Republic 1998 and Speaker of the House of Representatives 1998.

**Sinclair, Sir Keith** (1922–1993). New Zealand historian. Professor of history at Auckland University 1963–87, his books include *The Origins of the Maori Wars* (1957), *A History of New Zealand* (1959) and *A Destiny Apart* (1986).

**Sinclair, Upton** (Beall) (1878–1968). American novelist and socialist. He wrote over 70 novels, most dealing with social evils. They include *The Jungle* (1906), an exposure of conditions in Chicago stockyards, *The Moneychangers* (1908), *King Coal* (1917) and *Oil* (1927). With *World's End* (1940) he began a series of 11 novels about his hero Lanny Budd. It provides, in the form of fiction, a socialist view of contemporary history. He founded End Poverty in California (EPIC), ran as Democratic candidate for governor (1934) and was narrowly defeated.

Sinclair, U. B., *The Autobiography of Upton Sinclair*. 1962.

**Singer, Isaac Bashevis** (1904–1991). American novelist and journalist, born in Poland. He emigrated to America in 1935 and joined the staff of the *Jewish Daily Forward*. Writing entirely in Yiddish, his novels and short stories include *The Slave* (1962), *The Manor* (1967) and *The Estate* (1969). He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1978.

**Singer, Isaac Merrit** (1811–1875). American inventor. He patented (1851) a practical sewing machine. Although he lost a suit for infringement brought by Elias Howe, his company was already well established, soon took the lead in manufacturing sewing machines and became the first multinational corporation. He lived in France from 1861.

**Singer, Peter Albert David** (1946– ). Australian philosopher. Educated at Melbourne and Oxford universities, he was a professor of philosophy at Monash University 1977–79, and gained international recognition for his works on bioethics. His *Animal Liberation* (1975) raised novel ethical issues about exploitation and infliction of pain on animals. He held a chair in bioethics at Princeton 1999– but also taught at Melbourne University, and was a prolific writer and fearless controversialist.

**Singh, Manmohan** (1932– ). Indian economist and politician, born in the Punjab. A Sikh, he was educated at Oxford and Cambridge, and became a bureaucrat, academic and UN official. As Minister for Finance 1991–96 he changed economic direction, moving away from the interventionist model (sometimes called the 'Licence Raj' system) introduced by Jawaharlal \*Nehru. Regarded as a technocrat, he unexpectedly became Prime Minister 2004–14, with the support of Sonia \*Gandhi. India's growth rate reached 9 per cent in 2007, but inflation was high and adopting further market-based reforms proved unpopular.

**Sinopoli, Giuseppe** (1946–2001), Italian conductor, composer, physician and anthropologist, born in Venice. With a medical degree from Padua, he turned to composition and wrote the opera *Lou Salomé* (1981). Chief conductor of the Philharmonia Orchestra, London 1984–94 and the Staatskapelle Dresden 1992–2001, he died in Berlin, after a heart attack, while conducting *Aida*.

**Sisi, Abdel Saeed Hussein Khalil Fattah el-** (1954– ). Egyptian soldier and politician, born in Cairo. Commissioned in 1977, he undertook training in the UK and US, and was Minister of Defence and Commander-in-Chief 2012–14, reaching the rank of field marshal. He directed the coup that overthrew President Mohamed \*Morsi in 2013, suppressed the Muslim Brotherhood and was elected President of Egypt 2014– .

**Sisley, Alfred** (1839–1899). French painter, born in Paris. Of English parentage, he became a landscape painter, influenced by \*Corot, a friend of \*Monet, and a major figure among the Impressionists, although his colour range was rather subdued. The quality of his work was only recognised posthumously and he died poor.

**Sitting Bull** (Thathanka Iyotake = 'Jumping Badger') (1834–1890). American Sioux leader, born in Dakota territory. He led the Hunkpapa Lakota tribes of the Sioux people and, with the Cheyenne, defeated George \*Custer's cavalry in the Battle of Little Bighorn (1876). He escaped to Canada, returning to appear in William F. \*Cody's Wild West show (1885). With eight others he was murdered by Native American police.

**Sitwell, Dame Edith Louisa** (1887–1964). **Sir Osbert, 5th Baronet** (1892–1969) and **Sir Sacheverell, 6th Baronet** (1897–1988). English writers. Children of the eccentric **Sir George Revesby Sitwell, 4th Baronet** (1860–1943), it is probable that this formidable (though essentially kindly) personality was unconsciously instrumental in transforming his children into a closely knit literary clan. Their actual work was, however, highly individual. Edith Sitwell, by using startling or grotesque images, odd epithets (e.g. 'periwigged green leaves') and many other arresting techniques, e.g. the adaptation of poetry to dance rhythms, escaped from the conventional constraints of the poetry of her time. A miscellany called *Wheels* (1916–21), funded by her brothers, friends and herself, helped to make her work more widely known. Her best known collection was *Facade* (1923), declaimed with great success to chamber accompaniment by William \*Walton. Her *Collected Poems* were issued in 1930. Among her prose works are a perceptive biography of \*Pope (1930), *The English Eccentrics* (1933), and *The Queens and the Hive* (1962), in which are interwoven the stories of \*Elizabeth I and \*Mary Queen of Scots.

Osbert Sitwell's elegantly satirical verse and prose had a limited appeal before he reached a much wider public with his diverting and idiosyncratic autobiographical works, beginning with *Left Hand, Right Hand* (1945) and later including *The Secret Tree* (1946) and *Laughter in the Next Room* (1949).

Sacheverell Sitwell's books were confined to the arts, especially of southern Europe. They revealed a fastidious taste, an alert eye for landscape and a curiosity about the unknown. He wrote on *Mozart* (1932) and *Liszt* (1935), but more characteristic are *Southern Baroque Art* (1931), *British Architects and Craftsmen* (1945) and *Gothic Europe* (1969). He also published numerous small volumes of poetry.

Pearson, J., *Facades*. 1978.

**Sixtus IV** (Francesco della Rovere) (1414–1484). Pope 1471–84. Born in Liguria, he became a Franciscan, head of the order, and a notable preacher

and theologian. Once elected as Pope, he abandoned Franciscan austerity, expanded the power of the Papal state and stacked the college of cardinals with members of powerful families, including six of his nephews, one of whom became Pope \*Julius II. He approved the establishment of the Spanish Inquisition, condoned slavery in South America, annulled the decrees of the Council of Constance, called for a crusade against the Turks, became involved in a murderous plot against the Medici in Florence and encouraged the sale of indulgences. However, he was a notable patron of art and architecture, created the Sistine Chapel (named for him) and the Vatican archives, built bridges, widened roads and restored old churches.

**Sixtus V** (Felice Peretti) (1521–1590). Pope 1585–90. During his short term of office he proved himself one of the most effective of the counter-Reformation popes. He suppressed banditry in the papal states, disciplined the factious Roman nobility, and finished the dome of St Peter's. He reformed the ecclesiastical administration by raising the number of cardinals in council to 15, each with a separate sphere of responsibility. He hastened the revision of the Vulgate. In foreign affairs, he prompted the Armada against England, but supported the compromise by which \*Henri IV became King of France.

**Sjón** (pseudonym of **Sigurjón Birgir Sigurðsson**) (1962– ). Icelandic poet, novelist, playwright and lyricist, born in Reykjavik. His pen name (meaning 'sight') is an abbreviation of his given name (Sigurjón). Sjón frequently collaborated with the singer Björk and performed with The Sugarcubes as 'Johnny Triumph'. His works have been translated into more than 25 languages.

**Skallagrímsson, Egill** (c.910–990). Viking-Icelandic poet and warrior. *Egill's Saga* (c.1230) recounts his varied, often violent, exploits.

**Skanderbeg** (Skënderbej or Iskender Bey: Gjergj Kastrioti) (c.1403–1468). Albanian national hero. He rose high in Turkish service, but when an attempt was made to conquer Albania he renounced Islam and in 1443 led a national rising of the Albanian and Montenegrin chiefs. With some support from Venice, Naples and the Pope, he preserved Albanian independence for over 20 years. But as the years passed his followers dwindled and support from outside failed. His cause died with him.

**Skelton, John** (c.1460–1529). English poet, born probably in Norfolk. He became tutor to Prince Henry (\*Henry VIII), was ordained (1498) and spent most of his time in London, where he became notorious for his wild life, buffoonery and practical jokes. Eventually, having offended \*Wolsey by his satires on the clergy, e.g. *Colyn Cloute* (1522), he took sanctuary in Westminster Abbey where he remained till his death. One of his best known works, *The Tunnyng of Elynour Rummyng*, describes a drunken



woman's revels. His metrical lines (*Skeltonics*) have been described as 'voluble, breathless doggerel', but deserve a higher reputation. His one surviving morality play, *Magnyfycence*, was possibly written as a guide to good government for the young Henry.

**Skinner, Burrhus F(rederic)** (1904–1990). American experimental psychologist. He taught at Harvard from 1931 and was professor of psychology 1947–75. Skinner became the major proponent of 'behaviourism', an extension of the work of \*Pavlov and J. B. \*Watson, which asserts that behaviour should only be examined empirically and objectively as a series of reactions to stimuli. Skinner's teachings aroused much controversy because they assumed a mechanistic view of human experience, with no recognition of 'inner states'. He wrote *Science and Human Behaviour* (1953), *Walden Two* (1948) and *Beyond Freedom and Dignity* (1971).

**Skryabin, Aleksandr Nikolayevich** *see* **Scriabin, A. N.**

**Slade, Felix** (1790–1868). English antiquary and collector. He left £350,000 to found art professorships at Oxford, Cambridge and London universities. The Slade School of Art, London, is named after him.

**Slim, William Joseph Slim, 1st Viscount** (1891–1970). English soldier, born in Bristol. Commissioned in 1914, he served in Gallipoli (1915) and India (1917–20, 1926–34, 1939–40). In World War II he commanded an Indian division in the Middle East and the 15th Corps in Burma before being appointed to command the 14th Army 1943–45. In this capacity he was responsible for halting the Japanese offensive in Burma and for directing the great campaign by which Mandalay, Rangoon and the rest of the country were eventually liberated. He retired from the army in 1948 but \*Attlee brought him back as Chief of the Imperial General Staff 1949–52, becoming a field marshal in 1949 and Governor-General of Australia 1953–60. He was created KG (1959) and a viscount (1960). His *Defeat into Victory* (1956) was one of the best books of World War II.

Slim, W. J., *Unofficial History*. 1959.

**Sloan, Alfred P(ritchard), Jr** (1875–1966). American industrialist. Educated at MIT, he ran a ball bearing company 1901–16, then joined General Motors (founded in 1908 by William C. \*Durant), becoming its president 1923–37 and chairman 1937–56, at a time when its sales overtook the \*Ford Motor Co. He worked with the engineer C. F. \*Kettering to improve car design and founded the Sloan-Kettering Institute for cancer research in New York (1945).

**Sloane, Sir Hans, 1st Baronet** (1660–1753). British physician. After studying medicine in France he made a journey to the West Indies from which he brought back (1689) some 800 species of plants. He then settled in practice in Bloomsbury, London.

His undiminished interest in natural history was, however, shown by his book *A Voyage to the Islands of Madeira* (1707 and 1725). When the colony of Georgia was founded (1732–33) as a refuge for debtors, Sloane was one of the promoters. The great collection of books, manuscripts and curiosities that he handed over to the nation (1749) became the nucleus of the British Museum. He was made a baronet in 1716.

**Slovo, Joe** (1926–1995). South African politician, born in Lithuania. Trained as a lawyer, he became leader of the South African Communist Party, was tried for treason and exiled for 27 years. His wife, **Ruth First** (1925–1982), biographer of Olive \*Schreiner, was killed by a letter bomb. Originally a Stalinist, he became a supporter of \*Gorbachev and liberal economic reforms. In \*Mandela's Government of National Unity he was Minister for Housing 1994–95.

**Smart, Christopher** (1722–1771). English poet. Though a scholar of distinction, he was forced to leave Cambridge owing to debts, and his whole life was dogged by poverty. Most of his early work was trivial but, after a serious illness followed by attacks of insanity, he turned to religion and, besides a poetical version of the Psalms, wrote his tender, imaginative masterpiece *A Song to David*. In similar vein is his *Rejoice in the Lamb*. He died in a debtors' prison.

**Smart, (Frank) Jeffrey** (Edson) (1921–2013). Australian painter, born in Adelaide. He worked in Adelaide, and Sydney from 1951, moving to Italy in 1963. His hyper-realistic paintings make familiar scenes of modern life—streetscapes, road signs, building sites, scaffolding, container trains, decaying walls—seem dreamlike or unnerving, e.g. *Container Train in the Landscape* (1983–84).

**Smeaton, John** (1724–1792). English engineer, born in Leeds. Son of a lawyer, he was intended to enter his father's firm, but from boyhood showed the keenest interest in mechanics and engineering. He was elected FRS in 1753 and won fame when he rebuilt the Eddystone Lighthouse (1756–59) to a new and successful design. He also rediscovered the lost Roman formula for making cement. For his work on the mechanical laws governing the construction of wind and watermills he received the Royal Society's Copley Medal (1759).

**Smetena, Bedrich** (1824–1884). Czech composer, born in Litomysl. Founder of the Bohemian Nationalist school, his father was the manager of a country brewery. He studied music in Prague and taught music in a nobleman's family and then in a school of his own. In 1856 he went to Sweden as a conductor to the Philharmonic Society of Göthenburg and in the next few years he wrote some symphonic poems (e.g. *Wallenstein's Camp*) on non-Czech subjects. Back in Prague in 1861, he eventually

became the chief conductor of the Provisional Theatre, where the Austrians allowed plays and operas to be given in Czech. Of his eight patriotic operas, *The Bartered Bride* (produced 1870), a gay peasant comedy, is the most popular. Apart from the operas his best known works are *Ma Vlast (My Country)*, a cycle of six symphonic poems (1874–79), and two string quartets (1876 and 1882). From 1874 he struggled against the handicaps of deafness and mental illness by which he was finally incapacitated. \*Dvorák, \*Suk and others maintained the nationalist tradition of Czech music he created.

Clapham, J., *Smetana*. 1972.

**Smiles, Samuel** (1812–1904). Scottish writer. After studying medicine at Edinburgh, and working as a surgeon in Leeds, an editor and a secretary to railway companies, he achieved enormous success with his *Self-Help* (1857), translated into 17 languages, a collection of lives of great or successful men held up as models to Victorian schoolchildren. This was followed by, e.g. *Thrift* (1875) and *Duty* (1880). He also wrote several biographies, e.g. *George Stephenson* (1857).

**Smith, Adam** (1723–1790). Scottish economist, born at Kirkcaldy, Fife. Posthumous child of a comptroller of customs, he studied at Oxford University for seven years before returning to Scotland where he was one of the brilliant intellectual circle of which David \*Hume became the best known member. As professor of moral philosophy at Glasgow 1752–64 he gained fame as a lecturer and wrote *Theory of Moral Sentiments* (1759). He travelled in France (1764–66) as tutor to the young Earl of Buccleuch and in Paris met \*Turgot and \*Necker and discussed their economic ideas. In 1776 he settled in London where he joined Samuel \*Johnson's literary circle. In the same year he published his *Inquiry into the Nature and Causes of the Wealth of Nations*, the original source of most future writing on political economy. He was opposed to the monopolistic mercantilism (e.g. Navigation Acts, trading monopolies such as the East India Company etc.) that had dominated previous economic thinking, but neither was he an uncritical advocate of laissez-faire. He believed, with Hume, that enlightened self interest ('the invisible hand') would promote public welfare, but insisted in all his works on the maintenance of the link between individual freedom and such moral obligations as kindness, sympathy and justice. Individual freedom releases the energy that produces wealth, but the wealth can only grow by the consumption of goods, not by being hoarded as gold. He also saw that unfettered individual enterprise must be combined with the division of labour (i.e. specialisation) to maximise efficiency. Specialisation entails the need for markets, which in turn need a common purchasing medium, a conclusion leading to considering methods of determining money values. Thus, one by one, he considered the many interlocking factors of political economy. There was a revival of interest in Smith's ideas with the rise of economic

rationalism in the 1980s. Smith has been considered the founder of the study of political economy as a separate discipline.

Rae, J., *Life of Adam Smith*. Repr. 1965; Ross, I. S., *Life of Adam Smith*. 1995.

**Smith, Al** (fred Emanuel) (1873–1944). American Democratic politician, born in New York City. After acute poverty in childhood, he rose rapidly in the New York Democratic machine, serving four terms as State Governor 1918–20 and 1922–28. In 1928 he was the Democratic presidential candidate, the first Catholic nominee of a major party, but lost heavily to \*Hoover. He was a 'wringing wet' opponent of prohibition, and campaigned against child labour and for state parks. In 1932 he contested the presidential nomination against Franklin D. \*Roosevelt, failed and was a bitter loser.

**Smith, David** (Roland) (1906–1965). American sculptor, born in Indiana. He worked as a rivetter for Studebaker, then built locomotives and tanks. He became a pioneer of welded and assembled metal sculptures, making use of industrial forms, later moving into Cubism. He was killed in a motor accident (Anthony \*Caro).

**Smith, George** (1824–1901). English publisher. A founder of Smith & Elder (1846), he appointed \*Thackeray as editor of his new *Cornhill* magazine (1860) and also started the *Pall Mall Gazette* (1880). Among the famous writers whose works he published were George \*Eliot, the \*Brownings, Mrs \*Gaskell and Anthony \*Trollope. The original edition of the *Dictionary of National Biography* (1885–1900) was his biggest publishing achievement.

**Smith, George** (1840–1876). English Assyriologist. Trained as a bank note engraver, he worked for the British Museum and deciphered cuneiform tablets that \*Layard found in Ninevah. In 1872–73 he discovered and translated *The Epic of Gilgamesh*, an Akkadian creation legend.

**Smith, Ian Douglas** (1919–2007). Zimbabwean (Rhodesian) politician, born in Rhodesia. A RAF pilot 1941–46, he was elected to the Southern Rhodesian Parliament in 1948, became a founder of the Rhodesian Front (1961), devoted to maintaining rule by the white minority. Prime Minister 1964–79, he broke off negotiations with Britain over moving to a multiracial system and adopted a unilateral Declaration of Independence (UDI, Nov. 1965), which remained in force until 1979 when a negotiated settlement was reached. He served in the Zimbabwean Parliament 1980–88 under Robert \*Mugabe's regime.

**Smith, John** (1580–1631). English adventurer. He had already had an extraordinary career as a soldier of fortune mainly in service against the Turks during which he escaped from slavery and as a Mediterranean pirate when (1605) he joined the expedition to

colonise Virginia. Captured by Indians, he was saved, it was said, by the young Princess \*Pocahontas, whom he subsequently married. He wrote books about the colony as well as a highly coloured autobiography.

**Smith, John** (1938–1994). British Labour politician, born in Scotland. Educated at Glasgow University, he became a barrister in 1967 and a QC. He was an MP 1970–94, a junior minister from 1976 and Secretary of State for Trade 1978–79. In Opposition he served as Treasury Spokesman 1987–92, then succeeded Neil \*Kinnock as Leader of the Labour Party 1992–94. He died of a heart attack and was buried in Iona.

**Smith, Joseph** (1805–1844). American religious teacher, born in Vermont. Founder of the Mormons, he was the son of a farmer and from boyhood claimed to have had visionary experiences. In 1830 he published the *Book of Mormon*, the original of which, inscribed on gold plates, was said to have come into his hands (with instructions for translation, using two magic stones called Urim and Thummim) as the result of an angelic visitation from the angel Moroni. The book purported to be supplementary to the Bible and to contain divine revelations to Mormon, a prophet of the era, concerning the history of a second ‘chosen people’ who came from Jerusalem and inhabited America before the Indians. The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints was founded in 1830 and attracted many converts as well as much ridicule and persecution, which forced the ‘saints’ to move several times before they found a permanent home. In 1843 Smith split the community, then settled in Illinois, by announcing a divine message favouring polygamy. More persecution followed. In 1844 he announced his intention to stand for the presidency. Smith and his brother Hyrum were arrested on charges of conspiracy and were murdered by a mob that broke into the jail at Carthage, Illinois.

**Smith, Dame Maggie** (Margaret Natalie) (1934–). English actor, born in Essex. She made her stage debut in 1952, winning critical acclaim with \*Shakespeare, \*Ibsen, \*Wilde, \*Chekhov, \*Coward and Alan \*Bennett. She appeared in more than 60 films and won Academy Awards for *The Prime of Miss Jean Brodie* (1969) and *California Suite* (1978). She starred in *Gosford Park* (2001), *Quartet* (2012) and some Harry Potter films and was the Dowager Countess of Grantham in the television series *Downton Abbey*. She received a CH in 2014.

**Smith, Sir Matthew** (1879–1959). English painter, born at Halifax, Yorkshire. He studied art in Manchester, London and eventually Paris, where he joined the school of \*Matisse. His life thereafter was spent between France and England. His scale is large, his composition simplified and bold, and both are admirably suited to the luxuriance and translucence of his colours: for subjects he turned to flowers, fruits and nudes. He was knighted in 1954.

**Smith, Sir Ross** (1892–1922) and **Sir Keith** (1890–1955). Australian aviators, born in Adelaide. After service in World War I, the brothers won (1919) the Australian Government’s £10,000 prize for the first Australian-manned aircraft to fly from England to Australia within 30 days. Ross Smith was killed in an air crash.

**Smith, Stevie** (Florence Margaret Smith) (1902–1971). British poet, born in Hull, Yorkshire. She published several collections of verse, three novels and two critical editions: one of T. S. \*Eliot’s verse, one of children’s poetry. She won the Queen’s Gold Medal for Poetry (1969). There is a great sense of humour, even comedy, in her work, at the same time as a sense of isolation and blankness, and a preoccupation with death. Her *Collected Poems* appeared in 1975.

Dick, K., *Ivy Compton Burnett and Stevie Smith*. 1971.

**Smith, Sydney** (1771–1845). English clergyman, journalist and wit, born in Essex. Educated at Winchester and Oxford, he became a tutor in Edinburgh and co-founder with Francis \*Jeffrey and Henry \*Brougham of the *Edinburgh Review* (1802). He returned to London in 1803 and wrote vigorously against slavery, transportation, prison conditions and the game laws, and for Catholic emancipation and the Reform Bill. He lectured in moral philosophy at the Royal Institution, held several rural livings and was canon of St Paul’s 1831–45. His wit shone at Lady Holland’s Whig soirées and anticipates \*Gilbert and \*Wilde; but he was wise too, viz: his advice against melancholy. Some of his expressions are still part of the language: ‘out of the ark’, ‘a square peg in a round hole’. He called Daniel \*Webster ‘a steam engine in trousers’ and \*Macaulay ‘a book in breeches’.

**Smith, William** (1769–1839). British cartographer. Known as ‘Strata’ Smith, his achievement was to determine the succession of English strata from the coal measures up to the chalk in greater detail than previously and to establish their fossil specimens. His greatest work lay in mapping. Smith rightly saw the map as the perfect medium for presenting stratigraphical knowledge. In developing a form of map that showed outcrops in block, he set the essential pattern for geological mapping throughout the 19th century.

Cox, L. R., *William Smith and the Birth of Stratigraphy*. 1948; Winchester, S., *The Map that Changed the World*. 2001.

**Smith, W(illiam) Eugene** (1918–1978). American photojournalist. A war correspondent for *Life* magazine, who made outstanding photo-essays, marked by psychological insight, including *Pittsburgh* (1956ff), *Japan* (1963) and *Minamata* (1975).

**Smith, W(illiam) H(enry)** (1792–1865). English newsagent. He built up a small firm inherited from his parents by creating a speedy country delivery service,

using fast carts, coaches and eventually railways. His son, also **W(illiam) H(enry) Smith** (1825–1891), secured contracts for most of the railway book stalls, became a Conservative MP 1868–91 and was First Lord of the Admiralty 1877–80 and First Lord of the Treasury 1886–91. His widow was created Viscountess Hambledon.

**Smithson, James Macie** (1765–1829). English chemist, born in Paris. Natural son of the 1st Duke of Northumberland, he studied chemistry and mineralogy. In 1826 the Royal Society rejected a paper he had written and in revenge he left the reversion of £105,000 to found an institution in Washington 'for the increase and diffusion of knowledge among men'. This was the basis of the great Smithsonian Institution.

**Smollett, Tobias George** (1721–1771). British novelist, born in Dumbartonshire. He trained for medicine in Glasgow, went to London in 1739 and in 1740 sailed with the fleet to the West Indies as surgeon's mate. It was not until *The Adventures of Roderick Random* was published (1748) that he achieved literary success. *The Adventures of Peregrine Pickle* (1751) followed, and thus encouraged, Smollett started an intensive publishing career in Chelsea. Of the many works produced there by himself and his collaborators, the best was *The Expedition of Humphry Clinker* (1771). His last years were mainly occupied by travels in search of health, injured by hard work and the worries due to the ease with which he gave and took offence. He died near Leghorn (Livorno). In construction and characterisation his picaresque novels do not equal those of \*Fielding, but he had a great gift for narrative and a very observant eye.

Knapp, L. M., *Tobias Smollett: Doctor of Men and Manners*. 1949.

**Smuts, Jan Christiaan** (1870–1950). South African soldier and politician, born in Cape Colony. After attending Victoria College, Stellenbosch, he completed his education at Christ's College, Cambridge, where he won high honours in law. Admitted to the bar in Cape Colony (1895), he entered politics but turned against \*Rhodes after the Jameson Raid. Leaving the Cape for the Transvaal he became President \*Kruger's Attorney-General. In the latter stages of the Boer War he proved himself one of the most successful guerrilla leaders, penetrating deep into Cape Colony with his raids. He played a leading part at the Peace Conference of Vereeniging (1902). In the following years he became a close political associate of \*Botha and together they built up the South African Party. When the Union of South Africa was formed (1910), Botha became Prime Minister. Smuts served as Minister of Defence 1910–24 and Finance 1912–13 and 1915–19. Like Botha, he supported Britain strongly in World War I, and as GOC of British forces in East Africa 1916–17 he fought against \*Lettow-Vorbeck. He joined \*Lloyd

George's war Cabinet in London as Minister without Portfolio (1917–18), responsible for organising the RAF and, at the Paris Peace Conference (1919), he was a major architect of the League of Nations. On Botha's death, Smuts succeeded as Prime Minister 1919–24. Defeated by \*Hertzog, he became Deputy Prime Minister and Justice Minister in a coalition 1933–39. He became Prime Minister again 1939–48 on the outbreak of World War II, when parliament overturned Hertzog's neutrality policy. Trusted by \*Churchill, he served in his War Cabinet and was promoted to field marshal in 1941. His most enduring achievements were probably in international affairs, planning the United Nations and writing the preamble to its charter. He was the only person to sign the charters of both the League of Nations and the United Nations.

In South Africa, he attempted to weld together Europeans of British and Afrikaner (Dutch) descent, but saw no practical alternative to segregation, although he softened its impact by providing (limited) welfare and easing travel restrictions for Africans. An admirer of Mahatma \*Gandhi and a strong sympathiser with Zionism, he was criticised as hypocritical for insisting that South Africa's racial policies were purely domestic matters. His minor concessions on race were anathema to many white voters and after 1945 he steadily lost ground to the Nationalists in rural areas and narrowly lost the 1948 election, despite his United Party winning 49 per cent of the vote. Dr Daniel \*Malan became Prime Minister and introduced strict apartheid. Smuts' subtle and agile intelligence sometimes led outwitted opponents to charge him with duplicity. (He was known as 'Slim Jannie'.)

Awarded the CH (1917) and OM (1947), he was Chancellor of Cambridge University 1948–50, published several books on holistic philosophy and was an amateur botanist.

Hancock, W. K., *Smuts*. 2 vols, 1962, 1968.

**Smyth, Dame Ethel Mary** (1858–1944). British composer and feminist. She studied in Leipzig, and her early operas, the best known of which is *The Wreckers* (1906), were produced in Germany. A comic opera, *The Boatswain's Mate* (1916), was founded on a short story by W. W. Jacobs. She also wrote much chamber music and a Mass in D. She was imprisoned (1911) for her activities as a suffragette, and composed a marching song for the movement.

**Snellius, Willebrord** (or **Willebrord Snel van Roijen**) (1591–1626). Dutch mathematical physicist. He succeeded his father as professor of mathematics at Leyden 1613–26 and is best known for the general law (1621), named after him, governing the refraction of light when it passes into a medium of different density. This law which had eluded \*Kepler, was published in a slightly improved form (1637) by \*Descartes, without acknowledgement. The lunar crater Snellius is named for him.

**Snorri Sturluson** (1179–1241). Icelandic historian and mythologist. He was a chieftain, active in politics as a member of the Althing. One of the most versatile medieval historians, he wrote *Heimskringla*, a great history of the Norwegian kings, showing critical abilities and much insight into character. His *Younger Edda* surveyed Norse mythology and traditions, with the aim of giving help and guidance to poets in search of a theme. He was killed during a violent civil war, followed by Norwegian control of Iceland. His nephew, **Sturla Thordson**, was author of the *Sturlunga Saga*.

**Snow, C(harles) P(ercy), Baron Snow** (1905–1980). English novelist and physicist. Educated at Leicester, London and Christ's College, Cambridge, as a scientist and a civil servant he was much concerned with the cleavage between humane and scientific traditions of culture and wrote *The Two Cultures and the Scientific Revolution* (1959). His novels, e.g. *The Masters* (1951), *The Affair* (1959) and *Corridors of Power* (1964), explore the manipulations by which decisions are achieved in a university and in government. The critic F. R. \*Leavis detested him. He was a member of the Labour Government (October 1964) as Parliamentary Secretary to the new minister of technology, and resigned in March 1966. He married the novelist **Pamela Hansford Johnson** (1912–1981), author of *The Unspeakable Skipton* (1959).

**Snow, John** (1813–1858). English physician and epidemiologist, born in York. Son of a colliery worker, he was apprenticed to a surgeon in Newcastle-upon-Tyne and later studied in London. He made several fundamental contributions to evidence-based medicine, pointing to deficiencies in bread as a factor in rickets, and calculated dosages for the use of ether and chloroform in anaesthesia. In September 1854 he identified a water pump in Broad Street, Soho as a transmission point for cholera, rejecting the prevailing 'miasma' theory. He never married and died of a stroke. In 2003, a poll of British doctors ranked Snow as the greatest physician of all time and his bicentenary was commemorated in 2013.

**Snowden, Philip, 1st Viscount Snowden** (1864–1937). English politician, born in Yorkshire. He became a public servant, studied economics and at 27 was crippled by a cycling accident. A Labour MP 1906–18, 1922–31, and an ardent free trader, he was Chancellor of the Exchequer 1924, 1929–31. When the Government split in 1931 he supported Ramsay \*MacDonald at first, but broke with the National Government in opposition to Imperial Preference and became increasingly isolated and bitter. He attacked MacDonald in his *An Autobiography* (1934) and embraced \*Keynes' ideas.

**Snowdon, 1st Earl of, Antony** (Charles Robert Armstrong-Jones (1930–2017). English photographer, designer and film maker. In 1960 he

married Princess \*Margaret; they divorced in 1978. He was, despite his royal links, an exceptionally gifted photographer who published several books of portraits and made successful television documentaries.

**Soane, Sir John** (1753–1837). English architect. Son of a builder, after working under George \*Dance the younger, he won a Royal Academy Gold Medal and a travelling studentship (1776–80). On his return he evolved an austere, highly individual modification of the classical style. From 1788 he was architect to the Bank of England, the rebuilding of which occupied 40 years. He built the Dulwich College picture gallery and the founder's mausoleum (1811–14), three London churches and many houses. His house in Lincoln's Inn Fields is a museum of prints, drawings, paintings and archaeological relics.

Stroud, D., *The Architecture of Sir John Soane*. 1961.

**Soares, Mário Alberto Nobre Lopes** (1924–2017). Portuguese Socialist politician. Educated in Lisbon and Paris, he was imprisoned 12 times under \*Salazar's regime, then exiled in Paris. He served as Prime Minister 1976–85 and President of Portugal 1986–96. Soares was a very prolific writer.

**Sobchak, Anatoli Aleksandrovich** (1937–2000). Russian lawyer and politician, born in Siberia. Working as a lawyer in Stavropol 1960–64, he became an advisor to \*Gorbachev, won a doctorate in law at Leningrad University and was appointed a professor. He attracted attention in the USSR Congress of Peoples' Deputies 1989–91 and was elected Mayor of Leningrad/St Petersburg 1990–96. He played a decisive role in Leningrad in defeating the August 1991 coup against Gorbachev and reform.

**Sobers, Sir Garfield** (Garry St Auburn) (1936– ). Barbadian cricketer. A left-handed batsman and bowler, he made 8,000 test runs and took 200 wickets. He captained the West Indies test side 1953–74 and in 1958 made the record score of 365 not out in a test match.

**Sobieski, Jan III** (1624–1696). King of Poland and Grand-Duke of Lithuania 1674–96. Born in Galicia, educated at Jagiellonian University, he became a soldier and, after being engaged in constant warfare with Turks and Tartars, rose to be Polish Commander-in-Chief. A great victory over the Turks at Khotin (1673) made him a national hero and in the next year he was elected King. In 1683 he won European renown by putting the cause of Christendom before any considerations of national policy and marching to rescue Vienna from the Turks. Aristocratic faction and intrigue at home disturbed his reign.

**Socinus, Faustus** (Fausto Sozzini) (1539–1604). Italian theologian. He was known for his anti-Trinitarian doctrines adopted from his uncle **Laelius Socinus** (Lelio Sozzini) (1525–1562). He left Italy (1575) to pursue his theological studies, thence he

went to Transylvania and in 1579 to Poland where he remained for the rest of his life. Reason was the test he applied to doctrines and it was as an offence against reason that he condemned Trinitarianism, though he accepted the immortality of the spirit (but not of the body). He rejected the divinity of Christ, and the doctrine of Original Sin. Socinianism survived in Transylvania into the 20th century, and was influential elsewhere in the 16th and 17th centuries.

**Socrates** (c.469–399 BCE). Greek philosopher, born in Athens. Son of Sophroniscus, a friend of \*Aristides and possibly a sculptor, he left no writings and the only first-hand evidence concerning his life and thought comes from \*Plato and \*Xenophon; the former makes him the chief spokesman of his dialogues, but the ideas expressed may well be those of Plato though the method of eliciting them is almost certainly Socratic. The known facts are simple: Socrates served and showed courage in the Peloponnesian War; the rest of his life was spent in Athens where he frequented public places such as markets and gymnasia and talked with anyone who would listen, but delighted especially in the company of young men of good mind and pleasing appearance. That these were most often to be found among the young aristocrats (\*Alcibiades, Critias etc.) may have helped to estrange him from the general populace. He was ugly, with thick lips, bulging eyes and flat nose; he walked barefoot, wore the simplest of garments and was indifferent to comfort; but he was no ascetic and could outdrink any of the other guests at a banquet. As it is clear from the caricature of him in *The Clouds* by \*Aristophanes, he was regarded as a sophist, but though he knew, and probably disputed with, sophists he had no use for their verbal pedantries. Nor was he a follower of any school of philosophy. His interests did not extend to the workings of the universe, that each of his followers and friends should learn to know himself was the aim to which his dialectical method was applied. He was no propounder of truths, he only guided the search for truth, or that part of it which lay within the mind of each of his companions. His method was to feign ignorance and then by question and answer to get nearer and nearer to the heart of the matter without achieving a final solution. The achievement of knowledge, he argued, would be the achievement of virtue, for virtue is the knowledge, in its fullest philosophical sense, of what ought to be done, and vice is correspondingly ignorance.

A minor mystery about his character was his claim to be guided in emergencies by a *daimonion* (divine sign) which, since it was peculiar to himself, had more affinity with intuition than conscience. Whatever its exact nature, his talk of it may help to explain the charge of blasphemy that was coupled with that of corrupting the morals of young men when he was brought to trial by the restored democracy in 399. He was convicted by a jury of 501 by 280 votes to 221, then condemned by a 360:141 vote, when 80 who supported acquittal then chose death. He

refused an opportunity of escape and after an interval of 30 days took hemlock, the customary alternative to execution. A moving account of his last day is contained in Plato's dialogue *Phaedo*, in which Phaedo describes him as 'the wisest and justest and best of all men I have ever known'.

Guthrie, W. K. C., *A History of Greek Philosophy*. Vol 3. 1969; Stone, I. F., *The Trial of Socrates*. 1989.

**Soddy, Frederick** (1877–1956). English chemist. He was professor of chemistry at Glasgow 1904–14, Aberdeen 1914–19 and Oxford 1919–36. With \*Rutherford he put forward (1903) the radioactive transformation theory showing that radioactivity arises from the spontaneous disintegration of atoms. Soddy's work led to the discovery that certain atomic species, which he called isotopes, could have the same atomic number but different atomic weight. He was elected FRS in 1910 and won the Nobel Prize for Chemistry (1921). Among his important books are *Radioactive Elements* (2 vols, 1912–14) and *Matter and Energy* (1912). He also wrote extensively (and eccentrically) on economics.

**Soeharto** *see* **Suharto**

**Soekarno** (or Sukarno, his personal name is given as Achmed or Koesnosoro) (1901–1970). Indonesian politician, born in Surabaya, East Java. His father was a Javanese Muslim school teacher, his mother a Balinese Hindu. He graduated as an engineer in 1925 and in 1927, with D. M. Kasuma, became co-founder of the Indonesian Nationalist Party (PNI). He fought against Dutch colonial rule, being imprisoned (1930–31) and exiled to remote islands (1933–42). After the Japanese invaded the Netherlands East Indies, Soekarno worked with them, visited Japan in 1943, and was made President of the Java central council and of Putera ('Centre of People's Power'), a nationalist Islamic body. On Japan's sudden collapse in August 1945, he proclaimed Indonesian independence and with Mohammed \*Hatta set up a provisional government. He was Head of Provisional Government 1945–49, and President of the Republic 1949–67. The British occupied Indonesia and supported the restoration of Dutch rule, at least on a temporary basis, and four years of conflict followed, in which the islands were partitioned in a Netherlands-Indonesian Union. In 1949 the Netherlands recognised Indonesia as a federal state and withdrew; in December the United States of Indonesia was proclaimed. Named 'President for Life' in 1963, he was also Prime Minister 1963–67. He did much to stimulate a sense of national identity but his rule was marred by extravagance, corruption and caprice. For all his shortcomings as an administrator he was an extraordinary orator and master of communication. Following an abortive coup against the army by the Communist Party (PKI) in September 1965, probably with Soekarno's connivance, he lost power to General

\*Suharto and was removed from the presidency in March 1967. Muslim puritans disapproved of his private life (\*Megawati Soekarnoputri).

**Solomon** (Shlomo, also Yedidyah) (c.990–c.931 BCE). King of Israel c.970–c.931. Son of \*David and \*Bathsheba, under him the kingdom reached its widest limits and his wealth and luxury became proverbial. Known as a great builder, he is credited with the construction of the great temple at Jerusalem that bore his name. Surrounded by his concubines he ruled as an oriental despot, and his way of life offended the austere nationalists led by the prophets, while heavy taxation alienated popular support. These causes, combined with tribal jealousies, brought about the partition of the country in the next reign. Solomon left behind him a tradition of great wisdom and supernatural powers. He may have written parts of the biblical Book of Proverbs, but the Song of Songs, Ecclesiastes and the apocryphal works attributed to him are much later. The royal dynasty of Ethiopia claimed descent from Solomon and the Queen of Sheba.

**Solomon** (Cutner) (1902–1988). English pianist, born in London. Son of an East End tailor, he made his debut in 1911, toured extensively and made many recordings, retiring in 1956 after a stroke. He had a superb technique, but his interpretative skills were even greater, especially in \*Beethoven, \*Chopin, \*Schumann and \*Brahms. He never used his surname.

**Solon** (c.638?–559 BCE). Athenian legislator and poet. It seems that he first gained popularity by using poetry to express political aims (e.g. the relief of economic distress). As archon (594–563) he was given unlimited power to make economic and constitutional reforms. He started with his revolutionary *Seisachtheia* (shaking off of burdens) by which all debts were cancelled, land forfeited for debt restored, and those who had pledged their persons as security for debt were freed from slavery. The acceptance of such pledges was in future forbidden. Currency reforms and encouragement of homegrown food (e.g. corn for wine) were among his other measures. He divided the citizens into classes, by economic standards, rights and duties being prescribed accordingly. Though the people as a whole were more widely represented in the assembly and the courts, Athens was as yet far from being a democracy. After completing his reforms, he refused the offered role of 'tyrant' and spent several years in travels, about which many legends were told. He is numbered among the Seven Sages of Greece.

**Solow, Robert Merton** (1924– ). American economist. Educated at Harvard, he taught statistics and economics at MIT from 1949 and won the Nobel Prize for Economics in 1987 for his pioneering work on the impact of technology on economic growth and his advocacy of selective government intervention.

**Solti, Sir Georg** (né György Stern) (1912–1997). Hungarian-British conductor. A pupil of \*Bartók, \*Kodály and \*Dohnányi, he was an excellent pianist, turning to conducting after World War II. He was musical director of the Munich State Opera 1946–52, the Frankfurt Opera 1952–61, Covent Garden Opera 1961–71, the Chicago Symphony 1970–91, the Orchestre de Paris 1971–75 and the London Philharmonic Orchestra 1979–83. He won many awards with his recordings, e.g. the first complete \*Wagner *Ring* cycle (1965).

**Solzhenitsyn, Aleksandr Isayevich** (1918–2008). Russian novelist and dissident thinker, born in Rostov-on-Don. Son of an office worker, he studied mathematics at Rostov and Moscow universities, served as an artillery officer and was decorated for bravery. He spent eight years (1945–53) in a forced labour camp in Kazakhstan for criticising \*Stalin obliquely in a letter: this was the basis for *One Day in the Life of Ivan Denisovich* (1962). During a three-year exile in Central Asia he was cured of cancer; he used this experience in *Cancer Ward* (1967). Officially rehabilitated in 1957, he became a teacher at Ryazan and, in 1962 during a period of thaw, \*Khrushchev allowed his first book to be published. *The First Circle* (1968), set in 1948, described Marfino prison where skilled personnel worked on special KGB projects. Expelled from the Soviet Writers' Union in 1969, he was awarded the 1970 Nobel Prize for Literature but was prevented from receiving the prize in Stockholm. Later books include *August 1914* (1972) and *The Gulag Archipelago* (1974), a study of a network of Soviet concentration camps, *Lenin in Zurich* (1975), and *The Oak and the Calf* (1980). In 1974 he was expelled from the USSR, settling first in Switzerland, then (1975) in Vermont, USA. He returned to live in Russia in 1994.

Scammell, M., *Solzhenitsyn: A Biography*. 1984.

**Somare, Sir Michael Thomas** (1936–2021). Papua New Guinean politician. A teacher and journalist, he became Chief Minister 1972–75 under Australian rule and the first Prime Minister of independent Papua New Guinea 1975–80, 1982–85, 2002–11. He was awarded a PC, GCMG and CH. In 2011 a constitutional crisis erupted when parliament ruled that Somare's prolonged absence due to illness disqualified him from being Prime Minister, but the Supreme Court attempted to overturn the decision.

**Somers, John Somers, 1st Baron** (1652–1716). English Whig politician. A barrister, he defended the Seven Bishops put on trial by \*James II, and played an important part in drafting the Bill of Rights. As Keeper of the Seal he presided over \*William III's informal Cabinet councils and was one of the king's most trusted advisors. Impeached by his opponents he lost office in 1700 but was briefly restored to power (1708–10) under Queen \*Anne.

**Somerset, 1st Duke of, Edmund Beaufort** (c.1406–1455). English nobleman. Grandson of \*John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, he became the leader of the Lancastrian faction and the rival of Richard, Duke of \*York. His failures as military commander in France (1453) marked the end of the ‘Hundred Years War’. Nevertheless, he was close to \*Henry VI’s wife \*Margaret of Anjou and became Henry’s chief minister. Conflicts with the Yorkists led to the ‘Wars of the Roses’ and Somerset was killed at a skirmish at St Albans. His son **Henry Beaufort, 2nd Duke of Somerset** (1436–1464) became leader of the Lancastrian forces but was defeated at Hexham and was summarily beheaded.

**Somerset, Edward Seymour, 1st Duke of** (1506?–1552). English nobleman. He became prominent on the marriage of his sister \*Jane Seymour to \*Henry VIII. Soon after the accession of his nephew, the boy-king \*Edward VI, he was created Duke of Somerset and virtually ruled the country as Lord Protector. His rough wooing of \*Mary Queen of Scots on behalf of his master led to the victory of Pinkie (1547), after which Mary was sent to France for safety. In England he hastened the growth of Protestantism, and his personal acquisitiveness, coupled with mildness, made him vulnerable to the intrigues of the Earl of Warwick (afterwards Duke of \*Northumberland), who engineered his downfall and execution.

**Sommerfeld, Arnold Johannes Wilhelm** (1868–1951). German theoretical physicist. He worked in Munich on quantum mechanics and proposed a modification to \*Bohr’s model of the atom. His pupils included \*Rabi, \*Pauling, \*Pauli, \*Heisenberg and \*Bethe.

**Sondheim, Stephen Joshua** (1930–2021). American composer and lyricist, born in New York City. A dominant figure in American musical theatre, and a winner of eight Tony Awards, his compositions include *A Funny Thing Happened on the Way to the Forum* (1963), *Company* (1970), *A Little Night Music* (1973), *Sweeney Todd* (1979), *Sunday in the Park with George* (1984, Pulitzer Prize), *Into the Woods* (1988) and *Passion* (1994).

**Song** (or Sung). Chinese dynasty which ruled 960–1279, sometimes called ‘Northern Song’. Printing, ceramics and gunpowder were developed in this period.

**Song Ziwen** (or Soong Tse-Ven; called in the West, T.V. Soong) (1891–1971). Chinese politician. Son of a well known industrialist, he held many offices in Guomintang governments including that of Prime Minister 1944–47. One of his sisters married \*Sun Yat-sen, the other \*Chiang Kaishek.

**Sontag** (née Rosenblatt), **Susan** (1933–2004). American critic, novelist and director, born in New York. After graduating from Chicago University at the age of 18, she worked at Harvard and Oxford,

then published a series of highly original speculative works on philosophy and education, including *Against Interpretation* (1966), *On Photography* (1977), *Illness as Metaphor* (1978), *AIDS and Its Metaphors* (1989) and the novels *The Volcano Lover* (1992) and *In America* (2000).

**Sophia of Hanover** (formerly Sophia of the Palatinate, née Wittelsbach) (1630–1714). Electress-consort of Hanover 1692–1698. Born in The Hague, her parents were \*Frederick V of the Palatinate and \*Elizabeth, daughter of \*James I of Great Britain. Sophia married (1658) **Ernst August von Welf-Este, Duke of Brunswick-Lüneburg** (1629–1698) who became Elector of Hanover in 1692. The Act of Settlement (1701) excluded Roman Catholics from succeeding to the British throne. Sophia’s descent from James made her, as a non-Catholic, the heiress: the Act provided that, if Queen \*Anne was not survived by her children, the Crown would pass to the Electress Sophia and her descendants. Sophia died in June 1714; seven weeks later Anne, much younger, followed and Sophia’s son succeeded as King \*George I.

**Sophocles** (c.495–406 BCE). Greek dramatist, born at Kolonos, near Athens. A member of a prosperous family, he is said to have led a boys’ choir which celebrated the naval victory of Salamis. Later, having failed as an actor owing to the weakness of his voice, he devoted himself to writing plays. A mark of his success was that he won first prize at the great festival of the god Dionysus 18 times. Of over 100 plays written by him only seven survive complete. *Ajax*, almost certainly the earliest, takes up the hero’s story from the point when he is driven to suicide by anger and disappointment at not being awarded the arms of Achilles. Conflicts provoked by refusal to accord him honourable burial are the theme of the play, which ends with a change of decision by King Agamemnon. In *Antigone* the theme is similar, but the efforts of the Theban princess (the title role) to bury her brother Polynices result in a series of tragic events, including her own death. *Oedipus the King* (*Oidipous Tyrannos* better known by the Latin name *Oedipus Rex*), usually considered his masterpiece, and the sequel *Oedipus at Colonus* (the latest of the surviving plays) tell the terrible story of Oedipus, King of Thebes, who, having discovered that unknowingly he had killed his father and married his own mother, came in his last years, an old, blinded and impoverished exile, to seek his death. *Electra* is Sophocles’ version of the events that followed the murder of the hero’s mother Clytaemnestra, the unfaithful wife of Agamemnon. *The Trachiniae* (*Maidens of Trachis*) tells of the death of Heracles at the hands of his wife Deianira who gives him poison in the belief that it is a love charm. *Philoctetes* is the story of a Greek hero who, stricken by a loathsome disease, is abandoned by his companions on the way to Troy, but is at last induced to come to their aid with his magic bow. Sophocles, who first introduced a third actor, was the most technically accomplished of all Greek dramatists, both in construction and



dramatic language. He is essentially interested in human character and the interplay of one character upon another. Matthew \*Arnold wrote that he 'saw life steadily and saw it whole'.

Kitto, H. D. F., *Greek Tragedy*. 3rd ed. 1961.

**Sopwith, Sir T(homas) O(ctave) M(urdoch)** (1888–1989). English aircraft designer. He founded Sopwith Aviation in 1912 and his aircraft 'Camel' and 'Pup' were used by the RAF in World War I. The company went into liquidation in 1920, Sopwith entered a partnership with Harry \*Hawker and chaired Hawker Aircraft. He became a very successful yacht designer.

**Sordello da Goito** (c.1180–c.1269). Italian-Provençal troubadour, born near Mantua. His love lyrics and other surviving poems, including the long 'Lesson of Honour', are written in Provençal. Mentioned several times in \*Dante's *Purgatorio*, he was the subject of Robert \*Browning's long narrative poem *Sordello*.

**Sorel, Georges** (1847–1922). French civil engineer and social philosopher. Deeply influenced by \*Marx and \*Nietzsche, and profoundly pessimistic about the future of European civilisation, he was bitterly opposed to bourgeois morality, parliamentarianism and utilitarianism, which he saw as cowardly evasions of history. He became successively a liberal conservative (1889), Marxist revisionist (1893), Dreyfusard (1897), revolutionary syndicalist (1902), supporter of *Action française* (1910), and Bolshevik sympathiser (1919). In *Reflections on Violence* (1908) he urged a 'myth' of a heroic view of man and urged the use of (psychological) violence against the force of the State: out of such a confrontation would come a new order. Both \*Mussolini and \*Trotsky admired him.

**Sorensen, Soren Peter Lauritz** (1868–1939). Danish biochemist. As director of the chemical section of the Carlsberg Laboratory, his chief researches were on amino acids, proteins and enzymes. He is best known for his introduction of the pH scale for expressing acidity and alkalinity in terms of hydrogenion concentration. On this scale neutrality is represented by a pH value of 7, different degrees of acidity and alkalinity are represented by pH values respectively below and above 7.

**Sorge, Richard** (1895–1944). German-Russian spy, born in Baku of German parents. The most audacious modern spy, he studied in Berlin and became a journalist, penetrating the German diplomatic service and working in Japan (1933–41). His espionage coups were not given full credit in Moscow and he was arrested (1941), tortured, and hanged in Tokyo. Stalin declined to make representations to save him.

**Soros, George** (né György Schwartz) (1930–). Hungarian-Jewish-American investor and activist, born in Budapest. A pupil of Karl \*Popper, he achieved extraordinary success as a currency speculator, with a capital gain of \$US1.3 billion in

1993. The Soros Foundation encouraged democracy in Eastern Europe and Soros was critical of some aspects of economic liberalism.

**Soult, Jean-de-Dieu, 1st Duke of Dalmatia** (1769–1851). French marshal. After serving in the ranks he rose to become a general (1799) in the French Revolutionary armies and in 1802 was created a marshal. He played a decisive role at Austerlitz (1805) and commanded the right wing at Jena (1806). In 1807 he drove the British forces from Spain, and was made a duke in 1808. In the subsequent campaigns against \*Wellington in the Peninsula he fought with varying fortune but could never achieve a decisive success and, as \*Napoléon became less able to reinforce him, was gradually driven back. In 1813 he was unable to prevent Wellington breaking through into France. Soult acted as Chief of Staff to Napoléon in the Waterloo campaign, after which he was banished. Recalled in 1820, he became a partisan of \*Louis Philippe, was created Marshal General in 1830 and served as Minister of War 1830–34, 1840–44 and Premier 1832–34, 1839–40, 1840–47.

**Sousa, John Philip** (1854–1932). American bandmaster and composer, born in Washington. Son of a Portuguese father and a Bavarian mother, he was leader of the band of the US marine corps (1880–92) and then formed his own band, with which he toured the world. Known as 'the March King', he composed 136 marches, marked by swaggering vitality and imaginative scoring, including *The Stars and Stripes for Ever* and *The Washington Post*.

**Soustelle, Jacques** (1912–1990). French anthropologist and politician. He studied and wrote about Aztec culture in Mexico, turning to politics during World War II when he joined \*de Gaulle's Free French movement. He was a Deputy in the National Assembly 1945–46, 1951–58 and 1973–78, and Governor-General of Algeria 1955–56. He played a leading role in organising the coup that restored de Gaulle to power in 1958, was Minister for Information 1958–59 and for Overseas Development 1959–60. He broke dramatically with de Gaulle over the decision to grant Algerian independence and joined the OAS (*Organisation armée secrète*). He was exiled in 1961, amnestied in 1968, and elected to the Académie française in 1983.

**Southampton, Henry Wriothesley, 3rd Earl of** (1573–1624). English nobleman. Best known as the man to whom \*Shakespeare dedicated *Venus and Adonis* and *The Rape of Lucrece*, he may have been the 'Mr W. H.' and the 'lovely boy' of Shakespeare's Sonnets. He lost the favour of \*Elizabeth I after his secret marriage to Elizabeth Vernon, and was imprisoned for his part in \*Essex's rebellion (1601). \*James I pardoned him (1603) and he took part in a number of commercial and colonial enterprises, including the expedition to Virginia (1605). He died of fever on an expedition to the Netherlands to help the Dutch.

**Southcott, Joanna** (1750–1814). English ‘prophet’, born in Devonshire. A domestic servant, in 1792 she began to claim divine inspiration for prophecies in prose and verse announcing the imminent ‘second coming’ of \*Jesus Christ. At 64 she claimed that she was about to give miraculous birth to a Prince of Peace, but her own death intervened. An intensive propaganda continues for the opening of a box or boxes left by her. A box was opened in 1927 but no documents or articles of importance were found.

**Southey, Robert** (1774–1843). English writer. A close friendship with S. T. \*Coleridge marked his first years after leaving Oxford University. The two friends married sisters and in 1803 the two couples shared Greta Hall, Keswick. When Coleridge left Keswick that winter he entrusted his wife and family to Southey’s care. Southey remained there for the rest of his life, one of the renowned Lakeland poets, with his friend \*Wordsworth nearby. \*Landon, \*Lamb and Walter \*Scott were also among his friends, and the younger writers such as \*Carlyle and Charlotte \*Brontë were helped by his kindness. A mainstay of the *Tory Quarterly Review*, he was made Poet Laureate in 1813. Overwork brought about his mental breakdown in 1839. Much of his vast output of poetry and prose, which included epics such as *The Vision of Judgement* (1820) and a valuable *History of Brazil* (1810–19), is now forgotten, even his lives of \*Nelson and \*Wesley, and the children’s classic *The Three Bears*.

Simmons, J., *Southey*. 1945.

**Southwell, St Robert** (1561–1595). English Jesuit and poet. A distant cousin of \*Shakespeare, he ministered to Catholics despite the threat of execution for priests who failed to leave England. His poems include ‘The Burning Babe’ and ‘New Heaven, New War’. He was arrested in 1592, tortured and executed. He was beatified in 1929 and canonised in 1970.

**Soutine, Chaim** (1893–1943). Russian-Jewish-French painter, born near Minsk. Living in Paris from 1913, he suffered great hardship. His convulsive and heavily painted expressionist works, often featuring human depravity and carcasses in the slaughterhouse, were a major influence on Francis \*Bacon. He also painted many studies of cooks, hotel valets and page boys.

**Soyer, Alexis Benoît** (1809–1858). French chef de cuisine. He fled to London from the 1830 revolution in France. He was chef to the Reform Club and became the most famous cook of his time. He was sent to the Crimea to reform the army’s food commissariat, and introduced the ‘Soyer Stove’. Soyer wrote a variety of cookery books.

Morris, H., *Portrait of a Chef*. 1938; Arnold, A., *Adventurous Chef*. 2002; Brandon, R., *The People’s Chef*. 2004; Cowen, R., *Relish: The Extraordinary Life of Alexis Soyer*. 2006.

**Soyinka, Wole** (Akinwande Oluwale Babatunde) (1934– ). Nigerian playwright, poet and novelist. Educated at Ibadan and Leeds universities, he wrote in English, worked at London’s Royal Court Theatre and returned as professor of drama at Ife in 1972. His works include the plays *The Invention* (1955) and *Death and the King’s Horseman* (1975), and the autobiography *Ake* (1982). In 1986 he became the first African to win the Nobel Prize for Literature.

**Spaak, Paul-Henri Charles** (1899–1972). Belgian socialist politician. A lawyer, elected as deputy in 1932, he was Foreign Minister five times 1936–38, 1939–46 (serving in the government in exile in London 1940–45), 1947–49, 1954–58 and 1961–66 and Prime Minister thrice 1938–39, 1946, 1947–49. A founding father of the United Nations, he was the first President of the UN General Assembly 1946–47. A strong advocate of European economic integration, he worked closely with Robert \*Schumann and Jean \*Monnet, becoming President of the European Coal and Steel Community 1952–54 and Secretary-General of NATO 1957–61. He was awarded the Charlemagne Prize in 1957 and received a British CH, the US Medal of Freedom and many other honours.

**Spaatz, Carl Andrews** (1891–1974). American airman. He joined the American Army air force in 1916, and in 1941 was sent to Britain to organise the 8th Air Force which worked in close association with the British Bomber Command. He commanded (1943) all Allied forces taking part in the North African campaign. He was head of the US Army Air Force 1946–48.

**Spacey, Kevin** (Fowler) (1959– ). American actor, director and writer, born in New Jersey. He starred as Frank Underwood in the powerful television series *House of Cards*, was an outstanding Richard III on stage, and appeared in many films including *The Usual Suspects* (1995) and *American Beauty* (1999), receiving Academy Awards in both, and in *Margin Call* (2011). He was artistic director of the Old Vic, London, 2004–15, and became an Hon. KBE in 2015. His career was derailed in 2017 by accusations of sexual predation.

**Spallanzani, Lazzaro** (1729–1799). Italian zoologist. He studied law at Bologna and entered orders. In 1757 he became Professor of Mathematics and Physics at Reggio, moving on to Modena in 1763 and to the chair of Natural History at Pavia in 1769, where he divided his time between zoological research, teaching natural history and travelling. His reputation rests upon his skill as an experimenter in many fields of natural history. He carried out a notable series of experiments disproving spontaneous generation, by demonstrating that no life formed in sealed containers. He was a pioneer student of the chemical action of gastric juices in digesting foodstuffs. He hypothesised that this was due to the action of acids,

but failed to locate these. In embryology, Spallanzani was a staunch preformationist, believing that the new creature already existed in microscopic form complete in the embryo.

**Spark, Dame Muriel Sarah** (née Camberg) (1918–2006). British novelist, born in Edinburgh. Her first published novel was *The Comforters* (1957). She wrote also some verse and criticism and a play, *The Prime of Miss Jean Brodie* (1961). Her novel *The Mandelbaum Gate* (1965) won the James Tait Black Memorial Prize. Like most of her work, it takes an ironic view of the results when personalities interact. Later books include *The Abbess of Crewe* (1974), *The Only Problem* (1984) and *Symposium* (1990).

**Sparks, Jared** (1789–1866). American journalist, Unitarian minister and biographer. He edited the *North American Review* (1824–31) and began in 1832 his *Library of American Biography*. He was later President of Harvard 1849–53. He edited the writings of George \*Washington and Benjamin \*Franklin.

**Spartacus** (d.71 BCE). Thracian gladiator. He led a slave revolt against the Romans (73–71 BCE). The insurrections began in Capua where 73 members of a school of gladiators broke out to become the nucleus of a slave army of nearly 100,000 men. Spartacus won several victories but was finally defeated and killed by the forces of Marcus Licinius \*Crassus. Thousands died in the final battle or were later rounded up and executed.

**Speer, Albert** (1905–1981). German architect. His buildings attracted \*Hitler's interest and on the death of Fritz \*Todt he became Minister of Armaments and Munitions 1942–45, producing a record-breaking 3,031 fighter planes in the month of September 1944. He prevented Hitler's scorched earth policy being fully implemented in March–April 1945 and urged the Fuhrer to capitulate. He was sentenced to 20 years' jail at the Nuremberg trials for his use of slave labour. On his release he published the valuable memoirs *Inside the Third Reich* (1969).

Schmidt, M., *Albert Speer: The End of a Myth*. 1985; Sereny, G., *Albert Speer*. 1995.

**Speidel, Hans** (1897–1984). German soldier. \*Rommel's Chief of Staff for a time in World War II, he was imprisoned (1944) for alleged participation in the attempt to assassinate \*Hitler. Commander-in-Chief of the new West German army 1955–57, his appointment (1957) to command the NATO forces in Central Europe marked an important stage in the postwar history of the Federal Republic of Germany.

**Speke, John Hanning** (1827–1864). British explorer. After service in the Indian army he joined Richard \*Burton to explore Somaliland (when he narrowly escaped with his life). Three years later (1857) the same two explorers were sent by the Royal Geographical Society to look for the great lakes

of Central Africa. They reached Lake Tanganyika together but Speke was alone when he discovered Lake Nyanza and concluded (rightly) that it must be the source of the Nile. Burton disagreed and to settle the dispute Speke made another journey in 1860 (with Captain J. A. Grant) and followed the river emerging from the lake far enough to be sure that it was identical with the Nile. Burton still refused to be convinced. On the day before a public meeting to discuss the issue, Speke accidentally shot himself. He wrote *Journal of the Discovery of the Source of the Nile* (1863).

**Spelman, Sir Henry** (1562–1641). English antiquary. He made major contributions to the study of English medieval history, including writings on sacrilege and titles and his *Glossarium Archaiologicum*, produced over nearly 40 years. He is credited with the introduction of the term 'feudalism'. His son **Sir John Spelman** (1594–1643), also a historian, was an MP, a Royalist theorist and author of *Life of Alfred the Great* (published posthumously, 1678).

**Spence, Sir Basil Urwin** (1907–1976). British architect, born in Bombay. He worked in the office of Sir Edwin \*Lutyens for a year before World War II. He produced (1951) the winning design for the rebuilding of Coventry Cathedral and became its architect. Among other appointments he was consultant architect to Edinburgh, Nottingham, Sussex and Southampton universities and for Basildon new town. He was president of the RIBA (1958–60), knighted in 1960 and received the OM in 1962. He designed the 'Beehive' extension to the New Zealand Parliament in Wellington.

**Spencer, Sir (Walter) Baldwin** (1860–1929). Australian anthropologist, born in Lancashire. Professor of biology at Melbourne University 1887–1919, with **Francis James Gillen** (1856–1912) he conducted pioneering anthropological surveys of Aboriginal people, wrote *The Native Tribes of Central Australia* (1899) and had profound but unacknowledged influence on Bronislaw \*Malinowski.

**Spencer, Herbert** (1820–1903). English philosopher and sociologist, born in Derby. Son of a schoolmaster, he became first a teacher and then a railway engineer, and worked at this profession, with occasional incursions into journalism, until 1843 when he became subeditor of the *Economist*. In *Social Statics* (1851), he argued that laissez-faire liberalism, if allowed to work unchecked, would finally lead to social equilibrium. His *System of Synthetic Philosophy* (1862–92), in 10 huge unreadable volumes, asserted that there were universal laws, as in mathematics, physics or biology, which could be applied to human society. In *Principles of Biology* (1864), influenced by \*Malthus, \*Comte and \*Lamarck, he proposed the concept of 'survival of the fittest', which he preferred to \*Darwin's 'natural selection'. Darwin detested him. The term 'social Darwinism', coined in 1877 (not by Spencer), was

widely used in the 20th century as a justification for imperialism, 'scientific racism' and European cultural superiority. Spencer also promoted 'positivism', arguing that the only authentic knowledge must have been tested by scientific method, rejecting every form of metaphysics and the creative arts (except for music, which he thought had a moral influence). Spencer had supported universal suffrage, then turned against it, was hostile to \*Gladstone's reforms, opposed compulsory education, public health measures, safety regulations for workers and tax-funded libraries. His books were widely read and he had a major influence in the United States, which he visited in 1882. He wrote almost 100 articles for *Popular Science Monthly*. *The Man versus the State* (1884) was a high-Tory manifesto. Spencer was an autodidact, a polymath whose interests included mathematics, biology, physics, astronomy, psychology, education and ethics. Agnostic and hypochondriac, he never married. Nominated for the Nobel Prize for Peace in 1901 and for Literature in 1902, he is buried opposite \*Marx in Highgate Cemetery.

Peel, J. Y. D., *Herbert Spencer: The Evolution of a Sociologist*. 1971; Francis, M., *Herbert Spencer and the Invention of Modern Life*. 2007.

**Spencer, Sir Stanley** (1891–1959). English painter. Except during his service in Macedonia in World War I, he lived and worked in his native village of Cookham, Berkshire. The murals (1927–32) in the memorial chapel at Burghclere, near Newbury, are his finest works. Equally impressive is the huge *Resurrection* in the Tate Gallery, London.

Rothenstein, W., *Stanley Spencer*. 1945; Mulvaney, J., Morphy, H. and Petch, A., *My Dear Spencer*. 1997.

**Spender, Sir Stephen** (Harold) (1909–1995). English poet and critic. At Oxford, he became, with his friends \*Auden and \*Day Lewis, one of the group of young poets who contributed to *New Signatures* (1932). In 1930 his own first volume of poetry, *Twenty Poems* appeared. He worked in Spain for the Loyalists, and his *Poems from Spain* (1939) reflect this period. His *Collected Poems* appeared in 1954. He also wrote fiction and literary criticism, eg. *The Destructible Element* (1935), and a poetic drama, *Trial of a Judge* (1938). From 1939 to 1941 he was co-editor, with Cyril \*Connolly, of the monthly *Horizon* and in 1953 was co-editor of *Encounter*.

David, H., *Stephen Spender*. 1992; Spender, S., *World Within World*. 1951; Sutherland, J., *Stephen Spender*. 2004.

**Spengler, Oswald** (1880–1936). German philosopher. After some years as a teacher he came into sensational prominence with the publication (1918) of the first volume of *Untergang des Abendlandes* (Volume II, 1922, Eng. trans. *The Decline of the West*, 1926–29). His theme was that civilisations are subject to the same laws of growth and decay as individuals.

**Spenser, Edmund** (c.1552–1599). English poet, born in London. He left Cambridge University in 1576, and in 1580 became secretary to Lord Grey, Lord Deputy of Ireland. A year earlier he had published his first major work, *The Shepherdes Calendar*, dedicated to his friend Sir Philip \*Sidney. After leaving Lord Grey's service he remained in Ireland in official appointments, living (from 1588) at Kilcolman Castle, Co. Cork, where he continued work on his great epic *The Faerie Queene*. In 1589 he went to London with Sir Walter \*Raleigh to arrange for the publication of its first three books. Disappointed in his hopes of preferment, he returned to Ireland (1591), where he described his recent visit in *Colin Clouts come home againe*. The next three books of *The Faerie Queene* were published in 1596. This famous epic, which he left unfinished at his death, is an allegory (modelled to some extent on Ariosto's *Orlando Furioso*) of the England of his time, in which \*Elizabeth appears as Gloriana, Queen of Fairyland. Much of the allegory is no longer easily comprehensible but the adventures of the knights can be enjoyed as separate episodes and there still remains the sensual delight of the poem's rich colouring and its metrical charm. It is written in what are now known as Spenserian stanzas. His other works include *Astrophel* (1586), an elegy on Sir Philip Sidney, and the sonnet sequence *Amoretti*, which immortalised his courtship of an Elizabeth (supposedly Elizabeth Boyle) whom he married in 1594. *Epithalamion* was probably written to celebrate the event, while the double wedding of the two daughters of the Earl of Worcester was commemorated by *Prothalamion* (1596). The prose work *View of the Present State of Ireland* (1596) was a defence of English policy. When Kilcolman was burnt by insurgents (1598), the last books of the *Faerie Queene* were probably destroyed. Spenser returned to London where he died in poverty but was buried in Westminster Abbey.

Judson, A. C., *The Life of Edmund Spenser*. 1945; Hadfield, A., *Edmund Spenser. A Life* 2012.

**Speransky, Mikhail Mikhailovich, Count** (1772–1839). Russian administrator. Son of a priest, he became \*Aleksandr I's secretary and Minister of State 1809–12, proposing liberal constitutional reforms until forced into exile by fierce hostility from the nobles. Under \*Nikolai I he took a prominent part in the proceedings against the Decembrist conspirators, codified Russian law (in 45 volumes, 1830) and studied the peasantry.

**Sperry, Elmer Ambrose** (1860–1930). American inventor. He designed and manufactured numerous devices incorporating the principle of the gyroscope, among them the gyroscopic compass and stabilisers for ships. He also made improvements in the manufacture of electrical machinery and introduced (1915) the high-intensity searchlight.

**Sperry, Roger Wolcott** (1913–1994). American neurobiologist and neurophysiologist, born in Connecticut. He studied literature and psychology at Oberlin, zoology at Chicago, primate biology at Harvard and was professor of psychobiology at Caltech 1954–84. Elected FRS, in 1979 he won both the Wolf Prize and the Lasker Prize. He shared the 1981 Nobel Prize for Medicine ‘for his discoveries concerning the functional specialization of the cerebral hemispheres’, one half being awarded to **David Hubel** and **Torsten Wiesel** for their research on visual field processing. The ‘left’ hemisphere of the brain is dominant in language, speech, logic, numbers, calculation and specific memory, while the ‘right’ brain processes pattern and spatial recognition, aesthetics, music, creativity and interpretation.

**Spielberg, Steven** (1947– ). American film director and producer, born in Cincinnati. He made a series of extraordinarily successful films, notable for strong story lines, spectacular special effects and action, including *Jaws* (1975), *Close Encounters of the Third Kind* (1977), *Raiders of the Lost Ark* (1981), *E.T.* (1982), *Colour Purple* (1985), *Empire of the Sun* (1988), *Jurassic Park* (1993), *Amistad* (1997) and *Saving Private Ryan* (1998). *Schindler's List* (based on Tom \*Keneally's *Schindler's Ark*, 1993), won seven Academy Awards, including best picture and best director. Later films include *Munich* (2005), *True Grit* (2010), *War Horse* (2011) and *Lincoln* (2012).

**Spielrein** (or Shpilrein), **Sabina Naftulovna** (1885–1942). Russian-Jewish physician and psychoanalyst. She studied medicine in Zürich, and became closely associated with Carl \*Jung, as patient, student, colleague and probably lover. Her research anticipated Jung's concept of transformation and \*Freud's ‘death wish’. She was killed with her family by a Nazi death squad.

Kerr, J., *A Most Dangerous Method: The Story of Jung, Freud and Sabina Spielrein*. 1993.

**Spinoza, Benedict de** (Baruch Despinoza) (1632–1677). Dutch philosopher of Jewish-Portuguese descent, born in Amsterdam. Given a traditional Jewish education, he became lax in his observances, was estranged from his people, and was excommunicated (1656). While earning his living as a lens grinder he learnt Latin and absorbed western culture. A version (1663) of \*Descartes' *Principles of Philosophy* was the only book published under his own name during his lifetime, but *Theological Political Treatise* (1670) was generally recognised as his. While admitting that human passions necessitate strict obedience to the state, the book pleaded for liberty for the philosopher to express his ideas. Despite the uproar that it caused (difficult now to understand), he was offered (1673) a professorship by the Elector Palatine but preferred to devote himself to completing his greatest work, the posthumously published *Ethics* (1677). Beginning from the notion of substance, which may be roughly

described as having properties or attributes but not being such itself, he proceeds by classically deductive argument to establish that nature is identical with God, the being who possesses infinite attributes but is not the personal God of Christianity. He sees man's mind as part of the divine one and for that reason incapable of exercising free will in an absolute sense. With the same integrating pantheistic vision he argues that man's highest good is his knowledge of his union with nature or intellectual love of God (*amor Dei intellectualis*). He died of a lung disease aggravated by the glass dust produced by lens grinding.

Hampshire, S., *Spinoza*. 1956; Nadler, S., *Think Least of Death. Spinoza on How to Live and How to Die*. 2020.

**Spock, Benjamin McLane** (1903–1998). American physician. About 50 million copies of his books on the care of children have been sold in America, Britain and many other countries. They include *A Baby's First Year* (1950) and *Feeding Your Baby and Child* (1955). He was professor of child development at Western Reserve University, Ohio 1955–67.

**Spode, Josiah** (1733–1797). English manufacturing potter. He learned to make earthenware from Thomas Whieldon of Fenton, and set up his own factory at Stoke on Trent in 1770. His successor, **Josiah Spode II** (1754–1827) is credited with perfecting a formula for bone china c.1800 which has been the basis of the English tableware industry ever since. He was potter to \*George III. The firm of Spode was bought by William Copeland in 1833 and amalgamated with Wedgwood in 1964.

**Spohr, Ludwig** (1784–1859). German violinist and composer, born in Brunswick. He was aided in his studies by the Duke of Brunswick. After being musical director at theatres in Vienna and Frankfurt he was Kapellmeister at the Court of Hesse Kassell 1822–57. He composed many violin concertos, operas, oratorios, symphonies and chamber music. One oratorio, *Die Letzten Dingen* (1826), had a long vogue in England as *The Last Judgement*.

**Spreckelson, (Johan) Otto von** (1929–1987). Danish architect. A professor at the Academy of Fine Arts, Copenhagen, he won an international competition for the design of La Grande Arche at La Defense, Paris, an important monument opened in 1989 to commemorate the French Revolution.

**Sprengel, Christian Konrad** (1750–1816). German botanist. A pioneer of floral biology, he carried out research on the sexuality of plants and the role of insects in pollination. Ignored for decades, his work was confirmed by Charles \*Darwin.

**Springsteen, Bruce** (Frederick Joseph) (1949– ). American composer, singer and instrumentalist, born in New Jersey. Guitarist, pianist and harmonica player, he worked in a diversity of genres, ranging from hard

rock to heartland rock, gaining international fame with his albums *Streets of Philadelphia* (1994) and *The Rising* (2002), and his CD sales amounted to 200 million. He won 20 Grammy Awards and an Academy Award and toured constantly, appealing to devoted followers in very long concerts. He was a social activist and a strong \*Obama supporter. He received the Presidential Medal of Freedom in 2016.

**Spurgeon, Charles Haddon** (1836–1892). English Baptist pastor. His preaching attracted vast congregations and the huge Metropolitan Tabernacle, in Elephant and Castle, London, with a 6,000-seat auditorium, was completed in 1861. (It was burned out in 1898.) He left the Baptist Union in 1887, opposing its liberal tendencies. He was a prolific author, publishing weekly sermons.

**Staël-Holstein, Anne Louise Germaine** (née Necker, known as Madame de Staël) (1766–1817). French author, born in Paris. Daughter of the financier Jacques \*Necker, she married (1785) **Baron Erik Magnus Staël von Holstein** (1749–1802), the Swedish Ambassador in Paris. She was regarded as the most intellectual and cultured woman of her time and her salons, both in Paris and later at her Swiss home at Coppet, were attended by many of her most brilliant contemporaries. Her efforts to attract \*Napoléon Bonaparte (who disliked clever women) failed, they became bitter enemies and in 1803 he ordered her to leave Paris. She went to Germany and there met \*Schiller, \*Goethe and August von \*Schlegel. A later visit resulted in *De l'Allemagne* (1810), which did much to introduce German Romanticism to France. It was suppressed by Napoléon. To escape his enmity she visited Vienna, Russia, Stockholm and England (where she was warmly welcomed). After the Emperor's downfall she again presided over salons in Paris and Coppet. Her literary career had opened (1788) with a panegyric of \*Rousseau. In *De la littérature* (1800) she compared French literature unfavourably with German and English. Her two novels, *Delphine* (1802) and *Corinne* (1807), contain self-portraits and relate to her long liaison (1794–1808) with Benjamin \*Constant. *Considérations sur la Révolution Française* and the autobiographical *Dix Années d'exil* appeared posthumously.

Herold, C., *Madame de Staël*. 1964.

**Stafford, Sir Edward William** (1819–1901). New Zealand politician, born in Edinburgh. He became a large sheep owner in the Nelson settlement. As Prime Minister 1856–61, 1865–69 and 1872 he pursued an unpopular policy of centralisation, but was a capable administrator. He returned to England in 1874 and was knighted in 1879.

**Stahl, Georg Ernst** (1660–1734). German scientist. Son of a Protestant minister, and inclined to Pietist views himself, Stahl studied medicine at Jena and taught there from 1683 until he was appointed

professor at Halle in 1693. From 1716 he was personal physician to \*Friedrich I of Prussia. His medical writings stressed that living bodies possess some sort of soul, or life-source, which cannot be simply reduced to the total of the separate organs. This was at bottom a religious conception, but it harmonised with his chemical interest in gases and his concern with heat. In chemistry he developed the concept of phlogiston, a substance contained within combustible bodies and given up when burnt. In smelting metals, phlogiston was assumed to be transferred from the charcoal to the ore. The idea of phlogiston tied together the chemistry of combustion in the 18th century until \*Lavoisier's rethinking of the subject, and the development of the concept of oxygen (taken out of the air on combustion).

Partington, J. R., *A History of Chemistry*. 1961.

**Ståhlberg, Kaarlo Juho** (1865–1952). Finnish politician and judge. He was a lawyer, judge, professor and a member of the Finnish Diet who drafted the republican constitution of 1917 when Finland seized its independence during the Russian Revolution. He became the first President of Finland 1919–25. In 1930 he was kidnapped by the pro-Fascist Lapua movement and lost the presidential elections of 1931 and 1937 by very narrow margins.

**Stair, John Dalrymple, 1st Earl of** (1648–1707). Scottish politician. His father was the first codifier of Scots law, and on his death (1695) he became 2nd Viscount Stair. Eminent as a lawyer, he was Advocate-General under \*James II and \*William III, whose cause he strongly supported. As Secretary of State at the time of the Massacre of Glencoe (1692) he was held chiefly responsible and was forced to resign. Later he played a part in preparing the Act of Union (1707) and securing its passage through the Scottish Parliament. On the morning after one of his most convincing speeches he was found dead.

**Stakhanov, Aleksei Grigorevich** (1905–1977). Russian miner. He worked in coal mines from 1927, and in 1935 achieved notoriety by cutting 12 tons of coal per shift (seven being the norm). He was praised by \*Stalin who inaugurated the 'Stakhanovite movement', designed to raise production in Soviet industry.

**Stalin Josef Vissarionovich** (né J. V. Dzhughashvili) (1878–1953). Russian (Georgian) Communist politician, born in Gori, Georgia. Son of a shoemaker, educated at the Tiflis (Tbilisi) Theological Seminary, he was expelled for 'propagating Marxism' to his fellow students. He joined the Russian Social Democratic Labour Party in 1898 and when the party split into factions in 1903 he became a Bolshevik organiser in the Caucasus, using the name 'Koba' (and sometimes 'Soso'). He was imprisoned and escaped five times 1903–12. He met \*Lenin in 1905, attended Congresses in Stockholm (1906) and London (1907) and founded *Pravda* ('Truth') in 1911. Known as Stalin

(‘man of steel’) from 1913, he led the Bolsheviks in the Duma (1913), wrote *Marxism and the Nationalities* and was exiled in Siberia 1913–17 until released by Kerensky’s Government. After Lenin’s second 1917 Revolution, Stalin was a member of the Politburo of the Communist Party 1917–53, Commissar for Nationalities 1917–23 and for the Worker-Peasant Inspectorate 1919–23. His first wife Yekaterina Svanidze had died in 1907, leaving a son who died as a prisoner of war. He married Nadejda Sergeyena Allulaya in 1918 and she committed suicide in 1932. (His son Vassily, an airforce general, became an alcoholic. His daughter Svetlana, later Peters, left the USSR and became a US citizen.) His third wife, who he married in 1935, was Rosa Kaganovich. In the Civil War, Stalin was active in the defence of Tsaritsyn (later renamed Stalingrad, now Volgograd) in 1918 but his success deepened the enmity of Trotsky, Commissar for War. As General Secretary of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union (CPSU) 1922–53, he made this post the most powerful in the USSR. A dull speaker and even duller writer, he was persistently underrated by his rivals. When Lenin died (1924) Stalin soon eliminated his closest associates, the ‘Old Bolsheviks’. He promoted the concept of ‘socialism in one country’, believing that the best way to ensure Communist supremacy was to build up the USSR’s industrial base, in contrast to Trotsky’s advocacy of the ‘permanent revolution’. The ‘Left Opposition’ (Trotsky, Zinoviev, Kamenev) was removed in 1926–27 and the ‘Right Opposition’ (Rykov, Bukharin, Tomskey) by 1930. The first Five Year Plan was announced in 1928, involving the forced collectivisation of agriculture, elimination of the kulaks and industrialisation, followed by the second (1933) and third (1938) Plans. The ‘Great Purges’ of 1934–38 were provoked by the murder of S. M. Kirov and a series of show trials were held 1936–38. Victims included Bukharin, Kamenev, Zinoviev and Rykov. Of Lenin’s Politburo, only Stalin survived by 1938. His closest advisors were V. M. Molotov and A. N. Poskrebyshv. Stalin executed 446 of 621 senior officers in the Red Army, including Marshal Tukhachevsky. The Nazi-Soviet pact (August 1939), purely opportunistic, led directly to Hitler’s invasion of Poland and the outbreak of World War II. Stalin rejected warnings of Hitler’s plans to invade the USSR. When ‘Operation Barbarossa’ began in June 1941, after a short hesitation, Stalin showed decisive leadership in the ‘Great Patriotic War’ and succeeded in identifying the CPSU with the cause of national survival. He was Premier of the USSR 1941–53, Commissar for Defence and Commander-in-Chief 1941–46, taking the titles of Marshal (1943) and Generalissimo (1945). He took a dominant role at the Teheran, Yalta and Potsdam Conferences. His strategic grasp and mastery of detail was admired by Alanbrooke and Henry Stimson. Since wartime deaths numbered about 22,000,000 and the Red Army had occupied Eastern Europe, he was in a strong position to force Allied agreement to the extension of Soviet control. The USSR declared war on Japan in

August 1945. Stalin was dismissive of Mao, regarding him primarily as a Chinese nationalist and urged him to work with Chiang. By 1948 the Cold War was at its height, Tito had left the Soviet bloc and cultural and scientific conformity were imposed by A. A. Zhdanov and T. D. Lysenko. Stalin claimed expertise in linguistics and the arts and was credited with having written works on Marxist theory and history which were distributed and translated by the million, but were essentially unreadable. The USSR exploded its first atomic bomb in September 1949. Mao proclaimed the Chinese Peoples’ Republic in October 1949 and two months later met Stalin in Moscow. Relations were uneasy at best, and the outbreak of the Korean War (June 1950), engineered by Stalin, was an unwelcome surprise for China which was blamed by the US. After a mild thaw in 1952, a new purge aimed at ‘cosmopolitans’ was imminent when Stalin died, having held absolute power for longer than any other ruler. His body was preserved next to Lenin’s in Red Square. In 1956 at the 20th Party Congress, Khrushchev attacked his character, operating methods, terrorism and cultivation of the ‘cult of personality’. His body was removed from the Lenin Mausoleum in 1961.

With the opening up of Soviet archives and years of careful scholarship, it appears that Stalin was directly responsible for about 6 million civilian deaths from executions in purges, the liquidation of kulaks and ‘The Great Terror’, with 3 million more dying from starvation caused by his policies. These totals, while monstrous, are less than half of previous estimates. Nevertheless, Stalin preserved the USSR during World War II and played the central role in defeating Nazism.

Payne, R., *Rise and Fall of Stalin*. 1965; Ulam, A., *Stalin*. 1973; Bullock, A., *Hitler and Stalin: Parallel Lives*. 1991.

**Stambolijski, Aleksandur** (1879–1923). Bulgarian politician. He founded the Agrarian party and dreamed of a Balkan federation that would be part of a ‘Green International’ unifying the peasants of all Eastern Europe. Imprisoned for opposing King Ferdinand’s pro-German policy in World War I, he became Prime Minister on his abdication (1918). He lost popularity by favouring the country people at the expense of the towns and by compromising with Yugoslavia on the Macedonian question. His regime was overthrown, and he was assassinated.

**Stamfordham, 1st Baron, Arthur John Bigge** (1849–1931). English courtier. Son of a vicar, he became a soldier, then served as Private Secretary to Queen Victoria 1895–1901 and to George V, first as Prince of Wales 1901–10 and as king 1910–31. He thought strategically about preserving the monarchy from the impact of World War I, social and political changes, and the media. He engineered changing the dynastic name to Windsor, denying asylum to the Russian imperial family, appointing Ramsay

\*MacDonald as Prime Minister of a minority Labour government in 1924, acknowledging autonomy of the Dominions, making public appearances and broadcasting.

**Standish, Myles** (c.1584–1656). American colonist. He came of a Lancashire family and had made a career as a soldier of fortune when he was hired by the Pilgrim Fathers to accompany them on the *Mayflower* (1620). His skill in handling the American Indians was indispensable to the safety of the colony in its early years and he remained one of its most important members for the rest of his life. He is the subject of poems by \*Longfellow and \*Lowell.

**Stanford, Sir Charles Villiers** (1852–1924). English composer, conductor and teacher, born in Dublin. Organist at Trinity College, Cambridge 1873–92, he studied in Berlin and Leipzig and became professor of composition at the Royal College of Music 1883–1924 and at Cambridge 1887–1924. He wrote seven symphonies, concertos for clarinet and violin, much choral music and several operas. He was a sharp critic, a \*Bach enthusiast and an excellent teacher whose students included \*Vaughan Williams, \*Holst, \*Ireland, \*Butterworth, \*Bliss and \*Howells.

**Stanhope, Lady Hester Lucy** (1776–1839). English traveller. Daughter of the 3rd Earl Stanhope, she kept house for her bachelor uncle, the younger \*Pitt, for the last three years of his life, which included his second premiership (1804–06). In 1810 she started her aristocratic friends by going to the Levant, where on the slopes of Mount Lebanon she lived the life of an Oriental princess, entertaining friends, dispensing charity, and influencing the neighbouring tribes. Her prodigality exhausted her fortune and her last years were spent in poverty.

**Stanhope, Philip** *see* **Chesterfield, Philip Dormer Stanhope, 4th Earl of**

**Stanislavsky, Konstantin** (Konstantin Sergeyevich Alekseyev) (1863–1938). Russian actor and producer. As co-founder of the Moscow Art Theatre (1898), which he directed until his death, he devised the famous 'method' in which actors are trained to develop their own conception of their roles and to analyse and express emotion in an entirely natural manner. Stage settings have to be realistic. After the Russian Revolution it was discovered that his 'method' was in exact accord with the doctrine of 'socialist realism'. As actor and producer, he was accorded the highest distinctions, including the Order of Lenin (1937). His house is preserved as a museum and the street in which he lived named after him.

Stanislavsky K., *An Actor Prepares*. Eng. ed. 1980; Stanislavsky K., *My Life in Art*. Repr. 1980.

**Stanisław I** *see* **Leszczyński, Stanisław**

**Stanisław II August Poniatowski** (1732–1798). King of Poland and Grand Duke of Lithuania 1764–95. Born to an aristocratic family, he was a diplomat in St Petersburg, became the favourite of \*Catherine the Great, by whom he had a child, and she secured his election as Polish king. He never married. A significant art collector and patron, he attempted reforms in Poland, but after three partitions by Russia, Prussia and Austria (1772, 1793, 1795) his kingdom disappeared.

**Stanley**. English noble family. In 1485 **Thomas Stanley** (1435–1504) was created **1st Earl of Derby** for the decisive contribution that he and his brother Sir William Stanley made to the victory of \*Henry VII at the battle of Bosworth Field (1485). The sovereignty of the Isle of Man was held by the Stanley family from 1406 until it passed to the Dukes of Atholl in the 18th century. Among Stanleys prominent in politics were the 14th and 17th earls of \*Derby.

**Stanley, Fiona Juliet** (1946– ). Australian paediatrician and epidemiologist, born in Sydney. Working in Perth, she became a specialist in maternal and child care, demonstrated the linkage between low levels of folic acid and spina bifida and became an effective advocate of public health measures, and the use of biostatistics in setting priorities.

**Stanley, Sir Henry Morton** (1841–1904). British explorer and journalist, born in Wales. An orphan (then known as John Rowlands), he ran away from the workhouse at the age of 15, sailed to America as a cabin boy and was adopted by a New Orleans merchant, whose name he assumed. After the Civil War (during which he served on both sides) he became a reporter and joined (1867) James Gordon \*Bennett's *New York Herald*. After assignments with Robert \*Napier in Abyssinia, in Egypt (for the opening of the Suez Canal) and elsewhere in the East, he was sent (1869) to find David \*Livingstone, then missing in Africa. The meeting, made historic by Stanley's casual greeting 'Dr Livingstone, I presume?', took place at Ujiji on Lake Tanganyika (27 Oct. 1871), but after exploring the lake together they parted company, Stanley returning to Zanzibar and England while Livingstone, now re-equipped and re-provisioned, remained. Publication of Stanley's book *How I Found Livingstone* (1872) caused him to be feted as a hero, and after an interlude with \*Wolseley on the Ashanti campaign, he was jointly commissioned (1874) by the *New York Herald* and the *London Daily Telegraph* to make another African expedition, which succeeded in solving several geographical problems, including the exact course of the Congo. A book followed each of his exploits, e.g. *Through the Dark Continent* (1878). From 1879 he established on behalf of King \*Leopold II of the Belgians the trading stations on the Congo that led to the foundation of the Congo Free State. On his last journey (1887–89) he overcame immense hardships to rescue \*Emin Pasha, and discovered



the Mountains of the Moon (Ruvenzori range). To complete an astonishing career he was a Unionist MP 1895–1900. He was awarded a GCB in 1899.

Farwell, B., *The Man Who Presumed*. 1957; McLynn, F., *Stanley*. 1991.

**Starling, Ernest Henry** (1866–1927). English scientist. Son of a barrister, Starling studied medicine at Guy's Hospital from 1882, qualifying MB in 1889. From 1887 he was demonstrator at Guy's and from 1890 was researching part-time with Schafer at University College, London. Working with William Maddock Bayliss, Starling pioneered the study of hormones, the chemical messengers of the body produced by the endocrine glands. He then moved on to research on the heart, being interested in its response to stress in the body organism at large. Starling was a turbulent man of strong views. He campaigned for educational reform, demanding a larger place for science in the school curriculum and in national priorities. His contributions to physiology are amongst the most important of the early 20th century. Four times nominated for a Nobel Prize, he died in Jamaica on a cruise.

**Starmer, Sir Keir** (1962–). English lawyer and Labour politician. A graduate of Leeds and Oxford, he became a barrister, specialising in human rights, a QC and Director of Public Prosecutions 2008–13. MP 2015–, he was a shadow minister under Jeremy \*Corbyn, with whom he clashed. He won the leadership of the Labour Party with 56.2% of the popular vote and became Leader of the Opposition 2020–.

**Stas, Jean Servais** (1813–1891). Belgian chemist. He studied organic chemistry under Jean Baptiste André Dumas of Paris and later worked with him, he was professor of chemistry 1840–45 at the École Royale Militaire, Brussels. He greatly improved methods for determining atomic weight and obtained much more accurate values for the common elements.

**Stassen, Harold Edward** (1907–2001). American Republican politician. A lawyer, and a progressive, he was Governor of Minnesota 1939–43, served in the US Navy 1943–45, and was President of the University of Pennsylvania 1948–53. He sought the Republican presidential nomination nine times, running third in 1948, then with diminishing credibility.

**Stauffenberg, Claus Philipp Maria Justinian, Graf Schenk von** (1907–1944). German soldier. From a Swabian aristocratic family, he served as an army officer and joined a conservative group which attempted to assassinate \*Hitler with a briefcase bomb at his Wolf's Lair headquarters on 20 July 1944. Hitler survived and Stauffenberg was executed in Berlin on the next day.

Walters, B., *Treason. Claus von Stauffenberg and the plot to kill Hitler*. ebook 2014, print 2021.

**Stavisky, Serge Alexandre** (1886?–1934). French speculator, born in Kiev. He promoted a series of fraudulent companies and as the scale of his operations grew he cultivated government and municipal officials, involving many of them in his transactions. His final and most ambitious plan was to obtain control of the issue of bonds, secured by goods pledged with the municipal pawnshops, and soon a flood of worthless bonds began to circulate. Though alerted, the police delayed action until Stavisky had disappeared. When traced to a villa near Chamonix he committed suicide to avoid arrest. The scandal mounted as more and more well known people were suspected of being involved, demonstrations in Paris led to the fall of the government and the scandal did much to shake national confidence in the years before World War II.

**Stead, Christina** (Ellen) (1902–1983). Australian novelist. She lived in Europe and the US 1928–74 and achieved international recognition with her scarifying novel *The Man Who Loved Children* (1940). *Dark Places of the Heart* (1966) is the story of a radical lesbian in the north of England.

Rowley, H., *Christina Stead: A biography*. 1993.

**Steele, Sir Richard** (1672–1729). English essayist and dramatist, born in London. He was educated at Charterhouse and Oxford, joined the army, but soon took to writing. His first works were the plays *The Funeral* (1702), *The Lying Lovers* (1703) and *The Tender Husband* (1705). The second of these introduced 'sentimental comedy', which, in contrast with Restoration drama, treated lapses from virtue sentimentally rather than with ribaldry. He started (1709) the *Tatler*, on which he was soon joined by an old school friend, Joseph \*Addison. It contained a mixture of news, social comment, essays etc., and was intended to elevate morals and manners as well to amuse. Steele himself wrote as 'Isaac Bickerstaff'. When the *Tatler* was succeeded by the *Spectator* (1711–12) the two friends again collaborated; the famous character Sir Roger de Coverley was invented by Steele and developed by Addison. Later, however, they became estranged by political quarrels. Steele's association with other papers never achieved the same success. He was a vigorous supporter of \*George I's succession, became a Whig MP (1714) and was knighted (1715). Soon after his last comedy *The Conscious Lovers* (1722) was produced, he left London and died in Wales.

Winton, C., *Captain Steele*. 1964; *Sir Richard Steele*. 1970; Loftis, J., *Steele at Drury Lane*. 1973.

**Steen, Jan** (c.1626–1679). Dutch painter, born at Leyden. One of the liveliest and most prolific of Dutch genre painters, nearly 900 works surviving, his works show a mastery of movement in group scenes, with humour and attention to detail, e.g. *Skittle Players* (1660, National Gallery London) and *The Poultry Yard* (1662, Amsterdam). His satire e.g.

*The Lovesick Maiden*, is gentle, and the colour of such pictures as *The Lute Player* (Wallace Collection London) is of rare delicacy.

**Steer, (Philip) Wilson** (1860–1942). English painter. After studying in London and Paris he was, with \*Sickert, a founder of the New English Art Club. In 1893 he became a teacher at the Slade School. In his early landscapes, e.g. *The Beach of Walberswick* (1890), now in the Tate Gallery, London, he was influenced by \*Whistler. Later he adhered more closely to the traditions of \*Gainsborough and \*Constable, using Impressionist techniques (especially those of \*Monet) though he was not a true Impressionist since he did not paint directly from nature. From c.1900 some of his paintings recall \*Boucher in his rococo period, in others, e.g. *The Muslim Dress* (1910), the exactitude of detail recalls the pre-Raphaelites. The watercolour revival (from c.1918) owed much to Steer's example. He was awarded the OM in 1931.

Rothenstein, J., *Modern English Painters Sickert to Smith*. 1952.

**Stefan, Joseph** (1835–1893). Austrian physicist. His most important work was on radiation, the kinetic theory and hydrodynamics. While professor of physics at Vienna University he discovered the fundamental law of radiation, known as Stefan's Law: that the rate of radiation of energy from a black body is proportional to the fourth power of its absolute temperature. He was a precursor of \*Planck.

**Stefansson, Vilhjalmur** (1879–1962). American anthropologist and explorer, born in Canada of Icelandic parentage. He studied Eskimo life and habits (1908–12) and wrote *My Life with the Eskimo* (1913). Later he did valuable exploratory work in the Arctic and discovered several new islands. He made two attempts to resist a Russian claim to Wrangel Island by planting the Union Jack (1914 and on behalf of Canada 1921–22) but the Soviet Government secured recognition of their sovereignty in 1924. His other books include *Unsolved Mysteries of the Arctic* (1939) and an autobiography, *Discovery* (1964).

**Stein, Sir (Marc) Aurel** (1862–1943). British archaeologist, born in Hungary. Naturalised in 1899, he explored much of central Asia and discovered evidence of cultural exchanges between the Chinese and the Greeks in the period of \*Alexander the Great. Among the regions he visited were China, Turkestan, Persia and Mesopotamia. Knighted in 1912, he died exploring in Afghanistan.

**Stein, St Edith** (Teresa Benedictine of the Cross) (1891–1942). German-Jewish philosopher and martyr, born in Breslau. She rejected her Jewish faith in 1904, became an atheist, and studied philosophy at Göttingen with \*Husserl, winning a PhD in 1916. She became a Catholic convert in 1921, joined the

Carmelites, wrote an important study on St John of the Cross and was murdered at the Auschwitz concentration camp. She was canonised in 1998.

**Stein, Gertrude** (1874–1946). American author, born in Pennsylvania. After studying psychology under William \*James and medicine at Johns Hopkins, she lived in Paris from 1905, first with her brother **Leo Stein**, an art critic, and from 1912 with her lover **Alice B. Toklas** (1877–1967). The main elements in her poetic work include free association and repetition, as in her famous line 'A rose is a rose is a rose'. Her works include *Three Lives* (1909), *Tender Buttons* (1914, poetry), *The Autobiography of Alice B. Toklas* (1933), *Portraits and Prayers* (1939, art criticism), and *Everybody's Autobiography* (1937). She had much influence on modern art movements as well as on literature.

Sprigge, E. M. S., *Gertrude Stein*. 1957; Brinnin, J. M., *The Third Rose*. 1960; Toklas, A. B., *What Is Remembered*. 1963.

**Stein, Karl, Baron von** (1757–1831). German political reformer. His outspoken criticism of the backward political system caused his dismissal (1807) from the Prussian civil service, but he was soon recalled as Chief Minister by \*Friedrich Wilhelm III in the hope of reinvigorating the country after \*Napoleon's victories. He was unable to secure acceptance of representative government but he managed to introduce municipal self-government and abolish serfdom (1807–08). Eventually his opponents, now including the king, forced him to flee and in 1812 he entered Russian service. Tsar \*Aleksandr I sent him to administer East Prussia and to organise resistance to Napoleon but, still unable to carry out reforms, he withdrew into private life (1813).

**Steinbeck, John Ernest** (1902–1968). American novelist, born in California. He first gained notice with the novel *Tortilla Flat* (1935), portraying the lives of Spanish Californian peasants. His masterpiece, *The Grapes of Wrath* (1939) is the story of a typical family of poor farmers in the dust bowl of Oklahoma. In its graphic depiction of human dignity in the face of adversity, it exposed exploitation, hardship and social inequity, and led to reforms, while winning for its author the 1940 Pulitzer Prize. Other works include *Of Mice and Men* (1937), *The Moon is Down* (1942), *Cannery Row* (1943) and *The Wayward Bus* (1947). He received the Nobel Prize for Literature (1962).

Davis, R. M., *Steinbeck: A Collection of Critical Essays*. 1972.

**Steinberg, Saul** (1914–1999). American graphic artist, born in Romania. Trained as an architect in Milan, he lived in the US from 1942 and won fame with his ingenious, penetrating, amusing and deeply disturbing illustrations for the *New Yorker*. He held many one-man exhibitions and his works were often reproduced, e.g. the world view from a New York

perspective. His published collections included *All in Line* (1945), *The Passport* (1954), *The Labyrinth* (1960), *The Inspector* (1973), *The Discovery of America* (1992).

Bair, D., *Saul Steinberg*. 2012.

**Steinem, Gloria** (Marie) (1934–). American feminist writer, born in Ohio. She worked as a journalist in New York, founded *Ms.* magazine in 1972, and was a prolific author whose books include *Outrageous Acts and Everyday Rebellions* (1983).

**Steiner, (Francis) George** (1929–2020). American-Jewish-Austrian philosopher, essayist and critic, born in Paris. His family moved from Vienna to Paris, then to New York in 1940. Educated at Chicago University and Harvard, he was a Rhodes Scholar at Oxford, wrote for *The Economist*, and taught at Princeton, Geneva and Cambridge. He succeeded Edmund \*Wilson as chief book reviewer for the *New Yorker* in 1966. His books include *Tolstoy or Dostoevsky* (1959), *Language and Silence* (1967), *After Babel* (1975), *Portage to San Cristobal of A.H.* (1981) *No Passion Spent* (1996) and the autobiographical *Errata* (1997). He edited *Homer in English* (1996).

**Steiner, Rudolf** (1861–1925). German anthroposophist. First known as editor (1890–97) of \*Goethe's works on natural science, he was a prominent theosophist until he evolved a system of his own known as 'anthroposophy', to develop which he opened (1912) a school (the Goetheanum) near Basle in Switzerland. The system aimed at a restoration of human contact with spiritual reality, lost since the days of myth-making. The fields in which his aims were particularly applicable were medicine, agriculture and education. The special schools his followers set up were often successful, where other educational methods had failed, in preserving the spiritual essence of the subjects taught.

**Steinmetz, Charles Proteus** (1865–1923). American electrical engineer, born in Breslau. He suffered from dwarfism, hip dysplasia and kyphosis and left his native Germany to avoid arrest for his activity as a socialist (1888). He became chief engineer for the General Electric (GE) Company 1893–1923 and was professor of electrical engineering 1902–13 and electrophysics 1913–23 at Union College, Schenectady, New York State. He was a major figure in the development of alternating current (AC) for generation and transmission, following \*Tesla and \*Westinghouse in preference to direct current (DC), advocated by \*Edison. Of his many contributions to electrical engineering the most important are his law of magnetic hysteresis, his notation for alternating-current circuits and his development of lightning arrestors for power transmission lines. He invented the metal halide lamp (1912), an electric car (1914) and flood lighting for sporting events.

**Steinway, Heinrich Engelhard** (originally H. E. Steinweg) (1797–1871). German piano manufacturer. He founded a factory in Brunswick but in 1851, leaving a son to run the German firm, he went to the US to establish a new factory, where pianos were manufactured under the name of Steinway.

**Stendhal** (pen name of Marie-Henri Beyle) (1783–1842). French novelist, born in Grenoble. He served as an administrator in the Napoléonic army in Italy, Germany and Russia, wrote travel sketches, books on the arts etc. and began his psychological analysis of love, *De l'Amour* (1822). He spent many years in Italy or in travel. After the revolution of 1830 he was appointed French consul in Trieste 1830–31 and Civitavecchia 1831–36. In 1830 he published the first of two masterpieces, *Le Rouge et le noir*, a remarkable picture of his times (the 'red' being the army, the 'black' the church) and a penetrating analysis of the character, successes and downfall of its hero, Julien Sorel. His second great novel, *La Chartreuse de Parme* (1839), amid a magnificent medley of politics, diplomacy, plots and counterplots, contains a vivid impression of the Battle of Waterloo, and of life in a small Italian state. After years of illness, he collapsed and died in Paris. His posthumously published works include the unfinished novel *Lucien Leuwen* (1894). Stendhal was little recognised before 1880, but from then his vogue steadily increased. He anticipated both the realism and the psychological approach of modern novelists. 'Stendhal's syndrome' is a term applied to an overpowering reaction, such as palpitations or fainting, caused by exposure to great art or natural beauty, experienced and described by Stendhal during a visit to Santa Croce, Florence, in 1817.

Fowle, W., *Stendhal*. 1969; Wood, M., *Stendhal*. 1971; Leys, S., *With Stendhal*. 2010.

**Stephen, St** (Stéphanos: 'crown' in Greek, possibly Kelil in Aramaic). (c.5–c.34 CE). Jewish proto-martyr. Probably a Hellenistic Jew, he was one of seven deacons in the early church in Jerusalem. Accused of blasphemy, he was tried before the Sanhedrin; his speech is recorded in Acts vii. Condemned, he became the first Christian martyr (after \*Jesus) and was stoned to death. \*Paul (then Saul, not yet converted) was a witness.

**Stephen, St** (István) (c.977–1038). First King of Hungary 1000?–38. Originally known as **Vajk**, from the princely \*Árpád family, he adopted the name of István (Stephen) on baptism. After overcoming rival leaders he was recognised as king by Pope Sylvester II. With this prestige he united and converted the whole country, which he divided into counties and bishoprics. Revered for his exemplary life, he was canonised in 1083. His feast day is 2 August.

**Stephen** (of Blois) (c.1096–1154). King of England 1135–54. Born in Blois, son of the Count of Blois and of Adela, daughter of \*William the Conqueror. When \*Henry I's heir, William Adelin, drowned in the White Ship (1120), Stephen, who was with him, luckily escaped and became a potential claimant to the throne. He was elected king when Henry died (1135) despite having sworn fealty to Henry's daughter \*Matilda. Most of his reign was marked by civil war. For a short time in 1141 he was Matilda's prisoner. After the death of his son (1152) a compromise was reached and he acknowledged Matilda's son, the future \*Henry II, as heir to the throne and her husband, Geoffrey of Anjou (\*Plantagenet) as Duke of Normandy. Stephen was a weak man, unable to control the barons upon whose support he relied.

Davies, R. H. C., *King Stephen*. 1967.

**Stephen, Sir Leslie** (1832–1904). English author and critic, born in London. Son of **Sir James Stephen** (1789–1859), an important figure in the abolition of slavery and Under Secretary for the Colonies 1836–47, he was educated at Eton and Trinity Hall, Cambridge. On becoming an agnostic he gave up his position as a Cambridge don and went to London (1864) to lead a literary life. He contributed to many journals, editor of the *Cornhill Magazine* 1871–82 and of the *Dictionary of National Biography* 1885–91, a field in which his lives of \*Johnson (1878), \*Pope (1880), \*Swift (1882) etc. had shown his preeminence. Meanwhile he had also written his *History of English Thought in the Eighteenth Century* (1876). His main hobby was alpine climbing about which he wrote several books. His first wife was a daughter of \*Thackeray, his daughters by his second wife were Vanessa Bell (Clive \*Bell) and Virginia \*Woolf.

Annan, N. G., *Leslie Stephen*. 1984.

**Stephen, Sir Ninian Martin** (1923–2017). Australian judge and administrator, born in Oxford. He was a barrister in Melbourne, a Victorian Supreme Court justice 1970–72 and a justice of the High Court 1972–82 before his appointment as Governor-General of Australia 1982–89. He was Ambassador for the Environment 1989–92, chaired Anglo-Irish talks on the future of Northern Ireland 1992–93, and became a judge of the international tribunal to try war crimes in the former Yugoslavia. He received a KG in 1994.

**Stephens, Alexander Hamilton** (1812–1883). American politician, born in Georgia. Small and sickly (sometimes called 'the little pale star of Georgia'), he became a lawyer and a Whig Member of the House of Representatives 1843–59. Although he supported slavery, he strongly opposed Georgia's secession from the US and the creation of the Confederacy. Nevertheless he served as Vice President of the Confederate States 1861–65, offering critical

support to Jefferson \*Davis' conduct of the war. He took an important role in the peace negotiations. He wrote *Constitutional View of the Late War between the States* (1868–70), returned to Congress 1873–82 and was Governor of Georgia when he died.

Wilson, E., *Patriotic Gore*. 1962.

**Stephens, James** (1882–1950). Irish writer, born in Dublin. He became known by *The Crock of Gold* (1912), *The Demi-Gods* (1914) and other prose fantasies in which fairies and mortals (e.g. policemen) meet on natural and familiar terms; the author's rhythmic style and happy use of Irish idiom adding a special charm. His collected poems appeared in 1921. Other books include *Deirdre* (1923) and *Etched in Moonlight* (1928).

**Stephenson, George** (1781–1848). English railway engineer, born in Northumberland. His parents were illiterate; his father, a fireman, worked on a \*Newcomen engine in a colliery. George had no formal education until the age of 17, when he began work as an engineman in a pumping station. He devised several improvements to pumping machines and in his spare time taught himself engineering and mathematics. He won a prize of £1,000 for inventing a miner's safety lamp (1815) and became involved in a controversy with Humphry Davy who had independently invented a similar lamp. A year earlier he had built his first colliery locomotive. He constructed (1825) the first public railway between Stockton and Darlington, Durham (on which, however, horses were still used for passenger trains). He surveyed and constructed the 28 mile (45 km) railway line between Manchester and Liverpool, which was opened in 1830. His engine *The Rocket* won (1829) a prize of £500 for maintaining an average speed of 29 mph (46.6 kph). The Stephensons' 'standard gauge' for railways (4 feet 8½ inches: 1,435 mm) is still widely used. At his works at Newcastle, managed from 1827 by his son, **Robert Stephenson** (1803–1859), most of the notable locomotives for the next generation were made, and the two constructed many other railway lines in England and Scotland. George invested successfully in coal mining. Robert later became famous as a bridge builder, his works including the well known suspension bridges over the Menai Straits and at Conway in North Wales, as well as the Victoria Bridge over the St Lawrence at Montréal. George became the first President of the Institute of Mechanical Engineers 1847–48; Robert followed in 1849–53. A Tory MP 1847–59, Robert opposed extending education to the working class. He was elected FRS, buried in Westminster Abbey, but, like his father, declined all British honours.

Rolt, L. T. C., *George Stephenson*. 1960; *George and Robert Stephenson: The Railway Revolution*. 1984; Ross, D., *George and Robert Stephenson: A Passion for Success*. 2004.

**Stern, Isaac** (1920–2001). American violinist, born in the Ukraine. His family moved to San Francisco in 1921. He toured internationally from 1947, and made many recordings and some films. He was identified with non-musical causes e.g. conservation and peace.

**Sterne, Laurence** (1713–1768). English novelist, born in Ireland. His great-grandfather was an archbishop of York, his father was a brave but erratic ensign in the army. Sterne's childhood was spent in camps and billets. At 17 when his father died, he was left penniless. However, with a cousin's help he went to Jesus College, Cambridge and in 1737 entered the Church. In 1737 he began his highly elaborate courtship of Elizabeth Lumley, even a handkerchief or a plate she had used called for a display of sensitivity, and through his letters he introduced the word 'sentimental' to her and to the world. They were married in 1741, but the marriage soon faltered. Elizabeth became cantankerous and even, at times, insane. This gave Sterne freedom to pay frequent visits to 'Crazy Castle', the home of an eccentric Cambridge friend, John Hall-Stevenson, where he found Rabelaisian conversation, much wine and a library filled with rare (often obscene) books. Stimulated by such influences and by an eager flirtation with Mademoiselle Fourmantele (the 'dear, dear Jenny' of his forthcoming masterpiece), he started writing *The Life and Opinions of Tristram Shandy*, an extraordinary medley of reminiscence and opinion, narrative and digression, in which Walter Shandy (Tristram's father and obviously modelled on Sterne's father), 'my uncle Toby', and Corporal Trim play the leading roles. The first two books, published in York at his own expense, appeared in 1759 and were immediately acclaimed. Sterne went to London and was lionised by Lord \*Chesterfield, \*Garrick and others. His portrait was painted by \*Reynolds and more volumes were commissioned (volumes 3–6, 1761–62, volumes 7 and 8, 1765, volume 9, 1767). Success and dissipation exacerbated Sterne's normal ill-health. He lived in Toulouse 1762–63 and in Paris was welcomed by \*Diderot and others and joined by his wife and daughter. A tour of France and Italy, begun in 1764, provided material for *A Sentimental Journey* (1768), the other work by which he is remembered. He died during a visit to London to supervise the publication of Volume 9 of *Tristram Shandy*. Its importance was recognised at once, being praised by \*Voltaire, \*Diderot, \*Burns, \*Goethe and \*Pushkin and later (surprisingly) by Karl \*Marx. Samuel \*Johnson was a notable dissenter and predicted, 'It will not last.' Among writers deeply influenced by *Tristram Shandy* have been \*Gogol, \*Tolstoy, \*Thackeray, James \*Joyce, Flann \*O'Brien, Machado \*de Assis, Spike \*Milligan, Italo \*Calvino, Thomas \*Pynchon, and Salman \*Rushdie. *Tristram Shandy: A Cock and Bull Story* (2005), a half-feature film/half-documentary, directed by Michael

Winterbottom, about the impossibility of filming the novel, is available online and is an excellent introduction to Sterne's masterpiece.

Howes, A. B., *Sterne The Critical Heritage*. 1974; Cash, A., *Laurence Sterne*. 2 vol. 1975; 1986.

**Stettinius, Edward Reilly, Jr** (1900–1949). American administrator. He resigned the presidency of the US Steel Corporation to become Lend-Lease administrator 1941–43. After being Undersecretary of State 1943–44 he succeeded Cordell \*Hull as Secretary 1944–45. Under \*Truman he served as US Ambassador to the United Nations 1945–46, resigning to become Rector of the University of Virginia 1946–49.

**Stevens, Nettie Maria** (1861–1912). American geneticist, born in Vermont. She gained a PhD from Bryn Mawr, was influenced by \*Mendel and worked with T. H. \*Morgan. In 1905 she identified the distinction between male and female sex chromosomes. She died of breast cancer.

**Stevens, Thaddeus** (1792–1868). American Republican politician, born in Vermont. A lawyer, as a US Congressman from Pennsylvania 1849–53, 1859–68, he developed a detestation of slavery. After the Civil War he was the leader of the Radical Republicans who campaigned to ensure that free slaves could have access to land and the right to vote in the former Confederacy, ending white supremacy. The driving force behind the impeachment of President Andrew \*Johnson, who tried, however ineffectively, to carry out \*Lincoln's plans for reconciliation. Disappointment over Johnson's acquittal may have hastened Stevens' own death.

**Stevens, Wallace** (1879–1955). American poet, born in Pennsylvania. He worked for the Hartford Accident and Indemnity Company from 1916 and was its Vice President 1934–55. His first book, *Harmonium* (1923), was followed by a number of volumes, e.g. *Ideas of Order* (1935) and *The Man with the Blue Guitar* (1937). *The Necessary Angel* (1951) is a volume of essays. In his poems Stevens uses the techniques of Impressionism and Symbolism to explore the creative imagination and aesthetics at a time when belief was in decline. His *Collected Poems* (1954) won him the National Book Award (his second) and the Pulitzer Prize in 1955.

Kermode, F., *Wallace Stevens*. 1960.

**Stevenson, Adlai E(wing)** (1900–1965). American politician, born in Los Angeles. His grandfather **Adlai E(wing) Stevenson** (1835–1914) was \*Cleveland's Vice President 1893–97. Educated at Princeton, Harvard and Northwestern, he practised law in Chicago from 1926. After 1933 he served in Washington as legal assistant in several New Deal agencies and during World War II was Assistant Secretary of the Navy 1941–44 and Assistant Secretary

of State 1944–45. As Governor of Illinois 1949–53 he carried out many reforms. After \*Truman decided to retire in 1952, he promoted Stevenson as Democratic presidential candidate. Although reluctant to run (he would have preferred 1956 or 1960), Stevenson won nomination over Estes \*Kefauver and **Richard Russell**, losing to \*Eisenhower in the November election, with 44 per cent of the vote. Democratic nominee again in 1956 (although Truman switched his support to \*Harriman), he went on to a second defeat by Eisenhower, with only 42 per cent of the vote. His campaign speeches were published under the titles *Call to Greatness* (1954) and *What I Think* (1956). He was attacked as an ‘egghead’ at a deeply anti-intellectual period in US history. President \*Kennedy appointed him Ambassador to the United Nations, an office he retained under President \*Johnson (1961–65). Known for his liberal outlook and high intellectual integrity, he collapsed and died in the street in London. His son **Adlai E(wing) Stevenson III** (1930– ) was US Senator from Illinois 1970–81.

McKeever, P., *Adlai Stevenson: His Life and Legacy*. 1989.

**Stevenson, Robert** (1772–1850). Scottish engineer. He succeeded his stepfather (1796) as first engineer to the Northern Lighthouse Commission and during his 47 years of office constructed 23 lighthouses round the Scottish coasts, including the famous Bell Rock (1807). He also invented the system of intermittently flashing lights which enable a particular lighthouse to be identified. He was the grandfather of Robert Louis \*Stevenson.

**Stevenson, Robert Louis** (Balfour) (1850–1894). Scottish novelist, essayist and poet, born in Edinburgh. He suffered from tuberculosis as a child, studied engineering and then law, but abandoned both for writing. On a canal tour in France and Belgium, which provided the subject of his first book, *An Inland Voyage* (1878), he met **Mrs Fanny Osbourne** (née Van de Grift) (1840–1914), they married in California (1880), and her son, **Lloyd Osbourne** (1868–1947), was later his companion and collaborator. Meanwhile *Travels with a Donkey in the Cevennes* (1879) had recalled another journey. Before embarking on the novels that made him famous he had written the essays collected as *Virginibus Puerisque* (1881) and *Familiar Studies of Men and Books* (1882), as well as the tales of fantasy in *The New Arabian Nights* (1882). In 1881 he started *Treasure Island* (1883), the first and most famous of his series of exciting and imaginative adventure stories, which combined Scott’s historical method with the clarity and brevity of his own distinctive style. This was followed by *Kidnapped* (1886), *The Black Arrow* (1888), *The Master of Ballantrae* (1889) and *Catriona* (1893). Another immensely popular work was *The Strange Case of Dr Jekyll and Mr Hyde* (1886), in which the conflict of good and evil in a man’s nature is symbolically treated in a macabre and

exciting tale. Stevenson undertook a tour of the South Seas (1889) for the sake of his health and settled in Samoa with his wife and stepson. Given the title of ‘Tusitala’ (‘teller of tales’), he died there of a cerebral haemorrhage. Three of his last books, *The Wrong Box* (1889), *The Wrecker* (1892) and *The Ebb Tide* (1894), were written in collaboration with Lloyd Osbourne; *St Ives* (1897, completed by Arthur \*Quiller-Couch) and *Weir of Hermiston* (1896), a masterpiece, were left unfinished. The best remembered of his poems are contained in *A Child’s Garden of Verses* (1885).

Cooper, L., *Robert Louis Stevenson*. 1947; Furnas, J. C., *Voyage to Windward: The Life of Robert Louis Stevenson*. 1951.

**Stevin** (Stevinus), **Simon** (1548–1620). Flemish mathematician, born at Bruges. He studied law at Leyden University. He contributed to the development of algebraic notation and of decimals and put forward (1586) the law of equilibrium of a body on an inclined plane and a partial statement of the parallelogram of forces, disproving the concept of perpetual motion. He pioneered the science of hydrostatics. In 1586 he demonstrated that objects of different weights fall to the ground from the same distance at an identical speed—an experiment generally credited to \*Galileo. He measured magnetic declination, identifying 43 areas of variation. He wrote in Dutch, being one of the first great scientists to reject Latin. He was also well known as a military engineer and for his work on land drainage.

**Stewart** (or Stuart). Scottish dynasty which ruled in Scotland from 1371 and in England from 1603, when James VI of Scotland became \*James I of England. It stemmed from the marriage of Walter, hereditary high steward (hence the family name) of Scotland, to Marjorie, daughter of Robert \*Bruce. Their son \*Robert II was the first Stewart king. From the time of \*Mary Queen of Scots, whose second husband was Henry Stuart, Lord \*Darnley, the French spelling became the commoner spelling. The dynasty ceased to reign when \*George, elector of Hanover, succeeded Queen \*Anne (1714). The last Stewart/ Stuart in the direct line was Henry, Cardinal \*York who died in 1807.

Ashley, M., *The House of Stuart*. 1980.

**Stewart, Dugald** (1753–1828). Scottish philosopher and mathematician, born in Edinburgh. A disciple of Adam \*Ferguson, Adam \*Smith and Thomas \*Reid, he was a proponent of ‘common sense’ and an opponent of David \*Hume. He taught \*Scott, Sydney \*Smith, \*Brougham and \*Palmerston.

**Stewart, James** (Maitland) (1908–1997). American film and stage actor. Between 1935 and 1981 he appeared in 80 films, including *Mr Smith Goes to Washington* (1939), *The Philadelphia Story* (Academy Award, 1940), *Harvey* (1950), *Anatomy of a Murder* (1959) and four directed by Alfred \*Hitchcock, *Rope* (1948), *Rear Window* (1954), *The Man Who Knew Too*

*Much* (1956) and *Vertigo* (1958). An active, hawkish Republican, he received the Presidential Medal of Freedom in 1985.

**Stewart, Sir Patrick** (1940– ). English actor, born in Yorkshire. He won international recognition in television series, as Captain Picard in *Star Trek: The Next Generation* and Prof. Charles Xavier in *X Men*. Active with the Royal Shakespeare Company, he was compelling as Prospero, Antony, Claudius and Macbeth, and excelled in \*Beckett.

**Stiglitz, Joseph Eugene** (1943– ). American economist, born in Indiana. He studied at MIT and Chicago, taught at Cambridge, Oxford, Princeton and Columbia universities and was chief economist of the World Bank 1997–2000. He also produced economic modelling for the International Panel on Climate Change (IPCC). He shared the Nobel Prize for Economics in 2001 for his work on 'information asymmetry' and the operation of markets. *The Price of Inequality: How Today's Divided Society Endangers Our Future* (2012) was a bestseller.

**Stikker, Dirk Uipko** (1897–1979). Dutch politician and banker. He helped to finance the Resistance movement in World War II. He revived (1946) the liberal Freedom party, was Foreign Secretary in the coalition of 1948–52, Ambassador to Great Britain 1952–58 and Secretary-General of NATO 1961–64.

**Stilicho, Flavius** (c.365–408). Roman soldier. He was appointed by the emperor \*Theodosius I (whose niece he had married) to be guardian of his son and successor Honorius. For several years, in the east, in Greece, Africa and Italy he held back the waves of barbarians who were engulfing the empire. Some of his most spectacular victories were gained (401–03) in northern Italy against \*Alaric, leader of the Visigoths. Stilicho was suspected of aspiring to become Emperor himself. He was killed in a military revolt. Shortly afterwards, Alaric's army reached Rome.

**Stilwell, Joseph Warren** (1883–1946). American soldier. He became known as an authority on China, where he was military attaché in the years preceding World War II. As deputy to \*Chiang Kaishek, he commanded a Chinese-American force in Burma which acted in cooperation with the forces based on India against the Japanese. He became (1945) Deputy Supreme Commander of Allied Forces in Southeast Asia. No orthodox soldier, he was difficult to work with, hence his nickname 'Vinegar Joe' but of his courage and ability there is no doubt.

**Stimson, Henry Lewis** (1867–1950). American lawyer and administrator. A Republican, he twice served as US Secretary of War, first under \*Taft 1911–13, and during World War II 1940–45 under Franklin D. \*Roosevelt and \*Truman. He was Governor-General of the Philippines 1927–29 and, as \*Hoover's Secretary of State 1929–33, proposed the 'Stimson doctrine'

in opposition to Japan's aggression in Manchuria. He took the ultimate responsibility in recommending that President Truman use the atomic bomb against Japan (1945). The term 'World War II' was his coinage.

Hodgson, G., *The Colonel. The Life and Wars of Henry Stimson*. 1990.

**Stinnes, Hugo** (1870–1924). German industrialist. He inherited a large concern he built up into a vast industrial empire, which made him an almost symbolic representative of acquisitive man. To river transport, coal mining and distribution he added shipping and shipbuilding, electricity, oil, motor cars and newspapers, his tentacles spread into almost every trade and industry. In 1920 he became a member of the Reichstag.

**Stockhausen, Karlheinz** (1928–2007). German composer. He studied under \*Messiaen and was part of the *Musique Concrète* group in Paris, experimenting with compositions based on electronic sounds. He wrote choral, orchestral and instrumental works, sometimes combining electronic with normal sonorities, and *avant garde* piano compositions.

**Stokes, Sir George Gabriel, 1st Baronet** (1819–1903). British mathematician and physicist, born in Sligo. After graduating with the highest honours at Cambridge University he became Lucasian professor of mathematics 1849–1903. Elected (1851) a fellow of the Royal Society, he was its president 1885–90. He won the Rumford Medal (1853) and the Copley Medal (1893). He was a Tory MP for Cambridge 1887–92 and he played a major part in the development of hydrodynamics and aerodynamics. His contributions to optics were also important, e.g. his work on spectrum analysis (1852) and his explanation of fluorescence and phosphorescence (1878).

Wilson, D. B., *Kelvin & Stokes*. 1987.

**Stokowski, Leopold** (Anthony) (1882–1977). American conductor, born in London. Of Polish-Irish parentage, he studied at the Royal College of Music and was organist at St James', Piccadilly 1902–05 and St Bartholomew's, New York 1905–09. He conducted the Cincinnati Symphony Orchestra 1909–12, the Philadelphia Orchestra 1912–36, the New York Philharmonic 1946–50 and the Houston Symphony Orchestra 1955–60. He made acoustic recordings from 1917, the world's first electric recording of an orchestra in April 1925 and continued until his death. He collaborated with Walt \*Disney in the film *Fantasia* (1940). In 1962 he founded the American Symphony Orchestra, based in New York. Stokowski premiered about 2,000 works in his long career.

**Stolypin, Pyotr Arkadievich** (1862–1911). Russian lawyer and politician. As a conservative Prime Minister 1906–11, he endeavoured to keep the Duma in being as an adjunct of government, under strict control, but not to suppress it. He combated revolutionary

movements by severe repression accompanied by measures of social reform. He introduced changes in land tenure aimed at turning the peasants into satisfied and loyal small land holders, but these reforms, partly achieved, came too late to check the growing unrest. He opposed \*Rasputin, whom he sent briefly into exile in 1911 and was murdered by a secret agent.

**Stone, 'Biz'** (Christopher Isaac) (1974– ). American entrepreneur, born in Massachusetts. With Jack \*Dorsey, he was co-founder of Twitter in 2006, became active in environmental causes and a Visiting Fellow at Exeter College, Oxford.

**Stone, Harlan Fiske** (1872–1946). American jurist. Dean of Columbia University law school 1910–24, he served as US Attorney-General 1924–25, a justice of the US Supreme Court 1925–41 and Chief Justice 1941–46. A moderate liberal, he upheld much New Deal legislation and the right of dissent in civil liberties cases.

**Stone, Oliver** (1946– ). American writer and film director. He won Academy awards for *Midnight Express* (screenplay, 1978), *Platoon* (direction, 1986) and *Born on the 4th of July* (direction, 1989). He also directed *JFK* (1991) and *Nixon* (1995).

**Stopes, Marie Charlotte Carmichael** (1880–1958). English pioneer of women's rights. As the first female science lecturer, on palaeobotany, at Manchester University (1904), she developed a passionate interest in eugenics and birth control, on which she wrote several books, e.g. *Married Love* (1918) which broke new and unconventional ground. She founded the first birth control clinic in Britain (1921), a step that inspired similar clinics in other countries. She also wrote poetry and was deeply interested in drama.

Hall, R., *Marie Stopes*. 1977.

**Stoppard, Sir Tom** (né Tomáš Stráussler) (1937– ). English playwright and screenwriter, born in Zlin, Czechoslovakia. He escaped with his parents in 1939, first to Singapore, where his father died, then to Darjeeling, India. All four grandparents died in the Holocaust. His mother remarried and settled in England in 1946. He left school at 17, and became a journalist. His first stage play was *Rosencrantz and Guildenstern are Dead* (1967). Later successes include *Jumpers* (1972), *Travesties* (1974), *Undiscovered Country* (1980), *Habgood* (1988) and *Arcadia* (1993). He also wrote radio and television plays. His humour is based on juggling with philosophical concepts and on brilliant word play. He received the OM in 2000. *The Coast of Utopia* (2002), is a trilogy (*Voyage*, *Shipwreck*, *Salvage*) about \*Bakunin and \*Herzen. Later works include a screenplay for the film *Anna Karenina* (2012) and the stage play *Leopoldstadt* (2019).

Lee, H., *Tom Stoppard. A Life*. 2021.

**Stout, Rex Todhunter** (1886–1975). American author. After a varied career he made enough money to retire from business in 1929 and devoted himself to writing. He created the fictional detective Nero Wolfe (loosely based on Mycroft Holmes).

**Stow, John** (c.1525–1605). English chronicler and antiquarian. As well as doing original work he translated and summarised much of the work of earlier chroniclers. He is best known for *A Survey of London* (1598–1603), which gives valuable information about Elizabethan London and the customs and lives of its inhabitants.

**Stow, (Julian) Randolph** (1935–2010). Australian novelist and poet, born in Western Australia. His novels included *To the Islands* (1958), *Tourmaline* (1963), *Visitants* (1979) and *The Suburbs of Hell* (1984). His works won major awards but he retreated to England in the 1960s.

Falkiner, S., *Mick: A Life of Randolph Stow*. 2016.

**Stowe, Harriet Elizabeth Beecher** (1811–1896). American author. Sister of Henry Ward \*Beecher, the preacher, she is remembered almost solely for her famous anti-slavery novel, *Uncle Tom's Cabin* (1851–52). In the years before the Civil War this book did much to solidify the movement in the north against slavery.

Wagenknecht, E., *Harriet Beecher Stowe*. 1965.

**Strabo** (= squint-eyed) (64 BCE–25 CE). Greek geographer, born in Amasia, Asia Minor. Of wealthy parents, he was Greek by language and culture but studied in Rome, specialising in geography, and became a convert to Stoicism. He travelled quite extensively, going up the Nile as far as Aswan and exploring the Ethiopian frontier. The only work of Strabo's that has survived is his *Geographica*. This was compiled more from reading than from personal observation, though he had travelled extensively as far east as Armenia and as far south as Ethiopia. Most of his sources were Greek and have been lost. He attempted a complete geography, which would tackle the questions of the globe from the mathematical, physical, topographical and political points of view. Strabo saw the known world as a single landmass comprising Africa, Asia and Europe, entirely north of the Equator, though he speculated on the existence of one or more southern continents. He thought the known world was about 11,000 km long, from East to West, and 5,000 km from North to South. He saw the Middle Territories of the Mediterranean as the cradle of civilisation. His detailed accounts of Spain, Asia Minor and Egypt are of high quality, other parts he knew less well. Strabo showed some interest in geophysics. He was aware of the role of earthquakes and volcanoes in changing the face of the globe, and he thought the Mediterranean had perhaps been a lake which had overflowed through the Straits of Gibraltar. He also studied the development of river



deltas. Amongst ancient geographers, Strabo is the leading physical geographer, whereas \*Ptolemy excelled him as a mathematical geographer.

**Strachey, (Giles) Lytton** (1880–1932). English biographer. Educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, and one of the 'Bloomsbury' group, his *Eminent Victorians* (1918), in which with brilliant satire he amusingly, but often unfairly, dissected the lives and characters of some of the great figures in 19th-century history, created a literary sensation and started a fashion for 'debunking'. His other works include *Queen Victoria* (1921), *Elizabeth and Essex* (1928) and *Portraits in Miniature* (1931). Although gay, from 1917 he shared a house with the painter **Dora Carrington** (1894–1932), who loved him. Their lives were dramatised in the film *Carrington* (1995).

Holroyd, M., *Lytton Strachey*. 1968.

**Stradivari** (Stradivarius), **Antonio** (1644–1737). Italian violin maker. The best known member of a family from Cremona, a pupil of Nicolo \*Amati, he brought violin-making to its highest point of perfection. In later life he was helped by his sons, **Francesco Stradivari** (1671–1743) and **Omobono Stradivari** (1679–1742).

**Strafford, Thomas Wentworth, 1st Earl of** (1593–1641). English administrator. A member of a rich and distinguished Yorkshire family, he entered parliament in 1614 and became an opponent of \*Buckingham and the court party and supported the Petition of Right (1628). His opposition to the royal government was based on the grounds of inefficiency and petty illegality and he showed none of the political and religious ideals of his colleagues. He had an opportunity of putting into practice his plans for strong, honest, efficient government when he was appointed President of the Council of the North (1628) and still more so when, as Lord Deputy in Ireland 1633–40, he demonstrated the method of government he described as 'thorough'. If \*Charles I (who had made him Earl of Strafford in 1639) had followed his advice to bring troops from Ireland and overcome his Scottish and English opponents by force, history might have taken a different course, but Charles procrastinated. When at last the Scottish war forced him to call what became the Long Parliament, Strafford was impeached unsuccessfully. An Act of Attainder was passed by both Houses. Partly to divert hostility from the queen, Charles finally gave the royal assent. His betrayal of Strafford haunted him throughout the coming years until he suffered similar execution.

Wedgwood, C. V., *Thomas Wentworth*. 1961.

**Strange, Lord, Ferdinando Stanley**, later **5th Earl of Derby** (1559–1594). English nobleman, patron and poet. Through his mother, he was in the line of succession to \*Elizabeth I. A patron of

\*Spenser, \*Marlowe and \*Shakespeare, he promoted a theatre troupe, 'Lord Strange's Men', later 'The Lord Chamberlain's Men', later still 'The King's Men', and was a singer and (probably) poet. He died mysteriously, probably by poison.

**Strasser, Gregor** (1892–1934). German Nazi politician. A prosperous pharmacist, he joined the Nazis in 1921, led the radical wing of the party in Berlin from 1926, and was regarded as a rival to \*Hitler until his murder in the 'Night of the Long Knives' (\*Rohm).

**Stratford de Redcliffe, 1st Viscount, Stratford Canning** *see* **Canning, Stratford, 1st Viscount Stratford de Redcliffe**

**Strathcona and Mount Royal, Donald Alexander Smith, 1st Baron** (1820–1914). Canadian administrator, born in Scotland. He rose from clerk to Governor of the Hudson Bay Company 1838–99 but his name is chiefly associated with the construction of the Canadian Pacific Railway, the first to cross the country from coast to coast. He endowed McGill University and raised and equipped Strathcona's Horse for service in the Boer War. He was High Commissioner in London 1896–1914 and became the first Canadian peer (1897).

**Strato of Lampsacus** (d.c.271/268 BCE). Greek philosopher, born on the Asian coast of the Hellespont. He moved to Athens to study at \*Aristotle's school under \*Theophrastus. After spending some time in Alexandria as tutor to the future Ptolemy II, Strato returned to Athens to lead the Lyceum on the death of Theophrastus, a position he occupied between 287 and the time of his death about 268. None of Strato's writings has survived, but much is known about them from accounts by other authors. He set himself the task of teaching Aristotelian doctrine, and he seems throughout his life to have been an orthodox follower of the philosopher. But he was also concerned to shape an interpretation of Aristotle in a particular direction, that is, to stress the purely naturalistic elements in Aristotle's thought. He stripped Aristotelianism of its religious and transcendental elements, and emphasised material causality. Strato thus underlined the difference between Aristotle's naturalism and \*Plato's idealist views. He saw causality and force residing in natural objects themselves, rather than guiding them from above. He had no place for Aristotle's 'quintessence', preferring to see phenomena as the product of the mingling of the four elements, earth, air, fire and water. Strato was consistent in his discussion of man. He denied an immaterial soul. He thought intellect resided in the brain, and communicated itself to other parts of the body by some sort of 'air'. He was one of the most distinguished disciples of Aristotle, and of great influence in the ancient and medieval world.

**Straus, Oscar** (1870–1954). Austrian composer. He won fame by his Viennese operettas, especially *Waltz Dream* (1907) and *The Chocolate Soldier* (1908), based on \*Shaw's *Arms and the Man*.

**Strauss, David Friedrich** (1808–1874). German biblical critic. In his most celebrated work, *The Life of Jesus* (2 volumes, 1835–36, translated by George \*Eliot, 1846), he applied the methods of literary criticism to the Gospels in an attempt to sift historical truth from what he held to be myth. This departure in biblical criticism was greeted with such hostility that his whole life was embittered and his academic career destroyed.

**Strauss, Franz-Josef** (1915–1988). German politician, born in Munich. Already prominent in Bavarian politics, he entered the Federal Bundestag in 1949. There, as leader of the Christian Social Union (the Bavarian counterpart of the Christian Democrats), he soon became prominent as \*Adenauer's Minister of Defence 1956–62. His arbitrary arrests (for alleged revelation of military secrets) of the proprietor and editorial staff of *Der Spiegel* (1962) forced his resignation, but he kept his popularity in Bavaria and with his party. He returned as Finance Minister 1966–69, served as minister-president (i.e. premier) of Bavaria 1978–88, and was the unsuccessful candidate of the CDU-CSU Coalition for Chancellor (1980).

**Strauss, Johann** (1825–1899). Austrian composer, born in Vienna. His father, **Johann Strauss the elder** (1804–1849), also wrote waltzes but is best known for his famous *Radetzky March* (1848). The younger Johann Strauss wrote over 400 waltzes, including *The Emperor*, *Voices of Spring*, *Tales from the Vienna Woods* and, most popular of all, *The Blue Danube* (1867). In later life he wrote 16 operettas of which the best known is *Die Fledermaus* (*The Bat*, 1874). These works, like the waltzes, display the composer's melodic spontaneity and verve, his sense of style and skill in orchestration. His brother **Josef Strauss** (1827–1870), a composer, was also a poet, painter and inventor. His works include *Music of the Spheres*, *Delirium*, and *Village Swallows*.

**Strauss, Richard** (Georg) (1864–1949). German composer and conductor, born in Munich. Son of **Franz-Josef Strauss** (1822–1905), a virtuoso horn player who married into a brewing family, he was no relation to Johann \*Strauss. Largely self-taught as a composer, his first major work was the Horn Concerto No. 1 (1882, No. 2 dates from 1942). As a protégé of Hans von \*Bulow, he gained conducting experience (1885–96) at opera houses in Meiningen, Munich and Weimar, becoming Chief Conductor at the Munich Opera (1896–98) and the Berlin Royal Court Opera (1898–1910) and joint Director of the Vienna State Opera (1919–24). Influenced by \*Liszt and \*Wagner, he wrote a series of dramatic symphonic poems, e.g. *Macbeth* (1888, revised 1891), *Don Juan* (1889), *Tod*

*und Verklärung* (1889), *Till Eulenspiegel* (1895), *Also sprach Zarathustra* (1896), *Don Quixote* (1897) and *Ein Heldenleben* (1898). While in his 30s he was recognised as the greatest German composer since Wagner and \*Brahms. He wrote almost 200 songs (many of his best in the 1890s), and a monologue for speaker and piano, *Enoch Arden* (1897, after \*Tennyson). Strauss wrote 15 operas, and they include his finest music. *Salome* (1905), based on \*Wilde's play, was attacked as lurid, salacious and blasphemous, but this only aided its success. *Elektra* (1909), which Hugo von \*Hofmannsthal adapted from his own play, was denounced for its polytonality and extreme modernity. His masterpiece *Der Rosenkavalier* (1909–10), a neoclassical comedy of manners, with libretto by Hofmannsthal, set in Vienna of 1740, paid obvious homage to \*Mozart. It premiered in Dresden in January 1911. His other operas include *Ariadne auf Naxos* (1912), *Die ägyptische Helena* (1928) and *Arabella* (1933), all with Hofmannsthal's dialogue, and *Capriccio* (1941). In the 1930s Strauss' creative powers waned and he unwisely accepted an appointment as President of the Reich Music Chamber under \*Hitler (1933), however, he was able to protect Jewish relatives by marriage. During 1942–48 he experienced a remarkable 'Indian summer': works of his last period include *Metamorphosen* (for 23 strings, 1945), an oboe concerto (1945) and the *Four Last Songs* (1948). Strauss was in \*Ravel's class as an orchestrator but his writing for voice was even finer, and only Mozart equalled him in setting the high soprano.

Krause, E., *Richard Strauss, the Man and his Work*. 1964; del Mar, N., *Richard Strauss*. 1972.

**Stravinsky, Igor Feodorovich** (1882–1971). Russian composer, born in Oranienbaum, near St Petersburg. Son of a famous operatic bass, he studied law but devoted himself to music from 1902, and was for three years a pupil of \*Rimsky-Korsakov in instrumentation. Reacting against \*Wagner's music, he evolved a strikingly original but emotionally neutral style, influenced by \*Debussy and Russian folk music. For Sergei \*Diaghilev's Ballets Russes he wrote three great scores that made him famous: *The Firebird* (*L'Oiseau de feu*, 1910), *Petrushka* (1911), and *The Rite of Spring* (*Le Sacre du Printemps*, 1913), the last a savage and mysterious evocation of primitive fertility dances employing a large orchestra, blazing colour and savage dissonance which caused a riot at its premiere under Pierre \*Monteux in Paris, the audience having to be ejected by police. In the final 'Sacrificial dance', a young girl whirls herself to death to appease the gods. *The Rite* reached a wider audience through Walt \*Disney's film *Fantasia* (1940), in a 21 minute (Stravinsky thought 'mutilated') version, with images of nebulae, the creation of the earth, erupting volcanoes, amoebae, rampaging dinosaurs and solar eclipses.

Stravinsky lived in France 1910–14 and in Switzerland 1914–20, returning to France 1920–39. In the works of his second period (1914–20) he evolved a new style, abandoning the huge orchestra

and blazing colour of *The Rite of Spring* for an austere preoccupation with line and structure. They include *The Soldier's Tale* (1918, for narrator, three actors and seven instruments), *The Wedding* (*Svadebka/Les Noces*, 1923, vocalists, four pianos and percussion), *Symphonies of wind instruments* (1920) and songs. In a third, neoclassical, period (1920–32) he wrote the ballets *Pulcinella* (1920, after Pergolesi), *Apollo* (1928, for strings), and *The Fairy's Kiss* (1928, after \*Tchaikovsky), the opera-oratorio *Oedipus rex* (1927, set to \*Cocteau's Latin text), the *Symphony of Psalms* (1930) and a violin concerto. His fourth period (1932–52) was both eclectic and prolific, marked by varied influences ranging from plainsong, \*Bach, \*Beethoven, \*Verdi, through jazz and swing. Music included the ballets *The Card Party* (1936), and *Orpheus* (1947), *Symphony in C* (1940), *Symphony in three movements* (1945), a *Mass* (1944), and the opera *The Rake's Progress* (1951, libretto by W. H. \*Auden and Chester Kallman), based on \*Hogarth's drawings. Stravinsky became a French citizen in 1934, lived in the US from 1939 and was naturalised in 1945. His fifth period (from 1952) was influenced by the serial techniques of \*Schoenberg and, especially, \*Berg in such works as *In memoriam Dylan Thomas* (1954), the ballet *Agon* (1957), *Threni* (Lamentations of Jeremiah, 1958), two *Masses*, a cantata, *Abraham and Isaac* (1963, baritone and chamber orchestra) and *Requiem Canticles* (1966). There are obvious parallels between Stravinsky and \*Picasso, exact contemporaries who created new traditions and worked in a diversity of styles, from a brutalist mode to neo-classical. Stravinsky made many recordings and toured the world as a conductor of his own works, visiting Australia and Africa in 1961 and making a triumphant return to Russia in 1962. He published an autobiography in 1935 and collaborated with Robert Craft in two volumes of *Conversations* (1959, 1962). He had enormous curiosity about literature, mathematics and aesthetics, and for two generations was the greatest figure in 20th-century music. He died in New York and was buried in the St Michele cemetery, Venice.

White, E. W., *Stravinsky: The Composer and his Works*. 1966; Young, P. M., *Stravinsky*. 1966; Craft, R., *Stravinsky: The Chronicle of a Friendship*. 1972.

**Straw, Jack** (John Whitaker) (1946– ). English Labour politician. He graduated in law from Leeds, became an MP 1979–2015, serving as Home Secretary 1997–2001, Foreign Secretary 2001–06 and Leader of the House of Commons 2006–07. Secretary of State for Justice and Lord Chancellor 2007–10, he was the first lord chancellor since 1578 to be a Member of the House of Commons.

**Strawson, Sir Peter Frederick** (1919–2006). British philosopher, born in London. Educated at Oxford, he taught there from 1947 and was Waynfleet professor

of metaphysical philosophy 1968–87. He worked on 'descriptive metaphysics' and was a rigorous critic of Bertrand \*Russell's philosophical logic.

**Streep, Meryl** (née Mary Louise) (1949– ). American actor. Nominated for more Academy Awards (21) and Golden Globes (29) than any other film actor, she won both for *Kramer vs. Kramer* (1980), *Sophie's Choice* (1983) and *The Iron Lady* (2012). Her greatest portrayals included Lindy Chamberlain, Isak \*Dinesen, Margaret \*Thatcher and Florence Foster \*Jenkins. Barack \*Obama awarded her the Presidential Medal of Freedom (2014).

**Streeton, Sir Arthur Ernest** (1867–1943). Australian painter. With his friend Tom \*Roberts, he was one of the 'Heidelberg School' of painters (1887–90), applying *plein air* impressionist and Turner-esque techniques to the Australian landscape. Away from Australia 1897–1923, apart from three short return visits, he was a war artist in France. He failed to attract much attention in England, and his later works, although beautifully painted, lack the excitement of his early decades. *Golden Summer, Eaglemont* (1889) sold for \$AU3.5 million in 1995.

**Streicher, Julius** (1885–1946). German Nazi politician. Originally a primary school teacher, he founded the German Socialist Party which merged with the Nazis in 1923. His journal *Der Stürmer* ('The Stormtrooper') was so pornographic in its attacks on Jews that many Nazis regarded it as distasteful. He had fallen from the front rank by 1939, was Governor of Franconia 1940–44 and hanged for war crimes after the Nuremberg trials.

**Streisand, Barbra** (Joan) (1942– ). American singer, actor and director, born in Brooklyn. Her first great success was in the Broadway musical *Funny Girl* (1964), later filmed (1968), winning her an Oscar. She showed her comic gifts in *What's Up, Doc?* (1972) and played a serious role in *The Way We Were* (1973). She retired from personal appearances in 1969 until offered \$US20 million for two performances (including film and television rights) at the MGM Grand Hotel, Las Vegas, 31 December 1993–1 January 1994.

**Stresemann, Gustav** (1878–1929). German politician. A successful businessman, he entered the Reichstag (1907) and after World War I founded the German People's Party. During a short period as Chancellor (1923) he succeeded in checking inflation. From November 1923 until his death he was Foreign Minister in a succession of governments. He was a main architect of the pacts by which it was hoped to build a permanently peaceful Europe: he signed the Locarno and Kellogg Briand Pacts and six years before the appointed date he secured the evacuation of the Rhineland by foreign troops. For

much of the time he worked closely with \*Briand and Austen \*Chamberlain. He shared the Nobel Peace Prize (1926) with Briand.

Hirsch, E. F., *Gustav Stresemann: Patriot und Europäer*. 1964; Gatzke, H. W., *Stresemann and the Rearmament of Germany*. 1969.

**Strickland, Donna Theo** (1959–). Canadian optical physicist. She shared the Nobel Prize for Physics in 2018 with Gérard Mourou for their invention of chirped pulse amplification, using pulsed lasers in eye surgery.

**Strijdom, Johannes Gerhardus** (1893–1958). South African politician. Originally an ostrich farmer, he became a lawyer, entered the South African Parliament in 1929, led the extremist Transvaal wing of the Nationalist party and succeeded Dr D. F. \*Malan as Prime Minister 1954–58. He entrenched 'apartheid' even more harshly than his predecessor.

**Strindberg, (Johan) August** (1849–1912). Swedish dramatist, born in Stockholm. From his childhood, spent in a depressing family home, his neurotic temperament was always at war with his surroundings. His three marriages were disastrous and among the causes of his persecution mania, leading to periodic insanity and alcoholism. In the 1870s he began writing plays reflecting his radical views, and he gained a considerable reputation with his novel *The Red Room* (1879), a satirical and realistic account of artistic life in Stockholm. From 1883 to 1889 he lived in France, Switzerland, Germany and Denmark, returning in 1884 to defend himself successfully against a charge of blasphemy resulting from the publication of his collection of short stories *Giftas (Marriage)*. Meanwhile he wrote poems on social and philosophical subjects, more plays, and the beginnings of his autobiography. To this middle period belong the three great plays by which he is best remembered, *The Father* (1887), *Miss Julie* (1888) and *The Dance of Death* (1901), all obsessed by family conflict in an atmosphere of foreboding. By this time Strindberg was falling under the influence of \*Nietzsche and adopting the attitudes, including contempt for democracy, of his mentor, and adding anti-Semitism. In his last years came a series of historical plays, novels, e.g. the trilogy *To Damascus* (1898–1904), and fairy plays, indicative of a growing interest in religious mysticism and the occult. He again went to live abroad in 1892 but returned finally in 1896. In 1907 he founded the Intimate Theatre for the production of what he called his 'chamber plays'. He was conspicuously ignored by the Swedish Academy and accepted an 'Anti Nobel' Prize, raised by public subscription, in the year of his death. In his last two years he had a radical period. Only in Germany and Austria were Strindberg's plays often performed. Despite the admiration of \*Ibsen, \*Shaw, \*Gorki, \*Mann and \*O'Neill, it took 40 years for his

genius as a dramatist to be generally recognised. He was also a gifted painter, photographer, and linguist, with a passionate interest in music.

Meyer, M., *Strindberg*. 1985; Prideaux, S., *Strindberg. A Life*. 2012.

**Stringfellow, John** (1799–1883). English inventor. A lace manufacturer of Chard, Somerset, he worked with W. S. \*Henson in designing a steam-powered aircraft. However, Henson's steam engine was underpowered. In 1848, Stringfellow's model monoplane, with a 3-metre wingspan, flew for 27 metres, and in 1868 he demonstrated a tethered triplane at the Crystal Palace. He was also a pioneer photographer.

**Stroheim, Erich von** (1885–1957). Austrian-American film actor and director, born in Vienna. His first film role was in *Intolerance* (1916) and thereafter he tended to become typecast as a German officer. Among his most distinguished parts was that of a soldier in Renoir's *La Grande Illusion* (1938), as \*Rommel in *Five Graves to Cairo* and the butler in *Sunset Boulevard* (1950). The best known of the films he directed were *Foolish Wives* (1922), *Wedding March* (1928) and notably *Greed* (1923–24). He became a US citizen in 1926.

Quinn, T., *Von Stroheim*. 1973.

**Strongbow, Richard de Clare** *see* **Pembroke, 2nd Earl of**

**Struve, Friedrich George Wilhelm von** (1793–1864). German-Russian astronomer. A member of an astronomical dynasty, between 1816 and 1855 he was responsible for designing and constructing the Struve Geodetic Arc, a chain of 258 survey triangulations from Hammerfest in Norway to the Black Sea, a distance of 2,820 km, passing through 10 countries. It was an important international collaboration which led to the accurate measurement of a meridian. Thirty-four of the surviving structures were added to the World Heritage List in 2005. In 1827 he published a catalogue of double-stars.

**Strzelecki, Sir Paul (Pawel) Edmund de** (1797–1873). Polish-British explorer and geologist, born in Poznan (then in Prussia, now in Poland). From a noble family, sometimes called Count Strzelecki, he left his homeland in 1830, became a self-trained geologist and travelled extensively in North and South America, the Pacific islands and New Zealand. In Australia (1839–43) he explored New South Wales, Victoria and Tasmania, was an early discoverer of gold and named Mt \*Kosciuszko in the Australian Alps. He lived in England from 1843, wrote extensively, worked on disaster relief in Ireland and the Crimea and became FRS and KCB.

**Stuart family** *see* **Stewart**

**Stuart, Charles Edward** (known as 'Bonnie Prince Charlie' or 'the Young Pretender') (1720–1788). British prince, born in Rome. Eldest son of James Edward \*Stuart, on whose behalf he led the Jacobite rebellion of 1745, he landed in Scotland with only seven followers but was joined by an increasing number of Highlanders as he moved south. He captured Edinburgh and secured his position by defeating the government army at Prestonpans. Six weeks later he marched south into England. After capturing Carlisle and reaching Derby he began to withdraw. At Falkirk (17 January 1746) he won a last success before his army was overtaken and virtually annihilated by the Duke of \*Cumberland, who here earned the name 'Butcher', at Culloden (16 April). Charles, with £30,000 offered for his capture, spent five months unscathed and unbetrayed among the hills and islands of western Scotland until, with the help of Flora \*Macdonald, he was able to reach France. So far with his looks and charm he had been the true hero of romance, but the rest of the story is one of disappointment, disillusion and dissipation. Harried by English agents, he wandered about Europe seeking help for schemes by which he vainly hoped to regain his rights. He married (1772) Louisa of Stolberg, a childless and unhappy match. He finally settled in Italy and in his last years was looked after with devotion by a natural daughter. Debauched and discredited, he died in Rome and was buried in St Peter's.

**Stuart, James (Francis) Edward** (known as 'the Old Pretender') (1688–1766). British prince, born in London. Son of \*James II of Great Britain and Mary of Modena, he was brought up in France. On his father's death he was acclaimed by the 'Jacobites' as King and a number of risings were made on his behalf of which the best known were those of 1715 and 1745. For the former, ended by defeats at Sheriffmuir and Prestonpans, James Edward was in Scotland for a few weeks. He spent the remainder of his life mainly in Rome. The battle at Prestonpans was fought under the leadership of his son, Charles Edward \*Stuart, born of his marriage to Clementina Sobieska of Poland. His second son was Henry, Cardinal \*York. He was buried in St Peter's, Rome.

**Stuart, John McDouall** (1815–1866). Scottish explorer, born in Fife. Between 1858 and 1862 he led six expeditions to Central Australia and became the first explorer to cross the continent south to north (and return). He clashed with Aboriginal people but lost none of his party. He died in London.

**Stubbs, George** (1724–1806). English painter and engraver. In 1766 he published his *Anatomy of a Horse* based on the study of dead horses in his studio. The engravings created a revolution in animal painting and he was later able to use his anatomical knowledge to give his sporting pictures, e.g. *The Grosvenor Stag*, a verisimilitude never obtained before. His masterpiece, *Whistlejacket* (1762), a huge horse painting, hangs in the National Gallery, London. He was elected RA in 1781.

**Stubbs, William** (1825–1901). English historian and Churchman. He devoted himself to the study and publication of medieval documents. His fame rests on two great works, *Select Charters and other Illustrations of English Constitutional History* (1870), and *The Constitutional History of England* (3 volumes, 1874–78). He became Regius professor of history at Oxford 1866–84, Bishop of Chester 1884–89 and Bishop of Oxford 1889–1901.

**Sturgeon, Nicola Ferguson** (1970– ). Scottish politician, born in Ayrshire. A lawyer, she was Deputy First Minister of Scotland 2007–14 and First Minister 2014–, a strong advocate for Scottish independence and remaining in the EU.

**Sturgeon, William** (1783–1850). English electrical engineer. Son of a shoemaker, he was self-educated. He built the first practical electromagnet, capable of lifting 20 times its own weight. He devised the first moving coil galvanometer, and built, in accordance with the principles of Michael \*Faraday, the first linear induction motor (1832), revived in the 1960s for conveyor belts (Thomas \*Davenport).

**Sturt, Charles** (1795–1869). English explorer, born in Bengal. An army officer, in Australia from 1827 to 1853, he explored the rivers of New South Wales, mapped and named the Murray (1830), concluded that the continent had no inland sea (1844–46) and became an unhappy administrator in South Australia. He was a skilful observer, sympathetic to Aboriginal people.

**Sturzo, Don Luigi** (1871–1959). Italian priest and politician, born in Sicily. He founded the PPI (Partito Popolare Italiano) in 1919, clashed with \*Mussolini and was exiled, living in London 1924–40 and the United States (mostly in Brooklyn) 1940–48. He wrote extensively on sociology, became a major influence on the Christian Democrats (Alcide \*De Gasperi) and was appointed a Senator 1948–59.

**Suárez Gonzales, Adolfo, Duque de Suárez** (1932–2014). Spanish politician. The last Secretary-General of \*Franco's Falange Party 1975–76, as Prime Minister of Spain 1976–81 he worked with king \*Juan Carlos to effect a democratic transformation and was created a duke.

**Sucre, Antonio José de** (1795–1830). South American leader, born in Venezuela. He served under \*Bolívar in the War of South American Independence and became a general in 1819. His great victory near Guayaquil ensured the independence of the future Ecuador. With Bolívar he then won a long struggle for the independence of Peru and in 1826 was installed as first president of the newly created Bolivia, but his army mutinied and he was expelled. Two years later he was on his way through the mountains to rejoin Bolívar in Peru when he was killed by robbers.

**Sudermann, Hermann** (1857–1928). German playwright and novelist. His plays include *Die Ehre* (1889), *Sodoms Ende* (1891) and *Heimat* (1893). The last named, translated into English as *Magda*, provided a star role for Mrs Patrick \*Campbell and other well known actresses. His novels, of which *Frau Sorge* (1887) was the first and best known, are mostly set against a background of his native East Prussia.

**Sue, Eugène** (1804–1857). French novelist. He was among the most successful of writers at adapting his work to serial form. The best known example in an immense output of popular work was *The Wandering Jew* (1845). His socialist and republican views, shown in his novels by his idealisation of the downtrodden and criminal classes, earned him the disfavour of \*Napoléon III and brought about his exile.

**Suess, Eduard** (1831–1914). Austrian geologist, born in London. Professor of geology at Vienna 1857–1901 and a liberal in the Reichsrat 1872–96, he first hypothesised the concept of a super-continent (1885) which he named Gondwanaland (\*Wegener). He also originated the concept of 'the biosphere' and was awarded the Copley Medal in 1903.

**Suetonius** (Gaius Suetonius Tranquillus) (fl. 117–138). Roman historian. He was \*Hadrian's secretary. His best known work, *De vita Caesarum*, which has survived almost complete, contains the biographies of Julius \*Caesar and the first 11 emperors, \*Augustus to \*Domitian. His mixture of documented fact and gossip provides lively reading. Only part of another series on less exalted men (e.g. \*Virgil, \*Horace) survives.

**Suger, Bernard** (c.1081–1151). French prelate. Abbot of the Benedictine monastery of St Denis, north of Paris (from 1122), he was employed as Chief Minister by \*Louis VI, and later virtually ruled the country while \*Louis VII was absent on crusade. The beautiful Abbey Church of St Denis, reconstructed to his design, is one of the earliest examples of the Gothic style. His histories of the kings he served provide an important record of contemporary events.

**Suharto** (1921–2008). Indonesian general and politician, born in Java. Originally a bank clerk, he was a soldier from 1943, joining the guerrillas against the Japanese. He directed the army strategic reserve 1963–65 and was Army Chief of Staff 1965–66. Following the PKI coup in September 1965 he assumed emergency powers and took \*Soekarno into custody. He became President of Indonesia 1967–98, after Soekarno's deposition. He took a strong line against Muslim fundamentalism and against any separatist movements, notably in East Timor. He was re-elected for a seventh five-year term in March 1998 after a period of sharp economic decline, a collapse of the rupiah, intervention by the IMF, food riots, and attacks on the government support for companies run by family members. After severe rioting (May 1998),

he resigned in favour of his protégé B. J. \*Habibie. His daughter **Siti** ('Tutut') **Hardiyanti Rukmana** (1949–) was briefly Minister for Social Affairs 1998.

Jenkins, D., *Suharto and His Generals*. 1984.

**Sui Wendi** ('The cultured emperor', personal name Yang Jien) (541–604). Chinese Emperor 581–604, founder of the Sui dynasty. A general, he removed the Northern Zhou emperor, began the Grand Canal which connected the Yangtze and Huang He (Yellow River) and extended his rule to south China. He laid the foundations for the Tang dynasty.

**Suk, Josef** (1874–1935). Czech composer and violinist. Pupil (and son-in-law) of Antonín \*Dvořák, he was second violinist in the Bohemian String Quartet 1892–1933 and taught composition at the Prague Conservatorium. He wrote *Serenade for Strings* (1892), the *Asrael Symphony* (1905–06), chamber music and songs.

**Sukarno** *see* **Soekarno**

**Sulaiman** *see* **Süleyman**

**Süleyman I Muhteşem** ('the Magnificent': Süleyman Şah bin Selim Şah Han) (1494–1566). Tenth Sultan of the Ottoman Empire 1520–66. Son and successor of \*Selim I, under him the Ottoman Empire reached its zenith. He captured Belgrade (1521) and Rhodes (1522). He crushed the Hungarians at Mohacz (1526) but failed to take Vienna in 1529 and eventually the emperor \*Ferdinand I, while retaining Austria, was left with only a small portion of Hungary. Meanwhile his fleet, under the celebrated corsair Khairaddin \*Barbarossa, was terrorising the Mediterranean but it failed to capture Malta from the Knights of St John. Süleyman won Baghdad (from Persia) and it remained in Turkish hands until 1917. He died during renewed war in Hungary. His legal reforms, mainly relating to land tenure, earned him the name Kanuni (the lawgiver) and he proved himself a lavish patron of the arts, employing the famous architect \*Sinan to build four mosques, the most magnificent being the Süleymaniye Camii 1550–57.

Merriman, R. B., *Suleiman the Magnificent 1520–1566*. Repr. 1966; Brotton, J., *The Sultan and the Queen*. 2016.

**Sulla Felix, Lucius Cornelius** (138–78 BCE). Roman soldier and dictator. He fought under \*Marius against \*Jugurtha in Africa and against the Cimbri and Teutones, but their mutual antipathy soon developed into political rivalry: Marius siding with the turbulent popular party ('Populares') and Sulla with the conservatives ('Optimates'). After his victories in the Social War (for the enfranchisement of the Italians as Roman citizens) Sulla gained his first consulship (88) but, angered by a proposal that the command in a war against \*Mithridates should be transferred to Marius, he led an army against Rome

and captured the city. He obtained laws to legitimise his position and left for the east, but as soon as he had gone the Marians regained control. Meanwhile Sulla was expelling the armies of Mithridates from Greece and from the Roman province of Asia. He then returned with his army to Italy, and after another victory over the popular forces at the gates of Rome (82), the Senate appointed him as 'dictator', without a term limitation; the first use of the word in its modern sense, and a model for Julius \*Caesar. Massacres and proscriptions of his opponents followed. He then carried out a large constitutional and administrative program, the main feature being the restoration of full power to the Senate. He retired voluntarily in 79 and died the following year. Both \*Händel and \*Mozart wrote operas based on his life.

**Sullivan, Sir Arthur Seymour** (1842–1900). English composer. After being a chorister at the Chapel Royal he studied music in London and Leipzig. He achieved successes with music for \*Shakespeare's *The Tempest* and for the famous comedy *Box and Cox* before he began his long collaboration with W. S. \*Gilbert and the impresario Richard D 'Oyly \*Carte in the popular 'Savoy Operas' (so-called from their production at that theatre from 1881). The best known are *Trial by Jury* (1875) *H.M.S. Pinafore* (1878), *The Pirates of Penzance* (1880), *Patience* (1881) *Iolanthe* (1882), *Princess Ida* (1884), *The Mikado* (1885), *Ruddigore* (1887), *The Yeomen of the Guard* (1888) and *The Gondoliers* (1889). Sullivan's melodic gift and deft and lively scoring admirably partnered the witty libretti, but the two men later had a business quarrel and abandoned the partnership. Neither collaborator achieved comparable success alone, though Sullivan's serious opera *Ivanhoe* (1891) and ballads such as *The Lost Chord* were popular for a time. He was knighted in 1883.

Young, P., *Sir Arthur Sullivan*. 1971.

**Sullivan, John L**(awrence) (1858–1918). Irish-American boxer, born in Boston. Son of Irish immigrants, originally intended for the priesthood, he became a professional baseball player, then a boxer. He had 44 fights, all but two in the United States (the others were in Wales and France) and won 40, mostly by knockout. Until 1889 many of his bouts were bare-knuckle. Generally recognised as the first world heavyweight champion 1885–92, he held the title until defeated by J. J. \*Corbett. He died in poverty.

**Sullivan, Louis Henry** (1856–1924). American architect. After studying in Paris he joined a Chicago partnership and became the most important pioneer of modern steel frame construction. His Transportation building for the World's Columbian Exposition (1893) provided a striking illustration of the new technique. He was a strong advocate of the unity of form and function but did not favour stark austerity and introduced original types of decoration in conformity with his ideas. The Schiller Theatre

and the Stock Exchange were among his Chicago buildings. There are many other fine examples of his work in St Louis, Buffalo and New York.

**Sully, Maximilien de Béthune, Duc de** (1559–1641). French minister. Son of a Huguenot, Baron de Rosny, he fought for Henri of Navarre (\*Henri IV of France) and became his chief friend and advisor. He approved Henri's adoption of Roman Catholicism in order to become king. His first task was to restore the finances and economy by removing abuses in the collection of taxes. He strictly controlled expenditure, reduced tax exemptions and re-established former taxes; he fostered agriculture and industry and the building of roads and canals. He was made a duke for negotiating Henri's marriage with \*Marie de Medicis (1606). When he retired after Henri's assassination he had amassed a huge surplus in the treasury.

**Sully-Prudhomme, René François Armand** (1839–1907). French poet. He studied science and philosophy in Paris, and his earlier poems are permeated with melancholy. His later long poems are *La Justice* (1878) and *Le Bonheur* (1888), concerned with philosophic and scientific theories. In this he resembled the Roman poet \*Lucretius, whom he translated (1866). He also wrote in prose. He was a leader of the Parnassians, a group which reacted against Romanticism and revived classical detachment. Elected to the Académie française in 1881, he was chosen for the first Nobel Prize for Literature (1901), against a weak field of nominees (mostly French), and is now completely forgotten.

**Sumner, Charles** (1811–1874). American Republican politician. A lawyer and US Senator from Massachusetts 1851–74, he was one of the most ardent and eloquent speakers against slavery and, in a famous speech, attacked the Kansas-Nebraska Act for creating opportunities for the expansion of slavery. In May 1856 **Preston Brooks**, Congressman from South Carolina, beat him savagely around the head, in the Senate chamber, with a heavy cane, which shattered, and Sumner took more than three years to recover. (Brooks received a modest fine, resigned from Congress, was triumphantly re-elected then died suddenly.) After the Civil War, Sumner was among the strongest advocates of punishment for the south and of harsh terms for aid in reconstruction.

**Sunak, Rishi** (1980– ) British-Indian Conservative politician, born in Southampton. His parents migrated to Britain from East Africa in the 1960s. Educated at Winchester College, Oxford and Stanford, he became a funds manager, worked for Goldman Sachs, married the daughter of an Indian billionaire and was MP 2015– . He supported Brexit, became Chancellor of the Exchequer 2020–22, but broke with Boris \*Johnson and contested the Tory leadership, losing to Liz \*Truss, who was preferred by Conservative Party branch members. When Truss' leadership collapsed in October 2022, Sunak was the

only contender to receive enough nominations by MPs to qualify for election. Prime Minister 2022–, he was the youngest since 1783, the richest and the first Hindu.

**Sunderland, 2nd Earl of, Robert Spencer** (1641–1702). English statesman, born in Paris. As Secretary of State 1679–88 under \*Charles II and \*James II, he negotiated the secret treaty under which, in return for an annual pension from \*Louis XIV, England was to become subservient to France. He was \*James II's closest advisor and secretly adhered to the Roman Catholic faith, but at the same time conferred with William of Orange (\*William III) and became his Lord Chamberlain 1695–99. His son, **Charles Spencer, 3rd Earl of Sunderland** (1674–1722), was a Whig politician. In 1700 he married Anne Churchill, \*Marlborough's daughter. He once had republican sympathies, was part of the Whig ' Junto' under Queen \*Anne (who disliked him) and established a working relationship with her prospective successor, the future \*George I. First Lord of the Treasury 1718–21, he promoted the South Sea Company and was accused, probably wrongly, of accepting a bribe of £50,000 in company stock. Although acquitted of bribery, he was forced to resign and Robert \*Walpole succeeded him. Described as a 'singularly unattractive personage', with a violent manner, he was shrewd, a quick thinker, a great bibliophile (17,000 books) and patron of music. Recent historians conclude that he may even have been honest. **Charles Spencer, 5th Earl of Sunderland** (1706–1758), became **3rd Duke of Marlborough** on the death of his aunt Henrietta in 1733 and was an ancestor of Winston \*Churchill.

Kenyon, J. P., *Robert Spencer, Earl of Sunderland*. 1958.

**Sun Tzu** (Wade-Giles: Sunzi in pinyin, birth name Sun Wu) (c.544–496 BCE). Chinese warrior-philosopher, born in the State of Qi (now Shantung). Presumably a follower of Daoism (Taoism), he was the reputed author of *The Art of War* (*Ping-fa*), a short, shrewd and timeless analysis which emphasises the political aspects of war. \*Mao Zedong read it closely, especially the maxim: 'To win without fighting is best'. He led the armies of the State of Wu.

**Sun Yat-sen** (Wade-Giles, **Sun Yixian** in pinyin: né Sun Te-ming, then Sun Wen, later Sun Zhongshan) (1866–1925). Chinese revolutionary politician, born Guangzhou (Canton). His parents were Christian peasants and he became influenced by western ideas at a missionary school in Honolulu (1878–83). Afterwards he took a medical degree (1892) at Hong Kong and practised at Macao and in Guangzhou. There he began his revolutionary activities, but the failure of the first of a series of plots forced him to live in exile in Japan, the US, Canada and England. In London (1896) he was kidnapped and confined to the Chinese embassy, facing the prospect of murder or extradition and execution. Released after

12 days due to pressure from the Foreign Office and the press, he became famous. In 1905, in Tokyo, he became a founder of Tongmenghui (Revolutionary Alliance). Risings instigated from Tokyo, Hong Kong, Singapore and Penang failed, but in October 1911 ('The Xinhai Revolution') the army mutinied in Wuchang, Guangzhou and Wuhan, and popular demonstrations followed in other cities. The Qing dynasty collapsed, with the boy Xuantong emperor (\*Puyi) abdicating in February 1912. Sun was elected as provisional President of the new Republic (January–March 1912) by a meeting of representatives from provinces in Nanjing, but was forced to retire in favour of \*Yuán Zhikai, the general who led the powerful Beiyang Army in the north. In August 1912 Sun founded the Kuomintang (Chinese Nationalist Party, or KMT: Guomintang in pinyin). It won a majority in elections for a National Assembly (December 1912–January 1913) but, after a failed coup against Yuán, was suppressed in November 1913. Yuán ruled as a dictator and proclaimed himself as emperor in December 1915. Sun lived in Tokyo 1913–17, returning from exile after Yuán's death. In Guangzhou, a military government was established that opposed the rule of Beijing, which was dominated by warlords. Sun had broken terms as generalissimo or president of the Guangzhou government in 1917–18; 1920–22; 1923–25, being twice forced out of office by southern warlords.

In 1919 he revived the KMT, actively collaborated with the USSR from 1923 and created a united front between the KMT and the CCP. (This caused the KMT to split after his death: \*Chiang Kaishek.) He tried to put into practice the *Three People's Principles* (lectures published in book form after his death). These were Nationalism (by which he meant the abolition of European exploitation and the unification of the many peoples of China), Democracy (a gradual approach under the guidance of a single party, the Kuomintang, to constitutional government), and Livelihood (the welfare of the masses as the priority of the state). He died in Beijing of gall bladder cancer and was ultimately buried in Nanjing. He did not live to see the reunification of China but the KMT and the CCP both acknowledge Sun as founder of the Chinese Republic.

His son **Sun Fo** (or Sun Ke) (1891–1973), Premier of China 1932 and 1948–49, followed Chiang to Taiwan. Sun Yat-sen's widow and third wife (Rosamond) **Soong Ch'ing-ling** (1893–1981), sister of \*Chiang's wife, was Vice President of the People's Republic of China 1949–81, a supporter of \*Zhou and critic of \*Mao. She never joined the CCP.

Schiffren, H. Z., *Sun Yat-sen and the Origins of the Chinese Revolution*. 1968; *Sun Yat-sen: Reluctant Revolutionary*. 1980; Wilbur, C. M., *Sun Yat-sen, frustrated patriot*. 1976; Bergère, M-C., *Sun Yat-sen*. 2000.



**Supervia, Conchita** (née Maria de la Concepción Supervia Pascual, later Rubenstein) (1895–1936). Spanish mezzo-soprano, born in Barcelona. An outstanding Carmen, Rosina and Octavian, with a magnetic stage presence, unforgettable vibrato and excellent diction, she made many recordings. She died after childbirth in London.

**Suppé, Franz von** (1819–1895). Austrian composer, born in Dalmatia. Son of Belgian and Polish parents, and a distant relative of \*Donizetti, he lived in Vienna from 1835. He wrote music for ballet, chamber music and some sacred works, but his reputation was mainly based on his 26 successful operettas, including *Poet and Peasant* (1846), *Light Cavalry* (1866) and *Boccaccio* (1879).

**Suraja Dowlah** (d.1757). Nawab of Bengal. After his attack (1756) on the British settlement of Calcutta, his imprisonment of over 100 Europeans caused their death by suffocation in the notorious 'Black Hole'. Quick retribution came when his forces were routed by Robert \*Clive at Plassey (1757).

**Surrey, Henry Howard, Earl of** (c.1517–1547). English poet. Son of the 3rd Duke of Norfolk, he attended \*Henry VIII at the Field of the Cloth of Gold and long remained in favour at court, even after the execution of his cousin, \*Catherine Howard. Eventually, however, he was tried and executed on a trumped-up charge of treason. Blank verse, introduced by him for a translation of \*Virgil, was an adaptation of one of \*Chaucer's metres. He can also share with \*Wyatt the credit for bringing to England the Petrarchan sonnet. His poems were first printed, with those of Wyatt and others, in Tottel's *Miscellany* (1557). Many of his love poems were written to 'the fair Geraldine', a daughter of the 9th Earl of Kildare.

Chapman, H. W., *Two Tudor Portraits*. 1960.

**Suslov, Mikhail Andreivich** (1902–1982). Russian politician and theorist. A peasant's son, he joined the Communist Party in 1921, was active in \*Stalin's purges and became the leading Cominform propagandist. He served on the Politburo 1952–53 and 1955–82, and was regarded as the leading Soviet ideologist.

**Sutherland, Graham Vivian** (1903–1980). English painter. While an engineering apprentice he started art night classes in London. He first turned his talents to etching and engraving but from 1935 he devoted himself to painting. Influenced by \*Blake, Samuel \*Palmer and the Surrealists, he produced Pembrokeshire landscapes in which fantastic and sinister-looking plant and insect forms dominate. After working as a war artist in World War II he painted vigorous and original portraits of Somerset \*Maugham, Lord \*Beaverbrook and Sir Winston \*Churchill (the last, disliked by the subject,

being destroyed by his family). He designed the altar tapestry, *Christ in Majesty*, for the new Coventry Cathedral. He received the OM in 1960.

**Sutherland, Dame Joan** (Alston) (1926–2010). Australian dramatic soprano, born in Sydney. She made her debut at Covent Garden, London in the *Magic Flute* (1952). In 1954 she married the conductor **Richard** (Alan) **Bonyng** (1930– ). She became internationally famous after her performance as Lucia in *Lucia di Lammermoor* at Covent Garden (1959), followed by immediate success in Paris, New York, and Milan. After she sang the title role in \*Händel's opera *Alcina* in Venice in 1960 she was dubbed 'La Stupenda'. Her *bel canto* style was a major element in the revival of operas by \*Händel, \*Bellini and \*Donizetti. She was awarded the OM in 1991.

Major, N., *Joan Sutherland*. 1987.

**Sutter, Joe** (Joseph Frederick) (1921–2016). American aircraft engineer and designer, born in Seattle. He was chief designer of the Boeing 747 ('Jumbo') which first flew in 1970. By 1992, one billion people had travelled on the 747.

**Suttner, Bertha Felicita Sophie, Baroness von** (née Kinsky von Chinic und Tettau) (1843–1914). Czech-Austrian pacifist and novelist, born in Prague. Daughter of a field marshal, as a young woman she embraced her family's military tradition, then became a determined campaigner for various peace movements. She persuaded Alfred \*Nobel to establish a Peace Prize and in 1901 received 14 nominations for the first award. Ultimately she was nominated 101 times and in 1905 became the first female Nobel Laureate.

**Suu Kyi, Aung San** *see* **Aung San Suu Kyi**

**Suvorov, Aleksandr Vasilyevich** (1730–1800). Russian marshal. Of Swedish descent, although sickly and small, he fulfilled his ambition by starting service as a soldier in the ranks at the age of 15. After gaining distinction in the Seven Years' War (1756–63) and the Polish War (1768–71), he fought against the Turks (1773), crushed a rising in the Caucasus (1780) and in a second Turkish War won a great victory at Focsani (1789). He crushed \*Kosciusko's nationalist rising in Poland (1794) and in the French Revolutionary Wars was sent to help the Austrians in Italy (1799). After several successes against the French in Italy he was ordered to join Korsakov in Switzerland, the march over the Alps involved his troops in terrible hardships and losses and he arrived to find that Korsakov had already been defeated by Massena. Suvorov extricated his troops with difficulty to Austria. He died soon after returning to St Petersburg. Never defeated in battle, he was known for his many eccentricities and beloved by his troops. \*Stalin created the Order of Suvorov in 1943.

**Suzman, Helen** (née Gavronsky) (1917–2009). South African politician. Daughter of a Lithuanian migrant, she became a statistician and academic and was a member of the South African House of Assembly 1953–89 (United Party until 1961, then a Progressive). She pursued a lonely criticism of apartheid and violation of human rights, received many awards including an Hon. DBE (1989), and wrote memoirs, *In No Uncertain Terms* (1993).

**Suzuki Daisetz Teitaro** (1870–1966). Japanese Zen Buddhist. He was the leading modern authority on Buddhism, with a particular interest in the Zen form. He wrote over 100 books or major studies on religious topics in both Japanese and English.

**Sverdlov, Yakov Mikhailovich** (real name Y. M. Nakhamkes) (1885–1919). Russian Communist politician. A professional revolutionary from the age of 17, he was exiled to the Arctic, escaped several times and became \*Lenin's closest collaborator. After the Revolution he held three important posts 1917–19: Chairman of the All-Russian Executive Committee of Soviets and virtual head of state, General Secretary of the Bolshevik Party, and Commissar for Internal Security. He ordered the execution of the imperial family in Ekaterinburg (later renamed Sverdlovsk). He died of typhus.

**Svevo, Italo** (Ettore Schmitz) (1861–1928). Italian author, born in Trieste. Of Jewish origin, his early novels based on personal experience *A Life* (1892) and *As a Man Grows Older* (1898) failed to attract, and for many years Svevo abandoned writing. He resumed with his masterpiece *The Confessions of Zeno* (1923) which brought some appreciation, maintained by at least one critical study. He was a friend of James \*Joyce.

**Svinhufvud af Qvalstad, Pehr Evind** (1861–1937). Finnish politician. Of Swedish descent, he became a lawyer and judge in the Russian Grand Duchy of Finland, strongly resistant to Russian authoritarianism, becoming speaker of the Finnish Parliament 1907–12. When Finland declared its independence from Russia, Svinhufvud was the first State Regent 1918, and sought to establish a constitutional monarchy. He refused to Finnicise his Swedish name. In 1925 the conservative National Coalition nominated him for President but then pulled back. He returned to politics as Prime Minister 1930–31. President 1931–37, narrowly defeating K. J. \*Ståhlberg, he maintained a careful balance between left and right but lost to Kyösto Kallio. Svinhufvud's historic reputation is rising and he was an expert shot.

**Swammerdam, Jan** (1637–1680). Dutch biologist. One of his major areas of interest was animal physiology, and he adhered to the mechanical philosophy, seeking to apply Cartesian (\*Descartes) models of explanation to the action of the lungs, the heart, the respiratory system. Experiments on dogs demonstrated the contractility of muscles, even when

separated from the body. In these and other instances his work was aiming to demonstrate the purely mechanical nature of bodily action, independent of transcendental principles like 'spirits' or 'virtues'. Swammerdam's other field of expertise was in the microscopic study of lower animals. He was one of the first naturalists to find insects worthy of scientific study. He made detailed studies of the development of insects within the chrysalis, and showed the life history of the butterfly and the dragonfly. He sought to refute the view that insects generate spontaneously (the making of something out of nothing seemed to him both unscientific and also contrary to his religious belief in the order of the world).

**Swan, Sir Joseph Wilson** (1828–1914). English inventor. A manufacturing chemist by profession, he invented, 20 years before \*Edison (1860), an experimental carbon filament electric lamp which, however, was not commercially in production until he improved it (1881). He patented (1883) a process for carbon-filament production that revolutionised the manufacture of electric lamps. He also made a number of inventions of great practical value in the field of photography. A fast gelatin emulsion, for example, confirmed the supremacy of the dryplate technique. Many improvements in photographic printing were also due to him. He was elected FRS in 1894 and knighted 10 years later.

**Swedenborg** (originally Svedberg), **Emanuel** (1688–1772). Swedish scientist and theologian, born in Stockholm. At first employed by \*Charles XII as an assessor in the College of Mines, he gained a seat in the House of Nobles when his family was ennobled (1719). Meanwhile he wrote on all kinds of mathematical, mechanical and scientific subjects (sometimes anticipating later discoveries) on the calculus, on finding longitude at sea, on tides, decimal coinage and the planetary system, on the atom as a vortex of particles etc. His study of geology and palaeontology led him to a theory of creation, published in the *Opera Philosophica et Mineralia* (3 volumes, 1734). In other works, e.g. *The Animal Kingdom* (1745), he treats, among many other subjects, of anatomy, human and zoological, and eventually explores the relationship of body and soul. By this time his inquiries as a scientist were beginning to merge with his visionary speculations as a seer. He believed that in 1745 direct personal insight into the world of the spirit was conferred upon him to enable him to reveal the true sense of the Bible. In his *Heavenly Arcana* (8 volumes, 1749–56) he gives the first two books of the Bible an allegorical and symbolic meaning. In the following years he had further visions and published some 40 theological books, including *The Christian Religion* (1771) which systematically presents the theology that had appeared piecemeal in earlier writings. The essence of Swedenborg's theology is his view of \*Jesus Christ whom he sees, not as a Person of the Trinity, but as a human possessed of a divine soul. He spent several of his last years in

London where he died. He had organised no sect but the 'New Church' based on his doctrines was founded in London some 15 years after his death, and still has followers in Britain and elsewhere.

Jonsson, I., *Emanuel Swedenborg*. 1971.

**Sweelinck, Jan Pieterszoon** (1562–1621). Dutch composer, organist and teacher. Enormously prolific, especially with vocal works, he was a famous organist who rarely left Amsterdam.

**Sweyn Forkbeard** (or Swegen) (960–1014). King of Denmark 986–1014, and of England 1013–14. In revenge for the death of his sister, who perished in the massacre of St Brice's Day (1002) organised by Æthelred the Unready, he attacked and ravaged England repeatedly and just before his death was recognised as King but not crowned. He was succeeded by his son \*Cnut.

**Swift, Jonathan** (1667–1745). Anglo-Irish satirist, novelist, essayist, poet and cleric, born in Dublin. His father, a lawyer, kinsman of \*Dryden, died before his birth, and after his mother, kinsman of \*Herrick, returned to England he was brought up by his father's family. Educated at Kilkenny College, and Trinity College, Dublin, after the Glorious Revolution of 1688 he joined his mother in England and became secretary to her relative Sir William \*Temple at his Surrey home of Moor Park. He remained there with intervals (during one of which he took Anglican orders in Ireland) until Temple's death (1699). There he wrote *The Battle of the Books* (classics v. moderns), which was published (1704) with *A Tale of a Tub*, a satire on religious humbug and corruption which effectively barred him from the highest offices in the Church. At Temple's house, too, he first met **Esther Johnson**, then a child of eight, to whom he later wrote the famous *Journal to Stella* (1710–13), which gives, mostly in childish language, an intimate account of his London life. The nature of the bond between them is one of those literary mysteries that many have probed: they may even have married though it seems clear that despite mutual dependence and devotion they had no sexual relations. Similar doubts concern Hester Vanhomrigh, the heroine of *Cadenus* (anagram of *decanus*, 'dean') and Vanessa. She loved him passionately, but, having encouraged her, he rejected her and broke her heart. Swift was the most formidable political satirist of his time, working closely with the Tories 1710–14, contributing to the fall of \*Marlborough. He offended Queen \*Anne, who thought *A Tale of a Tub* blasphemous, by offering gratuitous advice on her household arrangements, and his appointment as Dean of St Patrick's Cathedral, Dublin, 1713–45 was virtual exile, although he made brief visits to his friends Alexander \*Pope and John \*Gay. The Whigs returned to power in 1714.

Some of his best known tracts and treatises were written during this period, many, including *Drapier's Letters* (1724), protesting against the grievances

under which Ireland suffered. Samuel \*Johnson judged him harshly in his *Lives of the Poets*, but his poems are clear, direct, using vernacular speech. The most famous of all his works, *Gulliver's Travels*, part fairytale, part satire, appeared in 1726. His *A Modest Proposal* (1729) suggested selling children of the poor to be eaten (recipes being provided). Esther died in 1728. Swift long suffered acutely from Ménière's syndrome and years of agonising decline followed a stroke in 1738. He was buried beside Esther in St Patrick's. His epitaph on the nearby wall reads 'Ubi sæva Indignatio/ Ulterius/ Cor lacerare nequit' ('Where savage indignation can lacerate his heart no more'). He left his estate to found a hospital in Dublin for the mentally ill, which survives. But he remained a frustrated and unhappy man and something of an enigma to his contemporaries and to later generations. Everything he wrote was published anonymously and, except for *Gulliver* which earned him £200, he received no payment.

Murry, J. M., *Jonathan Swift: A Critical biography*. 1955; Stathis, J. J., *A Bibliography of Swift Studies*. 1967; Steele, P., *Jonathan Swift. Preacher and Jester*. 1978; Glendinning, V., *Jonathan Swift*. 1998; Damrosch, L., *Jonathan Swift. His Life and His World*. 2013; Stubbs, J., *Jonathan Swift. The Reluctant Rebel*. 2016.

**Swinburne, Algernon Charles** (1837–1909). English poet and writer, born in London. Educated at Eton and Oxford he became a friend of \*Landor, \*Meredith, \*Rossetti and \*Morris. The publication of his *Poems and Ballads* (1865), with their sensual rhythms, pagan spirit and contempt for conventional morality, had aroused both enthusiasm and violent criticism. *Songs Before Sunrise* (1871) was inspired by \*Mazzini's republicanism; *Tristram of Lyonesse* (1882) and *The Tale of Balen* (1892) are his contribution to Arthurian legend. He wrote poetic dramas, including *Atalanta in Calydon* (1865) and an ambitious trilogy on \*Mary Queen of Scots. His literary criticism, e.g. *Essays and Studies* (1875) and monographs on many individual writers, \*Shakespeare, Victor \*Hugo etc., display a characteristic over-emphasis, but are written with imagination and perception. An alcoholic and flagellant, in 1879 his health broke down under the strain of a dissipated life. His friend **Theodore Watts-Dunton** (1832–1914) took him into his home at No. 2, The Pines, Putney, where the bohemian rebel quietly spent the rest of his life. He was nominated 10 times for the Nobel Prize for Literature. Few poets have surpassed Swinburne in the composition of verbal music, but though he can still disturb he no longer shocks.

Fuller, J. O., *Swinburne: A Critical Biography*. 1968.

**Swineshead, (or Suisset), Richard** (known as 'The Calculator') (fl. c.1340–1355). English medieval philosopher and mathematician, possibly born in Glastonbury. He was at Merton College, Oxford, from about 1340, and wrote the important *Liber*

*calculatorium*, an exhaustive treatise that provides techniques for calculating physical variables and their changes. Swineshead devotes attention to variables such as density and rarity, action and reaction, constant speed and acceleration, forces and resistances in a medium. His English 'calculatory' tradition exercised notable influence on the development of physical studies, especially on \*Oresme. He became a Cistercian monk.

It is probable that **Roger Swineshead** (or **Swyneshead**) (d.1365), a Benedictine monk, logician and physicist, was at Oxford at the same time as Richard but they are assumed to be different persons. He wrote logical treatises and a work in physics *De Motibus Naturalibus*.

Weisheipl, J. A., 'Roger Swyneshead', in *Oxford Studies Presented to Daniel Callus*. 1964.

**Swithin** (or Swithun), **St** (d.862). English prelate. A man of great piety, he built many churches and for the last 10 years of his life was Bishop of Winchester. When his body was transferred from the churchyard to the cathedral itself (971), tradition says that heavy rain delayed the exhumation, which was to have taken place on 15 July. The belief that rain on St Swithin's Day portends a long rainy spell can be traced to this event.

**Swynford, Catherine** (née Roelt) (1350?–1403). English noblewoman. After the death of her first husband, Sir Hugh Swynford, she became the mistress of \*John of Gaunt. They married in 1394, their children being legitimised under the name of \*Beaufort. Her son, Sir Thomas Beaufort, was one of the murderers of \*Richard II. Her sister Philippa married Geoffrey \*Chaucer.

**Sydenham, Thomas** (1624–1689). English physician. The founder of modern clinical medicine, his studies at Oxford were interrupted by service with the parliamentarian forces, but from 1655 (though he did not obtain a licence to do so until 1663) he practised as a physician in Westminster and was thus able to study the fevers arising from the marshes of St James's Park. The great plague (1665) provided another exacting test of his medical skill. As his fame grew he got to know John \*Locke, Robert \*Boyle and other scholars and scientists of the time. He recognised that the physician's task was to assist nature in its constant efforts to eliminate morbid matter or render it harmless. Thus his task was to study the disease in relation to the particular patient. Some of his descriptions (e.g. of gout, based on his own symptoms) are classics of medical literature; convulsions of children are still known as Sydenham's chorea. He was not afraid to do nothing if he felt that he could not render effective help, and his prescription of fresh air, few coverings and a light diet for fevers was almost revolutionary.

**Sydney, Thomas Townshend, 1st Viscount** (1733–1801). English politician, born in Norfolk. Grandson of 'Turnip' \*Townsend, educated at Cambridge, he was a Whig MP 1754–83 and a critic of the American war. As Home Secretary and Colonial Secretary 1782–83; 1783–89, he was a patron of Arthur \*Phillip. When the first settlers reached New South Wales (1788), the capital was named for Sydney.

**Sydow, Max** (Carl Adolf) **von** (1929–2020). Swedish actor. Educated at the Royal Dramatic Theatre School, Stockholm, he had a long stage career, then appeared in 114 films, 11 directed by Ingmar \*Bergman.

**Syme, Sir Ronald** (1903–1989). British historian, born in New Zealand. His *The Roman Revolution* (1939) was a powerful analysis of how \*Augustus seized power and crushed dissent while preserving a republican facade. He became Camden professor of ancient history at Oxford 1949–70, and wrote biographies of \*Tacitus (2 vols, 1958), \*Sallust (1964), and *The Augustan Aristocracy* (1986). Considered to be the greatest 20th-century historian of ancient Rome, he received the OM in 1976.

**Symington, William** (1763–1831). Scottish engineer. He made early experiments in applying steam power to ships and patented (1801) a horizontal direct-acting steam engine that he fitted to the tug *Charlotte Dundas* on the Forth-Clyde canal. This was the first effective steamboat but, though it towed two coal barges 19 miles in six hours, its adoption was rejected for spurious reasons. A further plan to introduce steam-powered tugs on the Bridgewater Canal ended in disappointment when the 3rd Duke of Bridgewater died (1803). Symington died in poverty.

**Symonds, John Addington** (1840–1893). English man of letters. His *Studies of the Greek Poets* (1873) was followed by the notable *The Renaissance in Italy* (1875–86). He translated Benvenuto \*Cellini's autobiography, and the sonnets of \*Michelangelo, whose biography he also wrote (2 volumes, 1893). He wrote several volumes of poetry, and studies of Ben \*Jonson and \*Shelley.

**Symons, A(lphonse) J(ames) A(lroy)** (1900–1941). English writer. He was remembered almost solely for an astonishing piece of literary detection, *The Quest for Corvo* (1934), which revived interest in the eccentric novelist Frederick \*Rolfé, Baron Corvo.

**Symons, Arthur William** (1865–1945). British critic and poet. By his translations and studies of \*Baudelaire and by *The Symbolist Movement in Literature* (1899) he was largely responsible for introducing the work of this French literary school to English readers. His other books include *The Romantic Movement in English Poetry* (1909) and several volumes of essays and poems. In 1909, he suffered a psychotic breakdown, which reduced his output for two decades.

**Synge, John Millington** (1871–1909). Irish playwright, born near Dublin. After living in Paris (1895–1902), where he met \*Yeats, he returned to Ireland and made several visits to the Aran Islands, studying folk speech and culture. This study provided him with the setting for his plays, the first two of which, *In the Shadow of the Glen* (1903) and *Riders to the Sea* (1904), brought him into close association with the Abbey Theatre, Dublin. There followed *The Well of the Saints* (1905) and his great comedy *The Playboy of the Western World* (1907). His tragic verse-drama *Deirdre of the Sorrows* was unfinished when he died. His influence upon succeeding Irish playwrights was immense.

Skelton, R., *The Writings of J. M. Synge*. 1971.

**Syngman Rhee** *see* **Rhee, Syng-man**

**Szálasi, Ferencz** (1897–1946). Hungarian fascist. An extreme Hungarian nationalist (curious because his ancestry was Armenian, Slovak, German and Hungarian), in 1935 he founded a fascist party, renamed Arrow Cross in 1939. Installed in power by the Germans in October 1944, the Arrow Cross regime murdered many thousands of Hungarians (mostly Jews) and Szálasi was executed for war crimes.

**Szell, George** (1897–1970). Hungarian-American conductor, born in Budapest. A juvenile prodigy as a pianist, he made his debut as a conductor in Berlin (1914) and became a protégé of Richard \*Strauss and Arturo \*Toscanini. Chief Conductor of the Metropolitan Opera, New York, 1942–45, he directed the Cleveland Orchestra 1946–70 and raised it to the first rank, also making many recordings.

**Szent-Györgyi** (de Nagyrápolt), **Albert** (1893–1986). Hungarian-American physiologist, born in Budapest. Educated at Semmelweis and Cambridge universities, he is credited with isolating Vitamin C and explaining the citric acid cycle, for which he received the Nobel Prize for Physiology or Medicine in 1937. Active in the Hungarian Resistance during World War II, he entered Hungarian politics briefly after the war, but migrated to the US in 1947.

**Szigeti, József** (1892–1973). Hungarian-Jewish violinist, born in Budapest. Encouraged by \*Joachim, \*Ysaÿe and \*Busoni, he toured with \*Melba, worked closely with \*Bartók, and was admired for his fine intellect. He lived in the US during World War II and died in Switzerland.

**Szilard, Leo** (1898–1964). Hungarian-American physicist, born in Budapest. He studied in Germany, lived in England from 1934 and the US from 1937. He wrote pioneering papers on information theory (1929) and the theory of nuclear chain reaction (1934). He drafted \*Einstein's letter to President \*Roosevelt (October 1939) which led to the 'Manhattan Project' and nuclear weapons. He worked with \*Fermi in Chicago on the original 'atomic pile'

and on developing the atomic bomb, although opposing its use against civilian targets. Professor of biophysics at Chicago 1946–53, he had extraordinary insight into a variety of scientific areas but did little sustained research or publication.

Lanouette, W., *Genius in the Shadows*. 1993.

**Szymanowski, Karol Maciej** (1882–1937). Polish composer. Director of the Warsaw Conservatoire 1926–28; 1930–32, his early works are individual, despite their eclectic romantic blend of influences (\*Wagner, Richard \*Strauss, \*Scriabin, \*Debussy, \*Ravel). Later studying Polish folk music strongly affected his compositions. His works include his three symphonies; piano and chamber works, e.g. *The Fountain of Arethusa* for violin and piano; operas, e.g. *King Roger* (1926); two violin concertos; and *Stabat Mater* for soloists, chorus and orchestra. A victim of homophobia, he also suffered from tuberculosis and died in Lausanne.

**Szyborska, Wisława** (1923–2012). Polish poet. She won the 1996 Nobel Prize for Literature for her elegant, subtle but penetrating verse, hailed as Mozartian by enthusiasts. Volumes of her poems include *Views with a Grain of Sand* (1995).

# T

**Taafe, Eduard von, Graf [Count]** (1833–1895). Austrian administrator. Of Irish descent, he was a lifelong friend of the Emperor \*Franz Joseph and became Prime Minister of Austria 1868–70, 1879–93. He proposed concessions to the Czechs in return for support against the Hungarians.

**Tacitus, Publius** (or Gaius) Cornelius (c.55–120). Roman historian. Born in the reign of \*Nero, he became proconsul of Asia under \*Trajan and thus lived through seven of the reigns which he described. Of his undisputed works *Agricola* was a eulogistic account of his father-in-law, especially interesting for its account of Britain; *Germania* was a first-hand account of the country and its people; *The Histories* (14 books, of which No. 14 and part of 5 survive) relate the events of his lifetime from the death of Nero (68) to that of Domitian (96). Even better were the *Annals* (16 books, with most of 1–6 and all of 11–16 extant), which cover the earlier period from the death of \*Augustus (14 CE). Tacitus was a shrewd psychologist but where his prejudices were involved (e.g. against \*Tiberius) he becomes unreliable and unfair. He aims to be an exact recorder of events, which, however, he sometimes misinterprets. In striking contrast with the rotundity of \*Cicero's period is Tacitus' terse, epigrammatic style which adds dramatic intensity to the episodes he describes.

Syme, R., *Tacitus*. 1958.

**Taft, William Howard** (1857–1930). 27th President of the US 1909–13. Born in Cincinnati, Ohio, son of **Alphonso Taft** (1810–1881), briefly Secretary of War 1876 and US Attorney-General 1876–77 under President \*Grant, he studied law at Yale and in Cincinnati. He was a judge of the Ohio Supreme Court 1887–90, US Solicitor-General 1890–92 and a judge of the Court of Appeal 1892–1900. Following the defeat of Spain by the US and the acquisition of the Philippines, he was president 1900–01 of the commission sent to the islands and the first Governor-General 1901–04. His friend Theodore \*Roosevelt appointed him Secretary of War 1904–08 and secured for him the Republican nomination for president in 1908, which he won overwhelmingly on the first ballot. He defeated William Jennings \*Bryan comfortably and in his inaugural address (1909) declared that henceforward the status of African-Americans would become the responsibility of the states, in effect renouncing the principles for which \*Lincoln fought the Civil War. His conservatism and lack of initiative alienated Roosevelt who sought the 1912 nomination himself. After Taft's renomination (significant but with many abstentions), Roosevelt then ran as a third party Progressive candidate,

splitting the Republican vote and ensuring victory for the Democratic nominee, Woodrow \*Wilson. Professor of constitutional law at Yale 1913–21, he was appointed by President \*Harding as Chief Justice of the US Supreme Court 1921–30, becoming the only person to have headed two branches of the US Government. He is also remembered for his huge bulk (about 170kg as president).

His son, **Robert Alphonso Taft** (1889–1953) was a US senator from Ohio 1939–53. As conservative as his father, he sponsored the controversial Taft-Hartley Labor Act (1947) to curtail union power. He first sought the Republican nomination for president in 1944 and 1948: in 1952 he lost narrowly to \*Eisenhower. The most effective conservative of his era, in 1957 he was voted by a US Senate committee as one of the five greatest senators ever. His son, **Robert Alphonso Taft, Jr** (1917–1993), a lawyer, was a US Congressman 1962–84; 1966–68 and Senator 1971–76.

**Taglioni**. Italian ballet family. **Filippo Taglioni** (1777–1871) choreographed about 40 ballets. His best known, *La sylphide*, to music by Jean Schneitzhoeffter, was premiered in Paris in 1832 and toured extensively as the prototype modern romantic ballet. His daughter **Marie Taglioni** (1804–1884), born in Stockholm, made her reputation in *La sylphide*, and created the popular ethereal style, with wispy costume, dancing on points, and elevation. She later taught in London and died in the south of France. Her brother and niece were also famous dancers.

**Tagore, (Sir) Rabindranath** (1861–1941). Indian (Bengali) poet, short story writer, philosopher, artist and composer, born in Kolkata (Calcutta). His very rich family was part of an unorthodox Brahmin community, which allowed a liberal attitude to religion and life. Largely educated by his brothers, he studied briefly in London, and founded (1901) at Bolpur in Bengal a school for the reconciliation of western and eastern educational thought. Later at nearby Santiniketan, he established an institution to guide the rehabilitation of village life and a seat of international culture. He first became known as a poet outside India with *Gitanjali* ('Song Offerings') and was the first non-European awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1913, for 'his profoundly sensitive, fresh and beautiful verses'. (The original Bengali loses much in English translation.) In the natural beauties of earth and sky, the love of children and his mystical experiences (upon which rather than on theology his religion was based) he found the inspiration for his poems, into the original Indian versions of which he introduced much metrical experiment. His works were translated in several languages, he travelled extensively through Asia, Europe and the Americas lecturing on Indian philosophy and religion and was an international celebrity. He composed more than 1,000 songs and became a painter in later life.

He opposed imperialism, but thought India could learn from the west, for example, in science, law and democratic politics. He corresponded with \*Gandhi from 1915 until his death: they agreed on broad issues but disagreed on tactics. Tagore disliked communalism and nationalism and promoted science, while Gandhi wanted a return to traditional values.

Knighted in 1915, Tagore renounced the honour after the Amritsar massacre (1919).

Bose, A., *Rabindranath Tagore*. 1958; Sen, A., *The Argumentative Indian*. 2006.

**Taine, Hippolyte Adolphe** (1828–1893). French historian and critic. He established the principle of applying scientific method to the analysis of history and literature. He first gained recognition with a study of \*La Fontaine in 1853. His most famous work, still unfinished at his death, was *Origines de la France contemporaine*. He was made professor of aesthetics at the École des Beaux Arts in 1864. His studies of history reveal a pessimistic view of society and its development.

**Takemitsu Tōru** (1930–1996). Japanese composer. Influenced by \*Debussy, \*Stravinsky, \*Messiaen, \*Cage and \*Boulez, his music had a striking individuality while attempting to merge elements of Western and Eastern traditions. He was a prolific composer of orchestral, chamber and piano works.

**Takeshita Noburu** (1924–2000). Japanese Liberal Democratic politician. A Diet member 1958–2000, and originally a member of the \*Tanaka faction he was Finance Minister 1982–87, Prime Minister 1987–89. He was a powerful influence behind the scene, regarded as corrupt but skilful at avoiding prosecution.

**Talaat Pasha** (Talât Paşa), **Mehmed** (1874–1921). Turkish politician, born near Edirne. A leader of the 'Young Turks' movement, he was Minister for Finance 1914–17 and Grand Vizier (i.e. Prime Minister) of the Ottoman Empire 1917–18. He and \*Enver Pasha bear primary responsibility for the Armenian genocide from 1915 in which between 0.8 and 1.5 million were killed. He was assassinated in Berlin by an Armenian, with the tacit approval of British, German, Turkish and Russian intelligence.

Kieser, H.-L., *Talaat Pasha. Father of Modern Turkey. Architect of Genocide*. 2018.

**Talbot, (William) Henry Fox** (1800–1877). English experimenter. Educated at Harrow and Trinity College, Cambridge, he was elected FRS in 1831 and became a Whig MP 1833–34. Assisted by Sir William \*Herschel, he worked on techniques to fix the images produced by a camera obscura, and his first photograph using a negative of paper impregnated with silver chloride dates from 1833 and is essentially

the photographic technique still in use. (\*Niepce and \*Daguerre produced single images on metal plates which required long exposure and could not be reproduced.) In 1841 he succeeded in making positive prints and published the first book of photographs, *The Pencil of Nature* (in parts, 1844–46). By 1850 he had laid the foundations of modern photography by overcoming the need for long exposures. He also carried out useful investigations on spectra and showed how to distinguish certain elements by their spectral lines. He was also one of the first to decipher the Assyrian Cuneiform scripts from Nineveh.

Gernsheim, H. and A., *The History of Photography*. 1969.

**Talleyrand (Périgord), Charles Maurice de, Prince of Benevento** (1754–1838). French diplomat and politician, born in Paris. From a noble family in economic decline, he suffered from a congenital limp that prevented an army career and led him to enter the Church. Combining a dissolute life with theological studies, he became Bishop of Autun in 1788. During the Revolution he was President of the Constituent Assembly (1790), supported the Civil Constitution of the Clergy and resigned his bishopric. He lived in Philadelphia 1794–95. When the Directory came to power, his friend \*Barras made him Foreign Minister, a position he held 1797–1807, under Directory, Consulate and Empire, and again 1815–16 under \*Louis XVIII. He used his keen and subtle intelligence to consolidate by diplomacy the victories won in the field. Among the treaties he negotiated were those of Luneville (1801) with Austria, of Amiens (1802) with Great Britain and of Tilsit (1807) with Russia. Soon after Tilsit he resigned as Foreign Minister, apparently in disagreement with \*Napoléon's policies in Spain and Portugal. He remained, however, at the centre of events and accompanied Napoléon to the Congress of Erfurt (1808). Here, convinced that the policies of his master and the interests of France were increasingly divergent, and being by no means neglectful of personal advantage, he entered into secret relations with Tsar \*Aleksandr I and the Austrian statesman, \*Metternich. Thereafter he played a double game. After Napoléon's fall (1814) he headed the French provisional government, and at the Congress of Vienna defended French interests with consummate skill. His last important post was that of Ambassador 1830–35 to Great Britain under \*Louis Philippe. In the negotiations about the future of the Netherlands his views in favour of creating a neutral, independent Belgium prevailed. He was almost certainly the father of the painter \*Delacroix and grandfather of the politician \*Morny.

Bernard, J. F., *Talleyrand* 1973; Orioux, J., *Talleyrand*. 1974.

**Tallien, Jean Lambert** (1769–1820). French Revolutionary politician. He first became prominent as a printer of Jacobin broadsheets. As a member of the

Committee of Public Safety he was sent to Bordeaux (1793) to institute the 'Terror'. There he met his future wife, whom he saved from the guillotine. Later she became known as 'Notre Dame de Thermidor' because of the prominent part she played with her husband during the rising of 9 Thermidor (28 July) which resulted in \*Robespierre's downfall. Tallien's importance soon declined and he died forgotten.

**Tallis, Thomas** (c.1505–1585). English composer, probably born in Kent. Little is known of his early life but he may have been organist at Waltham Abbey from 1538 until its dissolution (1540). At Canterbury Cathedral 1540–43, then at the Chapel Royal 1543–85, he became joint organist 1575–85 with his pupil and business partner William \*Byrd. Despite their Anglican appointments, like Byrd, he remained Catholic, but composed for both the Catholic (Latin texts, polyphonic) and Protestant (English, chordal) liturgies. They collaborated in obtaining (1575) a monopoly for printing and selling music and music paper and in publishing in that year a volume of motets, of which they were joint composers. Tallis' huge output consists almost entirely of liturgical music, including the *Lamentations* for five voices and the motet *Spem in Alium Nunquam Habui* ('I have never put my hope in any other...'), written about 1570 for eight choirs of five voices, a 12-minute work of extraordinary complexity, gripping drama, tension and serene beauty. *Fantasia on a Theme of Thomas Tallis* (1910) was composed by Ralph \*Vaughan Williams.

Doe, P., *Tallis*. 1968; McCarthy, K., *Tallis* 2021.

**Tamayo, Rufino** (1899–1991). Mexican Expressionist painter. Influenced by pre-Columbian and popular arts forms, as well as \*Picasso and \*Braque, he lived in the US and was recognised as one of the most important modern Mexican artists.

**Tamerlane** (or Tamburlaine) *see* **Timur**

**Tammany** (correctly **Tamanend**) (c.1625–1701). American Lenni-Lenape chief. Chief of chiefs of the Turtle clan of the Lenni-Lenape nation in the Delaware-Pennsylvania region, he negotiated seven land agreements with William \*Penn. Tammany Hall, founded (1789) as the Tammany Society of Columbian Order, a patriotic political club, was named after him. Later, as the headquarters of the Democratic Party organisation in New York City, it won a bad reputation for the methods of corruption and intimidation by which it was alleged to secure votes.

**Tan Malaka** (1894–1949). Indonesian Communist leader. A Sumatran, he was a co-founder of the Indonesian Communist Party (PKI) in 1920 and asked the Comintern to endorse the Pan Islam movement. After 1922 he spent many years in exile under a variety of names. His career parallels \*Ho Chi Minh's. He returned to Indonesia in 1942 and worked

with the Japanese. In 1948 Moscow denounced him as a Titoist. He founded the *Murba* (Proletarian) movement, began guerrilla warfare against Soekarno and the Dutch and was shot by the army.

**Tanaka Kakuei** (1918–1993). Japanese politician. Educated at a technical college, he began his own construction business at 19, became a member of the Diet 1947 and Secretary-General of the Liberal Democratic Party 1965–66 and 1968–71. As Prime Minister 1972–74 he initiated closer links with China and promoted proposals for remodelling the Japanese archipelago. Accused of taking bribes from the Lockheed Corporation, he resigned as Prime Minister and faced a lengthy trial from 1976. Convicted in 1983, he was sentenced to four years jail, fined \$US2.1 million, and then released on appeal.

**Taney, Roger Brooke** (1777–1864). American jurist, born in Maryland. Andrew \*Jackson appointed him Attorney-General 1831–33, Secretary of the Treasury 1833–34 (the first presidential nomination ever rejected by the Senate) and Chief Justice of the Supreme Court 1836–64, being confirmed over the objections of \*Clay, \*Calhoun and \*Webster. He was the first Catholic appointed to the Cabinet or to the US Supreme Court. Taney broadly supported increasing Federal power at the expense of the states. However, he is best remembered for his decision in the *Dred Scott* case (1857) that, under the US Constitution, African-Americans 'had no rights that the white man was bound to respect; and that the negro might justly and lawfully be reduced to slavery for his benefit. He was bought and sold and treated as an ordinary article of merchandise and traffic, whenever profit could be made by it'. As a result, African-Americans had no right to sue in the courts and Congress could not exclude slavery from the territories. Taney had been an opponent of slavery as a young man, then became its defender. However, he remained loyal to the Union during the Civil War.

**Taneyev, Sergei Ivanovich** (1856–1915). Russian composer and pianist. A pupil of Nikolai \*Rubinstein and close friend of \*Tchaikovsky, he taught \*Rachmaninoff, \*Scriabin, \*Medtner and \*Glière at the Moscow Conservatorium. He was a pioneer in studying early composers, including \*Josquin, \*Lassus and \*Ockeghem, and wrote a textbook on counterpoint. His most performed works are the two String Quintets (cello, 1901; viola, 1904) and Piano Quintet (1911). Sofya Tolstoy became infatuated with him.

**Tang.** Chinese dynasty which ruled 618–907, marked by a golden age in the arts and a liberated role for women. The Tangs claimed descent from \*Lao Zi.

**Tange Kenzo** (1913–2005). Japanese architect. Educated at Tokyo University, where he became professor of architecture 1946–74, he designed buildings for the Tokyo Olympics 1964, Expo '70



at Osaka, the Hiroshima Peace Centre and major projects in Italy, Yugoslavia, Algeria, France and the US.

**Tapiés Puig, Antoni** (1923–2012). Spanish artist, born in Barcelona. He studied law and was self-trained as an artist, holding his first one-man exhibition in 1948. He turned from Surrealism to abstraction, working in mixed media, combining glue, paper, cloth, cardboard, plaster and wood, and won an international reputation. In 2010, King \*Juan Carlos created him a marquis.

**Tarantino, Quentin** (1963–). American screenwriter and director, born in Tennessee. His films include *Reservoir Dogs* (1992), *Pulp Fiction* (1994), *Inglourious Basterds* (2009) and *Django Unchained* (2012).

**Tardieu, André Pierre Gabriel Amédée** (1876–1945). French politician. A journalist who wrote mostly on foreign affairs, he became a deputy in 1914, fought in World War I and assisted \*Clémenceau in the peace treaty negotiations. As founder and leader of the Republican Centre Party, almost continuously in ministerial office 1926–32, he was Prime Minister 1929, 1930 and 1932.

**Tarkington, Booth** (1869–1946). American popular novelist. He is mainly remembered for the novels of life in the Middle West which were dramatised into successful plays or films. e.g. *Monsieur Beaucaire* (1901) and *The Magnificent Ambersons* (1918) which won the Pulitzer Prize and was later filmed by Orson \*Welles.

**Tarquinius Superbus, Lucius** (c.564–505 BCE). King of Rome 534–510 BCE. Seventh and last of the semi-legendary kings of Rome, his reign and that of his father **Lucius Tarquinius Priscus** (616–578) represented a period of Etruscan domination, interrupted possibly by the intervening reign of Servius Tullius (who may, however, also have been Etruscan). Tradition assigns the cause of Tarquinius' expulsion from Rome to the anger caused by the rape of the beautiful Lucretia (Lucrece) by his son Sextus, but it was more probably due to the tyranny of his rule which was remembered so vividly that 'king' became a hated word and the title was never adopted even by the all-powerful rulers of later days. An attempt by Lars Porsena (commemorated in the legend of Horatius) to restore Etruscan supremacy failed.

**Tartini, Giuseppe** (1692–1770). Italian composer and violinist. The greatest violinist of his time, and the first to play with a \*Stradivarius, he founded his own school (1726) in Padua. The best known of his surviving compositions, mainly for violin, is the Sonata in G Minor ('The Devil's Trill': c.1740), inspired, he said, by music played to him by the devil in a dream. He wrote on acoustics and is known as the discoverer of 'resultant tones'.

**Tasman, Abel Janszoon** (c.1603–1659). Dutch navigator. Sent on several voyages of exploration by van \*Diemen, Governor of the Dutch East Indies, he discovered Tasmania (1642), which he named Van Diemen's Land, and New Zealand, Tonga and Fiji (1643). On another voyage (1644) he entered the Gulf of Carpentaria (previously discovered) and went on to explore the northwest coast of Australia.

**Tassigny, Jean de Lattre de** *see* **Lattre de Tassigny, Jean de**

**Tasso, Torquato** (1544–1595). Italian poet, born at Sorrento. Son of **Bernardo Tasso** (1493–1569), author of *Amadigi di Gaula* and *Floridante*, he studied at Padua, where he wrote his epic *Rinaldo*. In 1565 he went to Ferrara where he served first Cardinal d'Este and then (from 1571) his brother Duke Alfonso II. In 1573 he published a pastoral play, *Aminta*, the sensuous atmosphere of which was repeated in his great epic of the 1st Crusade, *La Gerusalemme liberata* (1575). In the following year, partly because of objections to his epic by the Inquisition, he showed signs of persecution mania. For a scene of violence (1577) in the presence of the Duchess he was briefly imprisoned. Given a refuge in a Franciscan monastery he fled to his sister but in 1579 was back in Ferrara. After renewed outbursts of frenzy he was again imprisoned, this time for seven years. The legend repeated by \*Goethe and \*Byron that the sentence resulted from his love for the Duke's sister has no basis in fact. Released in 1586, he was received by the Gonzagas in Mantua but soon began a wandering life, working intermittently on *Gerusalemme conquistata*, a revision of his earlier epic, from which many of the loveliest passages were removed. Among his other works were his 'discourses' on poetry, his letters and an unsuccessful tragedy, *Torrismondo*.

Brand, C. P., *Torquato Tasso*. 1965.

**Tate, Sir Henry, 1st Baronet** (1819–1899). English merchant and manufacturer, born in Lancashire. As a young man employed in a sugar refinery in Liverpool he patented a device for compressing and cutting sugar into cubes. The profits from this enabled him to set up his own company, Henry Tate and Sons. In 1897 he established the Tate Gallery, to which he gave his own collection of paintings and £80,000.

**Tate, Nahum** (1652–1715). Anglo-Irish poet. He wrote the libretto for \*Purcell's opera *Dido and Aeneas* (1685), a metrical version of the Psalms (1696) and, almost certainly, the hymn *While Shepherds Watched Their Flocks By Night* (1702). His version of *King Lear* (1681) practically ousted \*Shakespeare's original until 1840. Poet Laureate from 1692, he also wrote *Panacea*, or a *Poem on Tea* (1700).

**Tauber, Richard** (Ernst Seiffert) (1891–1948). Austrian tenor, born in Linz. He sang in opera and, increasingly from 1925, in light opera (e.g. *Lilac Time*) and films. He was also a noted exponent of

\*Schubert's songs. He composed several songs and the musical comedy *Old Chelsea*. In 1940 he was naturalised as a British subject.

**Tavener, Sir John Kenneth** (1944–2013). English composer. He taught at Trinity College, London, divided his time between Britain and Greece, became a Russian Orthodox convert in 1977 and wrote works for the Russian and Greek liturgy. He disclaimed his earlier works. Later compositions include *The Protecting Veil* (cello concerto, 1989), which was frequently performed, *The Repentant Thief* (clarinet and orchestra, 1991), *Song for Athene* (1993), *The Veil of the Temple* (2003).

**Taverner, John** (1495–1545). English composer. He composed his best music before 1530, while choirmaster at Cardinal College (Christ Church), Oxford. His Masses (notably *Gloria tibi, Trinitas* and *O Western Wynde*) show him to have been a strongly gifted precursor of English polyphonic masters of the later 16th century. He played a fanatical and active part in the suppression of the monasteries instituted by \*Henry VIII. The greatest choral composer of his time, six of his great Masses have now been recorded.

**Tawney, Richard Henry** (1880–1962). English economic historian, born in Calcutta (now Kolkata). Educated at Rugby and Oxford, he was a Sergeant in World War I and a social worker at Toynbee Hall in the East End of London. A lecturer at the London School of Economics 1917–31, and a Fellow of Balliol College, Oxford (1918), he became President 1928–44 of the Workers' Educational Association. A Christian and a non-Marxist socialist, his studies of English economic history (particularly of the 16th and 17th centuries) include *The Acquisitive Society* (1926), *Religion and the Rise of Capitalism* (1926), *Equality* (1931) and *Business and Politics under James I* (1958). He was professor of economic history at the London School of Economics 1931–49.

**Taylor, A(lan) J(ohn) P(ercevale)** (1906–1990). English historian, born in Lancashire. Educated at Oxford, he lectured at Manchester 1930–38 and Oxford, where he was a Fellow of Magdalen 1938–76. Taylor was a controversial figure, devastating in debate and with mastery of sources, incisive in style, witty and argumentative in manner, determinedly paradoxical in approach. He described his own politics as 'extreme views held moderately'. His involvement in television lecturing and popular journalism aroused deep professional prejudice despite the strength of his published work, e.g. *The Habsburg Monarchy* (1941), *The Struggle for Mastery in Europe* (1954), *Bismarck* (1955), *The Origins of the Second World War* (1961), and *English History 1914–45* (1965).

Burk, K., *Troublemaker*. 2000.

**Taylor, Dame Elizabeth** (1932–2011). English film actor in the US. Famous as a child star (*National Velvet*, 1944), she was a celebrated beauty who

appeared in many vapid romances, later gaining a reputation as a dramatic actor, e.g. in *Cat on a Hot Tin Roof* (1958), *Butterfield 8* (1960) and *Who's Afraid of Virginia Woolf?* (1966), winning an Academy Award for the last two. She married the film director Mike Todd, the singer Eddie Fisher, Richard \*Burton (twice), a US senator and three others.

**Taylor, Frederick Winslow** (1856–1915). American industrial engineer. He wrote *Principles of Scientific Management* (1911) which applied technocratic modes to industrial practice, setting scientific standards, such as time-study and cost-benefit, to measure efficiency. Opponents of 'Taylorism' thought that his methods increased alienation and dehumanisation in the workplace.

**Taylor, Jeremy** (1613–1667). English author and clergyman. He attracted attention as a preacher, became chaplain to \*Laud and \*Charles I and (1638) was rector of Uppingham, Rutland. In the Civil War he was a chaplain with the royalist forces, was taken prisoner in Wales, became chaplain to the Earl of Carbery (1645–57) and Bishop of Down in Northern Ireland (1661–67). His theological works, of which *The Liberty of Prophesying* (1646), *Holy Living* (1650) and *Holy Dying* (1651) were the most influential, were written in a style combining simplicity and splendour. They reveal him as a moderate and tolerant Churchman ready to limit matters of faith to what is found in the Bible and the Apostles' Creed, leaving a large area in which a Christian was entitled to think for themselves. Such teaching, which provided a basis of belief for later evangelical Churchmen, was supplemented by *Ductor Dubitantium* (1660), a vast work on moral theology aimed at formulating distinctions between good and evil.

**Taylor, Zachary** (1784–1850). 12th President of the US 1849–50. Born in Virginia, son of a planter who then settled in Kentucky, he joined the army in 1808, lived in Louisiana from 1825 and gained a national reputation in the frontier fighting in the second Seminole war, earning the nickname 'Old Rough and Ready'. Sent to Texas by President \*Polk (1845) to defend the frontier against Mexican attack, he was present when an exchange of shots led to the Mexican War (1846–47). His victory at Buena Vista (1847) was the decisive and culminating episode. Despite having had no political experience (and having never voted), he defeated Winfield \*Scott and Henry \*Clay to win the Whig nomination for president in 1848, and won election over Lewis \*Cass and Martin \*Van Buren. Although a slave owner himself, he took the commonsense view that California (acquired from Mexico) should, if it chose, enter the Union as a free state. He died of an unspecified stomach complaint and was succeeded by Millard \*Fillmore.

**Tchaikovsky, Pyotr Ilyich** (1840–1893). Russian composer, born at Kamsko-Votkinsk in the Urals. As a boy he was hypersensitive and abnormally

dependent on his mother; her death when he was 14 affected him for the rest of his life. After being trained for the law, for which he was unfitted, at 21 he began to study music under Anton \*Rubinstein at the St Petersburg Conservatoire. In 1865 he became professor of harmony at the Moscow Conservatoire, founded the previous year by Rubinstein's brother Nikolai. In his early works, e.g. the Symphony No. 1 (*Winter Dreams*, 1868) and the fantasy-overture *Romeo and Juliet* (1870, revised 1880), he was influenced by the ideals of the nationalist group of Russian composers led by \*Balakirev. The strongly Russian flavour of \*Tchaikovsky's early music (often based on folksong) was now gradually superseded by a cosmopolitan idiom in which his preference for the French over the German masters became apparent. He met \*Berlioz, Johann \*Strauss, \*Brahms, \*Saint-Saëns and \*Mahler. Partly to squash speculation about his homosexuality, he married (1877) a former pupil Antonina Milyukova, despite their complete incompatibility. He left her after a fortnight but the episode caused insomnia, hallucinations and a deterioration of his mental stability. He toured from 1877, partly for his health, journeys largely financed by a rich widow **Nadezhda von Meck** (1831–1894) who settled a generous annuity on him. They corresponded from 1876 to 1891 but never spoke: on two accidental meetings they passed in embarrassed silence. He conducted in Paris, London, Hamburg, Leipzig, Dresden, Berlin and Prague, and took holidays in Italy. He lived at Klin, near Moscow, from 1885 and visited the US in 1891, giving concerts in New York, Baltimore and Philadelphia.

He composed eight symphonies, including the unnumbered *Manfred* (1885) and the incomplete No. 7 (1892). The most performed are Symphony No. 4 (1877), No. 5 (1888) and No. 6 (*Pateticheskaja*, 'passionate' in Russian, mistranslated in the West as *Pathétique*: 1893), his last, and most emotionally intense, work. His major ballets *Swan Lake* (1876), *Sleeping Beauty* (1889) and *Nutcracker* (1891–92) remain in the repertoire of every company. His Piano Concerto No. 1 in B Flat (1875) has challenged every virtuoso and contains some of his most effective keyboard writing. *The Variations on a Rococo theme* for cello (1876) and the Violin Concerto in D (1878) are masterpieces. He wrote the *Serenade for Strings* (1880), a powerful Piano Trio (1882) and the *Souvenir de Florence* (string sextet, also arranged for string orchestra, 1890), many superb songs and less successful piano solos.

His emotionalism and rhetoric, which both attracts and repels, is demonstrated in the fantasy overture *Romeo and Juliet* (1869), the symphonic fantasy *Francesca da Rimini* (1876), the *1812 Overture* (1880) and *Hamlet* (1888). Of his 10 operas only *Eugeny Onegin* (1878) and *The Queen of Spades* (1890), both based on \*Pushkin, are performed outside Russia. He died, supposedly of cholera, but possibly by suicide, in St Petersburg and was buried there.

Weinstock, H., *Tchaikovsky*. 1943; Brown, D., *Tchaikovsky: A Biographical and Critical Study*. 4 vols, 1978–93; Poznansky, A., *Tchaikovsky*. 1993.

**Tcherepnin, Nikolai Nikolaievich** (1873–1945). Russian conductor and composer. After studying under \*Rimsky-Korsakov he was attached to the Mariinsky Theatre, St Petersburg, then working with \*Diaghilev's Ballets Russes, and later with Anna \*Pavlova. Principal of the Tiflis (Tbilisi) Conservatorium 1918–21, he moved to Paris. He wrote music for Diaghilev until 1914 and in 1918 became principal of the Tiflis conservatoire. He wrote two operas, but was best known for his ballet music which showed a mixture of traditional Russian and modern French influences.

**Tecumseh** (c.1768–1813). American Shawnee chief, born in modern Ohio. Helped by his brother **Tenskwatawa**, 'the Prophet', he enforced order and discipline, and, above all, forbade all intercourse with the white settlers or any cession of land without consent of the Indian peoples as a whole. He fought on the British side with the rank of brigadier-general in the War of 1812, among the causes of which were alleged British intrigues with the Indians on the US–Canadian frontier. Near this frontier Tecumseh was killed at the Battle of the Thames (Ontario).

Tucker, G., *Tecumseh: Vision of Glory*. 1956.

**Tedder, Arthur William Tedder, 1st Baron** (1890–1967). British airman, born in Stirlingshire. Educated at Cambridge, he joined the colonial service, transferring to the army (1914), then the RFC (1916), becoming a pilot. Director-General of research and development at the Air Ministry 1938–40, he became RAF Commander-in-Chief in the Middle East 1941–43, Allied Air Commander in the Mediterranean 1943, and Deputy Supreme Commander of Allied Forces in Europe 1943–45, under \*Eisenhower. He greatly disliked \*Montgomery. Promoted Marshal of the RAF in 1945 and created a baron in 1946, he was Chief of the Air Staff 1946–49 and Chancellor of Cambridge University 1950–67.

Owen, R., *Tedder*. 1965; Tedder, A. W., *With Prejudice*. 1966.

**Teilhard de Chardin, Pierre** (1881–1955). French geologist, palaeontologist, Jesuit priest and philosopher. He was closely involved in the 'discovery' of Piltown man (1912–13) which may have been intended as a scientific joke rather than a serious hoax. After serving in World War I as a stretcher bearer, he became professor of geology at the Institute Catholique, Paris, in 1918. He lived in China 1923–46, made palaeontological expeditions into Central Asia and worked on the Peking man excavations (1929). In his writings he tried to reconcile Christian theology with science and developed the concept of 'cosmic evolution', leading to the ultimate 'Omega point' and the second coming of Christ. He lived

in France 1946–51 and the US from 1951 and died in New York. Forbidden to publish during his lifetime, he achieved great posthumous fame with his *The Phenomenon of Man* (1938–40, published 1959) but his reputation has declined as rapidly (and mysteriously) as it rose in the 1960s.

Cunot, C., *Life of Teilhard de Chardin*. 1965.

**Te Kanawa, Dame Kiri** (1944– ). New Zealand soprano. Part Maori, she studied in Auckland and made her London debut in 1970, followed by New York (1974) and Milan (1978). Especially successful in \*Mozart, \*Verdi and \*Strauss operas, she made many recordings and several films. She received a CH in 2018.

**Telemann, Georg Philipp** (1681–1767). German composer, born in Magdeburg. Self-taught, he abandoned the study of law to become Director of the Leipzig Opera (1702) and later the Hamburg Opera (1732–38). He declined the post of Kantor at the Thomaskirche, Leipzig, in favour of his lesser known colleague J. S. \*Bach. Telemann was almost certainly the most prolific composer of all time, writing 40 operas, more than 600 orchestral suites, 44 passions, 12 complete sets of services, over 1,000 cantatas and many chamber works and concertos. Bach and \*Händel admired his music and Händel, especially, borrowed heavily from it. His works have sometimes been dismissed as tuneful, ornamental and lacking in dynamic tension, however, with renewed interest in his music, the admiration of his contemporaries appears well-founded.

**Telford, Thomas** (1757–1834). Scottish engineer, born in Dumfriesshire. Son of an Eskdale shepherd, he worked for several years as journeyman mason, using all his spare time for engineering study. After superintending dockyard construction at Portsmouth (from 1784) he was appointed surveyor of public works in Shropshire and built his first bridges in 1792. His Pontcysyllte Aqueduct and Canal (1795–1805), 18 kilometres long, in north-eastern Wales, became a World Heritage site in 2009. Other great achievements in a career during which he built some 1,200 bridges and 1,000 miles of roads, were the London–Holyhead road (including the Menai Straits suspension bridge, 1826) and the Caledonian Canal (1803–17). Elected FRS in 1827, he was the first President of the Institution of Civil Engineers.

Rolt, L. T. C., *Thomas Telford*. 1958.

**Teller, Edward** (1908–2003). Hungarian American physicist, born in Budapest. Educated at the Karlsruhe Technical Institute and the universities of Munich and Leipzig, he was professor of physics at George Washington University 1935–41, Columbia 1941–42, Chicago 1946–52 and California 1953–71. He worked on the atomic bomb during World War II and later, as assistant director of Los Alamos Scientific Laboratory (1949–52), he made important

contributions to physics by his work on, e.g., the structure of matter, cosmic rays and magnetohydrodynamics. Known as the ‘father of the hydrogen bomb’, first tested in 1952, he was a hardliner in the Cold War and an opponent of Robert \*Oppenheimer.

Jungk, R., *Brighter than a Thousand Suns*. 1958.

**Temple** (Black), **Shirley** (1928–2014). American actor, businesswoman and diplomat, born in Santa Monica, California. A prodigy, she appeared at 3½ in her first film, *The Red-Haired Alibi* (1932). In 1934 she made 10 more (including *Little Miss Marker* and *Bright Eyes*), winning a special Academy Award. Her skilled acting, singing and dancing, accompanied by curls and dimples, made her an international phenomenon. By 1938 she was Hollywood’s No. 1 box office attraction, spinning off Shirley Temple dolls, dresses and colouring books. By 1940 her juvenile career was in decline, but she made occasional films and television programs until 1960. She became active in Republican politics and was Ambassador to Ghana 1974–76 and Czechoslovakia 1989–92.

Windeger, R., *Shirley Temple*. 1976.

**Temple, William** (1881–1944). English Anglican prelate. His career closely followed that of his father **Frederick Temple** (1821–1902), headmaster of Rugby 1858–69 whose views were suspected as radical and unorthodox. He became Bishop of Exeter 1869–85, of London 1885–96 and Archbishop of Canterbury 1896–1902. William Temple was headmaster of Repton 1910–14 and became Bishop of Manchester 1921–29, Archbishop of York 1929–42 and of Canterbury 1942–44. Deeply influenced by the ideas of Charles \*Kingsley on Christian Socialism, he worked to link Christian thought with social and economic reconstruction. He was President of the Workers’ Educational Association 1908–24 and became, 1943–44, first President of the World Council of Churches.

Iremonger, F. A., *William Temple*. 1948.

**Temple, Sir William, 1st Baronet** (1628–1699). English diplomat and essayist, born in London. Educated at Cambridge, he negotiated the marriage of \*William of Orange and \*Mary (Stuart) and tried to persuade \*Charles II to accept the idea of Cabinet government. Jonathan \*Swift was his secretary at Moor Park, Surrey. He married Dorothy \*Osborne, promoted the English landscape garden movement and wrote eloquent essays.

**Templer, Sir Gerald Walter Robert** (1898–1979). Son of a general, he served in France, Italy and Germany during World War II. As High Commissioner in Malaya 1952–55 he defeated the insurgency by the Malaysian Races Liberation Army. Chief of the Imperial General Staff 1955–59, he founded the National Army Museum, London, in

1960 and received a KG in 1963. He is the only field marshal known to have been wounded in action by a grand piano.

**Templewood, Samuel John Gurney Hoare, 1st Viscount** *see* **Hoare, Samuel John Gurney, 1st Viscount Templewood**

**Tendulkar, Sachin Ramesh** (1973– ). Indian cricketer, born in Mumbai. He made his test debut in 1989, retiring in 2013 after playing in 200 test matches. By 2012 he had scored 100 centuries, for an aggregate of 34,000 runs, and was often ranked as second only to Don \*Bradman. He was appointed to the Rajya Sabha, India's upper house, 2012– .

**Teniers, David** (1610–1690). Flemish painter. Like his father, **David Teniers the Elder** (1582–1649), by whom he was trained, and under the influence of Adriaen \*Brouwer, he painted mostly genre pictures tavern scenes with soldiers gambling or brawling, a village festival, alchemists, witches etc. He worked in Antwerp and later Brussels, was court painter to Archduke Leopold, and compiled an illustrated record of his collection of pictures.

**Tenniel, Sir John** (1820–1914). English draughtsman. He joined the staff of *Punch* in 1851 and in 1901 retired after 50 years as the leading political cartoonist. He became even better known as the illustrator of Lewis \*Carroll's *Alice in Wonderland* and *Through the Looking Glass*. He was knighted in 1893.

**Tennyson, Alfred, 1st Baron Tennyson** (1809–1892). English poet, born at Somersby, Lincolnshire. Son of a clergyman, his family had a history of manic depression, obsessions and/or fits of rage. At Trinity College, Cambridge, he met Arthur \*Hallam, who became his greatest friend and whose sudden death (1833) evoked his famous elegy *In Memoriam* (published anonymously in 1850). Some of his juvenilia had already appeared in print and a volume published in the same year as Hallam's death contained his first successes such as *Oenone*, *The Lotus-eaters* and *A Dream of Fair Women*. A further collection (1842), including *Morte d'Arthur* (the genesis of *Idylls of the King*), *Locksley Hall*, *Ulysses* and such famous lyrics as *Break, Break, Break*, confirmed his reputation. A state pension of £200 (1842) per annum relieved immediate financial anxiety but it was not until 1850, when he succeeded \*Wordsworth as Poet Laureate, that he felt free to marry Emily Sellwood, to whom he had been engaged for 17 years. By now his poetry became a source of wealth. As Laureate he had to write poems to commemorate great events (e.g. *Ode on the Death of the Duke of Wellington* and *The Charge of the Light Brigade*). *Maud* (1855) was read or recited in every drawing room; of *Enoch Arden* (1864) 60,000 copies were at once sold. (Richard \*Strauss set it in 1897 as a melodrama for narrator and piano.) In 1854 Tennyson began to

live at Farringford, his house at Freshwater in the Isle of Wight, and he began to build his second home near Haslemere in 1868. Meanwhile, he had found inspiration in the legends of King Arthur and his *Idylls of the King* were appearing in steady sequence (1855–89). Of his verse plays the genius of \*Irving managed to make something of *Becket* (1879), but the others, e.g. *Queen Mary* (1876) and *Harold* (1877), were among his least successful works. He received a peerage in 1884.

Tennyson was so prolific and the demand from his public so great that much that is trite and second-rate appears in his *Collected Works*; his skills, his complete mastery of versification and the lilting music of his lines, turned opinion against him when a later age equated roughness with sincerity. He was capable of deep emotion, as *In Memoriam* and many other poems show. His approach was not primarily intellectual but he brought to the problems and discoveries of his day a philosophic outlook and a somewhat scientific mind. In 1890 he declaimed some poems on wax cylinders, now available on CD and YouTube. His son **Hallam Tennyson, 2nd Baron Tennyson** (1852–1928) was Governor-General of Australia 1903–04.

Tennyson, C., *Alfred Tennyson*. Repr. 1968; Thorn, M., *Tennyson*. 1992; Levi, P., *Tennyson*. 1992.

**Tenzing Norgay** (1914–1986). Nepalese mountaineer. He first climbed as a porter with an expedition to Everest in 1935. In 1952 he reached 8600 m. and in 1953, in John \*Hunt's expedition, he and Edmund \*Hillary reached the summit (8848 m.) He became President of the Sherpa Association.

Ullman, J. R., *Man of Everest*. 1955.

**Terborch** (or Terburg), **Gerard** (1617–1681). Dutch painter. He spent much of his time as a young painter in travel. One of his finest pictures (now in the National Gallery, London) portrays the delegates to the peace congress of Westphalia which ended the Thirty Years' War (1648). By 1650 he was back in Holland and perfected a type of genre picture, nearly always of small size, depicting scenes in which one or more figures, usually ladies, are reading, writing, playing music etc. in rooms appropriate to the elegance of their attire. Soft and delicate colour harmonies characterise his work.

**Terence** (Publius Terentius Afer) (c.190–160 BCE). Roman comic playwright, born in Carthage. Taken to Rome as a slave, he was educated and freed by his master. He achieved great success with *Andria* (166), the first of six plays, all extant. His others were *Hecyra* (*The Mother-in-law*, 165), *Heauton Timorumenos* (*The Self-punisher*, 163), *Eunuchus* (161) on which the first English comedy, *Ralph Roister Doister* was based, *Phormio* (161), *Adelphi* (*The Brothers*, 160). All were based on Greek originals, *Hecyra* and *Phormio* on plays by Apollodorus, the rest derived from \*Menander.

The stock situations and characters of ancient comedy were later again revived by \*Shakespeare and \*Molière. Terence was famed for use of polite colloquial speech.

Beare, W., *The Roman Stage*. 3rd ed. 1965.

**Teresa of Ávila, St** (also known as **St Teresa of Jesus**: Teresa Sánchez de Cepeda y Ahumada) (1515–1582). Spanish nun. She entered a Carmelite convent in Avila (c.1526) and had lived there over 20 years, much troubled by ill health, before she left to found, after considerable opposition, a convent governed by the original, stricter rule. St Joseph's Convent at Avila was the first of 15 established during her lifetime for 'discalced' or barefooted Carmelites (a separate order from 1580), for men as well as women. Despite this immense practical activity her books are among the most famous examples of mystical literature. *The Life* (1562–65) is a spiritual autobiography, *The Way of Perfection* (1565) provides guidance for her nuns, *The Foundation* (from 1576) tells of her work in establishing the new convents, and *The Interior Castle* (1577), perhaps her most illuminating work, is an account, written with all the conviction of her rich experience, of a contemplative life. Minor works too and letters, vivid, witty and wise, help to reveal one of the most attractive personalities of religious history. She was canonised only 40 years after her death. *St Teresa in Ecstasy* (in Rome) was one of \*Bernini's greatest sculptures. General \*Franco kept her mummified hand on his desk.

**Teresa of Calcutta, St** (formerly known as **Mother Teresa**: Anjezë Gonxhe Bojaxhiu) (1910–1997). Albanian Roman Catholic missionary, born in Üsküp (now Skopje), then in the Ottoman Empire. She joined the order of Sisters of Loreto in 1929. As principal of St Mary's High School, Calcutta, she founded the Missionaries of Charity in 1950 and, through this organisation, founded 50 orphanages and refuges for the destitute in India, notably the Pure Heart Home for Dying Destitutes. She was awarded the Pope John XXIII Peace Prize in 1971, the Nobel Prize for Peace in 1979, and the OM in 1983. The Order was established in other countries. In 2003 she was beatified by Pope \*John Paul II, and was canonised by Pope \*Francis in 2016.

Muggeridge, M., *Something Beautiful for God*. 1971; Egan, E., *Such a Vision of the Street*. 1986.

**Teresa of Lisieux** see **Thérèse of Lisieux, St**

**Terfel, Sir Bryn** (Bryn Terfel Jones) (1965–). Welsh bass-baritone. In 1992 he made his debut at Covent Garden, Salzburg and Vienna, and was soon recognised as a \*Mozart specialist as Figaro and Don Giovanni. Later roles included Wotan in \*Wagner's *Ring* in New York and \*Verdi's Falstaff. He also recorded popular songs.

**Terry, Dame Ellen** (1847–1928). English actor. She achieved immense success as a Shakespearean actor and was \*Irving's leading lady 1878–1902. She married three times, first and disastrously to the painter G. F. \*Watts (1864). The theatrical designer E. G. \*Craig was her son by Edward Godwin, an architect. She had a long 'paper courtship' with G. B. \*Shaw. Other members of her family won fame on the stage: her brother, **Fred Terry** (1863–1933), who created the part of Sir Percy Blakeney in *The Scarlet Pimpernel*, her granddaughter Phyllis Neilson-Terry and her grandnephew John \*Gielgud.

Manvell, R., *Ellen Terry*. 1968.

**Tertullian** (Quintus Septimus Florens Tertullianus) (c.155–c.225). Latin theological writer, born in Carthage. A convert, he became a presbyter of Carthage, but little is known of his life. Of his 31 surviving works one of the greatest was *Apologeticus* (197), written to defend Christianity against charges that it was immoral, useless and dangerous to the state; it warns Roman officials that the blood of martyrs provides the seeds of growth. A second series deals with practical subjects: attendances at theatres and games, idolatry and extravagance in dress etc. are condemned; chastity and fasting are among the virtues praised. In his theological works he claims that true doctrine is handed down through apostolic succession and cannot be assailed by argument. He further stresses the ascendancy of faith over reason by such paradoxical assertions as his saying that a subject of belief 'is certain because it is impossible'.

Barnes, T. D., *Tertullian*. 1971.

**Tesla, Nikola** (1856–1943). Serb-American electrical engineer, born in Smiljan, Croatia. Son of an Orthodox priest, he was educated at Graz and Prague and migrated to the US in 1884. He worked briefly with Thomas \*Edison and, from 1885, with George \*Westinghouse. Edison was deeply committed to the use of direct current (DC); Westinghouse and Tesla saw greater efficiency and economy with alternating current (AC). In 1888 Tesla invented the first AC electric motor, substantially in the form still in current use, and this was the most important single development in the Electric Revolution. He sold his patents to Westinghouse and set up his own laboratories. In 1891 he invented the Tesla coil, an air-core transformer used to produce high voltage in radio (and later television) equipment. He improved the transmission of AC over long distances and was the first to demonstrate that the earth is an electrical conductor. Tesla did not patent most of his inventions and died in poverty, bitterly disappointed not to have received a Nobel Prize. Elon \*Musk's luxury electric car (2010), minor planet 2244 Tesla, a moon crater and a rock band were named for him.

Hunt, I. and Draper, W. W., *Lightning in his Hand: The Life Story of Nikola Tesla*. 1964; Munson, R., *Tesla. Inventor of the Modern*. 2014.

**Tetrazzini, Luisa** (1871–1940). Italian singer, born in Florence. She made a great name for herself as a coloratura soprano, mainly in Italian opera, and commanded huge audiences in virtuoso recitals throughout the world.

**Thackeray, William Makepeace** (1811–1863). English novelist, born in Calcutta (now Kolkata). Soon after the death of his father, an official in the East India Company, he went to England (1817) where he was subsequently looked after by his mother (later portrayed as Helen Pendennis) and his stepfather (afterwards transformed into Colonel Newcome). From Charterhouse ('Grey Friars') he went to Cambridge, where prospects of wealth encouraged idleness, travel (after failure to get a degree) and a half-hearted study of art and law. The disappearance of most of the money through the failure of a Calcutta agency (1833) forced him into activity. Unable to sell his pictures, he took to journalism in 1836, the year when he married Isabella Shawe. In his first period of writing appeared *The Yellow-plush Papers* (1840) in which Thackeray, in the guise of a footman called Yellow-plush, dilated with good-humoured satire upon the social follies and foibles of his time. *Fraser's Magazine*, *The Times* and *Punch* were among the periodicals that accepted his work. In 1840 his wife showed signs of insanity. After trying to cope with an increasingly impossible situation he was forced to part from her and place her under control. She lived for another 50 years but never recovered. The effect upon his work was to soften its asperity and introduce a new note of pathos. *The Great Hoggarty Diamond* (1841) and the *Punch* series (1846–47) later published as *The Book of Snobs* are among the numerous writings that preceded the publication of his best novels. The first, *Vanity Fair* (published as was then the custom in monthly parts, 1848–50), tells of the manoeuvres of the clever adventuress Becky Sharp, in the days of Waterloo. *Henry Esmond* (1852) is the story of a disputed inheritance in Ireland with a background of \*Marlborough's war and Jacobite intrigue. Its sequel, *The Virginians* (1857–59), continues the hero's story in America; *Pendennis* (1848–50) returns to Thackeray's own time with several autobiographical passages. *The Newcomes* (1853–55), in that it purported to be written by Pendennis is aligned with the earlier book. The later novels show a marked decline. The best known of his miscellaneous writings include the delightful children's story, *The Rose and the Ring* (1854), and two series of lectures collected as *The English Humorists of the Eighteenth Century* (1853) and *The Four Georges* (1860). In 1860 he fulfilled an ambition by becoming editor of the *Cornhill* magazine. As a novelist, Thackeray had the same taste for melodramatic plots as \*Dickens but his stories are more tightly constructed; while his characters move within a narrow range, his humour is more astringent than that of Dickens and his compassion

less evident. This was partly due to the unhappiness of his domestic life, which, as the years passed, made him increasingly sensitive to personal slights.

Carey, J., *Thackeray: Prodigal Genius*. 1977.

**Thalberg, Irving Grant** (1899–1936). American film production executive. After a sickly childhood, he developed secretarial skills and became head of production at Universal Studios and, from 1924, at Metro-Goldwyn-Mayer (MGM). Known as 'the boy wonder', he was the subject of F. Scott \*Fitzgerald's novel *The Last Tycoon*, and married the Canadian-born actor **Norma Shearer** (1902–1983).

**Thales** (c.640–c.550 BCE). Greek philosopher, born in Miletus, Asia Minor (now Turkey). Regarded as one of the 'seven wise men' of Greece, he was held to be the first of the philosophers because he sought to explain the universe rationally rather than by mythology. The tradition recorded by \*Aristotle that Thales believed that all things are made of water is probably based on an attempt by him to give a rational explanation of an ancient myth. It seems likely that he was a merchant and that in his travels in Babylonia and Egypt he acquired the mathematical knowledge that enabled him, e.g. to predict the solar eclipse of 585 BCE.

**Thant, U** (1909–1974). Burmese diplomat. After working as a school teacher 1928–47, he entered the public service in Burma and became the trusted advisor of Prime Minister U \*Nu. In 1957 he became Burma's permanent representative at the United Nations, and on the death (1961) of Dag \*Hammarskjöld was made Acting Secretary-General of the organisation, then Secretary-General 1962–71.

**Tharp, Twyla** (1941– ). American dancer and choreographer, born in Indiana. She worked in New York with her own modern dance troupe, performed extensively in film television and in her own ballets, often based on popular music e.g. *Hair*, and \*Sinatra songs.

**Thatcher, Margaret Hilda** (née Roberts), **Baroness Thatcher of Kesteven** (1925–2013). English Conservative politician, born in Grantham, Lincolnshire. Her father, a strict Methodist, owned two grocery stores and was a local councillor and mayor. Educated at Kesteven and Grantham Girls' School, at Somerville College, Oxford University, she studied chemistry under Dorothy \*Hodgkin, and worked as an industrial chemist 1947–51. She was active in Conservative student politics at Oxford, and became deeply influenced by the economist Friedrich von \*Hayek. In 1951 she married **Denis Thatcher** (1915–2003), a former oil industry executive, and became the mother of twins (1953). She studied law at Lincoln's Inn and was called to the bar in 1953. Conservative MP for Finchley 1959–92, and Parliamentary Secretary to the Minister of Pensions

and National Insurance 1961–64, she was appointed Secretary of State for Education in Edward \*Heath's Cabinet 1970–74. In February 1975 she was elected leader of the Conservative party (defeating Heath). In the general election of May 1979, she defeated James \*Callaghan's Labour Government to become Britain's Prime Minister 1979–90, the first woman to hold the office.

Her election destroyed the Keynesian consensus dominating British economic policy since the 1940s and her enthusiastic adoption of von Hayek's paradigm was a turning point in political economy in the West, soon followed in the United States by \*Reagan, in New Zealand, by Roger \*Douglas and in Australia, in modified form, under Bob \*Hawke. (Coincidentally, in 1979 dramatic changes were initiated by Pope \*John Paul II, \*Deng Xiaoping in China and the Ayatollah \*Khomeini in Iran.) Like Khomeini, she had a conviction of infallibility, scepticism about 'progress', commitment to absolutes and an invoking of the Manichean contest between Good and Evil. Paradoxically, she showed no interest in gender-related issues.

Mrs Thatcher urged a commitment to 'Victorian values', of self-help, rejecting the 'nanny state' (a coinage by Iain \*Macleod) as intrusive and all encompassing, inhibiting personal choices about education and health, insisting that lower taxes would stimulate economic activity and job creation. She was deeply hostile to trade unions and seemed indifferent to high unemployment. She began a major program of 'privatisation', selling off public assets: schools and hospitals, even prisons, to be run as trading enterprises. She 'outsourced' policy advice to consulting firms, bypassing public servants. She promised to eliminate 'feather bedding' and phase out tariffs. She promoted 'deregulation', arguing that market forces would require higher ethical standards. (The banking crisis of 2008 challenged that assumption.) The changes occurred with little public debate: as the acronym TINA put it, 'There is no alternative.' She described her supporters as 'dries' and her opponents as 'wets'. She often resorted to populism in her campaigning and was strongly supported by the \*Murdoch press.

War with Argentina over the Falkland Islands (April–June 1982) was the most controversial act of her first term, but the economy began to recover and she won a second term with a large majority in June 1983. In October 1984 she survived an assassination attempt when the IRA bombed a Brighton hotel during a Conservative Party Conference. In June 1987 she became the first British Prime Minister since \*Palmerston to win a third consecutive election.

She had a major role in persuading President Reagan to collaborate with \*Gorbachev. British politics moved sharply to the Right in the era she dominated and Tony \*Blair's New Labour was distinctly Thatcherite.

She remarked, notoriously, in 1987: 'There is no such thing as society. There are individual men and women, and there are families.' Personal enrichment displaced the setting of social goals, and all values could be measured. Often called 'The Iron Lady', she alienated many colleagues with her imperious style, increasing opposition to closer involvement with the European Community and the rigidity of her commitment to neo-classical economics, leading to significant regional unemployment. Increasing preoccupation with the immediate and material had a crowding-out effect on community values and the concept of 'the public good'. She was forced out by colleagues in November 1990 and replaced by John \*Major, after serving 11 years 6 months and 25 days, the longest single term since Lord \*Liverpool. She received the OM in 1990, the US Presidential Medal of Freedom in 1991, a peerage in 1992 and became LG in 1995. Her husband received a baronetcy in 1990. She wrote two volumes of memoirs, *The Downing Street Years* (1993) and *The Path to Power* (1995). She suffered debilitating strokes after 2002 and had a ceremonial funeral at St Paul's Cathedral.

Young, H., *One of Us*. 1989; Campbell, J., *The Iron Lady: Margaret Thatcher*. 2 vols, 2003; Harris, R., *Not for Turning*. 2013; Moore, C., *Margaret Thatcher: the Authorized Biography*. Vol. 1, 2013, Vol. 2, 2015, Vol. 3, 2019.

**Theaetetus** (417–369 BCE). Greek mathematician. He studied under Theodorus of Cyrene and at the Academy with \*Plato. None of his writings has survived, though we have adequate accounts of them from other sources. Plato wrote a dialogue about him (the *Theaetetus*) and he is the principal character in *The Sophist*. One of Theaetetus' main contributions to mathematics was the development of a proper classification of irrationals (irrationals in mathematics had only recently been discovered). \*Euclid also notes that he was the first mathematician to write upon the five regular solids. It is possible that he discovered the octahedron and the dodecahedron, though it is much more likely that these figures were earlier known to the Pythagoreans. Theaetetus undoubtedly set out the theory of the construction of the solids probably in much the form used by Euclid in book 13 of *The Elements*. Scholars have debated how far Euclid simply reported Theaetetus' work in several of the books of *The Elements* (e.g. Book 10). There is no way of knowing. Euclid attributed some of his theorems to Theaetetus.

**Themistocles** (c.523–c.458 BCE). Athenian soldier and statesman. During the Persian Wars he recognised the importance of a navy for Athens, having secured the banishment of his rival \*Aristides, he made use of the opening of a new seam in the silver mines at Laurium to raise the total number of ships from 70 to 200. When the Persians forced the pass of Thermopylae, the 'gateway' to Athens on the north, he persuaded the citizens to take refuge with the ships



and himself directed the strategy by which the Persian fleet was destroyed at the Battle of Salamis (480). In the next year the Persians were forced to withdraw. Arrogance soon cost Themistocles his popularity and his anti-Spartan policy threatened Greek unity. Banished from Athens, he went first to Argos and then, after accusations of intrigue with the enemy, to Persian territory, where he was generously received.

**Theobald** (or **Tebaldus**) of **Bec** (c.1090–1161). Anglo-Norman cleric, born in Bec, Normandy. A Benedictine, he was Abbot of Bec, then chosen by King \*Stephen to be Archbishop of Canterbury 1139–61, becoming the patron of Thomas \*Becket, who succeeded him.

**Theocritus** (fl. c.280 BCE). Greek poet, born at Syracuse. He visited Cos and then Egypt where he attracted the notice of \*Ptolemy II Philadelphus. He perfected the type of poem that came to be known as an 'idyll', a short sketch or scene in dramatic form usually taken from country or village (but sometimes from town) life. His poems were much imitated by later 'pastoral' poets and one provided a model for \*Milton's *Lycidas*.

**Theodora** (c.500–548). Byzantine Empress 527–48. Probably born in Cyprus (or Syria?), daughter of the bear trainer at the hippodrome in Constantinople, she was an actor and courtesan before becoming the mistress of \*Justinian I and, in 523, his wife. She proved a valued advisor and her courage helped to save the throne during the faction fights of 532. There is an outstanding mosaic of her in St Vitale Cathedral, Ravenna.

Browning, R., *Justinian and Theodora*. 1971.

**Theodorakis, Mikis** (1925–2021). Greek composer, playwright and political activist, born in Chios. He worked in the Resistance during World War II, was deported for his political activity during the civil war 1947–52 and studied with \*Messiaen in Paris. He was extraordinarily prolific in a variety of forms, including seven symphonies, a Requiem, chamber music, the ballet *Antigone* (written for Margot \*Fonteyn), songs, choruses, an opera and 22 film scores, including *Zorba the Greek*, also a ballet. He was a member of the Greek Parliament 1964–67, 1981–86, 1989–93, imprisoned 1964–67, left the CP in 1986 and was Minister without Portfolio 1990–92.

**Theodore** (1816–1868). Emperor of Ethiopia 1855–68. Originally a brigand named Kassa, he fought his way to supremacy and showed considerable talents as a ruler though prone to unpredictable violence. Taking the absence of a reply to a letter sent by him to Queen \*Victoria as a slight, he seized the British Consul and other Europeans. Eventually a British force was sent under Sir Robert \*Napier. When Theodore's stronghold of Magdala was taken, he shot himself.

**Theodore** (Theodor, Baron von Neuhoff) (1694–1756). German adventurer, self-styled 'king' of Corsica. The son of a Westphalian nobleman, he led a life of adventure and political intrigue. In 1736 he landed in Corsica with instructions he had received from the Austrian Government in 1729 to investigate the causes of a rebellion there. On his arrival he was crowned King and proceeded to issue coins and acquire revenue by selling knighthoods in his 'Order of Deliverance'. This not proving enough, he left to seek foreign aid, but after two attempts to return had failed he settled in London, where he was imprisoned for debt and died in Soho.

**Theodore, Edward Granville** (1884–1950). Australian Labor politician and director, born in Port Adelaide. The son of a Romanian (Teodorescu) father and an Anglo-Irish mother, he left school at 12, worked in mines, then became a union organiser in Queensland and state president of the Australian Workers' Union (AWU) 1913–16. Queensland State MP 1909–25, he was Treasurer 1915–19 and a reforming Premier 1919–25. In 1922 the Legislative Council was abolished and Queensland became the first place in the then British Empire to end capital punishment. A Federal MP 1927–31, in the \*Scullin Government he was Treasurer 1929–30; 1931–32, stepping down at a critical time to answer allegations of bribery about mining leases in Queensland. This damaged Labor's campaign to meet the impact of Depression, as Theodore was the strongest figure in the Government, with the clearest economic strategy, paralleling the ideas of \*Keynes. Theodore's reinstatement as Treasurer in January 1931 provided Joseph \*Lyons with a reason to defect from the ALP. Jack \*Lang hated him. He became a director of mining and publishing companies and during World War II directed the Allied Works Council 1942–44.

Fitzgerald, R., *Red Ted. The Life of E. G. Theodore*. 1994.

**Theodoric** (known as 'the Great') (c.454–526). King of Italy 493–526. Son of the ruler of the Ostrogoths, he was educated in Constantinople and in 488 was urged by the emperor Zeno to lead his people to regain Italy from the German mercenary \*Odoacar who had made himself king. Theodoric succeeded, after four years of confused fighting, only by inspiring the treacherous murder of his opponent. Setting up his court at Ravenna and proffering only the most nominal allegiance to Zeno, he consolidated and enlarged his kingdom and entered into friendly relations with the Franks and other peoples of Europe. He showed unusual religious tolerance and, though he had to take large areas of land to provide settlements for his 200,000 Ostrogoths, he ruled with prudence, making use of many of the old Roman institutions and paying special attention to the preservation of the splendour and dignity of Rome.

**Theodosius I** (known as 'the Great') (c.346–395). Roman Emperor 379–95. Born in Spain, son of the Count Theodosius who had protected Britain from raids from Scotland, he was summoned by \*Gratian to be his co-emperor. In this role he restored law and order in the Balkans by providing the barbarians with land in return for their service in the Roman army. On the death of Gratian he maintained Valentinian II in power in Italy until his somewhat mysterious death (492). Despite his ability, Theodosius, who had been baptised (480) and condemned any who rejected the decisions of the Council of Nicaea, could be fiercely cruel. Having pardoned rioters in Antioch, he punished a similar outbreak in Thessalonica by a massacre (390) in which 7,000 perished, an act for which St \*Ambrose insisted that he make public atonement in Milan Cathedral. He was succeeded by his sons Honorius and \*Arcadius.

**Theophrastus** (368/373–c.287 BCE). Greek naturalist and philosopher. Taught by \*Plato and \*Aristotle, he inherited the latter's library and manuscripts and carried on his school at Athens. Most of the 224 books he is said to have written are lost, including the series on zoology, but books on plants, stones and fire are among the survivors, which also include the *Characters*, a book on moral types which may not be wholly his work.

**Thérèse of Lisieux, St** (known as 'the Little Flower' or St Thérèse of the Infant Jesus) (Marie-Françoise-Thérèse Martin) (1873–1897). French nun. Daughter of a watchmaker, at the age of 15 she entered the Carmelite convent of Lisieux, where she spent the rest of her short life and died of tuberculosis, complicated by her self-inflicted privations. *L'Histoire d'une âme* (1898), an account of her experiences, quickly established her cult throughout France. She was canonised in 1925, made patron saint of France in 1944 and in 1997 became the youngest Doctor of the Church.

**Theroux, Paul Edward** (1941–). American novelist, essayist and travel writer. Educated at the University of Massachusetts, he taught in Italy, Malawi, Uganda and Singapore. His novels include *Saint Jack* (1973), *Picture Palace* (1978), *The Mosquito Coast* (1981), *Doctor Slaughter* (1984), *My Secret History* (1989) and *Chicago Loop* (1990). His acidly witty (and controversial) travel books are *The Great Railway Bazaar* (1975), *The Old Patagonian Express* (1979), *Riding the Iron Rooster* (China: 1988) and *The Happy Isles of Oceania* (1992).

**Thiers, (Marie Joseph Louis) Adolphe** (1797–1877). French politician and historian, born at Marseilles. He went to Paris (1821) and became known by his *Histoire de la Révolution* (1823–27) which revealed his opposition to \*Charles X's regime. He supported the revolution that brought \*Louis Philippe to the throne (1830), was elected a deputy and became Minister of the Interior (1832) and Prime Minister (1836). The

king's refusal to intervene in the civil war in Spain soon forced his resignation. He returned in 1840 but his government fell when Great Britain and her allies thwarted his attempt to sustain the seizure of Syria from the Turks by \*Mehemet Ali, the Egyptian viceroy. For the rest of Louis Philippe's reign he vigorously opposed \*Guizot's right-wing government, while writing his *Histoire du Consulate de l'Empire* (1845–62). He supported Louis Napoléon in the first stages of the revolution of 1848 but turned against him when he made himself Emperor as \*Napoléon III (1851). He was expelled from the country and spent the next 12 years on his literary work. A deputy again 1863–70, he was the only major politician to oppose the Franco-Prussian war and, on France's defeat, negotiated peace with \*Bismarck. Pending any decision to revive the monarchy he was elected (February 1871) 'Chief of the Executive Power' and suppressed the Paris Commune brutally. In August 1871, he was elected first president of the Third French Republic, resigning in 1873 in conflict with the ultra-conservative legislature.

Bury, J. P. T. and Tombs, R. P., *Thiers 1797–1877*. 1986.

**Thistlewood, Arthur** (1770–1820). English conspirator. Having lived in America and France, where he imbibed revolutionary doctrines, he enlisted others to join him (1820) in an attempt to murder the members of the British Cabinet, while at dinner. The plan was betrayed and the plotters were arrested at a house in Cato Street (after which the conspiracy was named). Thistlewood and four others were hanged, five more were transported.

**Thomas, St** ('twin', T'oma in Aramaic, Didymus in Greek) (d.c.75 CE). Christian apostle, his personal name may have been Judas. From his reluctance to accept the fact of the resurrection without tangible evidence, originated the phrase 'Doubting Thomas'. Tradition relates that he became a missionary in India. The 'Christians of St Thomas of Malabar' claim to have been founded by him and a shrine (rebuilt in 1547 by the Portuguese) near Madras is said to indicate his place of martyrdom. He is Portugal's patron saint.

**Thomas Aquinas, St** *see* **Aquinas, St Thomas**

**Thomas (of Canterbury), St** *see* **Becket, St Thomas**

**Thomas à Kempis** (Thomas Hammerken) (1380–1471). German Augustinian monk and mystic, born at Kempen near Cologne. He seems to have spent his whole life at the monastery of Zwolle (now in the Netherlands) and there wrote in Latin *The Imitation of Christ*, which was published posthumously (1486) and, in its many translations, has proved probably the most popular of all devotional works. Its four books relate in simple and sincere language the progress of the Christian soul to perfection, its gradual dissociation

from the human world and its eventual union with God. Its authorship has also been attributed to Jean Charlier de Gerson, a French theologian.

**Thomas, Albert** (1878–1932). French Socialist politician. He was the foundation Director 1920–32 of the International Labour Organization (ILO) set up under the auspices of the League of Nations by the Versailles Peace Treaty of 1919.

**Thomas, Dylan** (1914–1953). Welsh poet, born in Swansea. He moved to London in 1932 and published *Eighteen Poems* in 1934, followed by *Twenty-five Poems* (1936) and *The Map of Love* (1939), the last containing prose as well as poetry. *The Collected Poems* appeared in 1952. His poetry, rich in vivid and highly original imagery, technically ingenious, frequently obscure, has been highly praised as part of a 20th-century neo-romanticism. He achieved immense posthumous success with his radio play *Under Milk Wood* (1954), a brilliant evocation of a day in an imaginary Welsh village. It later proved successful on stage and screen. He also wrote the autobiographical sketches *Portrait of the Artist as a Young Dog* (1940), and an unfinished novel, *Adventures in the Skin Trade* (published 1955). His death, hastened by excessive drinking, occurred in New York during a lecture tour. His wife, **Caitlin Thomas** (1914–1994), wrote an autobiography of great poignancy, *Leftover Life to Kill* (1957).

Fitzgibbon, C., *The Life of Dylan Thomas*. 1965.

**Thomas, Norman Mattoon** (1884–1968). American socialist, born in Marion, Ohio. Educated at Princeton, he became a Presbyterian minister 1911–31, joined the Socialist Party in 1918 and ran for President of the US in every election from 1928 to 1948. His highest vote, 882,000, was in 1932. Despite overwhelming defeats at the polls, he had the satisfaction of seeing his program adopted by Democrats and Republicans.

**Thomas, R(onald) S(tuart)** (1913–2000). Welsh poet, born in Cardiff. He was an Anglican priest in Wales, living remotely but writing poems of great simplicity and intensity, e.g. 'A Marriage', 'Via Negativa' and 'The Bright Field'.

**Thompson, Sir Benjamin** *see* **Rumford, Count von**

**Thompson, Dame Emma** (1959– ). English actor. She won Oscars for best actress in *Howard's End* (1992) and best screenplay in *Sense and Sensibility* (1996). She married Kenneth \*Branagh in 1989 and left him in 1995.

**Thompson, Francis** (1859–1907). English poet, born at Preston, Lancashire. Having abandoned his medical studies he went to London, where he lived in direst poverty and misery relieved by opium until rescued by Wilfred and Alice Meynell, who sent him to hospital and subsequently watched over him

through years of ill health. Of his works, which were preponderantly religious, *The Hound of Heaven*, contained in a collection of poems published in 1893, is best known. It tells how the poet in his flight from God is pursued and overtaken. Its style is reminiscent of 17th-century poets, e.g. \*Crashaw.

**Thomson, James** (1700–1748). Scottish poet. Intended for the ministry, he went to London to seek his literary fortune and achieved recognition by *The Seasons* (1730), originally published separately, beginning with *Winter* (1726), in Miltonic blank verse. His *Alfred, a Masque* (1740) contained the song *Rule, Britannia*. Thomson used the forms of the classical age to which he belonged but some of his rapturous descriptions of nature in *The Seasons* presaged Romanticism.

**Thomson, James** (1834–1882). British poet, born in Scotland. Brought up in poverty, he tried various careers, including that of an army instructor from which he was dismissed in 1862. He went to London where he lived a lonely life, made worse by the use of stimulants and drugs to relieve illness and melancholy. Friendship with Charles \*Bradlaugh enabled him to contribute to the *National Reformer*, for which he wrote his most famous poem, *The City of Dreadful Night* (1874), in which London is pictured as a city of despair. He attached the initials B. V. (Bysshe Vanolis) to his name.

**Thomson, Sir Joseph John** (1856–1940). English physicist, born in Manchester. Educated at Owens College and Trinity College, Cambridge, he became Cavendish professor of experimental physics at Cambridge 1884–1918 and Master of Trinity 1918–40. He discovered (1897) the electron and deduced that cathode rays consist of these sub-atomic particles. This work laid the foundations of modern atomic physics. He invented (1911) positive-ray analysis and showed that the naturally occurring elements are mixtures of isotopes. He won the Nobel Prize for Physics (1906), received the OM (1912) and the Copley Medal (1914) and became President of the Royal Society 1915–20. Eight of his students became Nobel Laureates.

His son, **Sir George Paget Thomson** (1892–1975), won the Nobel Prize for Physics (1937) for discovering the diffraction of electrons by transmission through crystals jointly with the American physicist C. J. \*Davisson who had made the same discovery by a different method. He was professor of physics at Aberdeen 1922–30 and at Imperial College, London 1930–52, and knighted in 1943.

Thomson, G. P., *J. J. Thomson and the Cavendish Laboratory in his Day*. 1964.

**Thomson, Virgil** (1896–1989). American composer and critic. His works, notable for their economy and simplicity of style, include symphonies, sacred choral music and two operas with libretti by Gertrude \*Stein.

**Thomson of Fleet, Roy Herbert Thomson, 1st Baron** (1894–1976). Canadian newspaper proprietor. After small beginnings as a seller of radio equipment, he acquired radio stations and newspapers in Canada, breaking into the British market with the purchase of the *Scotsman* (1953). His greatest single acquisition was the \*Kemsley Newspaper groups (1959) which included the *Sunday Times*. He became a British citizen in 1963 and was given a peerage in 1964. The Thomson Corporation bought *The Times*, London in 1966, selling it to Rupert \*Murdoch in 1981.

**Thoreau, Henry David** (1817–1862). American poet, essayist and mystic, born in Concord, Massachusetts. His birthplace became the centre of his life: he returned there after graduating at Harvard, where he added a love of the classics, especially of \*Homer, to that of the English poets whom he already knew. His first book, *A Week on the Concord and Merrimack Rivers* (1849), intertwines philosophy and observation. From Concord he went into a two-year retreat in a cabin which he constructed at Walden Pond. The record of that experience, contained in his most famous book, *Walden* (1854), remains an American classic. It tells a story interesting in itself and is important as a study of nature, but its greatest significance is derived from the revelation of his own idealistic faith. Nor was his faith a matter of theory only, he preferred prison to paying a poll tax to sustain the Mexican War. Essays such as *Civil Disobedience* (1849) provided texts for \*Gandhi and many other fighters for liberty. Much of his later life was spent in travel and nature study in Canada and the area round Cape Cod. He returned to Concord to die.

Harding, W., *The Days of Henry Thoreau*. 1965.

**Thorndike, Dame (Agnes) Sybil** (1882–1976). English actor. Her first successes were with Annie Horniman's repertory company in Manchester and in 1908 she married the actor (Sir) **Lewis Casson**. At the Old Vic, London (1914–18), working with Lilian \*Baylis, she was effective in \*Shakespeare and as Hecuba in \*Euripides' *The Trojan Women*. \*Shaw wrote *St Joan* (1924) for her and she played the title role 244 times in its first London season. She received a DBE in 1931. She appeared in 15 films, toured widely and continued to play in old age, making a hit in a revival of *Arsenic and Old Lace* (1966).

Trewin, J. C., *Sybil Thorndike*. 1955.

**Thornhill, Sir James** (1675–1734). English painter. He is best known for the decorative murals he painted for \*Wren's hall at Greenwich, for the dome of St Paul's Cathedral and for great baroque houses such as Blenheim. His portraits included one of the criminal Jack Sheppard. Knighted in 1720, he was appointed history painter to the king in 1728. \*Hogarth became his son-in-law (1729) and they collaborated in a conversation piece of the House of Commons (1730).

**Thorpe, (John) Jeremy** (1929–2014). English Liberal politician, born in London. Educated in the US, Eton and Oxford, he became a barrister and television journalist. Liberal MP 1959–79, he became Leader of the Liberal Party 1967–76, which won 6 million votes in the election of February 1974. In 1979 he was tried (with three others) with conspiracy to murder Norman Scott, who had been blackmailing Thorpe about his homosexuality. All four were acquitted but Thorpe's career was destroyed.

**Thorvaldsen, Bertel** (1768/70–1844). Danish sculptor. He spent most of his life in Rome and came to be recognised as the chief exponent of neo-classicism after \*Canova. Modern taste has rebelled against the smooth perfection of his style but his contemporary success was immense. Among his patrons was \*Napoléon, who commissioned a frieze of \*Alexander's campaigns. He left all his unsold works, religious and classical, to his country and they are collected with casts of many other of his important works, in the Thorvaldsen Museum, Copenhagen.

**Thrale (Piozzi), Hester Lynch** (née Salusbury) (1741–1821). English writer, born in North Wales. She had learning, vivacity and charm, but was unsuitably married to a wealthy Southwark brewer. At her country house at Streatham she entertained a lively, intellectual circle including Samuel \*Johnson. The house became his second home. He was outraged when, three years after her husband's death (1781), she announced her impending marriage to Gabriel Piozzi and later lived happily with him in Wales. She published a book of anecdotes about Dr Johnson (1786) and his correspondence with her (1788).

McCarthy, W., *Hester Thrale Piozzi*. 1986.

**Throckmorton, Francis** (1554–1584). English conspirator. He became entangled in plots to restore Roman Catholicism in England and to bring \*Mary Queen of Scots to the English throne. Caught in the act of writing in cipher to Mary, he was tortured and executed. He came from a family long distinguished in public affairs: his uncle, **Sir Nicholas Throckmorton** (1515–1571), served Queen \*Elizabeth well as Ambassador in France and Scotland. **Elizabeth Throckmorton**, daughter of Sir Nicholas, was lady-in-waiting to Queen Elizabeth but was disgraced for marrying Sir Walter \*Raleigh.

**Thucydides** (c.470–400 BCE). Athenian historian. Naval commander in the Peloponnesian War, for his failure to capture Amphipolis (424) he was forced to live in exile for 20 years. He then wrote his famous unfinished history of the war which carries the story as far as 411. The first book is introductory and discloses his own methods of impartial record. The remainder contain in chronological sequence narratives of the summer campaigns alternating with accounts of diplomacy in the winter months. An exception to this method is the interpolation of speeches said to have

been made by the characters concerned but in reality expressing the author's summing up of the situations. Lucid, impartial and often writing with restrained passion, Thucydides created the greatest historical work to survive from the ancient world.

Romilly, J. de, *Thucydides and Athenian Imperialism*. 1963.

**Thunberg, Greta Tintin Eleonora Ernman** (2003–). Swedish climate change campaigner. A student, from 2015 she devoted herself to climate activism and called on world leaders to act courageously. She attracted enemies but won international awards for her blunt advocacy.

**Thurber, James Grover** (1894–1961). American humorist, born in Columbus, Ohio. He worked on the *New Yorker* for many years and won fame with his essays, stories and drawings, the last especially noted for the originality of their anarchic humour. Among his favourite subjects were dogs, dominating women and the pathetic little men whom they owned. Sometimes his cartoons accompanied his text, sometimes they stood alone. His publications include *My Life and Hard Times* (1933), *Men, Women and Dogs* (1943) and a later work, *The Years with Ross* (1959); Harold \*Ross being editor of the *New Yorker*. Thurber suffered from deteriorating sight, the result of an accident as a boy.

Kinney, H., *James Thurber*. 1995.

**Thurmond, J(ames) Strom** (1902–2003). American politician, born in South Carolina. A lawyer, he became Governor of South Carolina 1947–51 and ran for president in 1948 as candidate of the Dixiecrat (States' Rights) Party, winning four states. A US senator 1954–56; 1956–2003, he joined the Republicans in 1964 and, in December 2002, became the first centenarian to serve in the Congress.

**Thutmose III (Thothmes)** (d.c.1450 BCE). Egyptian pharaoh 1504–1450 BCE. Until 1482 he shared power with his stepmother \*Hatshepsut then proved to be probably Egypt's greatest ruler. He led 17 campaigns into Asia, conquered Syria and Mesopotamia, extended Egyptian trade, built temples and erected many obelisks. He raised Egypt to its greatest power and was a skilled horseman and archer.

**Tiberius** (Tiberius Claudius Nero) (42 BCE–37 CE). Roman Emperor 14–37 CE. Son of a high priest and magistrate Tiberius Claudius Nero and \*Livia Drusilla, later wife of \*Augustus, he was adopted by his step-father, whom he succeeded. As early as 15 BCE he had shown his abilities as a soldier on the Alpine frontiers and later he achieved further successes in Germany, his troops by 9 BCE having reached the Elbe. To further Augustus' dynastic scheme he was now forced to divorce his wife Agrippina, whom he loved, and marry the Emperor's widowed daughter, Julia. Partly in anger, partly to conceal Julia's

notorious profligacy, Tiberius withdrew to Rhodes. This act cost him the favour of the Emperor by whom it was misunderstood. However, the sudden death of his two grandsons left Augustus no choice: Tiberius was recalled, adopted (4 CE) and acknowledged, as his colleague and heir. During the first eight years of his reign he showed his old efficiency, though he also appeared pedantic, austere and suspicious. From 23, however, he fell more and more under the influence of the ambitious and unscrupulous \*Sejanus, prefect of the imperial guards. In 26 Tiberius retired to the island of Capri whence stories of unspeakable and improbable orgies (he was nearing 70) drifted back to Rome, where Sejanus, now in undisputed control, exercised a corrupt tyranny. In 31 Tiberius roused himself to organise with his usual skill the downfall of Sejanus but in his last years he was embittered and disillusioned. Outside Rome and in the provinces his reign was remembered as one of prosperity and enlightened rule. The ministry and crucifixion of \*Jesus Christ occurred during his reign.

**Tibullus, Albius** (c.60–19 BCE). Roman poet. A friend of \*Horace, his love poems and those descriptive of the countryside are tender and charming.

**Tichborne Claimant, the, see Orton, Arthur**

**Tiepolo, Giovanni Battista** (1696–1770). Italian decorative painter, born in Venice. The finest exponent of the late baroque or rococo styles in Italy, his pictures were often contrived to enhance architectural effects by being allowed to 'escape' from their frames or the spaces where they were assigned. From 1733 to 1750 he flooded the palaces and churches of northern Italy with examples of his work, sometimes aided by assistants (including his sons), who, however, had no hand in the oil sketches from which pictures were worked up. Outstanding is the festive and theatrical *Banquet of Cleopatra* (1743–44) in the National Gallery of Victoria. In 1750 he was commissioned to decorate \*Neumann's architectural masterpiece, the Warzburg Residenz in Germany, for which he produced some of his greatest work. His last years (from 1762) were spent in Spain, decorating palaces in Madrid and Aranjuez, where the light and airy atmosphere of earlier work is carried to the point where his pictures seem to dissolve in light.

Morassi, A., *G. B. Tiepolo: His Life and Work*. 1955.

**Tiffany, Louis Comfort** (1848–1933). American glass designer. Son of **Charles Lewis Tiffany** (1812–1902), a jeweller who established Tiffany & Co. in 1853, he invented 'favril' (iridescent) glass and developed an ornate art nouveau style for lampshades, jewellery and decorative windows, combining glass and metals.

**Tiglath-Pileser III** (d.727 BCE). King of Assyria 745–727 BCE. Like his namesake **Tiglath Pileser I** (1114–1076 BCE), whose conquests, however,

proved ephemeral, he overcame Babylon and became its king in 729. He occupied Syria, Phoenicia and Palestine. He was an able strategist, preferring blockade to invasion, an efficient administrator and a formidable archivist.

**Tilden, Bill** (William Tatum) (1893–1953). American lawn tennis player. Distinguished by his great size, he was the leading amateur player of the early 1920s. He led the US Davis Cup team to seven straight victories (1920–26). After an intervening period of French domination (Jean \*Borotra) he again won (1930), at the age of 37, the singles title at Wimbledon. In the following year he turned professional. His career was destroyed by disclosure of his homosexuality.

**Tilden, Samuel Jones** (1814–1880). American lawyer and Democratic politician. A protégé of Martin \*Van Buren, he became a successful corporation lawyer and made a fortune in assisting railway development. He managed the presidential campaign of Horatio \*Seymour in 1868. He broke with the Tammany Hall faction in New York in 1871 and built a reputation as a reformer. Governor of New York State 1875–76, he won the Democratic nomination for President in 1876 on the second ballot. He won 51 per cent of the popular vote but the Republican candidate, Rutherford B.\*Hayes, secured a one vote majority (185 to 184) in the Electoral College. The Democrats challenged the results in South Carolina, Florida and Louisiana, where under 'Reconstruction', 'carpet-baggers' from the North were able to manipulate returns. An Electoral Commission was set up in 1877 which, by a majority of one, awarded all the disputed votes to Hayes. Democrats accepted the result on condition that Federal troops were withdrawn from the South and Reconstruction ended. Tilden hoped to be nominated again in 1880, but the Democrats in New York were deeply split and turned against him.

**Tillerson, Rex Wayne** (1952– ). American engineer, business executive and government official, born in Texas. Educated in Texas, he worked in the Middle East for ExxonMobil and became its President and CEO 2006–16. He joined the \*Trump Administration as Secretary of State 2017–18, but his views on climate change, free markets, international co-operation and negotiations with Iran and North Korea were disregarded. He was dismissed by Trump in March 2018.

**Tillett, Ben(jamin)** (1860–1943). English trade union leader and Labour politician. Having organised the Dockers Union (1887) he remained its General Secretary until it amalgamated (1922) with the Transport and General Workers Union; he was closely associated with the famous strike of 1889. He was Labour MP for North Salford 1917–24 and 1929–31.

**Tillich, Paul Johannes** (1886–1965). American theologian, born in Germany. He left Germany in 1933 and taught at the Union Theological Seminary in New York 1933–54, Harvard 1954–62 and Chicago 1962–65.

**Tilly, Johann Tserclaes, Count of** (1559–1632). Flemish soldier, born in the castle of Tilly in Brabant. He had fought for Spain and against the Turks before entering the service of Maximilian, Duke of Bavaria (1610). On the outbreak of the Thirty Years' War (1618) he commanded the armies of the Catholic League. He gained early successes at Prague and in the Palatinate and forced Denmark to come to terms by his victory at Lutter (1629). He succeeded \*Wallenstein (1631) as Commander-in-Chief of the imperial armies and those of the League, but in 1632 was routed by \*Gustaf II Adolf at Breitenfeld and in a second defeat was mortally wounded.

**Timoshenko, Simeon Konstantinovich** (1895–1970). Russian (Ukrainian) marshal. He was Commissar for Defence 1940–41 until \*Stalin took the job and made him Commander-in-Chief in the Ukraine 1942. He was blamed for failing to halt German advances and was shunted to the sidelines.

**Timothy** (Timotheus) **of Ephesus, St** (c.17–c.97 CE). Greek-Jewish bishop and martyr, probably born in Lystra (Anatolia). Son of a Greek father and Jewish mother, he became the associate and travelling companion of St \*Paul in his missions. The first bishop of Ephesus c.64–97, he was stoned to death there. The Epistles to Timothy in the New Testament, with that supposed to be addressed to Titus, are called the 'pastoral Epistles'. On grounds of style and content, modern critics have rejected Pauline authorship, but the personal details suggest that they have a basis in letters written by St Paul, though probably enlarged and adapted for his own purposes by a later editor.

**Timur** (Timur Lenk, Timurlane: called 'the Lame') (1336–1405). Turko-Mongol conqueror, born near Samarkand. Said to have been descended from \*Genghis Khan in the female line, despite being crippled from birth he took advantage of a period of Muslim anarchy to establish his rule in Samarkand by 1369, and assumed the title of Great Khan. For the rest of his life he followed a career of conquest with extreme brutality in war but with firm, just rule over conquered territory and with an appreciation of the arts. By 1385 he was master of all central Asia: his armies had conquered Persia, Georgia and Armenia, had defeated the Tartars and marched as far north as Moscow. He invaded India (1398), sacked Delhi and founded a sultanate which later grew into the Moghul empire. After overrunning Syria he smashed the Turkish army at Ankara (1402). He died while preparing to invade China. Among English plays inspired by his career are \*Marlowe's *Tamburlaine the Great* (1590) and Nicholas \*Rowe's *Tamerlane* (1702).

**Tinbergen, Jan** (1903–1994). Dutch economist. He served on the staff of the Central Bureau of Statistics at The Hague, 1929–36 and 1938–45 and between 1936 and 1938 he was engaged in research on commerce for the League of Nations. He was director of the Central Planning Bureau at The Hague 1945–55, and professor of development planning, first at Rotterdam and then Leyden universities until 1975. He shared the first Nobel Prize for Economic Science in 1969 with Ragnar \*Frisch for their work in developing econometrics. His brother, **Nikolaas Tinbergen** (1907–1988), an experimental zoologist, taught at Oxford from 1949 and was professor in animal behaviour 1966–74. He wrote *The Study of Instinct* (1951) and *Animal Behaviour* (1965) and shared the 1973 Nobel Prize for Medicine with Karl von \*Frisch and Konrad \*Lorenz for their pioneering work in ethology.

Tinbergen, J., *Developing Planning*. 1968.

**Tintoretto** (Jacopo Robusti) (1518–1594). Italian painter, born in Venice. Son of a dyer (hence the name by which he is known), except for short visits he seems to have spent all his life in Venice. Here with his wife and children he lived happily, respected for his piety and increasingly renowned for his work. His fellow Venetian, \*Titian, in whose studio he worked for a time, and \*Michelangelo, were the strongest influences on him but mainly he was self-taught. In his earlier works, many of them mythological, he continued the ideals of the High Renaissance but as the Counter Reformation proceeded and he became more and more absorbed by religious themes he gradually became the most robust exponent of the style loosely called 'Mannerism'. In his *St Mark* series (1548) the thunderous atmosphere, the glowing and insubstantial architecture, the perspective effects produced by design and lighting, exemplify the vigour and inventiveness of Tintoretto's grand operatic manner. His greatest undertaking was the decoration of the Scuola de San Rocco in Venice. In the Doge's Palace he executed an enormous *Paradise*, in which the milling, over-crowded figures are manipulated with the control of a master choreographer. His portraits of the celebrities of his day are much less spectacular and rely upon characterisation more than upon the splendour of the garments. His last pictures at San Giorgio Maggiore, especially *The Last Supper* (1591–94), show the final culmination of his colour techniques.

**Tippett, Sir Michael Kemp** (1905–1998). English composer. A late developer, in striking contrast to \*Britten, he studied at the Royal College of Music and was musical director of Morley College, London (1940–52). He was jailed as a conscientious objector in 1943. The Elizabethan composers and \*Purcell as well as later influences, e.g. \*Stravinsky, \*Hindemith and jazz, all contributed to his highly individual idiom, notable for springy rhythms and for 'long-breathed' melodies that are woven into an

elaborate contrapuntal texture. His works include four symphonies, a Concerto for Double String Orchestra (1939), a Piano Concerto (1956), string quartets, operas to his own libretti *The Midsummer Marriage* (1954) and *King Priam* (1962) the oratorio *A Child of our Time* (1944), and the cantata *The Vision of St Augustine* (1966). In the Concerto for Orchestra (1963) he constructs the movements out of consecutive sections each associated with a certain group of instruments. He was knighted in 1966, given the CH in 1979 and the OM in 1983.

Kemp, I. (ed.), *Michael Tippett*. 1965; Soden, O., *Michael Tippett: The Biography*. 2019.

**Tipu Sultan** (Fateh Ali Sahab Tipu) (1750–1799). Indian ruler. Son of \*Haidar Ali, from whose French officers he acquired his military skill, he became Sultan of Mysore on his father's death (1782). The peace (1783) between Great Britain and France, to which he as France's ally adhered, gave him time to consolidate his rule, but in 1789, moved by an almost obsessional hatred of Britain, he invaded the protected territory Travancore and, as a result of the retaliatory war by Britain, lost half his territory (1792) and had to pay a huge indemnity. As he continued to intrigue, however, the war was renewed (1799), he was quickly driven back into his capital Seringapatam, and was killed when the city was stormed after two months' siege. Tippoo was fanatical and cruel, but as a ruler showed great industry and (e.g. by a new currency and calendar reform) interest in his country's welfare.

**Tirole, Jean** (1953– ). French economist. He taught at Toulouse University, winning the Nobel Prize for Economics in 2014 for his work on market power and regulation, and on taming powerful firms.

**Tirpitz, Alfred, Graf von** (1849–1930). German admiral. He commanded the East Asia fleet, based on Tsingtao 1896–97, before his appointment as Secretary of State for the Imperial Navy (1897), becoming the driving force behind the successful campaign for a greater German navy. He was dismissed (March 1916) because his demand for ruthless submarine warfare, adopted later, was considered premature. He thus missed the Battle of Jutland. He founded the Fatherland Party and was elected to the Reichstag 1924–28.

Steinberg, J., *Yesterday's Deterrent*. 1965.

**Tiselius, Arne Wilhelm Kaurin** (1902–1971). Swedish chemist. Appointed professor of biochemistry at Uppsala (1938), he became known for his application of electrophoresis to the analysis of proteins, especially serum proteins. He also adapted chromatographic techniques to the analysis of colourless substances. From its foundation (1946) he was President of Sweden's State Council for Research in Natural Sciences. He won the Nobel Prize for Chemistry (1948).

**Titian** (Tiziano Vecellio) (c.1488–1576). Italian (Venetian) painter, born in Pieve di Cadore. Apprenticed to a mosaicist at nine, he entered the studio of Giovanni \*Bellini and later studied with \*Giorgione, who influenced his early work. However, an independent style is already apparent in the first of his famous works, *Sacred and Profane Love* (c.1515) a work, despite its allegorical subject, of human realism. From this time his technique steadily developed. Experiments are made with figures in action, pyramidal shapes and diagonals become the compositional bases of several of his works, and significance is given to the main figures by use of light and shade. From 1516 to 1530 the series of great religious pictures, including the *Assumption of the Virgin* (1516–18) and the *Madonna with Members of the Pesaro Family* (1519–26), are matched by equally great mythological paintings for Alfonso d'Este, Duke of Ferrara, e.g. *Bacchus and Ariadne* (1521, now in the National Gallery, London). By then the richness of his palette, with its bright reds, blues, greens and golden browns, sometimes used in contrast, sometimes to build up an almost sculptural effect, had established him as one of the boldest colourists so far known. In such works and in his portraits he is said to have 'liberated' colour, a further sign of freedom being the broad brush strokes with which it was applied. For much of the decade that followed (1530–40) he worked for the emperor, \*Charles V, portraits of whom and the members of the court, kept him busily occupied. One of the best of the emperor himself (now in the Prado, Madrid) shows him full length with a dog. Portraits of Pope \*Paul III and other members of the Farnese family reveal a growing power to probe the character of his subjects. From 1556, when Charles V abdicated, Titian's principal patron was his son, \*Felipe II of Spain, for whom he painted a series of 'poesies' *Diana and Actaeon*, *The Rape of Europa*, *Perseus and Andromeda* etc.—similar in subject to the earlier mythological pictures but painted with much softer, almost iridescent colours. Titian continued to paint to the end of his life, his last work being an unfinished *Pietà* intended for his own tomb. Titian's painting is warmly emotional and sensual. He was no intellectual and attempted no superhuman scale of effect. His painting techniques were developed by \*Rembrandt, \*Rubens and \*Velázquez, with whose greatness his can be compared. He died very rich and has been called 'the first artist tycoon'.

Hope, C., *Titian*. 1980; Hale, S., *Titian*. 2013.

**Tito, Josip Broz** (1892–1980). Yugoslav politician and marshal, born in Kumrovec, Croatia. Son of a locksmith, he was conscripted into the Austro-Hungarian army in World War I, was taken prisoner and remained in Russia to serve in the Red Army during the Civil War. Back in Yugoslavia he helped to form the Communist Party and took the name 'Tito'. Imprisoned (1928–34), he became active in the interests of his party in Paris and Central Europe, recruiting for the Spanish Civil War. Secretary-General

of the party from 1937, he returned to Yugoslavia in 1939 and in 1941, after the Germans had overrun the country, became a leader of partisans whose task was to harry the occupying forces.

This brought him into conflict with a rival resistance leader, General \*Mihailovich, who was acting in the royalist interest. Eventually the Allies decided to give Tito, the more active of the two, full support. This enabled him, after the German defeat, to execute Mihailovich, to exclude King \*Peter and to establish a Communist state. He was Prime Minister 1945–53 and President 1953–80. In 1948 Yugoslavia was expelled from the Cominform for adopting nationalistic policies (i.e. for rejecting Russian dictatorship). Eventually relations became less strained and in the following years Tito maintained an independent Communism at home, opened trading relations with the west, and kept a clever balance between the rival groups or powers who dominated Europe.

Auty, P., *Tito*. 1970.

**Titus** (Titus Flavius Vespasianus) (39–81 CE). Roman Emperor 79–81. Elder son of the emperor \*Vespasian, he was a brilliant soldier and, after his father's elevation, quickly brought the Jewish rebellion to an end by the capture of Jerusalem. He became virtual co-ruler with Vespasian and on his succession not only delighted the Roman populace by his magnificent displays but won esteem by firm, just rule and by his discouragement of flatterers and informers. His popularity was threatened only by his passion for the Jewish Berenice (the Bernice of Acts xxv), whom he had brought to Rome but soon dismissed. He completed the Colosseum and did much to help the survivors of the tragic eruption of Vesuvius (79).

**Tizard, Sir Henry Thomas** (1885–1959). English chemist. Educated at Oxford, he worked on aeronautical research in World War I and, later was Rector of the Imperial College of Science and Technology 1929–42 and President of Magdalen College, Oxford 1942–46. He chaired the Air Defence Committee 1935–40, became the great advocate of radar and clashed with Churchill's advisor, Lord \*Cherwell. He opposed saturation bombing of German cities and became Chairman of the Advisory Council on Scientific Policy 1947–52.

**Tobin, James** (1918–2002). American economist. A Keynesian, he was Professor of Economics at Yale 1957–88, won the Nobel Prize for Economics in 1981 and proposed the 'Tobin tax' on global financial transactions.

**Tocqueville, Alexis de** (1805–1859). French political writer, born in Paris. He came of an aristocratic family, studied law, and in 1831 visited the US with **Gustave de Beaumont** to investigate the penal system and wrote the extraordinarily vivid *Du Système pénitentiaire*



*aux Etats-Unis* (1833), with a long appendix on the Australian system. Writing and an incursion into French politics occupied the rest of his life. He became a deputy 1839–48, Foreign Minister June–October 1849 and in 1851 was imprisoned for opposing the *coup d'état* of Louis Napoléon (\*Napoléon III). In his two well known books *La Démocratie en Amérique* (1835–39) and *L'Ancien Régime et la Révolution* (1856, 1859), he concluded that by abolishing aristocracies (with their inborn protection of the rights and privileges of the different social classes), the peoples both of France and America had sacrificed liberty for equality, that demands for economic equality must necessarily follow those for social equality and that the final result must be authoritarian, centralised rule. His arguments were given point by the rule of \*Napoléon I and Napoléon III in his own epoch, and his foresight justified by the centralising tendencies of modern democratic governments.

Brogan, H., *Tocqueville*. 1973.

**Todd, Alexander Robertus, Baron Todd** (1907–1997). British chemist, born in Glasgow. As professor of chemistry at Manchester 1938–44 and then professor of organic chemistry at Cambridge 1944–71, he made a notable contribution in the fields of vitamins and drugs, particularly in the elucidation of nucleotide structure, and synthesised ATP in 1948. He chaired the Advisory Council on Scientific Structure 1952–64, won the 1957 Nobel Prize for Chemistry, and received a life peerage (1962), the Copley Medal (1970) and the OM (1977). He was President of the Royal Society 1975–80.

**Todd, Sir** (Reginald Stephen) **Garfield** (1908–2002). Zimbabwean (Rhodesian) politician, born in New Zealand. A missionary and teacher, as Premier of Southern Rhodesia 1953–58 he introduced reforms to education and labour laws that challenged white minority rule and he was displaced. Originally sympathetic to \*Mugabe, he denounced him as corrupt.

**Totleben, Eduard Ivanovich** (1818–1884). Russian soldier. He developed a genius for military engineering and won international fame for his defence of Sebastopol (1854–55) during the Crimean War. In the Russo-Turkish War (1877–78) he was put in charge of the siege of Plevna, which he eventually captured.

**Todt, Fritz** (1891–1942). German engineer. He shared with \*Hitler a taste for the grandiose, and undertook much of the constructional work under the Nazi regime (e.g. the autobahns) and the Siegfried line. During World War II, squads of the Todt organisation were most effective in keeping communications open and in bringing factories back into production after bombing attacks. Minister for Armaments and Munitions 1940–42, he died in a plane crash and was succeeded by Albert \*Speer.

**Toer, Pramoedya Ananta** *see* **Pramoedya Ananta Toer**

**Togliatti, Palmiro** (1893–1964). Italian Communist leader. While a student at Turin University he made a study of socialism. In 1926 he became Secretary of the Italian Communist Party (a post he retained until his death) and in that year went into exile and lived abroad, mostly in Moscow, for 18 years (from 1935 as secretary of the Comintern). He returned to Italy (1944) after \*Mussolini's fall, and joined Badoglio's Cabinet. He built up the Italian Communist Party to be the second largest party in the country and the largest Communist Party in Western Europe. To secure support he compromised on Communist doctrine to the extent of recognising Roman Catholicism as the state religion and the Lateran Treaty by which the Vatican City became an independent state.

**Tōgō Heihachirō, Marquis** (né Tōgō Nakagoro) (1848–1934). Japanese Marshal-Admiral. Of samurai descent, he joined the navy in 1863, trained with the RN in England 1871–78, travelling extensively, including Australia. In command of the fleet during the Russo-Japanese War 1904–05, he succeeded in bottling up the Russian Pacific fleet in Port Arthur and then (May 1905) in annihilating (in the Tsushima Straits) a relieving fleet sent from Europe. He received the British OM and GCVO in 1906 and mentored the future emperor \*Hirohito.

**Tóibín, Colm** (1955–). Irish novelist, essayist, travel writer and editor, born in Wexford. Educated at University College, Dublin, he held chairs in New York and Manchester and spent much time in Spain. His books include *Homage to Barcelona* (1990), *The Sign of the Cross* (1994), *The Master* (2004) and *The Testament of Mary* (2012).

**Tōjō Hideki** (1884–1948). Japanese general and politician. Of Samurai descent and son of a general, educated in Europe, he became head of the secret police and Chief of Staff of the Kwantung Army in Manchuria 1937–40. He was Minister for War 1940–44 and Prime Minister from October 1941 until July 1944, resigning after US forces occupied Saipan, an air base within striking distance of Tokyo. Identified in wartime propaganda as the main Japanese war criminal, he was tried by an international war crimes tribunal and hanged in Tokyo with six others.

**Tokugawa**. Japanese dynasty. The family controlled the shogunate (hereditary military dictatorship) which, although nominally subject to the Emperor, ruled in reality, from \*Ieyasu in 1603 to \*Yoshinobu in 1867.

**Tokugawa Ieyasu** (1542–1616). Japanese soldier and shōgun, born in Okazaki. He assisted Nobunaga (d.1582) and \*Hideyoshi in overcoming the feudal nobility, and after the latter's death (1598) succeeded in establishing in his own Tokugawa family in the

hereditary Shogunate (nominally subject to the emperor), which lasted until 1867. Shōgun 1603–05, he retired to Shizuoka, but maintained absolute power until his death, ruling through his son, Hidetada. He fought in 90 battles. At first he tolerated the Christians, but, hearing how in other lands the entry of Jesuit missionaries had led to Spanish and Portuguese conquest, he expelled or executed them. He adopted and applied Confucian syncretism to absorb the apparent contradictions of Buddhism and Shinto. For foreign trade he relied on the English and Dutch, and kept William \*Adams at his court as advisor on shipbuilding and navigation.

**Tokugawa Yoshinobu, Prince** (né Matsudaira Shichirōmaro, later Akimune; known as Keiki) (1837–1913). Japanese shōgun, born in Edo (Tokyo). The last of fifteen shōguns in the family, on succeeding his cousin in 1866, he attempted some reforms to strengthen the shogunate and expand linkages with France and Russia. However samurai from the Satsuma, Chōshū and Tosa domains raised an army to force him to relinquish power in favour of the Meiji Emperor (\*Mutsuhito) and in November 1867 Yoshinobu abdicated. Although promised a share of power, he was soon stripped of rank and retired to Shinzuoka. He fathered 26 children by his wife and concubines. In retirement, he devoted himself to archery, hunting, painting, photography and cycling, adopted Western dress and was created prince in 1902.

**Tolbukhin, Fyodor Ivanovich** (1885–1949). Russian soldier. In World War II, having made his name as a general at Stalingrad, he became commander of the army that swept through the Ukraine (1943), reconquered the Crimea, Romania and Bulgaria (1944) and finally (1945) Budapest and Vienna. He became a marshal in October 1944.

**Tolkien, J(ohn) R(onald) R(euel)** (1892–1973). English writer and philologist, born in Bloemfontein. He was professor of Anglo-Saxon 1925–45 and of English language and literature 1945–59 at Oxford University. His academic work on early and medieval English texts was highly regarded, but he achieved popular success in fiction. His interest in language and mythology enabled him to create a world with its own cultures, languages and beliefs. *The Hobbit* appeared in 1937 and the more sophisticated *The Lord of the Rings* in 1954–55. It speedily attracted a cult following which persisted, especially after the success of Peter \*Jackson's *The Lord of the Rings* film trilogy, *The Fellowship of the Ring* (2001), *The Two Towers* (2002) and *The Return of the King* (2003).

**Toller, Ernst** (1893–1939). German-Jewish playwright and poet. He was imprisoned for taking part in the Communist rising in Germany after World War I. His plays, e.g. *Man and the Masses* (1921) and *The Machine Wreckers* (1923), reflect his revolutionary

opinions. He also wrote poetry and autobiographical works. He lived in exile after \*Hitler's rise to power, and committed suicide in New York.

**Tolstoy, Aleksei Nikolaievich** (1882–1945). Russian writer. A distant cousin of Lev \*Tolstoy, he went abroad after the Revolution but returned (1922) and soon became well known for science fiction like that of H. G. \*Wells. His *The Road to Calvary* (1945), describing events before and during the Revolution, won a \*Stalin Prize. His patriotic play about *Ivan the Terrible* was a great success during World War II. His best work was an unfinished historical novel, *Peter I*.

**Tolstoy, Lev (Leo) Nikolaievich, Graf [Count]** (1828–1910). Russian novelist and moral philosopher, born in Yasnaya Polyana. Brought up on his mother's family estate of Yasnaya Polyana ('Bright Glade'), in Tula province, 190 km south of Moscow, after the early loss of both parents he was privately educated until he went to Kazan University (1844–47) to study law and languages. A life of ease and mild dissipation followed, but in 1851 he joined the army and from 1853 took part in the Crimean War. This inspired *The Sebastopol Stories* (1865) which, together with the autobiographical sequence *Childhood* (1852) and its two sequels, established him as a writer. Life in St Petersburg did not attract him, and he travelled over much of Europe. From 1862 he settled down with his young wife, **Sofya Andreyevna Behrs** (1844–1919), became the father of 13 children, and applied himself to the management of his estates, establishing peasant schools on the pattern of those he had seen abroad, attending to the problems arising from the emancipation of serfs and filling the role of a humane and forward-looking landlord. To this happy period belong his two most famous novels.

*War and Peace* (1865–69) gives an epic account of Russia's conflict with \*Napoléon between 1805 and 1813. It pulsates with life, driven by inexhaustible energy, proclaiming human complexity, with characters full of contradictions. About 580 individuals appear, 167 of them historic figures, including \*Napoléon, Tsar \*Aleksandr I and Marshal \*Kutúzov. But despite the complexity, the story is easy to follow.

The outstanding characters are Count Pierre (Pyótr) Bezúkhov, Prince Andréi Bolkónsky and Countess Natásha Rostóva. Pierre inherits wealth, but is tormented by contradictions and injustice and devotes himself, tirelessly but not always successfully, to making sense of his world. He is an observer rather than an activist, often indecisive, plagued by self-doubt. Prince Andréi, born into a military dynasty, is thoughtful and philosophical, drawn into active service against his better judgment. There have been tragedies in his personal life. The beautiful Natásha, romantic and impulsive, breaks hearts and vacillates. *War and Peace* is the longest of the great Russian novels, running to 560,000 words. The

work went through endless revision, and Countess Tolstoy copied the complete manuscript seven times. He made 33 attempts to write a novel on the life of \*Peter the Great, but gave up in frustration.

Tolstoy's genius for reaching the heart of women (although not in real life) is shown in the other great novel, *Anna Karenina* (1874–76). Anna Karénina, married to a workaholic bureaucrat, Count Aleksei Karénin, and mother of Sergei, falls in love with Count Aleksei Kirillovich Vrónsky, a cavalry officer, dashing, handsome, shallow and rich, and goes to live with him. Anna and Vrónsky have a deeply asymmetrical relationship: she is shunned by society, loses access to her son, gives birth to a daughter Anna, while Vrónsky gives up nothing—he continues to socialise, gamble, drink, flirt and he leaves her alone with the child. The most powerful writing in *Anna Karenina* is based on the triangle of Anna > Aleksei (Karénin) > Aleksei<sup>2</sup> (Vrónsky) and the tensions arising from family, duty, divorce, custody, desire.

The novel ends with the inevitability of a Greek tragedy. Anna, maddened, confused and despairing, after the collapse of her relationship with Vrónsky, is driven to the Moscow railway station and on the way experiences an astonishing stream of consciousness in which she absorbs sharply etched images of the world she is about to leave. Once at the station, in revenge against Vrónsky and to annihilate herself, she hurls herself under a train.

Tolstoy had always been troubled by inner conflict. His eager acceptance of life and his zestful response to the demands of natural instincts conflicted (as is apparent in his books) with his reactions as moralist and reformer. About 1877 the conflict became acute and he emerged from the struggle as a kind of solitary prophet, revered even by his opponents.

There is a striking parallel between Tolstoy and \*Wagner. As artists, each was a genius, with staggering achievements. But in every other area they were cranks. Tolstoy was reactionary and violent as a young man, then became increasingly eccentric in his judgments, finally repudiating all artistic expression, whether in music or literature.

Vladimir \*Nabokov wrote: 'Most people approach Tolstoy with mixed feelings. They love the artist in him and are intensely bored by the preacher ... [But] Tolstoy is homogeneous, is one, and the struggle which ... went on between the man who gloated over the beauty of black earth, white flesh, blue snow, green fields, purple thunderclouds, and the man who maintained that fiction is sinful and art immoral—this struggle was still confined within the one man.'

His teachings, set out in *What I Believe* (1883) and *What Then Must We Do?* (1886), amounted to Christianity stripped of theology and he called himself a 'Christian anarchist'. *The Gospel in Brief* (1896) was an attempt to reconcile the four synoptic

Gospels. He denounced all authority and all violence, even in resisting evil. (\*Gandhi corresponded with him from South Africa about this, and set up a Tolstoyan commune and school.) Albert \*Schweitzer's concept of 'reverence for life' was deeply influenced by Tolstoy. The philosopher Ludwig \*Wittgenstein was another Tolstoyan. To reconcile his life with his teachings, Tolstoy became a vegetarian, refused to exploit the services of others and tried (1895) to renounce all property rights in his estate and book royalties. The family quarrels that ensued were of such intensity that they embittered his last years. He was excommunicated by the Synod of the Russian Orthodox Church in 1901.

Tolstoy would have been the obvious choice to receive the first Nobel Prize for Literature in 1901, but he was not nominated, presumably for failing to meet the requirement in Alfred \*Nobel's will to have produced 'the most distinguished work of an idealistic tendency'. Instead, the award went to the French Parnassian poet René \*Sully Prudhomme. However, Tolstoy was nominated for the Nobel Prize for Peace in 1901, 1902, 1909, and for Literature in 1902, 1903, 1904, 1905, 1906.

Tolstoy's late novels were *The Death of Ivan Ilyich* (1886) and *Resurrection* (1899). His short stories include *What Men Live By* and *What Shall It Profit a Man?* (1885), and *How Much Land Does a Man Need?* (1886). *Father Sergius* (1890), *The Kreutzer Sonata* (1899) and *Hadji Murad* (1896–1904, published posthumously in 1912) are novellas. However, his reputation as a novelist, perhaps the greatest in all literature, rests on his famous two works.

Tolstoy had a cranky, totally dismissive, attitude towards \*Shakespeare, accusing him of arousing 'irresistible repulsion and tedium'. He had an irrational hatred of *King Lear* because in his last years, when he tried to renounce his wealth, rank and possessions, he was living Lear's life. George \*Orwell wrote an important essay, 'Lear, Tolstoy and the Fool'. Tolstoy became increasingly critical of his two masterpieces, and dismissive of all high art forms.

In his last decades, Tolstoy became an international celebrity. He appeared in many newsreels. His estate at Yasnaya Polyana and house in Moscow attracted pilgrims from all over the world and he conducted a large correspondence with disciples. His death, in 1910, at the stationmaster's cottage at Astapovo, after he had run away from home, was recorded by the world's newsreel photographers but he refused to see his wife.

Steiner, G., *Tolstoy or Dostoevsky* 1959, rev. 1967; Troyat, H., *Tolstoy*. 1965; Parini, J., *The Last Station*. 1990; Wilson, A. N., *Tolstoy: A Biography*. 2001; Bartlett, R., *Tolstoy. A Russian Life*. 2010.

**Tombaugh, Clyde William** (1906–1997). American astronomer. Essentially self-taught, he worked at the Lowell Observatory, Flagstaff, Arizona (1929–43). In February 1930 he identified the ‘planet X’ which Percival \*Lowell had hypothesised from 1905. This ninth planet of the solar system was named Pluto. Tombaugh took his first degree in 1936 and became a professor in New Mexico 1955–73. In 2006 Pluto was reclassified by the International Astronomical Union (IAU) as a ‘dwarf planet’.

**Tomlinson, Ray** (mond Samuel) (1941–2016). American computer programmer. Recognised as the implementer of email (electronic mail); the first system operated from 1971, first on the ARPANET system, then it became universal with the Internet.

**Tompion, Thomas** (1639–1713). English clockmaker. Both his father and grandfather were blacksmiths, which may have set his mind to working in metals but cannot account for the extraordinary skill and artistry he brought to his craft. The first clocks for Greenwich Observatory were built by him (1676). For \*William III he made a clock that would strike the hours and quarters for a year without rewinding. Survivors of the 650 clocks made by him now fetch very high prices. In addition he made about 5500 watches, including some of the earliest to be fitted with balance springs.

**Tone, (Theobald) Wolfe** (1763–1798). Irish politician. Having become convinced that only independence would bring about Roman Catholic emancipation and overcome the many injustices of British rule, he formed the Society of United Irishmen (1791) and in 1795 left the country to seek help in America and France. He accompanied the French invasion fleet (1796) and after its failure returned to Ireland with a small squadron to aid the rebellion of 1798. Defeated and captured by the British, he killed himself in prison while awaiting execution. His journals show him to have been a man of good nature, gaiety and wit.

**Tooke, John Horne** (1736–1812). English politician. His father's name was Horne, and he added the name Tooke (1782) at the request of a rich friend of that name. He became a clergyman as a young man but spent his life in political agitation, at first on behalf of John \*Wilkes, but after a quarrel he formed (1771) the Constitutional Society to agitate for parliamentary and economic reform. In 1777 he was imprisoned for raising money for American troops ‘murdered’ at Lexington (in the War of American Independence). He filled the time by writing *The Diversions of Purley* (published 1786 and 1805), which, amid much philosophical, metaphysical and political comment, pointed to the need for studying Anglo-Saxon and Gothic. His attitude when the French War opened caused him to be tried for treason (1794), but he was

acquitted. After two failures to enter parliament he was elected for Old Sarum in 1801, but unseated, as a clergyman.

**Torquemada, Tomás de** (1420–1498). Spanish inquisitor. A Dominican friar, having become confessor to Queen \*Isabella easily persuaded her and King \*Ferdinand I (jealous of the rich Moors and Jews of Castile) to ask the pope for the Inquisition to be established in Spain. In 1483 he became the first inquisitor-general, and centralised and organised a campaign of torture hitherto unparalleled. He was largely instrumental in the expulsion of the Jews (1492).

**Torricelli, Evangelista** (1608–1647). Italian physicist and mathematician. He succeeded (1642) his former teacher \*Galileo as professor of mathematics at the Florentine Academy. He demonstrated (1643) the first man-made vacuum (soon known as the Torricellian vacuum) in experiments with a long glass tube inserted in a trough of mercury. This also proved that the weight of the atmosphere was equivalent to a column of 760 mm, and became the principle of the mercury barometer. He also discovered the law (now known as Torricelli's Law) governing the flow of liquids through small holes.

**Torrigiano, Pietro** (1472–1528). Florentine sculptor. He had to leave Florence after breaking \*Michelangelo's nose in a fight. He worked in the Netherlands (1509–10) and then went to England, where he did some of his best work, notably the tombs of Margaret Beaufort, \*Henry VII, and his wife, Elizabeth of York, in Westminster Abbey.

**Toscanini, Arturo** (1867–1957). Italian conductor, born in Parma. Trained as a cellist, he made his debut as a substitute conductor in Rio de Janeiro in 1886 and quickly rose to prominence. He premiered \*Puccini's *La Bohème* in Turin (1896). He was Chief Conductor at La Scala, Milan 1898–1903, 1906–08 and 1921–24, at the Metropolitan Opera, New York 1908–15, and of the New York Philharmonic Symphony Orchestra (1928–36). As a protest against fascism in Italy and Germany he left Europe in 1937 for the US, where he created and conducted the NBC Symphony Orchestra until his retirement (1954). His repertoire revealed a remarkable catholicity of taste and included not only the German and Italian classics, but composers as different as \*Debussy, \*Elgar and \*Sibelius. This, combined with an astonishing musical memory, deep insight into a composer's meaning, scrupulous (sometimes rigid) fidelity to the score and the driving energy of his interpretations, made him an outstanding (if controversial) conductor. He never performed the music of Gustav \*Mahler, his great rival as a conductor.

Sachs, H., *Toscanini*. 1981.

**Toulouse-Lautrec, Henri** (Marie Raymond) **de** (1864–1901). French painter and lithographer, born at Albi. Descended from an ancient family of southwest France, a fall from a horse broke his thighbones, and he was crippled. Left only 1.55 metres (61 inches) tall, he felt cut off from his family, sought refuge in art and went to Paris in 1882. There, in the cafés and cabarets of Montmartre (e.g. the Moulin Rouge) he found the subjects for his pictures and drawings—dancers, singers and prostitutes—as well as circus and racecourse scenes. He shared the gay, grotesque, dissipated life of those he painted and developed a sympathetic insight into their character. The main influences on his style were Japanese woodcuts and the work of \*Degas. In the last decade of his life he mastered lithography and his work in that field had an important influence on the development of poster art.

Joyaut, M., *Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec*. Repr. 1968.

**Tourneur, Cyril** (c.1575–1626). English dramatist. His fame rests on two plays, *The Revenger's Tragedy* (printed 1607) and *The Atheist's Tragedy* (printed 1611). The greater is the first, a dark, tightly woven intrigue of blood in which the Machiavellian protagonist becomes as corrupt as his opponents. It was very influential on the contemporary theatre.

**Tourville, Anne Hilarion de Colentin, Comte de** (1642–1701). French sailor. Having made a name for himself against the Turks and the Algerian pirates, he fought the combined Dutch and Spanish fleets (1677), but his great triumph came (1690) when, commanding the French fleet that was aiding the exiled \*James II against \*William III, he won a dramatic victory over the Dutch and English near Beachy Head. For a time he commanded the Channel and anchored in Torbay. However, he suffered complete defeat when convoying the invasion fleet intended to bring back James II, with the loss of 16 men-of-war in one of the longest naval battles of history (19–24 May 1692). Despite this he was made a marshal of France.

**Toussaint l'Ouverture, Pierre Dominique** (c.1746–1803). Haitian leader. Born a slave, he managed to acquire enough education to read French works on \*Caesar's and \*Alexander's campaigns. The military and diplomatic lessons thus learned he was able to put to good account in the slave rebellion of 1791 from which he emerged as the most important man in the island. When France, then in the throes of revolution, abolished slavery in her colony (1794) he returned there, held the Spanish and British at bay and made himself Governor-General for Life under a new constitution (1801). He would have liked to come to terms with France but \*Napoléon Bonaparte, now in control, sent a force against him. Toussaint surrendered (1802) and was taken to France, where he died in prison partly from the hardships inflicted

on him. He was a remarkable man, a firm, just and usually humane ruler, though often sharp-tongued and a natural intriguer.

James, C. L. R., *The Black Jacobins: Toussaint l'Ouverture and the San Domingo Revolution*. 2nd ed. 1963.

**Tovey, Sir Donald Francis** (1875–1940). English musician and musicologist. Reid professor of music at Edinburgh University 1914–40, he was acclaimed for his *Essays in Musical Analysis* (6 volumes 1935–37). Also a pianist, he composed concertos for cello and piano, chamber music and an opera, *The Bride of Dionysus* (1929). He was knighted in 1935.

Grierson, M., *Donald Francis Tovey*. 1952.

**Townes, Charles Hard** (1915–2015). American physicist. He won his PhD at the California Institute of Technology, then worked at the Bell Telephone Labs, and held chairs in physics at Columbia 1948–61, MIT 1961–67 and CalTech 1967–86. In 1953 he built the first 'maser' (microwave amplification by stimulated emission of radiation) and by 1958 he had worked out the theoretical basis of an 'optical maser', using highly concentrated visible light; this was the 'laser' (light amplification by stimulated emission of radiation). In 1964 he shared the Nobel Prize for Physics with A. M. \*Prokhorov and N. G. Basov for work in quantum mechanics. Masers and lasers became indispensable scientific, medical and industrial tools.

**Townshend, Charles, 2nd Viscount** (known as 'Turnip Townshend') (1674–1738). English diplomat, politician and agriculturist. He became, on \*George I's accession, Secretary of State in the Whig ministry which crushed the Jacobite rebellion of 1715. In 1717 he was briefly Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, but soon was back in office in London, and in 1721 was again Secretary of State, sharing power with his brother-in-law Robert \*Walpole. His interventionist foreign policy alarmed Walpole because a close alliance with France would divide Europe into two potentially hostile leagues. Forced to resign (1730), Townshend spent his retirement studying and improving agricultural methods on his Norfolk estates. His introduction of the Norfolk four-course crop rotation—wheat, turnips (or other roots), barley, and grass or clove—gained him his nickname.

**Townshend, Charles** (1725–1767). English politician. Grandson of 'Turnip' \*Townshend, educated at Cambridge and Leyden, he was a Whig MP 1747–67 and an epileptic. One of the most brilliant and wayward of 18th-century parliamentarians, he was a thorn in the flesh of any ministry he opposed and equally dangerous to any ministry he joined. In most of the Pitt-Newcastle combinations during the Seven Years' War, he joined and left \*Bute, and assailed \*Grenville over the question of John \*Wilkes. His greatest capacity for harm was seen when he became

Chancellor of the Exchequer (1766) in the ministry dominated by \*Pitt (by then Earl of Chatham), who was, however, so ill that he could only sporadically exercise authority. Thus able to ignore the known wishes of his leader, Townshend, in his anxiety for revenue, introduced a bill to tax all tea, glass, paper and several other products entering American ports. This measure precipitated the events that led to the American War of Independence.

**Toynbee, Arnold** (1852–1883). English economic historian. His great and influential work, *The Industrial Revolution in England* (edited by Alfred \*Milner and published posthumously in 1884), was originally composed as a course of lectures at Oxford. Its title popularised the term 'industrial revolution' to describe the social and economic changes that transformed British life in the late 18th and early 19th centuries. He gave vigorous support to adult education and did much social work: Toynbee Hall in Whitechapel, London, was built in his memory.

His nephew, **Arnold Joseph Toynbee** (1889–1975), was a historian, the range and scope of whose work exceeded even \*Gibbon. Educated at Winchester and Balliol College, Oxford, he worked in the Foreign Office during both World Wars, taught at London University as professor of Byzantine and Modern Greek language, literature and history 1919–25 and research professor of international history 1925–55. His *A Study of History* (12 volumes, 1934–61) analyses the growth and decay of past civilisations and contends that their survival depends on their response to internal and external challenges. He supports his arguments by a mass of illustrative material, fascinating in itself and indicative of his astonishing industry and receptivity of mind. He was awarded a CH in 1956. Critics complained that he selects examples that support his argument but neglects those that appear to counter his main thesis, and his reputation diminished after his death.

**Toyoda Sakichi** (1867–1930). Japanese inventor and industrialist. In 1897 he invented an automatic power loom and the Toyoda Automatic Loom Works, set up in 1926, became the centre of a diversified industrial empire. His son **Toyoda Kiichiro** (1894–1952) established the Toyota Motor Corporation at Koromo (now Toyota City) and the first model Toyota car was produced in 1937. By 1955 Toyota was the world's third largest producer and by 1990 had plants in 22 countries.

**Tracy, Spencer** (1900–1967). American actor. Originally intended for the priesthood, he became a stage actor, starting in tough guy roles, and made the first of 72 films in 1930. He won two Academy Awards (1937, 1938), received seven more nominations and co-starred in eight films with Katharine \*Hepburn, his lover for many years.

**Traherne, Thomas** (1637?–1674). English religious poet. Educated at Oxford, after some years as a country rector he spent the rest of his life as chaplain to Sir Orlando Bridgeman, Lord Keeper of the Seal. Most of his work appeared after his death and two books of poems were found and printed in 1903 and 1906. *Centuries of Meditations*, written in musical prose, was printed in 1906 and *Poems of Felicity* in 1910. His *Thanksgiving for the Body* showed that he had not the mystic's usual fear of the senses.

Margoliouth, H. M. (ed.), *Complete Works of Thomas Traherne*. 1958.

**Train, George Francis** (1829–1904). American eccentric, born in Boston. He pioneered prefabricated buildings in Victoria during the Gold Rush (1853), began the first horse-drawn tram system in Liverpool (1860), and was co-founder of the Credit Mobilier scheme in the US (1863), making and losing millions of dollars. He travelled round the world in 80 days (1870–71), claiming to have been the original of Jules \*Verne's Phileas Fogg, ran for president (1872), went to jail 15 times and was certified insane.

**Trajan** (Marcus Ulpius Traianus) (c.53–117). Roman Emperor 98–117. Born in Italica (near Seville), he was a distinguished soldier, consul under \*Domitian and was eventually adopted as heir by the emperor \*Nerva. As Emperor he overcame Dacia (central Romania) in two campaigns (101–02 and 105–06) and colonised it with Romans, but his Parthian conquests (113–17) proved ephemeral. His exploits are carved on the column that bears his name in Rome. He was a wise and moderate ruler, as is shown by his fair-minded letter to \*Pliny about the treatment of Christians. He arranged the succession of his kinsman \*Hadrian.

**Trastámara**. Spanish dynasty (\*Isabella)

**Traven, B.** (Benick Traven Torsvan) (c.1890–1969). American novelist, born probably in Chicago. Of Swedish or German descent, he kept his identity a close secret, lived in Germany, using a variety of names, including Otto Feige and Ret Marut, and moved to Mexico in 1924. He was an anarchist, deeply opposed to capitalism and imperialism. His novels, published in German, included *The Death Ship* (1926, translated 1934) and *The Treasure of the Sierra Madre* (1927, 1934).

**Travers, Ben** (1886–1980). English playwright. He was a prolific writer of 'the Aldwych farces', most having long runs in London, using the actors Ralph Lynn, Robertson Hare and Tom Walls. *A Cuckoo in the Nest* was first produced in 1925, *Rookery Nook* in 1926, *Thark* in 1927 and *Plunder* in 1928. There were 24 films based on his plays: the last, *The Bed Before Yesterday* (1975), was a major success.

**Tree, Sir Herbert Beerbohm** (1853–1917). English actor-manager. The half-brother of Sir Max \*Beerbohm, he was lessee-manager of the Haymarket

Theatre (1887–97), where he achieved one of his greatest successes, *Trilby* (1897). Profits enabled him to build Her Majesty's Theatre where, for 20 years, he provided lavish productions of \*Shakespeare and other plays (Carol \*Reed).

**Treitschke, Heinrich von** (1834–1896). German historian, born in Saxony. He completed his education in the liberal atmosphere of Leipzig and Bonn Universities, but in the Austro-Prussian War (1866) he completely identified himself with Prussia. When a series of academic appointments had brought him (1874) to Berlin he shared \*Bismarck's vision of a united, nationalistic Germany under Prussian leadership. This bias permeates his great *History of Germany in the Nineteenth Century* (1879–94). Despite prolonged and accurate research, its literary brilliance, and its excellent chapters on the cultural and social achievements of the lesser states, the book provided an armoury of justification for the Prussian militarists who were planning for World War I. He wrote several other volumes of historical and political essays. His usefulness as a member of the Reichstag (1871–84) was much hampered by deafness.

**Trenchard, Hugh Montague Trenchard, 1st Viscount** (1873–1956). English soldier and airman. A colonel in the Royal Scots Fusiliers, he had fought in South Africa before taking up flying and joining the RFC. In World War I he commanded the British air forces in France and his persistent advocacy brought into being the Independent Air Force and the beginning of strategic bombing. He was Chief of the Air Staff 1918, 1919–29 and became (1927) the first Marshal of the RAF. The RAF was largely the creation of his strategic insight and organisational planning. He was Commissioner of the Metropolitan Police, London 1931–35 and received the OM in 1951.

Boyle, A., *Trenchard*. 1962.

**Trevelyan, Sir George Otto, 2nd Baronet** (1838–1928). English politician and historian. His father was an Indian civil servant, his mother, Harriet, a sister of \*Macaulay. He was a Liberal MP 1865–86 and 1887–97 and Secretary of State for Scotland 1886; 1892–95. His books included *The Life and Letters of Lord Macaulay* (1876), *The Early History of Charles James Fox* (1880) and *The American Revolution* (1899–1914). He was awarded the OM in 1911.

His son, **George Macaulay Trevelyan** (1876–1962), was Regius professor of history at Cambridge 1927–40 and master of Trinity College 1940–51. His works include a remarkable trilogy on the life of *Garibaldi* (1907–11), *England under Queen Anne* (1930), and *English Social History* (1944), which achieved a great popular success. They read well and were highly praised in their time as literature and history, but his judgments were both cautious and conventional and

he left no followers. In 1930 he received the OM. The Trevelyans were the only father and son so honoured until the Duke of \*Edinburgh and Prince \*Charles.

Cannadine, D., *G.M. Trevelyan*. 1992.

**Trevithick, Richard** (1771–1833). English engineer, born in Cornwall. Largely self-educated, he worked as a mining engineer and invented (1798) a pumping engine driven by water pressure. More important was the high pressure steam engine (patented in 1802) which he applied to both road and rail transport. For the latter, to win a bet, he used the Penydaeren tramway on which he gave several demonstrations. The engine was also used for a dredging machine when he was working on a tunnel under the Thames (1806). He went to Peru (1816) where his engine was introduced in the silver mines and for a time served as a military engineer under \*Bolívar. When he returned after 11 years' absence he was almost forgotten, and when he died while working at Dartford he had to be buried at the expense of his fellow workers.

**Trevor-Roper, Hugh Redwald, Baron Dacre** (1914–2003). English historian. He studied at Christ Church, Oxford, and taught at the University 1936–80. During World War II he served in military intelligence, which commissioned him to investigate the circumstances of \*Hitler's death, published in 1947 as *The Last Days of Hitler*. He wrote comparatively little but his books covered a very wide range and were highly praised, e.g. *Archbishop Laud 1573–1645* (1940), *The Gentry 1540–1640* (1953), *The Rise of Christian Europe* (1964) and *The Jesuits in Japan* (1968) and *A Hidden Life: The Enigma of Sir Edmund Backhouse* (1976). He was best known as a critic and a devastating analyst of other historians' deficiencies. He became Regius professor of modern history at Oxford 1957–80 and Master of Peterhouse, Cambridge 1980–87. He married a daughter of the 1st Earl \*Haig. As a consultant to Rupert \*Murdoch, he gave initial credibility to diaries attributed to Hitler (1983), then repudiated them.

Sisman, A., *Hugh Trevor-Roper*. 2010.

**Trimble, (William) David, Baron Trimble** (1944–2022). Northern Ireland politician. A lawyer, he was an Ulster Unionist MP 1990–2007 and, as leader 1995–2005, was a moderate supporter of the 1998 Peace Plan. He became First Minister of Northern Ireland 1998–2002 and shared the 1998 Nobel Peace Prize with John \*Hume.

**Trocme, André** (1901–1971). French clergyman. Pastor of the Reformed Church in Le Chambon-sur-Lignon, he organised a network that saved 5,000 Jews by smuggling them into Switzerland, and was recognised by Israel as 'Righteous among the Nations'.

**Trollope, Anthony** (1815–1882). English novelist, born in London. Son of the writer Fanny \*Trollope, he had an unhappy childhood because of the

harshness and extravagance of his irresponsible father, a failed barrister. Educated at Harrow and Winchester, after a short time in Belgium he became a clerk in the GPO, London (1834); but after a breakdown he was sent as a deputy postal surveyor to Ireland, where hunting, marriage and steady promotion made a new man of him and he began to write. (He is also credited with the invention of the red pillar box.) In 1859 he returned to England and settled at Waltham Abbey which he left (1871) for Montagu Square, London. With a happy domestic life, with his novels and with official journeys (e.g. to Australia, South Africa and America) to provide subjects for travel books, he was content. The more important of his novels fall within two series. The 'Barsetshire' series, which comprises chronologically *The Warden* (1855), *Barchester Towers* (1857), *Doctor Thorne* (1858), *Framley Parsonage* (1861), *The Small House at Allington* (1864) and *The Last Chronicle of Barset* (1867), is mainly concerned with clerical intrigue in the cathedral town of Barchester and reveals to the full his great gift of characterisation (e.g. Mrs Proudie, the Bishop's vulgar but masterful wife). For the second series, which is political, Trollope gained some firsthand experience when he stood unsuccessfully as parliamentary candidate for Beverley (1868). The books are concerned with the fortunes of Plantagenet Palliser (Duke of Omnium) and his wife Glencora, and once again the interplay of character and motive is enthralling. The best known of this sequence are *Phineas Finn* (1869), *Phineas Redux* (1874) and *The Prime Minister* (1876). Trollope's other novels include *The Claverings* (1867) and *The Eustace Diamonds* (1873).

His autobiography (1883) revealed the almost cold-blooded persistence with which he wrote his daily quota of 2500 words before breakfast; he admitted the strength of the money motive and recorded that by 1879 he made £68,939 17s. 5d from his books. Such methods and motives suggest lack of spontaneity and it is true that his style is at times pedestrian but the characters are so vividly brought to life that interest is sustained. After a period of neglect, Trollope won new popularity, especially after successful television series based on his novels. In March 1993 he was reinterred in Westminster Abbey. He was the most prolific of all major English novelists (even more so than Samuel \*Richardson) with 47 to his credit.

Sadleir, M., *Trollope: A Commentary*. Rev. 1945; Glendinning, V., *Trollope* 1992.

**Trollope, Fanny** (née Milton) (1780–1863). English writer. Her *Domestic Manners of the Americans* (1832) caused great offence in the US but sold well in Britain. She had extraordinary energy, lived in Florence from 1843 and published more books than her son Anthony \*Trollope.

**Tromp, Maarten Harpertszoon** (1598–1653). Dutch sailor. His father was captain of the frigate *Olifantstomp* (hence the name), killed in an action against pirates, and the young Tromp was a slave in Morocco for two years. He joined the Dutch navy, was captured again and became a slave in Tunis. On his release, he was steadily promoted and in 1639 defeated a Spanish fleet off Flanders. In the Anglo-Dutch War 1652–53, there was an evenly matched struggle with \*Cromwell's soldier-admirals \*Blake and \*Monck for command of the narrow seas. From encounter to encounter (over a score in all), fortune veered. In May 1652, Blake, with only 15 ships, had the best of a fight with 40 ships under Tromp, but only six months later it was a triumphant Tromp who, according to legend, sailed down the Channel with a broom at his masthead to show that the English had been swept from the seas. Yet, in February 1653, a three-day battle in which Tromp showed his usual courage in defence of a large convoy, cost the Dutch nine warships and 30 out of 200 merchantmen. In the last desperate encounter fought off the Dutch coast at Scheveningen, against the English under Monck, Tromp lost 30 warships and was killed.

**Trotsky, Leon** (Lev Davidovich Bronstein) (1879–1940). Russian revolutionary politician, born in Yanovka, Ukraine. From a middle-class Jewish family, he was expelled from Odessa University and joined the Russian Social Democratic Labour Party (1896). Exiled to Siberia 1898–1902, he escaped and lived in London 1902–05, where he took part in the 1903 RSDLP congress. When it split, Trotsky joined the Mensheviks (minority faction). In 1905 he returned to Russia to become President of the first Soviet in St Petersburg but was again arrested, once more sent to Siberia and repeated his successful escape. At the outbreak of World War I he went to Paris but, expelled (1916) for pacifist and revolutionary propaganda, eventually reached New York. After the Revolution of March 1917, he returned to Russia and, after being arrested by the provisional government, joined the Bolsheviks and with \*Lenin organised the November revolution which brought them to power. As Commissar for Foreign Affairs November 1917–March 1918, he negotiated the Treaty of Brest-Litovsk with Germany and as Commissar for War 1918–25 virtually created the Red Army, directing it with strategic brilliance in the Civil War. His policy of 'permanent revolution', based on the contention that Bolshevism could not survive in Russia unless revolutions were stirred up in the west, was not, however, accepted by the majority of the party. When Lenin died (1924), he lost a power struggle against \*Stalin, partly because his brilliance as writer and orator made him suspect, and being Jewish was a negative factor. But he also exhibited an uncharacteristic passivity. Trotsky headed various opposition factions but was expelled from the party (1927) and was ordered to leave Russia (1929). From Turkey he travelled widely and at the same time built



up dissident Communist groups, some of which long survived his death. In the official Communist Party, 'Trotskyite' became a term of abuse applied to anyone whose loyalty to party decisions was in doubt. In 1937 Trotsky settled in Mexico. In August 1940 he was murdered with an ice axe by **Ramon Mercader**, alias Jacques Mornand, alias Frank Jacson (1914–1960?), a Spaniard whose mother was the mistress of a NKVD general. Released from jail in 1960, Mercader flew to Prague and disappeared. Trotsky was a brilliant and prolific writer whose works include *The History of the Russian Revolution* (3 volumes, 1932–34) and *The Revolution Betrayed* (1937).

Deutscher, I., *The Prophet Armed: Trotsky 1879–1921*. 1954; Deutscher, I., *The Prophet Unarmed: Trotsky 1921–29*. 1959; Deutscher, I., *The Prophet Outcast: Trotsky 1929–40*. 1963; Howe, I. (ed.), *The Basic Writings of Trotsky*. 1963.

**Trudeau, Edward Livingston** (1848–1915). American physician. As a sufferer from pulmonary tuberculosis he benefited from the air of the Adirondacks and established the Trudeau Sanatorium there (1884). He was the first in the US to isolate and study the tubercle bacillus.

**Trudeau, Pierre Elliott** (1919–2000). Canadian politician and lawyer, born in Montréal. From a rich business family, he won a law degree at Montréal University, and after brief army service undertook further study at Harvard, L'institut d'Études Politiques in Paris and the London School of Economics. Called to the bar in 1943, he was associate professor of law at the University of Montréal (1961) and became a member of the House of Commons 1965–84. Parliamentary Secretary to the Prime Minister 1966–67 and Attorney-General 1967–68, he was elected Leader of the Liberal Party in 1968 and held office as Prime Minister 1968–79 and again 1980–84. One of his main preoccupations was to satisfy the aspirations of French-speaking Canada without destroying the federal system. He became a QC (1969), was appointed CH (1984) and CC (1985), and wrote extensively, including *Memoirs* (1993). His son, **Justin Pierre James Trudeau** (1971–), born in Ottawa, won degrees from McGill and the University of British Columbia, was a teacher and acted on television. Elected to the House of Commons 2008–, he became Leader of the Liberal Party 2013– and was Prime Minister 2015–, when the Liberals won an absolute majority, defeating Stephen \*Harper, despite having fallen to third position in 2011.

Trudeau, P. E., *Federalism and the French Canadians*. 1968.

**Truffaut, François** (1932–1984). French film director. Critic and publisher of *Cahiers du Cinéma* from 1954, he worked as an assistant director to Roberto \*Rossellini in 1956 and directed his own films from 1957. His study of childhood, *Les*

*Quatre-cent Coups*, won first prize at the Cannes Film Festival in 1959. He was thereafter recognised as the leader of the French 'New Wave' of realist cinema, which deliberately dispensed with accepted formulae in the structure of film stories.

Crisp, C. G., *François Truffaut*. 1972; Truffaut, F., *Les films de ma Vie*. 1975.

**Trujillo Molina, Rafael Leonidas** (1891–1961). Dominican dictator. He graduated from the military academy in 1921 and by 1928 he had risen to be Chief of Staff. He was President of Dominica, 1930–38 and 1942–52, but he remained in total control ruling through nominees (1938–42), and in 1952 was succeeded by his brother **Hector Trujillo**. His rule was bloody, especially the Parsley Massacre of October 1937 in which more than 25,000 ethnic Haitians were slaughtered. While enriching his own family he pursued a conciliatory policy towards the US, and provided a firm administration that brought social and economic benefits. He created national parks and suppressed illegal logging. Within six months of his assassination the last of the Trujillo clan had left the country. From 1936 to 1961 Santo Domingo, the capital, was known as Ciudad Trujillo.

**Truman, Harry S.** (1884–1972). 33rd President of the US 1945–53. The initial 'S' represents the names of his grandfathers but has no other significance. Born on the family farm at Lamar, Missouri, despite bad eyesight which prevented his entry into West Point Military Academy, he served as an officer in World War I. In 1922 he was a partner in a Kansas City haberdashery which failed in a recession. He insisted on paying all creditors in full, which took 12 years. He studied law but did not qualify, and entered politics as a Democrat. He presided 1926–34 over an administrative court in Jackson County for controlling expenditure on construction. As US Senator 1935–45 he became well known through his chairmanship 1941–44 of the Committee for Investigation of the Defence Program. He replaced Henry \*Wallace on the Democratic ticket, was elected as Vice President (November 1944) and succeeded to the presidency on Franklin \*Roosevelt's death (April 1945). Acting on advice by Henry L. \*Stimson, he took responsibility for dropping atom bombs on Hiroshima and Nagasaki, news of which came when he was attending the Potsdam Conference (July–August 1945) with \*Stalin and \*Churchill (later, \*Attlee) to plan the division of Germany. In March 1947 the 'Truman Doctrine' offered political and military aid to nations resisting Communist influence. With George \*Kennan and Dean \*Acheson he developed the policy of 'containment' of Communism. The \*Marshall Plan, announced in June 1947, provided massive economic aid to war-ravaged European nations. As Cold War tensions increased, Stalin rejected an offer of Marshall Plan assistance to the Soviet bloc.

In November 1946 the Democrats were heavily defeated in elections for the 80th Congress and Truman faced a Southern challenge for nomination in 1948. The Democrats split three ways, with J. Strom \*Thurmond, on the right, standing as a 'Dixiecrat', Truman taking the middle ground and Wallace, on the left, running as a 'Progressive'. Thomas E. \*Dewey was the Republican nominee. Truman travelled 48,300 kilometres in a 'whistle-stop' railway tour across the nation, making 315 speeches. He won an unexpected (but comfortable) victory, with Electoral College votes from 28 states. In 1949 the North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO) was established and the 'Point Four' program provided technical assistance to the Third World. However, \*Mao's victory in China caused a violent anti-Communist reaction in the US (exacerbated by the \*Hiss and \*Rosenberg trials), contributing to the rise of Joe \*McCarthy and Richard \*Nixon. When North Korea invaded the South (June 1950), Truman sent in US troops, under Douglas \*MacArthur, supported by a UN mandate. He dismissed MacArthur (April 1951) for publicly proposing a military strike against China, which was thought (wrongly) to have initiated the Korean War. This provoked a huge political reaction in the US which soon subsided. In 1952 the US tested the world's first hydrogen bomb. Truman's domestic policy, the 'Fair Deal' aimed to promote racial harmony and help the poor. He declined to stand for re-election in 1952 and secured the nomination of Adlai \*Stevenson, who then lost to \*Eisenhower. He wrote *Memoirs* (1955–56). His reputation grew after his retirement. In 19 Presidential ranking lists by historians and political scientists, Truman scored No. 6 in the aggregate.

Truman, M., *Harry Truman*. 1973; McCullough, D., *Truman* 1992.

**Trump, Donald John** (1946–). 45th President of the United States 2017–21. Born in New York, he was the son of a property developer of German descent, and a Scottish mother. Educated at Wharton College in the University of Pennsylvania, he owned hotels, casinos and golf courses, became a beauty pageant impresario and won a national reputation on television for his brash optimism, propensity for stunts, and natural aggression as the host of *The Apprentice* 2004–14. He founded the now defunct Trump University in 2005. In June 2015 he announced his candidature for the Republican presidential nomination. His populist appeal to nationalism and occasional racism and misogyny was successful with voters in primaries, but threatened the Republican establishment and alarmed America's allies. He won the Republican nomination for president in May 2016, after defeating 15 rivals. In November 2016 he beat Hillary \*Clinton, winning 30 states, and a narrow lead in the Electoral College, with a popular vote of 63 million, 2.8 million behind Clinton's. Only 55.7 per cent of those eligible actually voted. Trump was the oldest and the richest person to be elected President, and the only one without

experience in government or the military. Twitter was his preferred mode of communication. He described himself as 'a very stable genius' with a 'very, very large brain'.

He developed a close relationship with Saudi Arabia and Israel, had a wary respect for Russia and North Korea, and was dismissive of leadership in Canada, France, Germany and—until Boris \*Johnson became Prime Minister—the UK. He withdrew the US from the Paris Climate Accords, insisting that 'the future belongs to patriots'.

In December 2019, the House of Representatives voted to impeach President Trump on two counts: (i) abuse of power, in applying pressure on Ukraine that unless Joe \*Biden's family was investigated military hardware would be withheld; and (ii) obstruction of Congress, by refusing to allow witnesses who had been subpoenaed to give evidence. In the ensuing trial, the Senate voted narrowly against calling witnesses or examining documents, and voted to acquit (5 February 2020) on party lines, although Senator Mitt \*Romney voted guilty on the first count.

His response to the COVID-19 pandemic (2020) was marked by denial, confusion, delay, false claims and the attribution of blame elsewhere. The 'Black Lives Matter' demonstrations after the death of George Floyd in Minneapolis intensified racial divisions.

Trump campaigned vigorously in the 2020 Presidential election, which was marked by record voter turnout. Although defeated by Joe Biden, Trump's model of authoritarian democracy won 74.2 million votes (46.9%). He refused to concede defeat, insisting that the election had been stolen, urging his supporters to 'fight like hell'. Courts (even with judges he had appointed) refused to intervene. On 6 January 2021, when Congress was certifying the results of the Electoral College vote (Biden 302, Trump 232), the Capitol was attacked by hostile crowds numbering between 8,000–10,000, resulting in five deaths, and the building went into lockdown. Trump broke with Vice President Mike \*Pence for having declared Biden as President-elect.

The House of Representatives voted on 13 January 2021 to impeach Trump for 'incitement of insurrection'. This second impeachment was the first in American history. However, trial in the Senate was postponed until after Trump's term ended. On 13 February the Senate voted 57 to 43 to convict, but under the Constitution a two-thirds majority (67) was required, so Trump could claim vindication. His former Senate leader and close collaborator Mitch \*McConnell voted to acquit on technical grounds, but then denounced Trump's actions as 'disgraceful'.

Trump's base continued to dominate the Republican Party and he kept open the option of running for President in 2024. Meanwhile, New York State initiated proceedings against Trump for taxation fraud.

Barred from using Twitter, his preferred medium, in 2021 he established the Truth Social app.

He refused to concede that he had lost the 2020 election, discounted the Congressional investigation of the 6 January 2021 attack on the Capitol and, in November 2022, announced his candidacy for President in 2024.

In the three major presidential surveys conducted by US historians and political scientists between 2017 and 2021, Trump was ranked 44, 42 and 41.

Woodward, B., *Fear: Trump in the White House*. 2018; Wolff, M., *Fire and Fury: Inside the Trump White House*. 2018; *Siege: Trump Under Fire*. 2019.

**Trumper, Victor Thomas** (1877–1915). Australian cricketer. His batting achievements included 3163 runs in test cricket, of which 2263 were made against England. His greatest performance was 300 not out made in 1899 against Sussex at Hove.

Mallett, A., *Trumper*, 1985.

**Truss, Liz** (Mary Elizabeth) (1975– ) English Conservative politician, born in Oxford. An Oxford graduate, she became an accountant, MP 2010– , Secretary of State for the Environment 2014–16, the first female Lord Chancellor 2016–17, and Chief Secretary to the Treasury 2017–19. She voted 'remain' in 2016 but became a Boris \*Johnson loyalist. Secretary of State for International Trade 2019–21 and Foreign Secretary 2021–22, she defeated Rishi \*Sunak for the Tory leadership in September and became Prime Minister September–October 2022. Two days after her appointment, Queen \*Elizabeth died. Her proposed major unfunded tax cuts caused a rebellion in the financial markets and her sudden U-turn lost her all credibility. She was the shortest-serving Prime Minister in British history (49 days).

**Truth, Sojourner** (c.1797–1883). American evangelist, born in Ulster County, New York. Born a slave and given the name Isabella, she was freed in 1827, became a touring evangelist and a passionate campaigner for abolition of slavery and for female suffrage.

**Tsai Lun** see **Cai Lun**

**Tshombe, Moïse Kapenda** (1919–1969). Congolese politician. An accountant who owned a chain of stores, after the Belgian Congo became an independent republic (1960) he declared the secession of Katanga, the copper-producing province, and was its first (and only) President 1960–63. The Congolese Prime Minister Patrice \*Lumumba called for intervention by United Nations troops, but French and Belgian mercenaries intervened, Lumumba was captured and executed. UN forces ended the secession in Katanga in 1963 and Tshombe fled to Spain. However, in 1964 he was recalled and appointed as Prime Minister of the Democratic Republic of the Congo by

President \*Kasa-Vubu but was dismissed in October 1965. Kasa-Vubu was then overthrown by General \*Mobutu. Tshombe fled to Spain again, but he was later hijacked and kept as a prisoner in Algeria, where he died.

**Tsiolkovsky, Konstantin Eduardovich** (1857–1935). Russian physicist. Originally a school teacher (hampered by extreme deafness), he carried out fundamental research into aeronautics, constructed the first 'wind-tunnel' and by 1895 was writing about space travel. From 1898 he was predicting (with a high degree of accuracy) future space exploration in rockets using liquid fuel. The launching of Sputnik I (1957) was timed to coincide with his centenary.

**Tsvangirai, Morgan Richard** (1952–2018). Zimbabwean politician. A Shona tribesman, after leaving high school he worked as a miner and became active in the trade union movement. He was leader of the Movement for Democratic Change, he contested the presidency against Robert \*Mugabe in 2002 and 2008, and in a power-sharing arrangement with Robert \*Mugabe became Prime Minister 2009–13.

**Tsvetaeva, Marina Ivanovna** (1892–1941). Russian poet, born in Moscow. Her father was a professor who founded the Pushkin Museum of Fine Arts. She observed the Revolution and the following famine, lived in Paris from 1922, returning in 1939, but was ostracised. Her husband was executed in 1941, her daughter was jailed as a spy and she hanged herself (although it could have been murder). Her lyric poetry, most written in exile, was published in 1961 and championed by Vladimir \*Nabokov and Joseph \*Brodsky. Minor planet 3511 Tsvetaeva was named for her in 1982.

**Tswett, Mikhail Semenovich** (1872–1919). Russian chemist and botanist. Inventor of the important chemical technique known as chromatography, he showed (1906) that plant pigments dissolved in petrol could be separated by means of their differential rates of absorption by powdered calcium carbonate in a vertical glass tube. This method of analysis has since been widely developed.

**Tubman, William Vachanarat Shadrach** (1895–1971). Liberian politician. A lawyer, judge and leader of the 'True Whig' party, he was elected President in 1944 and re-elected six times, dying in office. He attempted social, economic and educational reforms.

**Tuchman, Barbara** (née Wertheim) (1912–1989). American historian, born in New York. A journalist, she twice won the Pulitzer Prize, with *The Guns of August* (1962) and *Stilwell and the American Experience in China 1941–45* (1971). Other books include *The Proud Tower* (1966), *A Distant Mirror* (1978) and *The March of Folly: From Troy to Vietnam* (1984).

**Tudjman, Franjo** (1922–1999). Croatian politician. During World War II, he became the youngest general in \*Tito's partisans, was a fervent Marxist, then an academic, teaching history at the university of Zagreb. He was expelled from the Yugoslav CP in 1967 for his advocacy of Croatian nationalism. In 1989 he founded the Croatian Democratic Union, was elected President of Croatia 1990–99 and declared its independence in 1991. War with Serbia, the fourth in 90 years, broke out with massive loss of life, only token intervention by the UN and an ineffective response by the European Community.

**Tudor** (ap Tewdwr). Welsh dynastic family that ruled England from the accession of \*Henry VII (1485) to the death of \*Elizabeth I (1603). Its links with the English royal line were established by the marriage of **Owen Tudor** (né Owain ap Maredudd ap Tewdwr) (1392–1461) to \*Henry V's widow \*Catherine of Valois; he was defeated and beheaded at Hereford at the outset of the Wars of the Roses. Henry VII's claim to the throne rested, however, upon the marriage of his father Edmund Tudor, son of Owen, to Margaret Beaufort, granddaughter of John Beaufort, one of the legitimised children of \*John of Gaunt and Catherine \*Swynford.

**Tudor, Antony** (né originally William Cook) (1908–1987). Anglo-American ballet dancer and choreographer. He trained in England but worked in the US from 1940. He was a driving force in the American Ballet Theatre, linked with \*Balanchine as a creator of modern ballet.

**Tukhachevsky, Mikhail Nikolaievich** (1893–1937). Russian marshal, born near Smolensk. From a noble but impoverished family, he joined the army in 1911 and was a prisoner-of-war 1915–18. He supported the Bolsheviks in 1918, commanding the Red Army in the Caucasus during the civil war, and becoming Chief of Staff 1925–28, Deputy Commissar of Defence 1931–37, under \*Voroshilov, and promoted to marshal in 1935. The SS fed misinformation to the NKVD that Tukhachevsky had conspired with \*Bukharin and the Germans, and this fed \*Stalin's paranoia. Tukhachevsky was arrested, tried and summarily executed, together with eight other generals. His wife and two brothers were also shot. In 1957 he was rehabilitated by \*Khrushchev.

**Tull, Jethro** (1674–1741). English agriculturist. Called to the bar in 1699, as a result of the enclosure system, which by bringing large acreages under direct control of landlords encouraged more scientific agriculture, he turned to farming. He invented a seed drill (1701), and his advocacy of planting cereals and turnips in rows instead of by broadcasting the seed was of the greatest importance in improving yields. A prolonged tour of Europe enlarged his knowledge, among the things learnt being the value of the cultivator in aerating the soil and allowing access of water. His practices were explained in *Horse-hoeing Husbandry* (1733).

**Tunney, 'Gene'** (James Joseph) (1897–1978). American boxer. A skilful tactician, he fought 68 professional bouts and lost only one. By defeating Jack Dempsey, he became world heavyweight champion (1926) and retired undefeated (1928).

**Tupolev, Andrei Nikolaievich** (1888–1972). Russian aeronautical engineer. Educated at the Moscow Higher Technical School, in 1922 he became director of the Central Aero-hydro-dynamic Institute. He fell into disfavour with the authorities in 1938 but was reinstated in 1943. He was responsible for over 100 aircraft both civilian and military. The Tu-104 (1955) was the first jet transport to provide a regular commercial service for passengers. The Tu-144 ('Charger') was a supersonic transport (SST), first flown in December 1968, just before the Anglo-French 'Concorde'. It had serious design flaws and after spectacular crashes was grounded.

**Turenne, Henri de la Tour d'Auvergne, Vicomte de** (1611–1675). French soldier. A grandson of \*William the Silent (Prince of Orange), after his father's death he was brought up in Holland as a Protestant. He returned to France in 1630 and soon showed his military abilities during the Thirty Years' War. In 1641 he was given the supreme command and in 1643 was rewarded for his conquest of Roussillon from the Spanish by being made a marshal of France. He ended the Thirty Years' War with triumphant campaigns in Bavaria and Flanders. In the civil wars that ensued he at first joined the Fronde, but later was reconciled with the regency government led by \*Mazarin, and thus found himself opposed to his great military rival \*Condé. From a period of confused fighting Turenne emerged victorious, while Condé, a declared traitor, crossed the frontier and took service with Spain. The contest between the two men continued with Condé leading the Spanish army, Turenne the French, and was only finally settled when Turenne, after overrunning much of the Spanish Netherlands, finally, with the help of a force of \*Cromwell's Ironsides, defeated Condé at the Battle of the Dunes (1658), which led to the surrender of Dunkirk. Peace followed (1659) and when hostilities were resumed (1667) Condé had been pardoned and taken into favour by \*Louis XIV. In 1668 Turenne turned Catholic. In the war (1672) with Holland, soon joined by the emperor Leopold and other allies, the two great commanders campaigned in concert. In the winter of 1674–75 Turenne fought his last and most brilliant campaign in Alsace but in the spring, while reconnoitring the imperialist position near the defile of Salsbach, he was struck by a cannon ball and killed.

Weygand, M., *Turenne: Marshal of France*. 1930; Longueville, T. and Lloyd, F., *Marshal Turenne*. 2007.

**Turgenev** (or Tourgeneff), **Ivan Sergeievich** (1818–1883). Russian novelist, born in Oryol. Brought up on the family estate, he quarrelled with his masterful and neurotic mother about her treatment of the serfs.

After a university education and a short time in the civil service he achieved his first popular success as a writer with *A Sportsman's Sketches* (1847–52), a series of delightful rural sketches. In 1843 he fell in love with **Pauline \*Viardot** (née García), a famous singer then visiting Russia. She was married but, moved by a hopeless but enduring passion, he followed her around from place to place in Germany and France. He even maintained a friendship with her husband and collaborated with him in the French translations of his works, sometimes even sharing their home. This barren love affair may explain why so many of the men in Turgenev's books are such emotional weaklings. Turgenev was on bad terms with \*Dostoevsky, \*Tolstoy and other Russian contemporaries. After 1856 he spent much time in Paris, where he was a friend of \*Flaubert, \*Zola, \*Daudet, the \*Goncourt brothers and Henry \*James. He died near Paris.

His most important novels, among which are *A Nest of Gentlefolk* (1859), *Fathers and Sons* (1862), a story of political conflicts between the generations, and *Virgin Soil* (1876), belong to a series referring to social and historical developments in Russia between 1830 and 1870. These were criticised both by the progressives and the reactionaries although much admired outside Russia. Of equal or greater fascination are the short stories, love stories, tales of the countryside and of the supernatural. Here the fastidious elegance of his style can be appreciated at its best.

Schapiro, L., *Turgenev: His Life and Times*. 1978; Pritchett, V. S., *The Gentle Barbarian*. 1977; Figes, O., *The Europeans: Three Lives and the Making of a Cosmopolitan Culture*. 2020.

**Turgot, Anne Robert Jacques** (1727–1781). French economist and administrator. Having abandoned the idea of a Church career, he lived in Paris in the midst of the great intellectual ferment of which \*Diderot's great *Encyclopédie* was the symbol. Turgot's interests were mainly economic and in his writings on the subject, especially in his advocacy of free trade, he anticipated the work of Adam \*Smith. As intendant of Limoges (1761–64) he was able to put theory into practice: by substituting a money tax for the *corvée* (the compulsory road-labour of peasants dating from feudal times) he greatly improved communications; and by establishing free trade in corn, by stimulating the porcelain industry and encouraging new ones he transformed the Limousin from one of the poorest into one of the richest regions of France.

On the accession (1774) of \*Louis XVI he was called upon to do for the country what he had done for the region. As controller general with the watchwords 'no bankruptcies, no tax increase, no loans', he began by making stringent economies, including the suppression of some 32,000 government posts. The measures which followed—abolition of the *corvée*, free trade in corn (followed by bread riots), and a minor land tax on nobles and clergy—produced

such a selfish outcry from those adversely affected and the privileged classes in general that Louis lost his nerve and in 1776 Turgot had to resign. His declared conviction that the alternative to far reaching reforms was revolution was soon borne out.

**Turing, Alan Mathison** (1912–1954). English computer scientist, logician, mathematician and cryptographer, born in London. Educated at King's College, Cambridge and Princeton (where he worked with Alonzo \*Church), he published a paper 'On Computable Numbers, with an Application to the *Entscheidungsproblem*' (1937), referring to a challenge about the 'halting problem' made by the German mathematician David \*Hilbert. This proposed a formal theory of how a universal computer would work, embodying the logic of all future computing machines. During World War II, he worked as a cryptographer at Bletchley Park, Bucks., and produced a device (the 'bombe') that cracked the German Enigma naval codes and was decisive in winning the Battle of the Atlantic. In 1943 he worked briefly in the Bell Labs with Claude \*Shannon. Reader in mathematics at Manchester University 1945–49, he worked on the Manchester Mark I computer, investigated artificial intelligence and morphogenesis (mathematical biology) and became FRS in 1951. Convicted, in 1952, of an 'act of gross indecency' with a young man, he accepted chemical castration as an alternative to imprisonment and committed suicide by eating an apple laced with cyanide. In 2009, Prime Minister Gordon \*Brown made an official apology about Turing's treatment. He received a posthumous royal pardon in December 2013 and in 2021 his head appeared on the £50 banknote.

Hodges, A., *Alan Turing: the enigma*. 1983.

**Turnbull, Malcolm Bligh** (1954– ). Australian lawyer, banker, writer and Liberal politician, born in Sydney. Educated at Sydney University, and a Rhodes Scholar in Oxford, he became a journalist, barrister and merchant banker, leading the 'Yes' campaign in the failed 1999 referendum on a republic. Member of the Australian Parliament 2004–18, he was Minister for the Environment and Water 2007, under John \*Howard. He replaced Brendan Nelson to become the Leader of the Opposition 2008–09 until deposed, narrowly, by Tony \*Abbott, on the issue of climate change. Minister for Communications 2013–15, he defeated Abbott in a Liberal Party room ballot and was Prime Minister 2015–18. Internal tensions over energy policy, climate change and resentment over same sex marriage led to a party coup in August 2018. Turnbull was forced out but ensured that he was succeeded by Scott \*Morrison, and not the hard-right candidate, Peter \*Dutton.

Manning, P., *Born to Rule*. 2015; Turnbull, M. B., *A Bigger Picture*. 2020.

**Turner, Frederick Jackson** (1861–1932). American historian. Professor of history at Wisconsin University 1892–1910 and Harvard 1910–24, he was the proponent of the ‘frontier school’ of American historiography, arguing that pushing back the frontier created the essential and distinctive elements of American society, culture, politics and the economy.

**Turner, John Napier Wyndham** (1929–2020). Canadian politician and lawyer, born in England. Educated at the University of British Columbia, he was a Rhodes Scholar at Oxford, became a lawyer in Montréal and a Liberal MP 1962–76; 1984–93, serving as Attorney-General 1968–72 and Minister for Finance 1972–75. In 1975 he resigned over policy differences with Pierre \*Trudeau, became active in business, and was nominated to succeed him as party leader and Prime Minister of Canada, June 1984, although he was not an MP or senator. In September 1984 his government was overwhelmingly defeated but Turner remained as Opposition Leader until 1990.

**Turner, J(oseph) M(allord) W(illiam)** (1775–1851). English painter, born in London. His father kept a barber’s shop in Maiden Lane, Covent Garden. He was sent to the free school at Brentford and in 1789 gained entrance to the Royal Academy school. His first money was made by selling sketches in his father’s shop and colouring engravings. With his savings he made sketching tours and also worked with his friend Thomas \*Girtin, whose style in watercolours influenced him greatly. His first Academy exhibit was shown in 1791. His early oil paintings were influenced by Richard Wilson and \*Claude Lorrain but after going to the Continent (1802) he came to admire \*Titian and \*Poussin. Elected ARA in 1799, he became RA in 1802. By about 1810 he had fully developed the technique that made him famous, showing the subject of his picture, whether a natural phenomenon, mythological figures, or—in accordance with the romantic vogue of the time—an ancient building, through cascades and explosions of light and colour. He sometimes painted direct from nature but usually in the studio, where an astonishing visual memory enabled him to reproduce almost exactly the original scene. He would execute a subject, e.g. Blois, as watercolour, gouache and oil (*Blois on the Loire*, c.1829). They were often reproduced as etchings or engravings, as in the series *Rivers of England* (1823–27) and *Rivers of France* (1833–35) which popularised his work. He visited France, Italy, Switzerland and Germany several times, and his best paintings include many studies of Venice. Among his greatest works are *Burning of the Houses of Lords and Commons* (1834), *The Fighting Téméraire* (1838), *The Slave Ship (Slavers Throwing Overboard the Dead and Dying, Typhoon Coming On)*, (1840) and *Rain, Steam and Speed—The Great Western Railway* (1844). Despite prolonged attacks by the leading art critics of the time Turner was supported by the Royal Academy and, to his surprise, by John \*Ruskin and above all, by

Lord Egremont of Petworth, with whom Turner often stayed and where some of the best of his pictures are still exhibited. He took a keen interest in photography, and J. J. E. Mayall took a daguerreotype portrait of him in 1847. In his old age Turner lived as a recluse in Chelsea under an assumed name and there died. He was buried in St Paul’s Cathedral. He left £140,000, more than 300 oils, 20,000 watercolours and 19,000 drawings to the nation, many exhibited in the Tate Gallery, in extensions built by Sir Joseph \*Duveen (1908) and Sir Charles \*Clare (1987). Until the 20th century his works were more admired in Europe than in Britain. *Rome from Mount Aventine* (1835) sold in London for \$US47.6 million in 2014.

Lindsay, J., *J.M.W. Turner: his life and work*. 1966; Walker, J., *Turner*. 1976; Wilton, A., *The Life and Work of J. M. W. Turner*. 1979; Hamilton, J., *Turner*. 1997; Hermann, L. and Harrison, C., *J. M. W. Turner*. 2000; Moyle, F., *Turner: The Extraordinary Life and Momentous Times of J. M. W. Turner*. 2017.

**Turner, Ted** (Robert Edward III) (1938–). American broadcasting executive. He inherited an advertising agency from his father, moved into radio and television and in 1980 founded Cable News Network (CNN), a global 24-hour newscast, which reached its highest penetration during the Gulf War (1991). The immediacy of CNN’s coverage not only influenced reporting but policy outcomes and, by breaking down frontiers, illustrated Marshall \*McLuhan’s concept of ‘the global village’. Turner won the America’s Cup for yachting, owned the Atlanta Hawks and in 1991 married the actor Jane \*Fonda. He sold CNN to Time-Warner, gave \$US1 billion to the UN for an environment fund and was the biggest landowner in the US.

**Tussaud, Marie** (née Grosholtz) (1760–1850). Swiss modeller. Founder of the waxworks that bear her name, she learned modelling in Paris from her uncle, J. C. Curtius, whose wax museums she inherited (1793). She prepared death masks from heads severed by the guillotine. Having separated (1800) from her soldier husband she established her exhibition in London, first at the Lyceum Theatre and then (1835) in Baker Street. The move to Marylebone Road was made in 1884 after her death.

**Tutankhamun** (Tut-anekh-amun, originally Tut-ankh-aten: regnal name Nebkheperure) (c.1341–c.1323 BCE). Egyptian pharaoh of the XVIIIth dynasty 1332–23 BCE. He was son of \*Akhenaten (and one of his sisters), and, after two short reigns by family members, succeeded, ruling through his high priest (and, later, pharaoh), \*Ay II. Akhenaten had tried to impose a form of monotheism, with Aten as the one god. Popular and priestly opposition had rent the kingdom, and under the young pharaoh the country reverted to its former polytheism, with Amun as a principal god. He died at 18 or 19, after a reign of six years, possibly of gangrene, after the fracture of

a leg, probably compromised by malaria. Despite his youth, the many weapons and warlike images found in his tomb suggest that he sought to be a warrior king. His tomb was found undisturbed by Howard Carter (funded by Lord Carnarvon) in November 1922 and the artefacts (5398 objects), notably the golden death mask, iron-gold dagger and six chariots, are magnificent. They have toured internationally but are normally housed in the new Grand Egyptian Museum, Cairo.

Desroches-Noblecourt, C., *Tutankhamen*. 1963; Hoving, T., *Tutankhamun*. 1978; James, T. G. H., *Tutankhamun*. 2000.

**Tutu, Desmond Mpilo** (1931–2021). South African prelate, born in Klerksdorp. Of Xhosa and Motswana descent, he became a teacher, then an Anglican priest (1960), and studied in London. Bishop of Lesotho 1976–78 and Johannesburg 1985–86, he was General Secretary of the South African Council of Churches 1978–86. He received the 1984 Nobel Prize for Peace and was appointed Archbishop of Cape Town 1986–06. He chaired the Truth and Reconciliation Commission 1995–98. He was awarded the Templeton Prize (2013) and an Honorary CH.

**Twain, Mark** (pseudonym of Samuel Langhorne Clemens) (1835–1910). American author and humorist, born in Florida, Missouri. His father was a Virginia lawyer who had moved west to seek a fortune by land speculation but died poor (1847). The boy, who had a casual upbringing in Hannibal, Missouri, where the river provided many scenes for his later books, became a journeyman printer. After some years of wandering, he visited New Orleans and became a pilot on the Mississippi (1857–61). His later pseudonym was derived from the leadsmen's cry indicating that the water was two fathoms deep. The Civil War ended this chapter and he joined his brother in Nevada to prospect for gold. But soon his early humorous writings began to appear. He was encouraged by Artemus Ward and in his writings for the San Francisco papers by Bret Harte. A commission to visit and write about the Sandwich Islands was followed by a lecture tour in the east which proved a great success. A Mediterranean tour resulting in *Innocents Abroad* (1869) established his fame. Having married Olivia Langdon of New York State (1870) he settled down as editor of the *Buffalo Express* but was fortunately encouraged by friends to draw on his boyhood memories of life on the great rivers for *Tom Sawyer* (1876) and his masterpiece *Huckleberry Finn* (1884). In later life, as well as having to submit to much ceremonial and hero worship he dissipated his energies in foreign travel. *A Tramp Abroad* (1880) records a European walking tour and business ventures which sometimes involved heavy losses. Meanwhile, and partly to recoup himself, he continued to write with industry and versatility. The burlesque *A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court*

(1889) is sometimes very funny; *Personal Recollections of Joan of Arc* (1896) reveals a long-felt devotion to this historic heroine. Others, e.g. *The Stolen White Elephant*, show his satirical gifts. He went on a round-the-world lecture tour (1895–96) and visited Australia and New Zealand. He will always be remembered by the books which owe their inspiration, vigour and freshness to the river lands of his childhood. His journalism was powerful and incisive and he attacked the conventional wisdom with zest and courage.

Kaplan, J., *Mister Clemens and Mark Twain*. 1966; Twain, M., *Tales, Sketches, Speeches and Essays*. 2 vols, 1992.

**Tweedsmuir, 1st Baron** *see* **Buchan, John**

**Tyler, John** (1790–1862). 10th President of the US 1841–45. Son of a governor of Virginia, he became a lawyer, congressman 1816–21, Governor of Virginia 1825–27 and US Senator 1827–36. Supporting States' rights he joined the new Whig party formed by President Jackson's opponents. In 1841 he became Vice President to W. H. Harrison, on whose death, a month after inauguration, he succeeded as President. His term of office was rendered largely ineffective by the party split created by the conflict between the national policies of Henry Clay and the belief in States' rights favoured by the president. It was marked, however, by the Webster-Ashburton Treaty (1843), which resolved difficulties with Great Britain and the annexation of Texas (1845). Tyler sought re-election in 1844 but soon dropped out and endorsed James K. Polk. In 1861, he supported the Confederacy when the Civil War broke out but soon died.

**Tyler, Wat** (or Walter) (d.1381). English rebel and popular leader. In the Peasants' Revolt (1381) he led the Kentishmen, who with the men of Essex converged on London to present their demands, of which the main one was the abolition of serfdom and the crippling poll-tax. Three days and nights of burning and looting had already occurred when, at a conference with Richard II at Smithfield, Tyler, acting as spokesman, was struck down by Lord Mayor Walworth. He was killed in the subsequent scuffle; only Richard's courage in taking over the leadership of the peasants saved the situation. The gesture was a token one, however, and few of the rebels' grievances were met or their hardships lightened.

**Tylor, Sir Edward Burnett** (1832–1917). English cultural anthropologist, born in London. A Quaker, he left school early and did not attend a university. Suffering from tuberculosis, he went to Cuba and Mexico (1855–56), and with the ethnologist Henry Christy (also a Quaker) explored Toltec remains. *Anahuac, or Mexico and the Mexicans* (1861), *Primitive Culture* (2 vols., 1871) and *Anthropology* (1881) were important in developing evolutionary concepts and analytical techniques to civilization.

Tyler became professor of anthropology at Oxford 1896–1909 and influenced James \*Frazer and John Lubbock (\*Avebury).

**Tynan, Kenneth** (Peacock) (1927–1980). English critic. Immensely influential, he wrote for the *Observer* and the *New Yorker*, worked with Laurence \*Olivier at the National Theatre and arranged the sexually explicit revue *Oh! Calcutta!* (1969).

**Tyndale, William** (c.1494–1536). English Biblical translator, born in Gloucestershire. He graduated at Hart Hall, Oxford, and later at Cambridge came under the influence of humanists such as \*Erasmus (one of whose works he translated) and the religious reformers. He mastered eight languages, and translated directly from Greek and Hebrew. Having set his heart on biblical translation but having failed to get patronage in London he went (1524) to Hamburg, to Wittenberg (where he met \*Luther) and to Cologne. Here he began printing his New Testament but, forbidden to proceed, fled to Worms. Of the edition there printed (1526) and smuggled into England, almost all copies were destroyed. His later works were published at Antwerp and they included translations of the Pentateuch (1530), Jonah (1531) and New Testament revisions. The section Joshua–II Chronicles was left in manuscript. Both in his marginal notes to the biblical books and in his many theological works he revealed his Lutheran doctrines and attacked papal supremacy. He engaged in bitter controversy with Thomas \*More. In May 1535 Tyndale was lured out of the ‘English House’ on a pretext by an appalling opportunist, Henry Phelips. He was arrested and, after 16 months’ imprisonment at Vilvoorde, near Brussels, convicted of heresy by an Imperial court. Despite sporadic efforts by \*Henry VIII to save him, he was strangled there and his body burned at the stake.

Tyndale’s translations were incorporated (without attribution) in the ‘Matthew Bible’ (1537) and the ‘Great Bible’ (1539), both publications being secured by Thomas \*Cromwell.

His superb use of the words and rhythms of the English language is enshrined in the Authorised Version of the Bible: about 84 per cent of the New Testament, and 76 per cent of those books in the Old that he completed, is his work. His influence on written English was comparable with Luther’s on German. His monosyllabic style is at its best in 2 Kings iv:8–37.

Daniell, D., *William Tyndale*. 1994; Moynihan, B., *William Tyndale: If God Spare My Life. A story of martyrdom, betrayal and the English Bible*. 2002; Bragg, M., *William Tyndale*. 2017.

**Tyndall, John** (1820–1893). Anglo-Irish physicist, born in Ireland. Son of a policeman, he worked as teacher and draftsman, then studied at Marburg, worked for years on polar diamagnetism and became (1853) professor of natural philosophy at the Royal Institution in London, where he later succeeded (1867) \*Faraday, whose biography he wrote, as superintendent. In 1859 he identified the role of water vapour, CO<sup>2</sup> and methane as key factors that absorb and emit radiation within the thermal infra-red range (‘the greenhouse effect’) and in determining atmospheric temperature. Interest in glaciers and meteorology turned him into a mountaineer: he was among the first to climb the Matterhorn, and made a first ascent of the Weisshorn (1861). His other researches concerned heat, sound (lighthouse sirens) and light (the ‘Tyndall effect’: the imitation of the blue of the sky by passing a beam of light through a cloud of very fine particles). A very prolific writer and active populariser of science, he supported \*Darwin and was deeply sceptical about religion. He died from an accidental overdose.

Jackson, R., *The Ascent of John Tyndall*. 2018.

**Tyson, Edward** (1650–1708). English anatomist. Best known for his *Orang-Outang* of 1699, describing the anatomy of a primate (actually a chimpanzee) brought back from Malaya. Tyson saw the specimen as halfway between a man and an ape, a link on the Great Chain of Being. Fierce debate continued throughout the 18th century as to whether such higher primates were really forms of men, or of monkey, and whether man gradually shaded into the primates, or whether there was a sharp distinction.

**Tzara, Tristan** (originally Samuel Rosenstock) (1896–1963). French poet and essayist, born in Romania. In 1916 in Zürich he founded the ‘dadaist’ movement, using random assemblages of ideas, words and objects, and became a Surrealist by 1922. He later joined the Communist Party and the Resistance.

**Tz’u Hsi**. Dowager empress of China *see* Cixi



This text is taken from *Dictionary of World Biography, Ninth Edition*,  
by Barry Jones, published 2022 by ANU Press, The Australian  
National University, Canberra, Australia.

[doi.org/10.22459/DWB.2022.07](https://doi.org/10.22459/DWB.2022.07)